
THE
MODERN PART
OF AN
Universal History,

FROM THE
Earliest ACCOUNT of TIME.

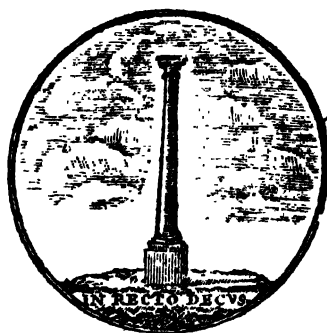
VOL. XXVI.

THE
MODERN PART
OF AN
Universal History,
FROM THE
Earliest ACCOUNT of TIME.

Compiled from
ORIGINAL WRITERS.

By the AUTHORS of the ANTIENT PART.

VOL. XXVI.



LONDON:
published for S. RICHARDSON, T. OSBORNE, C. HITCH,
to the MILLAR, JOHN RIVINGTON, S. CROWDER,
M. LAW and Co. T. LONGMAN, and C. WARE.

M.DCC.LXI.

Modern History :

BEING A

CONTINUATION

OF THE

Universal History.

BOOK XIX.

CHAP. V.

The History of Italy.

UPON the death of pope *Benedict*, the college of cardinals was divided into two parties, the one endeavouring to chuse a pope that would confirm the acts of *Boniface*, the other intent upon having one a friend to the king of *France* and the *Colonna* family. Each party persevered so obstinately in their purpose, that the papal see was vacant near the space of ten months. At length they agreed that the one party should name three *Frenchmen* that were not of the college, one of whom should be chosen pope by the other party within forty days after. According to this agreement, the party averse to the king of *France* named three *Frenchmen* who were known to be his enemies. *Philipp*, being informed of the nomination, by his friends, immediately sent for the archbishop of *Bordeaux*, one of the candidates, to *France*, who, upon his arrival, offered to agree to the terms proposed by the king, on condition of his pro-

A. D.
1304

B , curing

MOD. HIST. VOL. XXVI.

The arch-
bishop of
Bour
denex is
elected
pope, and
takes the
name of
Clement
the fifth.

curing for him the pontificate. *Philip* then proposed that he should give a fuller pardon of the violence committed against *Boniface*, whose memory he should condemn; that he should grant him the tythes of his kingdom for five years, and restore the cardinals of the *Colonna* family to their former dignity; which articles the archbishop swearing to perform, a messenger was dispatched to the cardinals at *Perugia*, who immediately declared the archbishop pope, and sent the decree of his election into *France*, intreating him to hasten his return into *Italy*. Upon receiving the decree of the college, he assumed the name of *Clement V.*; and, sending for the cardinals to *Lyons*, he was consecrated in that city on the 14th of *November*, in the presence of the king of *France*, the dukes of *Britany*, *Burgundy*, and *Lorrain*, and many other princes (A). *Clement*, immediately after his consecration, reconciled the king of *France* to the church in the fullest manner; and, in the *Advent* following, restored the cardinals of the *Colonna* family, and made a promotion of ten others, all of whom, except one, were *Frenchmen*¹.

He revokes
the bulls of
Boniface
against the
king of
France.

A. D.
1306.

The following year he revoked the bulls of *Boniface* to the prejudice of the king of *France*, and granted him the tythes of his kingdom for five years. About the same time we find that he granted the tythes for two years to the king of *England*, for an expedition into the *Holy Land*; and afterwards he made the same concession in favour of other Christian princes, to assist them against the *Moors* and *Turks*, and, in general, all the enemies of the church. Having likewise created the bishop of *Durham* patriarch of *Jerusalem*, he ordered him to go to the emperor, and the kings of *Hungary*, *Cyprus*, and *Armenia*, to implore their assistance in recovering *Palestine*; and, as he thought it would be of service to the affairs of *Syria* that *Constantinople* were recovered from the *Greeks*, he desired the count of *Valoris* to invade that empire, and not only assisted him with some supplies of money, but likewise prevailed with the *Venetians* to enter

¹ Vit. Clement. ap. MURATOR. SPOND. ANNAL. PLATINA.

(A) The court of the pope being thus translated to *France*, continued in that kingdom for more than 70 years, to the great detriment of *Italy* and *Rome*, in which city many of the churches

fell to ruins by the absence and neglect of the priests. The *Italians* give the name of the *Babylonish Captivity* to this residence of the pope's court in *France* (1).

(1) Platina.

into an alliance with him, and to promise him the assistance of their fleet.

CLEMENT, being likewise desirous of quieting the troubles of *Italy*, which kingdom, during the vacancy of the pontificate, had been harrassed by the party of the *Guelphs*, he sent two nuncios to the *Florentines* and *Luccese*, who, under the command of *Robert*, eldest son to the king of *Naples*, were besieging the *Gibelines* in *Pistoria*. The nuncios, in the name of the pope, ordered the *Guelphs* to desist from the siege, but their remonstrances had no effect upon the troops of *Florence* and *Lucca*; only *Robert* left the command of the army, and went to congratulate the pope. Clement, being informed of the obstinacy of *Lucca* and *Florence*, appointed cardinal *Neapoleo Ursini*, a *Roman* of great reputation, as his legate over all *Italy* and the adjacent islands, with a most ample commission. But as *Neapoleo* seemed inclined to favour the *Gibelines*, and the *Albi* or *Whites*, the *Florentines* refused to admit him into their city; and he was expelled from *Bologna* with the hazard of his life, and the loss of all his furniture and baggage; on which account he not only laid that city under a sentence of excommunication and interdict, but also deprived it of the privilege of teaching, whereupon the greatest part of the professors went and fixed their residence at *Padua* ^m.

DURING these transactions in *Italy*, Clement went with his court to *Bourdeaux*, where he suspended the archbishop of *Canterbury*, who was accused by the king of raising disturbances in *England*, while he himself was absent in *Flanders*. After residing several months at *Bourdeaux*, the pope went to *Poitiers*, to reconcile the kings of *France* and *England*; and as *Charles* of *Valois* and the *Venetians* were now prepared for attacking the empire of *Constantinople*, he excommunicated the emperor *Andronicus*, as the encourager of the *Greek* schism and heresy. Being likewise very earnest to recover the *Holy Land*, he published a severe edict, prohibiting the Christians from furnishing the *Saracens* with arms or military stores. About the same time frier *Haythonus*, a relation of the king of *Armenia*, coming to *Poitiers*, Clement received him with great affection; and, desiring him to declare his opinion of an expedition into *Syria*, he dictated a treatise of the affairs of *Armenia*, which was wrote by *Nicolas Salco*, and in which he proved that then was the most proper time for attacking the *Saracens*, because the

Sends a legate into Italy, to quiet the troubles in that kingdom.

A. D. 1307.

He excommunicates the Greek emperor.

^m VILLAN. l. viii. c. 82. & 85. ANTON. tit. 20. c. 9. §. 2. & tit. 21. c. 1.

Christian princes were not involved in war, and the *Saracens* were then engaged in civil wars, being likewise greatly weakened by the king of the *Tartars*, who still professed Christianity, and offered all the assistance in his power against the infidelsⁿ.

He creates
bishops in
Great
Tartary;
and

NOTWITHSTANDING the arguments of *Haythenius*, and the intreaties of the pope, the princes of *Europe* could not be prevailed upon to engage in a new crusade. *Clement*, nevertheless, being informed of the great success of frier *John de Monte Corvino*, who eighteen years before had been sent by *Nicolas IV.* as legate into *Ethiopia*, *India*, and *Tartary*, he ordered seven *Franciscans* to be consecrated bishops, and sent into *Tartary*, that they might consecrate the legate archbishop of *Cambalu*, in the kingdom of *Kathay*, and continue themselves in that kingdom as his suffragans. He likewise wrote to the great Khan, exhorting him to embrace the Christian faith, and thanking him for his kindness to the profelytes of that religion^o. About the same time he received a visit from the king of *France*, who intreated him, according to his oath, to condemn the memory of *Boniface* the eighth, and to order his bones to be thrown into the fire, as those of a heretic. *Clement* had no intention of fulfilling this part of his oath; but, that he might not give offence to the king, he declared to him, that *Boniface* could not be condemned without at the same time annulling the promotion of all those cardinals that had been made by him. Besides that, except in a general council, a pope could not be lawfully accused or convicted, he therefore would summon one for that purpose^p.

Suppresses
the order
of the
templars.

THE king, resting satisfied with this answer, transacted another affair with the pope, which at that time made a great noise in *Europe*. This was the extirpation of the knights templars, who were accused of horrid impieties, the discovery of which was owing to one of^q their order, who was imprisoned at *Paris* for some capital offence. He, in hopes of saving his life, informed the king of the wickedness authorized and practised by the order to which he belonged; and *Philip*, at this conference, acquainting the pope with the discovery made by the criminal, obtained leave from his holiness to seize upon all the templars in his kingdom, who were accordingly apprehended on the 10th of *October*, orders having been sent to the magistrates of all the cities to be ready

ⁿ HAYTHION. c. 55. SANUT. l. iii. par. 15.
DING. Annal. minor. t. 3. an. 1305, & 1307.
l. viii. c. 91. ANRON. tit. 21. c. 1. sect. 2.

^o WAD-
^p VILLAN.

with a body of troops to execute, the following night, an order contained in another letter, then only to be opened. *Clement* in the mean time wrote to all the bishops of Christendom, ordering them to make inquisition into the crimes of which the templars were accused, informing them in his letters, that, having received repeated accusations of that order, he had sent for a knight of eminent nobility and authority, who had secretly confessed upon his oath, that, upon receiving any one into their order, they obliged the initiated person to spit upon the cross, and to deny Christ, and that many other horrid crimes were allowed of, and generally practised, by the order. Upwards of seventy other knights having made the same voluntary confession, *Clement* ordered the possessions of all the templars to be confiscated, published a bull for the suppression of the order, and wrote to the ordinaries and inquisitors of the different provinces to imprison the templars, and to make inquisition into their crimes. He likewise sent two cardinals to *Paris*, who, publishing the bull against the order, condemned those templars, who had made the voluntary confession, to be burnt by a slow fire. The criminals recanted their former confessions; but acknowledged themselves worthy of death, because they had unjustly accused the order of crimes of which they were innocent. Several authors of those times wrote in defence of the order; and *Boccace* alleges, that its extirpation was owing to the avarice of the king of *France*, who coveted the rich possessions the templars then enjoyed in *France*. But as their extirpation extended to all Christendom, and their possessions were not secularised, there is no ground for this suspicion: nor is it probable that the pope would have consented to the suppression of an order which his predecessors had honoured with so many privileges, unless the evidence of their crimes had been very explicit (B). About the same time *Clement* sent

1 P. PUTEANUS, GAGUIN. l. vii. Hist. Franc. Contin. Bell. Sacr. l. v. c. 13. VILLAN. l. viii. c. 92. ANTON. ut supra. BLOND. D. ii. l. ix. SPOND. Annal. BOCCAC. de casibus vir. illustr.

(B) The crimes of which they were accused were said to have been first introduced among them about forty years before their extirpation, by one of their masters, who, having been

taken prisoner by the sultan, could not obtain his liberty on any other condition. But the corruption of the order may be justly attributed to the immense wealth of which it was possessed,

sent a legate with an army against one *Dulcinus*, a leader of a sect of heretics, whose chief tenets were, that all things were common; that the pope and the bishops were not true pastors, because they did not live an evangelical life; that whatever action was done from charity was free from sin. After pursuing the heretics in the *Alps*, the legate at last dispersed them, and seized *Dulcinus* and some others, who were burnt at *Vercelli*.

A. D.
1308.
He is solicited to transfer the empire to France

THE following year the emperor *Albert* being murdered by his nephew, *Clement* was informed that the king of *France* intended to solicit him to transfer the imperial dignity to *France*, or to procure it for his brother *Charles*, according to the intention of *Boniface*. The pope, to free himself from the embarrassment of either disobliging the king of *France*, or offending the *Germans*, by the advice of one of his cardinals secretly informed the electors of the intentions of *Philip*, and advised them to proceed to an election without delay, before he should have time to negotiate the affair. The electors followed his advice; and, according to his recommendation, on the 27th of *November*, chose *Henry* duke of *Luxemburgh* for emperor, while the king of *France* was on the road to *Poitiers*, to solicit the interest of the pope. *Clement* in the mean time proposing to remove his court to *Avignon*, a city in *Provence*, under the dominion of the king of *Sicily*, he allowed his attendants then to disperse, but ordered them to assemble at *Avignon* about the middle of *January*, in the following year. Soon after his arrival at that city, being informed that the *Venetians* had taken possession of *Ferrara*, a city belonging to the church, he excommunicated them in a grand procession, deprived them of all commerce with other states, and granted all their dominions to any one who was able and willing to seize upon them. He received likewise an embassy from the emperor, desiring the confirmation of his election, and swearing fidelity to the apostolic see. He granted the request of the ambassadors, on

^r VILLAN. l. viii. c. 101. ANTON. See the History of the Empire of France. ^a Vita Clem. ap. MURATOR, Bzov. hoc anno.

which gave an opportunity to its members to indulge in all manner of luxury and vice; for, instead of distinguishing themselves, as at their first institution, by their military exploits, they were then only

remarkable for their arrogance and intemperance, so that it became a proverbial reproach against any one who wasted his time in gluttony and drunkenness, to say, that he drank like a templar.

condition

condition that the emperor should come to *Rome* within two years, to receive the imperial crown; and as a mark of his respect for *Henry*, he sent two cardinals into *Germany*, to accompany him in that journey. The *Venetians*, notwithstanding their excommunication, still keeping possession of *Ferrara*, he sent his relation *Arnald de Polagria*, a cardinal deacon against them, with an army of *French* crusaders, who, having entered into an alliance with *Bologna*, *Florence*, and the cities of *Lombardy*, defeated the *Venetians* near the *Po*, and recovered the city of *Ferrara*. In consideration of the assistance which the cities of *Florence* and *Bologna* gave to his legate, *Clement* absolved them from the sentence of excommunication and interdict which had been denounced against them by *Neapoleo Ursini*. He con- firms the election of the duke of Luxemburgh. A. D. 1309.

ABOUT the same time *Charles* king of *Naples* dying, *Clement*, upon receiving the homage of *Robert*, the king's eldest surviving son, crowned him king of both *Sicilies* at *Avignon*, on the 8th of *September*, setting aside *Charabert*, the king of *Hungary*, who pretended to the crown of *Sicily* in right of his father *Charles Martel*, *Robert's* elder brother. *Robert*, upon receiving the investiture of his father's dominions, declaring his desire to undertake a sacred expedition, the pope created him general vicar of the patrimony of the church in *Italy*, and count of *Romaniola*; he likewise remitted the debt which his father had contracted to the apostolic see during his war against the *Sicilians*; but he renewed the obligation to pay the annual tribute of 8000 ounces of gold, as an acknowledgement of his fief.

SOON after, at the instance of the king of *France*, he published, in the consistory, that all persons, who had any thing to propose for or against the late pope *Boniface*, should appear at *Avignon* before the middle of *Lent*, after which time no accusation would be heard. This citation being pasted up in public places, *William Nogaret*, who had seized the pope, and *William Plessianus*, the author of the appeal to a general council, renewed their accusations against *Boniface*, whose character was defended by one of the cardinals with great warmth. The accusation of *Boniface* gave offence to several Christian princes, particularly to the kings of *Castile* and *Arragon*, who sent ambassadors to the pope, desiring him to put a stop to the proceedings against the memory of *Boniface*. Besides, as both parties appeared at the consistory with numerous attendants, some tumult was apprehended. *Clement*, therefore, prevailed with the king of *France* not and annuls all the acts of Boniface against the king of France. A. D. 1310.

* VILLAN. vit. Clem. ut supra.

to insist upon the present trial, but to refer the determination of the whole affair to the pope and his council of cardinals; and, having received a letter from *Philip*, signifying his consent, he published a bull, nullifying and declaring void all that had been transacted betwixt *Boniface* and the king of *France* since the beginning of the century, commanding all writings on that subject to be erased from the registers of the *Roman see*, and to be expunged from all books and tablets, prohibiting any one, under pain of excommunication, from retaining or concealing any originals or copies of the writings on that subject. From the general pardon granted to all persons concerned in the late dispute, *Clement* excepted *William Nogaret*, *Sciarra Colonna*, the citizens of *Anagni*, and those who were concerned in plundering the treasure of the church. He likewise declared *Boniface* a catholic, free from all heresy, and a true pope. Soon after, upon the penitent submission of *Nogaret*, he absolved him from all censures that he had incurred, on condition that he should transport himself for life with arms and horses into the *Holy Land*, at the first general expedition thither; and in the mean time should undertake a pilgrimage to *St. James of Compostella*, and several other sacred places. About the same time he received an embassy from the *Venetians*, begging an absolution of the ecclesiastical censures, and offering to make reparation for the damages they had done to the territories of the church, *Clement* delayed granting their request; and, being resolved to put off the meeting of the general council, which, according to the citation, was to assemble in *October*, he published letters addressed to all the prelates, ordering them to assemble the following year at *Vienne in Dauphiné*, on the 1st of *October*. Mean while the knights hospitallers, who, upon the loss of *Palestine*, had retired to *Cyprus*, having for two years attacked the *Turks* in the island of *Rhodes*, at length expelled the infidels, and made themselves masters of the island, which had before been granted to them by *Andronicus*, the emperor of *Constantinople*.

Rhodes
taken from
the Turks
by the
knights ho-
spitallers.

The empe-
ror enters
Italy with
an army,
and

ABOUT the same time the emperor *Henry*, according to his agreement with the pope, and at the intreaty of the *Gi-Italy with belines*, assembled a considerable army, and set out for *Italy*. Upon his arrival at *Lausanne*, he sent commissaries to the pope, who renewed the oath of fidelity, and confirmed, in the name of their master, the donations of former emperors to the *Roman church*. From *Lausanne* he advanced, in the month of *November*, to *Turin*, where he was joined by the

militia of several *Italian* cities, particularly of *Pavia*, *Vercelli*, and *Lodi*, the chief of the faction of the *Guelphs*, who were then greatly pleased with his conduct, as he refused to hearken to some accusation of the *Gibellines*, declaring that he had no party in *Lombardy*, but came to receive homage for the whole. The *Guelphs* likewise then advised him not to restore any of the exiles till after his coronation; but he followed the advice of the *Germans*, and restored the *Gibellines* at *Hiericuri*.^{*} At *Asti* having heard the dispute betwixt the marquis of *Saluzzo* and *Montferrat*, about the territory of *Montferrat*, he decided in favour of the latter, which sentence greatly offended the *Gibellines*. *Henry* soon after marched to *Milan*, where he kept his *Christmas*, and surprised the *Italians* with his moderation, as he allowed *Guido Turriceno*, the chief of the *Guelphs*, and his enemy, still to reside in the common palace. A few days after he concluded a peace between him and the family of the *Vicenti*; and, on the 6th of *January*, receiving the iron crown from the hands of the archbishop, he afterwards restored many of the *Guelph* and *Gibelline* exiles in several cities of *Lombardy*. This calm was of very short continuance; for, a violent sedition arising in *Milan*, the emperor was in great hazard of his life, and, with great difficulty and much bloodshed, quelled the tumult. Upon the news of this sedition, the faction of the *Guelphs* openly revolted from the emperor, and expelled his vicars from their cities, and entered into an alliance with *Robert* king of *Sicily*, to prevent his journey to *Rome* *.

is crowned
at Milan.
A. D.
1311.

CLEMENT in the mean time wrote to the cities of *Italy*, *The pope holds a general council at Vienne.* to receive the emperor with honour, and gave a commission to five cardinals to crown him at *Rome*, he himself being engaged to attend the general council at *Vienne*. He soon after went thither with the cardinals, and the patriarchs of *Alexandria* and *Antioch*, and opened the council, at which were present, according to *Villanius* and *Antoninus*, upwards of 300 archbishops and bishops, though others say only 114, and a great number of other prelates and abbots. The first session was held on the 16th of *October*, and it was then determined that a crusade should be preached all over *Christendom*. The king of *France* was present at the second session, which was held the following year in the month of *April*, and in which the council approved of the suppression of the order of templars, and agreed that all their possessions

1312.

* Iter Italic. Hen. VII. apud MURATOR. l. ix. Hist. Luxemb. l. xlv. BLOM. D. ii. l. ix.

* Should

should be given to the knights hospitallers, now called the knights of *Rhodes*. But their possessions in *Castile*, *Aragon*, *Portugal*, and *Majorca*, were given to other orders of knights in those kingdoms, who were employed against the *Moors*. The king of *France* likewise obtained from the council the tythes of his kingdom for six years, having engaged to take the cross within that time, and obliged his son, in case of his death, to fulfil his vow. - At the third session, which was held on the 7th of *May*, several canons were ordained against heretics, and for the reformation of manners; after which *Clement* dismissed the council. The pope likewise confirmed the decree of *Gregory X.* concerning the election of a bishop of *Rome*, and, at the solicitation of *Raymund Lully*, who was present at the council, he ordained, that the *Hebrew*, *Arabic*, *Chaldaic*, and *Greek* languages, should be publicly taught at *Paris*, *Oxford*, *Bologna*, and *Salamanca*, and where-ever the pope should keep his court; and that the books in those languages should be faithfully translated into the *Latin* tongue.

The emperor is crowned at Rome.

MEAN while the emperor *Henry*, notwithstanding the great opposition of the *Guelphs*, and *Robert* king of *Sicily*, having marched with his army to *Rome*, took possession of part of the city on the north side of the *Tiber*, the greatest part being still in possession of the *Guelphs*, headed by the family of the *Ursini*, and supported by *John* prince of the *Morea*, brother of the king of *Sicily*. As the opposite faction were in possession of *St. Peter's* church, the emperor made several attempts to expel them, but, after skirmishing in vain for two months, a messenger was sent to the pope, to obtain the consent of his holiness to the performing of the ceremony in the *Lateran* church. The time for the return of the messenger being elapsed, and the tumults still increasing in the city, the cardinals were prevailed upon, by the intreaties of the emperor, to perform the ceremony without waiting for the pope's consent. Accordingly, on the 1st of *August* the three cardinals who survived, having received a new oath of fidelity from *Henry*, conferred upon him the imperial crown. Immediately after his coronation, the emperor sent ambassadors to *Frederic*, king of *Trinacria* or *Sicily*, and entered into an alliance with him against *Robert*, king of *Naples*, whom he intended to have attacked, in return for the assistance that he had given to the faction of the *Guelphs* in *Rome* and in *Tuscany*. But, the *Germans* insisting upon returning

† BOSIUS, Histor. Hospital. t. ii. lib. i. Continuat. Nangii.
* SPOND. Annal.

into their own country, he marched with his army to *Tivoli*, from whence the duke of *Bavaria*, and several nobles, with their troops, set out in their return to *Germany*. After their departure, the messenger arrived from the pope, with the permission to crown the emperor, at the same time ordering a new oath to be taken by him, and likewise commanding him to agree to a truce with the king of *Naples* for a year. *Henry* refused to take the oath, as he was already crowned; and, by the advice of his counsellors, he affirmed, that the pope, neither by the canon or civil law, had any power to command a truce betwixt the emperor and his vassal. However, from his regard to the pope, he promised not to attack the king of *Naples* for a twelvemonth; and, after a second journey to *Rome*, to quell the disturbances raised by the prince of *Morea*, he marched with his army towards *Perugia*, and from thence to *Florence*, the territories of which city he ravaged^a.

WHILE the emperor was thus punishing the perfidy and ingratitude of the *Guelfs* in *Italy*, *Clement* wrote to *Frederic* king of *Trinacria*, and *Philip* prince of *Tarento*, desiring them to assist the emperor *Andronicus* against the *Turks*, and, for that purpose, he granted them the tythes of all the ecclesiastical revenues in their dominions: to all those likewise who would engage in that war, he granted the same indulgences as the crusaders had formerly enjoyed. About the same time, being informed of the dissensions betwixt the king and the barons of *England*, he sent two legates into that kingdom to reconcile the contending parties. But the barons refusing to receive the pope's letter, or accept of their mediation, they were obliged to quit the kingdom. Soon after *Clement* received from the emperor a copy of his sentence against the king of *Naples*; *Henry* had declared him an enemy of the empire, and guilty of treason, and therefore deprived him of all authority, and absolved his subjects from their allegiance. This proceeding of the emperor was not agreeable to the pope; however, he did not then openly condemn it, but declared that he would consider of the affair. Not long after, the great preparations of the emperor then at *Pisa*, and of *Frederic* of *Sicily*, equally alarming the kings of *Naples* and *France*, *Clement* was prevailed upon, by the solicitation of *Philip the Fair*, to publish a bull, prohibiting any one, under pain of excommunication, from attacking the kingdom of *Naples* by land or by sea, under any pretext. However, *Henry*, being privately assured by the

The pope grants indulgences to those who would engage against the Turks.
A. D. 1313.

^a Iter Ital. ut supra.

The emperor dies at Bonconvento.

Clement dies upon the road to Bourdeaux.

A. D.

1314.
A dissension in the conclave.

pope. that he would not be displeased at his conquest of *Naples*, he continued his preparations, and marched towards *Gaeta*, where he was to be joined by *Frederic*; but, being seized with a violent fever, he died on his road at *Bonconvento*, and was buried at *Pisa*^b. Upon the death of the emperor, *Clement*, considering that the intended expedition against *Naples* would not take effect, published a bull, condemning the sentence of the emperor against the king of *Sicily*, because that kingdom was a fief of the apostolic see, and *Robert* had been condemned in his absence, without a fair trial^c. He likewise created *Robert* vicar of the empire, in *Italy*, and senator of *Rome*; and, being informed that *Frederic* had seized *Reggio*, he excommunicated all those who should attack the kingdom of *Puglia*. About the same time he sent a legate to *Paris* about the affairs of the *Holy Land*, who gave the cross to the kings of *France*, *England*, and *Navarre*, and to many other nobles then assembled in that city. Soon after, being seized with a dysentery, and several other distempers, he proposed to go for his health to his native air of *Bourdeaux*; but he died on the road the following year, on the 19th of *April*.

UPON the death of *Clement*, a dissension arose among the cardinals about electing a successor; those of *Guienne*, or *Gascony*, desiring one of their own country to be chosen pope, while the other *French* cardinals, together with the *Italians*, wanted to elect another. After the contest had continued several months, the *Gascons*, to oblige the other party to desist from their opposition, set fire to the conclave; which had a greater effect than they intended, and burnt a great part of the city. This calamity obliging them to separate, they dispersed themselves into different cities, and delayed assembling again for more than two years, notwithstanding the intreaties of several princes and bishops. Mean while hostilities still continued between the two factions in *Italy*. The *Pisans*, being afraid of the resentment of the *Guelphs*, on account of their attachment to the late emperor, took into their pay all the *Germans* that chose to continue in *Tuscany*, and, by their assistance, made themselves masters of the rich and populous city of *Lucca*, where they seized the treasure of the *Roman* church, to the value of one million of florins of gold^d, which was deposited there in a monastery,

^b Iter Ital. ut supra, FERRET. VICENT. Hist. ap. Murator. t. ix, p. 1112, &c. ^c SPOND. Annal. ^d ALBERT.

MUSSAT. de Gest. Ital. ap. Murator. t. x. FERRET. VICENT. ut supra.

those who had the charge of it being afraid to proceed to *Avignon*, on account of the depredations of both the factions. In *Lombardy* likewise, *Guido Turriano*, being assisted by *Robert* king of *Sicily*, defeated the troops of the *Vicenti*, which victory occasioned *Guido's* brother, the archbishop, to be expelled from *Milan* by *Mapheo Vicenti*, who, tho' almost 70 years of age, despised the sentence of excommunication denounced against him by the archbishop, and assumed the title of prince of *Milan*.

ABOUT this period the sect of *Lollards* began to appear *The sect of* in *Austria* and the neighbouring countries, taking their name *Lollards* from one *Walter Lollard*, whose doctrines they followed, the *appears in* chief of which are mentioned by *Spondanus*, namely, That *Germany*.
 mass, baptism, and extreme unction, are useless ceremonies; *A. D.*
 that the virgin *Mary*, after she was a mother, was not a *1315*.
 virgin; that the real presence in the sacrament was a falsehood; that it was lawful to eat flesh on any day; that the *Roman* church was not the church of Christ; that the merits and intercession of saints ought to be despised, and likewise the observation of holidays and canons of the church; that perjury was no sin; that the devils would be re-admitted into heaven, and *Michael* and other angels thrust down to hell; that God did not punish any crimes that were committed under the earth; from whence they are accused of committing all manner of wickedness in caverns underground. These and several other such tenets they are said to have professed with such obstinacy, as to have suffered death rather than forsake them*.

THE cardinals still continuing dispersed in different places, and, notwithstanding the solicitation of *Lewis* king of *France*, delaying to proceed to an election, that prince sent his brother *Philip*, count of *Poitiers*, to *Lyons*, who prevailed with them singly to come to that city, under pretence of a negotiation, and, upon their arrival, shut them up, against their *The cardinals con-* inclination, in a convent of the *Dominicans*, threatening them *finis in* with confinement till they had finished the election. After *Lyons*.
 they had been shut up forty days, they at last came to an *1316*.
 agreement to receive him as pope who should be named by *John*
 the bishop of *Porto*. That cardinal, at the persuasion of *John*
Neapoleo Ursini, named himself; and, his brethren giving *XXII.*
 their consent, he assumed the name of *John*, by some reckoned *chosen pope*.
 the 20th, by others the 21st, but commonly called the

* SPOND. Annal. Trithem. in Chron. hoc an. HORSSEM. de Gest. Pontif. Leodicus.

22d, of that name^f. He was consecrated in the cathedral church of that city, on the 9th of *September*, and immediately published the residence of his court to be at *Avignon* Hereceives (C). The news of his election reaching *Germany*, he soon an embassy after received an embassy from *Lewis* duke of *Bavaria*, and from the *Frederic* duke of *Austria*, both competitors for the empire, competitors and each demanding a confirmation of his election by the to the em- apostolic see. *John* delayed declaring in favour of either of pire. them, under pretence of considering which of them had the preferable right. At the same time he annulled the election of *John*, the king of *Aragon*'s son, to the bishoprick of *Tarragona*, but translated thither the bishop of *Saragossa*.

A. D. THE following year, taking the advantage of the civil 1317. dissensions in *Germany*, he resolved effectually to crush the *Gibellines* in *Italy*, and to confirm the usurpations of his predecessor *Clement* upon the rights of the empire. He therefore published the constitutions of *Clement*, and appointed schools where they should be read and explained. Among these constitutions there were some that asserted, that the emperors were vassals of the holy see; and that the oath taken by them at their coronation was not only a promise of defending the church and the pope, but an oath of allegiance and homage; and that, during an interregnum, it belonged to the pope to dispose absolutely of all affairs of the empire, not only as superior of the empire, but from the plenitude of his power which he possessed as successor of St. He claims *Peter*, and vicar of Christ. To confirm these claims of his the admi- predecessor, on the 31st of *March* he published a bull, declaring, that, as the empire was vacant, the administration of nistra- it, both by right and custom, belonged to the pope; he tion of the empire du- therefore prohibited, under pain of excommunication and interdict, any one, of what dignity soever, from assuming the ring the in- title of vicar of the empire, without the leave of the apostol- terregnum; lic see. At the same time he granted the vicariate of the

^f Vita Joan. apud MURATOR. VILLAN. lib. ix. cap. 79.
 * SPOND. Annal. ad an. 1313.

(C) *John* XXII. was formerly called *James de Ossa*, and was born at *Cabors* in *France*. He was the son of a taylor, but, distinguishing himself in his youth in the service of the archbishop of *Arles*, chancellor of the king of *Sicily* in *Provence*, by his assistance he found

means to accomplish his studies, and procured the bishoprick of *Frejus*. He afterwards succeeded him as chancellor, was created bishop of *Avignon*, then cardinal bishop of *Porto*, and, when he was chosen pope, he was upwards of 70 years of age.

empire

empire in *Italy* to *Robert* king of *Naples*, till the coronation of the emperor, and cited the two competitors to justify their claims before the apostolic see. By this bull the pope hoped to ruin the power of *Mattheo Visconti* at *Milan*, *Canis Scaliger* at *Verona*, *Passerini Bonacossi* at *Mantua*, and other chiefs of the *Gibellines* in other places of *Italy*, who, in their several territories, assumed the title of vicars of the empire, and generally favoured the interest of *Leopold* duke of *Bavaria*. *John* likewise, about the same time, erected several new bishopricks in *France*, by dividing several dioceses; and, at the request of the king of *Arragon*, he created a new order of knights, under the title of *St. Mary* and *St. George*, and conferred upon them the revenues of the knights templars in *Valentia*. This same year also he made inquiry into the accusations of several persons who were said to have conspired against his life, and those of the whole cardinals. Among the conspirators was found *Hugh* bishop of *Cahors*, who, after his conviction and degradation, was delivered over to the secular magistrates, by whose sentence he was first partly slayed, and afterwards burnt alive^b. The pope then published several bulls against necromancy, and those who practised magical arts. Being likewise informed of great disturbances in *England*, he sent two legates into that kingdom to compose the dissensions, and to receive the tax of *St. Peter*, and the oath of homage for the kingdoms of *England* and *Ireland*, which had been formerly given to *Innocent III.* The legates were also commissioned to settle the disputes with *Scotland*; and carried letters from the pope to *Robert Bruce*, who was only stiled governor of *Scotland*. *Robert* at first refused to allow the legates to enter his kingdom; but afterwards, sending for them, he declared, that he would neither treat of peace nor a truce with *England*, unless he had the title of king from the pope. Upon receiving this declaration from the king, the cardinals returned to *London*; and *Robert* still refusing to agree to a peace, they excommunicated him and all his adherents, and laid the kingdom under an interdictⁱ. and sends two legates into Britain.

Soon after the pope published a bull against a sect of *He* *con-*
Franciscans, who had proposed to live up to the rigour of the rules composed by *St. Francis*, neglecting the dispensation of those rules by the popes *Nicolas III.* and *Clement V.* They were not only accused of being schismatics, but also of being heretics; and were said to have asserted, that there

^b Vita Joan. ut supra.
Vatic.

ⁱ SPOND. Annal. ex Regest.

Francis-
cans.
A. D.
1313.

were two churches, one carnal, abounding in wealth and wickedness, at the head of which was the pope and prelates; the other spiritual, adorned with poverty and sanctity, in which they and their followers were included; that an oath at all times was unlawful; that the gospel of Christ, till they appeared, lay hid, and was even lost; with several other tenets. In consequence of the pope's bull, these friars were persecuted in *Sicily*, and four of them were burnt at *Marseilles*. However, they were protected in some places of *Italy*, and especially at *Milan*, by *Mapheo* or *Matthew Viconti*, who was himself accused of being a heretic, and believing erroneously of the resurrection of the dead, and some other articles, of plundering monasteries, violating the chastity of nuns, and stopping the office of the inquisition, on which account the pope renewed the sentence of excommunication pronounced against him and his followers by his archbishop. *Mapheo*, in resentment for this proceeding of the pope, prevailed with *Canis Scaliger*, *Passerini*, and other chiefs of the *Gibellines*, to form a league against him and his party, and appointed *Canis* the general of the alliance, who attacked several cities of the *Guelphs*, while *Mapheo* sent an army, commanded by his son, against *Genoa*. In consequence of this league, hostilities were renewed in *Italy* with great fury; and *Genoa* and its territory for several years, were so exposed to the ravaging of both friends and foes, that, according to *Petrarch*, its shore, which was formerly covered with palaces, appeared a desert^k. In the mean time the pope, being informed that several cities in the ecclesiastical state, encouraged by the league of the *Gibellines*, had expelled the governors appointed by him, and had chosen others, he published a severe edict against them, and likewise excommunicated the family of *Este*, who had accepted the government of *Ferrara*.

A league formed against him by the Gibellines in Italy.

He sends a legate into Italy. A. D. 1319. THE following year he sent his nephew cardinal *Bertrand*, as legate, into *Lombardy*, to assist the *Guelphs* against the *Gibelline* faction; and being informed that the sect of the *Waldenses* began again to appear in *France*, he ordered those convicted of that heresy to be delivered to the secular magistrate. About the same time he renewed the edicts of his predecessors against the *Jews*, and ordered the books of their talmud to be sought out and burnt. He likewise granted a power to some bishops of *Denmark* of taking off the interdict which *Boniface VIII.* had laid upon that kingdom, on account of the imprisonment of the archbishop of *Lunden*.

^k Verba Petrarch. ap. BLOND. D. ii. l. ix.

Mean while, finding that his spiritual arms had no effect upon the *Gibellines* in *Italy*, he sent *Philip* of *Valois*, son of *Charles*, and cousin of the king of *France*, with a body of French troops into *Lombardy*, against *Mapheo*. *Philip*, upon his arrival at *Asti*, was joined by the legate with some horse, and marched from thence to relieve *Vercelli*; but, being opposed by a superior army of the *Gibellines*, he was obliged to halt; and, having a conference with *Galegarius*, *Mapheo*'s eldest son, he was persuaded by him to return to *France*, excusing himself to his father and the king, by alleging the delay of the money and succours promised him by the pope and the king of *Naples* ¹.

A body of French march to the relief of the Guelphs. A D. 1320.

THE sudden departure of *Philip* encouraging the *Gibeline* faction, *John* entered into a stricter alliance with the kings of *France* and *Naples*, and, to supply the expences of the war, assumed to himself the first-fruits of all vacant benefices for three years. At the same time he renewed his anathema against the rebels in *Italy*, and particularly excommunicated *Frederic* king of *Trinacria*, and laid his kingdom under an interdict, because he had not observed the truce appointed by the pope betwixt him and the king of *Naples*, and, upon his return from his expedition against *Genoa*, had seized some of the ecclesiastical revenues in *Sicily* ^m. Soon after *John* returned an answer to the ambassadors of *Poland*, and commissioned the archbishop of *Gnesia*, with two other prelates, to examine the complaints against the *Teutonic* knights, who were accused of unjustly seizing all *Pomerania*. The pope at the same time refused to grant the title of king to *Uladislaus*, lest he should offend the kings of *Bohemia* and *France*; but he declared secretly to the ambassadors, that he would not hinder the *Poles* from using their own right. A few months after he condemned the doctrines of *John a Poliano*, a *Parisian* divine, who asserted, that those who confessed their sins to the monks were likewise bound to confess them over again to their parish-priest. Having published a *Sends* bull against that doctrine, he commissioned other *Franciscans* to go to *Tartary*, *Ethiopia*, *Armenia*, and other eastern nations, writing by them to *George* king of the *Georgians*, and to the princes of *Tartary*, exhorting them to return to the unity of the *Roman* church. He likewise restored the bishop to *Kiovia* in *Russia*, and created a *Dominican* bishop of *Armenia*. Mean while the war still continuing in *Italy*; and *Frederic* king of *Trinacria*, in resentment for the sentence of

The pope excommunicates the king of Trinacria.

1321.

Sends missionaries into Tartary, &c.

1322.

¹ VILLAN. l. ix. c. 108. CORIUS, Par. iii. ^m VILLAN. l. ix. c. 133. FAZEL. D. ii. l. ix.

excommunication denounced against him, granting fresh succours to the *Gibelline* faction, *John* renewed his anathema against *Mapheo Visconti* and his adherents, and promised to confirm the election of *Frederic* duke of *Austria* to the empire, if he would send an army to the assistance of the *Guelphs* in *Italy*. *Frederic* willingly embraced the offer of the pope, and sent his brother *Henry* into *Italy* with 2000 horse; but *Mapheo* represented to him, that, if he aspired to the empire, he was acting against his own interest, by endeavouring to ruin the *Gibellines*, who were only engaged in supporting the rights of the empire; and that, if their faction were extirpated, *Italy* would then become subject to the popes. Upon this representation, *Frederic* wrote to his brother to quit *Italy*; and to appease the pope, who was highly offended at that proceeding, he sent commissaries into *Italy*, to procure a truce betwixt the contending parties, but without any effect, he himself being defeated and taken prisoner a few weeks after by his rival *Lewis* duke of *Bavaria* ⁿ.

Condemns
some doc-
trines of
the Fran-
ciscans.

JOHN in the mean time received an appeal of the *Franciscans* from a sentence of the inquisitor at *Narbonne*, who had accused one of their order as a heretic, for asserting, that *Christ* and his apostles had no property either in common or in part, which opinion was justified by a decree of *Nicolas III*. The pope proposed the affair to the universities and learned men in *Europe*; and, till he should receive their decision, he superseded the decree of *Nicolas*. The *Franciscans* soon after, holding a general chapter at *Perugia*, declared that they adhered to the decree of *Nicolas*; and that to renounce the propriety of all temporal goods was pious and meritorious, as it was following that perfection which was taught by *Christ* and his apostles, and confirmed by their example. The pope, being informed of this determination, published a bull, affirming, that the obstinate asserting of the opinion, that *Christ* and his apostles had no property, was erroneous and heretical; and in another bull he prohibited the *Franciscans* from asking any thing for the future in the name of the *Roman* church ^o. As the *Franciscans* were thus deprived of their usual stile of begging, they

A. D.
1323.

were greatly offended with the pope, and several of them went over to the party of the *Gibellines*, notwithstanding the strength of that faction appeared then on the decline, owing in some measure to the death of *Mapheo Visconti*, which happened a few months before. The pope's general soon after

ⁿ VILLAN. l. ix. c. 174. See also the History of the Empire.

^o SPOND. ANNAL. WADDING. ANNAL. minor. t. iii. hoc an.

defeated

defeated *Mark Viconti*, and in the month of *June* besieged *Milan*. However, the *Gibellines* assembling under the command of count *Berthold*, whom, with other two counts, the emperor had sent into *Italy*, and marching to the relief of the city, the *Guelphs* were obliged to raise the siege, which had continued near two months.

THE pope, in resentment for the assistance given to the *Gibellines* by the emperor, wrote a monitory to him, which he likewise sent to be published in *Germany*, *Italy*, *France*, *England*, and in other kingdoms. In this writing the pope declared, that as *Lewis* of *Bavaria* had, without the approbation of the apostolic see, not only assumed the title of king of the *Romans*, but also usurped the administration of the empire in *Germany* and *Italy*, to the manifest prejudice of the *Roman* church, to whom that right belonged during an interregnum; that as he had assisted the *Viconti*, tho' condemned for heresy, and had likewise aided the other rebels of the church, and done many other things to the detriment of Christianity; he therefore warned him, under pain of excommunication, to desist from all exercise of the functions of an emperor within three months, and not to resume the same without the approbation of the apostolic see. He likewise prohibited any one, of what character or dignity soever, from assisting him in any thing relating to the administration of the empire. About the same time, being informed that the siege of *Genoa*, after continuing five years, was at last raised, he sent for deputies from both the factions in that city, and in vain endeavoured to reconcile them. He sent messengers also to the king of *Servia*, to exhort him to return to the unity of the *Roman* church; renewed the bulls of his predecessors against carrying arms or warlike stores to the *Saracens*; and entered into an alliance with the king of *France* and the *Venetians*, to oppose the progress of the *Turks* in *Syria*.

MEAN while the monitory being published in *Germany*, the emperor sent three messengers to the pope, to know the reasons of his proceeding, and to ask some delay; and, in a diet at *Nuremberg*, drew up a protestation against the assertions contained in the monitory, appealing to the see of *Rome*, and a future general council; and declaring, that the pope himself was a favourer of heresy, as he discouraged penitents to come to confession, and endeavoured to abolish the sovereignty of kings. The deputies, upon their arrival at *Avignon*, pre-

A. D.
1324.

The emperor is excommunicated, and

dep. s. d by the pope.

He publishes a manifesto in his own defence.

tended to believe, that the monitory was a forgery; but, being assured that it was real, they asked a delay of two months, which was granted by the pope, to allow the emperor time to repent. The two months elapsing without any submission on the part of the emperor, *John* declared him fallen under the sentence of excommunication; but granted him three months longer, within which time he ordered him, under pain of deposition, to appear personally, or by his proxies, before the apostolic see. At the same time he declared all those prelates and ecclesiastics, who had acted against the monitory, to have fallen under a sentence of suspension from their office and benefice. The emperor still continuing to despise his fulminations, the pope at length, on the 20th of *July*, denounced a definitive sentence against him, and declared him deprived of all sovereignty which he might pretend to in right, of his election, and summoned him to appear at *Avignon* before the 1st of *October*. Mean while the *Vicenti* in *Italy* having defeated the troops of the church, and taken two of their generals prisoners, *John* renewed the censures against the *Gibellines*, and ordered a new crusade to be preached against them. However, their arms still continued successful, and towards the end of the year they made themselves masters of *Monza*.

THE emperor, upon being informed of the sentence of deposition denounced against him by the pope, resolved vigorously to defend his authority and character; and several of the *Franciscans*, who, upon account of adhering to the primitive institutions of their order, were reckoned schismatics, from their hatred to the pope, repairing to the emperor's court, *Lewis* made use of their pens in defending his cause; and a few months after published a long manifesto, which is preserved in *Aventine*^r, in which he accuses the pope of sowing discord and sedition among all Christians; of publicly boasting, that, when the Christian princes were at war, then the bishop of *Rome* was truly pope; that he would bruise the brazen serpent, meaning the empire of the *Germans*, to dust; and that he would not leave one in *Italy* who acknowledged the empire. He likewise asserted, that he was antichrist, and had the spirit of satan, in allowing himself to be worshipped, which even an angel would not accept of from *St. John*; that the temporal jurisdiction, which the pope possessed, was owing to the liberality, or rather weakness, of the emperors; that, if he was the servant of the servants of God, he ought not to be of all men the most

ambitious of honours and wealth ; that he was a heretic, by condemning the orthodox opinion of the poverty of Christ and his apostles ; from him therefore he appealed to the sentence of a general council (D). The pope, to defend himself from the accusation of heresy, published another bull, explaining his former decrees against the *Franciscans*, many of whom, for adhering to the opinion of the council of *Berugia*, were then burnt as heretics in different parts of the world¹.

NOT finding likewise that ready submission from the prelates of *Germany* that he expected, in publishing his monitory, he resolved to raise up a powerful competitor against the emperor ; he accordingly negotiated with *Leopold*, brother

The king of France, at the desire of the

EYMER. Director. Inquis. Par. ii. qu. 11. ANTON. tit. xxi. c. 5.

(D) This manifesto was supposed to have been written by *John di Gandone* or *Ghent*, and *Marfibus de Menandrino* of *Padua*, the last of whom published a book this year concerning the imperial and pontifical jurisdiction, which he dedicated to the emperor, and intituled, *Defensor Pacis*, or, An advocate for peace. *John* also published a book concerning the ecclesiastical power. They both affirmed, that when Christ paid tribute to *Cæsar*, he paid it as a debt due to the emperor for his civil protection ; therefore the temporal possessions of the church were subject to the emperor. 2dly, That Christ, at his ascension into heaven, left no visible head of his church, and appointed no vicar, nor had *Peter* any more authority than any other of the apostles. 3dly, That it belonged to the emperor to appoint or depose, and punish, the pope, since Christ, as a subject, was crucified by *Pilate* ; and *Marfilius* added,

that, during a vacancy of the apostolic see, the emperor might succeed the pope, and govern the church. 4thly, That all priests, whether the pope, archbishops, or simple priests, according to the institution of Christ, were equal as to authority and jurisdiction ; and that one of them possessed more than another was owing intirely to the gift of the emperor. 5thly, That the whole church united could not insist a coercive punishment upon any one, without the authority of the emperor. In answer to these books, others were likewise published that same year, particularly by the archbishop of *Ravenna*, concerning the jurisdiction of the empire, and the authority of the pope. *Pelagius Abvarus*, a *Spaniard*, and bishop of *Sylves*, published another work in justification of the pope ; and *Peter de Palude*, a *Dominican*, wrote a treatise on the immediate origin of ecclesiastical power (1).

(1) *Possess. Appar. Sac. t. i. Bzov. an. 1327. Præcol. & Gualter. de Hæres. soluar. de Planctu Ecclesiæ t. i. c. 68.*

pope, soli-
cits the
empire.

Frederic
of Austria
is recon-
ciled to the
emperor,
and resigns
in his fa-
vour.

A. D.
1335.

of the duke of *Austria*, in favour of *Charles the Fair*, king of *France*; and it was stipulated, that *Charles* should compel *Lewis* of *Bavaria* to quit his pretensions to the empire; and, after his election, give 30,000 marks of silver to *Leopold*, on condition that his brother, *Frederic* of *Austria*, would likewise quit his claim to the empire. In consequence of this agreement, the pope exerted himself to procure the votes of the electors in *Germany*; and *Leopold*, having solicited the princes in the interest of his brother, and receiving a favourable answer from others that had hitherto embraced no party, wrote to the king of *France*, desiring him to repair to *Bar-sur-Aube*, on the confines of the empire, to have a conference with the *German* princes, who had promised to go thither. *Charles* accordingly went to that city with a splendid retinue, but, to his great disappointment, found only duke *Leopold*. This affront greatly cooled the ardour of the king of *France*; and, notwithstanding the pope and *Leopold* assured him, that a little money would procure him the interest of a great many princes, who had but a weak attachment to *Lewis* of *Bavaria*, on account of his being excommunicated, yet *Charles* refused to concern himself any farther in the affair, and intirely dropt his pretensions. The pope was soon after greatly surpris'd with the news of an accommodation betwixt the emperor and his competitor *Frederic* of *Austria*; *Frederic*, in consideration of his renouncing all pretensions to the empire, being set at liberty, and not only allowed to retain the title of king of the *Romans*, but also appointed to govern *Germany* during the emperor's absence in *Italy*, whither he intended to march with an army to the assistance of the *Gibellines* ^u. As this agreement intirely broke the measures of the pope, he immediately declared it null and void, absolved *Frederic* from the obligation of his oath, and prevailed with several electors to deny their assent to the accommodation, asserting, that neither of the competitors had a right to resign in favour of the other. To support the expences of the war in *Italy*, he likewise solicited the payment of the penny of *St. Peter* in the kingdoms of *Scotland*, *Sweden*, *Norway*, *Portugal*, and *Sicily*; but in *Poland*, instead of the usual tax of three-pence a measure of oats for each house, he only exacted a penny, because the

^u VILLAN. l. ix. c. 207. ap. MURATOR, t. xiii. p. 561.

^v Idem, c. 293. HOESEM, de Gest. Pont. Leodien. l. ii. c. 10, Chron. Aulæ Reg. c. 15. apud Scriptor, rer. Boem.

Kingdom was weakened by the revolt of *Silesia* to the king of *Bohemia* ^w.

ABOUT this time he likewise condemned some propositions of *Peter John Olive*, a *Franciscan*, who, in his comments on *St. Matthew's* gospel, the canonical epistles, and the revelations, had advanced some doctrines which were interpreted by the schismatic *Franciscans* to favour their opinion (E). The pope, to prevent the propagation of those doctrines into the distant provinces, published a bull, denouncing an anathema against the monks, of whatever order, who should dare to go beyond seas without letters patent from their superiors, charging the superiors not to grant those letters but to men of learning and experience. At the ^{The esta-} same time, at the request of the *Dominicans*, he granted a ^{blissment} power to the general of their order to appoint a vicar over of the ^{ciety of} all the monks who were employed in preaching the gospel among the infidels, from whence is generally dated the ^{missiona-} original of the society of missionaries ^{ries}; tho' some refer it to the time of *Innocent IV.* 72 years before this period ^v. This year likewise, *John* being informed that the heretics, who

^w BZÖV. Pol. hoc ann.

^x SPOND. Annal. hoc anno.

^y WADDING. t. iv. an. 1399.

(E) *Peter John Olive* was born in *France*, and died in 1297, in the 50th year of his age. In his youth he wrote a book in praise of the virgin *Mary*, which was condemned during the pontificate of *Nicolas III.* as containing some things too extravagant. He was afterwards frequently accused by the brothers of his order, whose resentment he had drawn upon himself by his severe reproofs of their luxury, and his endeavours to recall them to the poverty and rigour of their first institution. After his death his body was dug up, he was condemned as a heretic, and his writings were burnt, and remained prohibited till the time of *Sixtus IV.* who, having

ordered them to be examined, declared they contained nothing expressly contrary to the catholic faith. The propositions condemned by *John* are mentioned by *Emmericus*, in his directory of the inquisition, under 22 heads; and the chief of them are, "That the pope was the mystical antichrist; that *St. Francis* was the angel in the revelations, said to have the mark of the living God, and that his rule was the true gospel; that the perfect state of the church began with *St. Francis*, and that Christ and his apostles had no property either in common or in particular, but had only the usufruct of what they enjoyed"

(2). •

(2) *Direct. Inquis. Pass.* iv. ix. *Wadding. Annal. Claren.* in 5. *Tribul. ordin. Anton.* tit. xxiv. c. 9. *sch.* 11. & 13.

had been expelled from other provinces, had taken refuge in *Bosnia*, he wrote to *Charles* king of *Hungary*, and to *Stephen* prince of *Bosnia*, desiring them to extirpate the heretics, and to give their assistance and protection to the *Franciscans*.

The pope
is invited
to Rome.

A. D.
1326.

THE following year, the *Romans*, having expelled their nobility, and appointed *Sciarra Colonna* as their governor, and settled likewise a council of 52 citizens, sent ambassadors to the pope, desiring him, as his predecessors had done, to come and reside in their city, otherwise they would consult for themselves as they thought proper. Whether they really desired his presence is uncertain; for about the same time they sent deputies both to the emperor and the king of *Naples*, acknowledging their submission to each of those princes. *John* replied, that he desired greatly to comply with their request; but excused himself on account of his great age, and the danger of the journey; but, to oppose the designs of the emperor in *Italy*, he again declared the king of *Naples* vicar of the empire in that kingdom; appointed cardinal *John d'Orsini*, a *Roman*, as legate in *Tuscany*, *Campania*, and *Sardinia*; and created *James Sabellus* and *Stephen Colonna* as consuls in *Rome*. The legate, upon his arrival at *Florence*, excommunicated *Castruccio Castracani*, commonly called tyrant of *Lucca*, and chief of the *Gibellines* in *Tuscany*. The bishop of *Arezzo*, who adhered to that party, was likewise excommunicated and deposed.

The emperor
enters
Italy;

1327.

and is
crowned
at Milan.

SOON after, the emperor arriving with a small army at *Trent*, he was immediately joined by the chiefs of the *Gibeline* faction, and a great number of ecclesiastics of all degrees, particularly by the *Franciscans*, who were greatly irritated against the pope. He there held a council, which drew up 16 articles against the pope; and, having condemned him as guilty of heresy, excommunicated him and all his adherents. From *Trent* *Lewis* proceeded to *Milan*, where he was crowned with the iron crown by the deposed bishop of *Arezzo*, together with the bishops of *Reggio* and *Brescia*; the archbishop of *Milan*, who was of the opposite party, being then a refugee at *Genoa*. Having taken the government of *Milan* from the *Vicenti*, on a suspicion of treason, he held a diet at *Orzi*, in the territory of *Brescia*, where he created three new bishops, and received a subsidy of 200,000 florins of gold. The emperor then advancing to *Pisa* and *Lucca*, the *Romans*, who had received a denial from the pope, invited him to their city, while the legate again re-

² SPOND. Annal. l. ix. c. 348. l. x. c. 3.
c. 15.

² Idem,

renewed the sentence of excommunication against him in the city of *Florence*. Though the emperor, in the diet held at *Trent*, had excommunicated the pope, yet, according to *Cuspinianus* and *Trithemius*, he sent to *Avignon*, and desired *John* to confer upon him the imperial crown^b. The ambassadors were treated with ignominy by the pope, who, on the 20th of *October*, pronounced a definitive sentence of excommunication and deposition against the emperor, ordered the electors to proceed to a new election, and prohibited any one, of what dignity soever, from giving him any assistance^c. About the same time he likewise excommunicated *Marsilius* of *Padua* and *John di Gandone*, and condemned the errors contained in their books^d. His legate, in the mean time, with the prince of *Morea*, entered *Rome* by surprize, and took possession of the *Leonine* part of the city; but the emperor's party ringing the alarum-bell of the capitol, the *Neapolitans* were next morning expelled with great loss.

Soon after the emperor arrived with his army at *Rome*; and a few days after held an assembly in the capitol, in which he thanked the *Romans* for their kindness, and promised to defend and enlarge their privileges. They in return created him a senator and captain of the people for one year, and chose four of the most noble of their citizens to assist at his coronation; which ceremony was performed in the church of *St. Peter*, on the 17th of *January*, with great magnificence, *Lewis* being consecrated by two schismatic bishops, and crowned by *Sciarra Colonna*. After his coronation, the emperor created a great many knights, and caused three imperial decrees to be read concerning the catholic faith, the honouring of the clergy, and the protection of widows and orphans. Upon the approach of the emperor to *Rome*, all the clergy, that adhered to the pope, retired from the city, which was then put under an interdict; and *John*, being ignorant that the emperor was already crowned at *Rome*, about the end of *January* published a bull for a crusade against *Lewis* of *Bavaria* and his adherents. This fulmination was too late to have any effect; for the emperor, having now secured the affection of the *Romans*, was resolved in his turn to depose his antagonist. Accordingly, about the middle of *April* he held a solemn assembly in *St. Peter's* church; and ordered a crier to call out three times, if any person would undertake the defence of the priest *James of Sabert*, who called himself pope *John*. Nobody making

^b CUSPIN. de Cæsar. TRITHEM. in utroque Chron. VIL-
LAN. c. 68. ^c SPOND. Annal.

answer, an abbot of *Germany* read a long sentence against the pope, whom he accused of being a deserter of his see, of unjustly claiming the disposal of all ecclesiastical benefices, which he conferred by simony on unworthy persons, of raising dangerous schisms and wicked heresies in the church of God, of oppressing the cardinals and other prelates, of confounding the temporal and spiritual power, and of deciding concerning the poverty of Christ and his apostles contrary to the catholic opinion; the emperor therefore pronounced a sentence of deposition against the said *James*, whom he left to be punished by the secular power; and condemned all his adherents, of what rank or quality soever, to the confiscation of their effects, and the punishment of death. A few days after the emperor published some laws about the future popes, ordaining that they should not be absent from *Rome* above three months in a year, nor go above two days journey from the city, without leave of the people; and if, after they were recalled three times, they refused to return, a new one was to be elected. He then, with the consent of the *Romans*, created a *Franciscan* antipope, by the name of *Nicolas V.* who, a few days after, made a promotion of seven cardinals, appointed governors in the cities of the ecclesiastical state, and sent legates into the different provinces of Christendom. *Nicholas* likewise published a bull, confirming the deposition of *John*, and declaring his adherents guilty of heresy.

Deposes the pope, and creates an antipope.

LEWIS, after these proceedings at *Rome*, marched against the king of *Naples*; but being disappointed in his succours from the *Gibellines* and the king of *Sicily*, he returned soon after to the city, where his interest was so greatly fallen, that, in a mutiny against his troops, the party of the *Guelphs* had the advantage^f. Finding that he could not with safety continue any longer at *Rome*, he left that city on the 4th of *August* with his antipope, and marched to *Viterbo*, and from thence to *Fodi*. Upon his departure from *Rome*, the pope's legate entered the city, and annulled all the acts of the emperor and *Peter di Corbaria* the antipope, the *Romans* testifying their consent with great exclamations, and the boys even digging up the bodies of the *Germans*, and throwing them into the *Tyber*. *Lewis*, in the mean time, marching to *Pisa*, at the intreaty of *Michael Cesena*, general of the *Franciscans*, and *William Oakham*, an *Englishman*, published his sentence against the pope, who again excommunicated^h the

^e VILLAN. c. 68.
LAN. c. 76,

^f RAINALD, ad an. 1328. VIL-

emperor and his adherents, particularly *Cesena* and *Oakham*; and was so exasperated against the *Franciscans*, that, according to *Antoninus*, he deliberated upon suppressing the whole order.[†] *The pope deliberates upon sup-*

THE interest of the emperor daily declining in *Italy*, the following year the march of *Ancona* and the whole patrimony of the church returned to the obedience of the see of *Rome*; the city of *Milan* likewise submitted to the pope; and *John Viconti*, the brother of *Matthew*, resigned his dignity of cardinal, which he had received from the antipope, and was created bishop of *Novara*. The emperor, being in great distress for want of money, and finding himself deserted by the *Gibellines*, marched towards *Trent*, to hold a council with the chiefs of his party in *Italy*, and the nobles in *Germany*; but being informed of the death of the duke of *Austria*, he pretended this as a reason for his quitting *Italy*, and accordingly marched with his army into *Bavaria*.^h In the mean time the pope again excommunicated *Cesena*, and appointed the bishop of *Tusculum* vicar of the order of *Franciscans*, till a new general should be elected. He likewise answered the libels of *Cesena*, which answers were examined by *Oakham*; and, in return, his objections were answered by frier *James Fornerius*, who had been lately promoted to the dignity of cardinal.ⁱ This same year *John* wrote to *Robert Bruce*, king of *Scotland*, allowing him and his successors to be crowned by the bishop of *St. Andrew's* or *Glasgow*.^k He likewise offered great rewards for apprehending the antipope, by which means that unhappy person was discovered in the house of count *Boniface* at *Pisa*, where he had concealed himself for several months. Finding himself without resource from the emperor or his party, he resolved to throw himself on the clemency of the pope, and voluntarily surrendered to the archbishop of *Pisa* and the bishop of *Lucca*, who, having received a commission from the pope, absolved him upon his abjuring certain articles prescribed to him by his holiness.^l *The antipope is apprehended.*

A. D.
1329.

A. D.
1330.

DURING these transactions in *Italy*, the pope was greatly alarmed at *Avignon* by the approach of *William* count of *Hainault*, the emperor's father-in-law, with 1800 horse, who, in consequence of a vow, proposing to march into *Granada* against the *Moors*, was desirous of receiving the benediction of the pope. *John*, greatly suspicious that the count intended to do him an injury, sent for the nobles in

[†] ANTON. sect. 15. SPOND. Annal.

^h VILLAN. c. 146.

ⁱ EYMER. Direct. Inquis. Par. ii. qu. 15—17.

^k SPOND.

ex Regest. Vatic.

^l RAINALD. an. 1330. WADDING.

cop. an.

the

The king
of France
obtains the
tythes of
all the ec-
clesiastical
revenues
in his
kingdom.

the neighbourhood, armed his retinue, and prohibited the count from entering *Provence*, under pain of excommunication, absolving him likewise from his vow, on condition that he returned home ^m. *John*, however, a few weeks after, received a visit from the king of *France*, with whom he had some secret conferences, relating, as it was afterwards known, to the wars in *Italy*, and to an expedition into the *Holy Land*, for which last purpose *Philip* obtained the tythes of all ecclesiastical revenues in his kingdom. About the same time *John* received an embassy from *Germany*, proposing a reconciliation between him and the emperor, who offered to abandon the antipope, to retract his appeal, annul all that had been done against the holy see, and acknowledge himself justly excommunicated, provided the pope would acknowledge him as emperor. *John* rejected these generous preliminaries with great disdain; and, in his letter to the king of *Bohemia*, ordered him and the other electors to proceed to a new election. About the same time the antipope arrived at *Avignon* from *Pisa*, and appeared in a public consistory with a rope about his neck, begging absolution from the pope. Having publicly made a long confession of his crimes, and a profession of faith agreeable to the tenets of the *Roman* church, *John* confirmed the absolution which he had received at *Pisa*, but confined him as in honourable prisoner in the palace, where he lived three years, and, at his death, was buried in the church of the *Franciscans* ⁿ. The pope likewise this year sent a form of the catholic doctrine to the emperor of the *Tartars*, wrote to the *Armenians* to continue in the unity of the *Roman* church, granted a great many privileges and indulgences to the *Dominicans* and *Franciscans*, who were preaching the gospel among the infidels, and ordered the inquisitors of the faith to proceed against those who practised magic, or other unlawful arts ^o.

A. D.
1331.

THE following *January* he again renewed his anathema against *Michael de Cesena*; and prohibited, under severe penalties, *Oakham*, *Bonagrata*, and *Thalheim* or *Chalbeim*, from obeying him. This decree of the pope was published in all the houses of the order of the *Franciscans* by the general, who, in a general chapter of the order at *Perpignan*, confirmed the sentence against the schismatics, published two years before in the chapter at *Paris*; and condemned *Cesena*, *Thalheim*, *Francis de Esculo*, *Oakham*, and *Bonagrata* to perpetual imprisonment, on account of their contumacy.

^m VILLAN. C. 155.
Annal.

ⁿ Idem, c. 162.

^o SPOND.

and of the heresies which they publicly taught. Mean while the king of *Bohemia* having entered *Italy* with an army as vicar of the empire, and conquered the greatest part of *Lombardy*, his great successes equally alarmed the emperor and the faction of the *Guelphs*. *Lewis*, being informed that he had had a conference with the pope's legate, was apprehensive lest he should be prevailed upon by the pope to aspire to the empire; while the *Guelphs*, imagining that the pope had secretly invited the king into *Italy*, and connived at his conquests, entered into a league against him and the legate, in which they were joined by the *Gibellines*, who believed that the king did not act so much to serve the emperor, as to aggrandize his own family. The king of *Bohemia* having returned to *Germany*, to repel some enemies that had invaded *Bohemia* in his absence, the emperor sent two of his secretaries, as ambassadors to the pope, to treat of a reconciliation with the holy see, but without any effect. Soon after, according to *Villani*, *John* received an embassy from the king of *France*, informing him, that he intended to undertake an expedition into the *Holy Land*, and desiring, for that purpose, the tythes of all Christendom for six years, the right of conferring all ecclesiastical benefices in his kingdom, the kingdom of *Italy* for his brother *Charles*, and the title of king of *Arles* and *Vanne* for his own son; which extravagant demands, if they were really proposed, were made, as *Spondanus* observes, to excuse the king from his vow.

JOHN, still intent upon opposing the emperor, wrote to the king of *Bohemia* and the duke of *Austria*, exhorting them to abandon his party. His solicitations at last prevailed with the duke of *Austria*, who not only deserted the interest of the emperor, but acknowledged himself the vassal of the pope, and that he held his hereditary dominions of the holy see. But the king of *Bohemia*, hoping that the great confusions in *Italy* would induce the pope to hearken to an accommodation, went to *Avignon*, and solicited him in behalf of the emperor. *John* remained inflexible to all the solicitations of the king, notwithstanding *Lewis*, at the intreaty of the king of *France*, sent another embassy to him to treat of peace. He even deposed the bishop of *Castello*, for reporting in *Germany*, that the emperor was reconciled to the holy see, and made an offer of the empire to the king of *Bohemia*, who rejected that proposition, and soon after quitted *Avignon*.

† Bzov. hoc an. 9. VILLAN. c. 196. ap. Murator.
xiii p. 720. STRAB. Annal.

*The pope is
accused of
professing
an heresi-
cal doc-
trine.*

A. D.

1333.

*He ex-
plains his
opinion in
a catholic
sense.*

THE following year *John* raised a new set of enemies against himself, by asserting, in a discourse at *Avignon*, that the souls of the happy or damned are not perfectly blessed or miserable till after the resurrection, when they shall have again received their bodies. Though this opinion seemed to have been embraced by *Justin*, *Irenaus*, *Origen*, and other antient fathers both *Greeks* and *Latins*, yet it raised a great many adversaries against the pope, not only among the cardinals and prelates, but among all ranks of men, especially the *Dominicans*, some of whom were so zealous in opposing it, as to draw punishments upon themselves. But many of the *Franciscans* declared for the opinion of the pope; and *Gerard*, general of the order, preached in favour of that doctrine at *Paris*. His discourses occasioned disturbances in that city; and the king, having received the opinion of the doctors, ordered him publicly to retract his doctrine, otherwise he would be burnt as a heretic. *Philip* likewise wrote to the pope, signifying to his holiness, that it did not become a pope to propose doubtful questions, but rather to decide those that were proposed by others. *John* excused himself, and declared, that he had not mentioned that opinion by way of assertion, but as a probability, and a subject of dispute, with an intention to have the opinion of the learned; and had therefore ordered the cardinals, prelates, and doctors, after diligent inquiry, to give their judgment of that doctrine. The pope, by explaining his opinion, and declaring that he never intended to maintain a doctrine contrary to the catholic faith, stopped the clamour that was raised against him. However, the schismatic *Franciscans*, or *Fratricelli*, continued to exclaim against him as a heretic, not only on account of his opinion concerning the state of departed souls, but likewise for his decrees against their doctrine of the poverty of Christ and his apostles, which they founded on that declaration of our Saviour, *He that does not sell all that he has, and give to the poor, cannot be my disciple.*

MEAN while the king of *Bohemia*, having returned to *Italy*, joined his troops to those commanded by the league, but, being defeated by the confederates near *Ferrara*, he thought proper to evacuate *Italy*, and to abandon all his conquests in *Lombardy*. The pope, being likewise soon after informed, that the emperor, fearing to die out of the communion of the church, had consented to resign his empire, and return to a private station, he wrote a letter to him, ex-

horting him to put such a laudable design in execution ; and even sent two legates to *Munich* to receive his abdication, ordering them, in case of his refusal, to absolve the princes and barons of the empire from their oath of allegiance to *Lewis*. The legates, upon their arrival at *Munich*, were not allowed to enter upon any negotiation ; which so exasperated the pope, that he wrote to the bishops of *Bremen*, *Magdeburgh*, and *Constance*, to publish new anathemas against the emperor and his adherents, and excite several princes to ravage his hereditary dominions. About the same time he commissioned the archbishop of *Rouen* to give the cross to the king of *France*, and to the kings of *Navarre* and *Bohemia*, and to many other nobles who were then at *Paris*. The emperor, in the mean time, in order to oppose the designs of the pope, resolved to conclude a peace with *Robert* king of *Naples*, and to call a general council, to proceed against *John* as a heretic ; for which purpose he entered into a secret negotiation with cardinal *Neapoleo d'Orsini*, who was likewise offended with the pope, because, contrary to his promise, he had resided in *France*.

The emperor proposes to call a general council to depose the pope.

BEFORE the emperor could execute his design, his adversary was removed by death, which happened to him on the 4th of *December*, at *Avignon*. *John*, being sensible of the great scandal he had raised by his doctrine of the state of departed souls, on the 3d of *December* sent for the cardinals into his chamber, and, in their presence, revoked his opinion of that doctrine ; and submitted all questions, upon which he had either discoursed or written, to the determination of the church and his successors. Having confirmed this declaration by a bull, he died the next day, leaving behind him an immense treasure ; *Villani* affirming, upon the credit of his brother, who was merchant to the pope, and informed by the officers who assisted at the weighing of it, that it amounted in money and jewels to 25 millions of florins of gold. This sum is greatly lessened by other authors ; but, whatever it was, according to *Villani*, he acquired it by reserving to himself the conferring of benefices through all Christendom, under pretence of preventing simony, though it appears that he himself did not bestow them for nothing. He likewise reserved the annates, or first year's revenues, of all new collated benefices, which were very numerous during his pontificate, as he generally supplied vacancies by transporting the

John died at Avignon.

* PROT. LUCCLAS, Hist. Eccl. Inst. l. xxiv. c. 42. * MAT. VILLAN. l. vii. c. 2. " RAINALD. ad an. 1324. * WADDING. & BRONKHORST. an. VILLAN. l. xi. c. 20.

incumbents from other benefices. He is also said to have instituted the tribunal of the twelve chaplains of the pope, called *Rota Auditores*, which was to determine appeals from all the parts of Christendom * (F).

Cardinal
Fournier
is elected
pope, and

takes the
name of
Benedict
XII.

A. D.
1335.

A FEW days after the death of *John*, the cardinals, to the number of 24, went into the conclave to chuse a successor. They divided, as usual, into parties; and cardinal *Silonna*, who was at the head of the weakest faction, proposed *John Raimund*, cardinal bishop of *Porta*, who was approved of by the other party, on condition that he would promise not to go to *Rome*. As he refused to agree to this condition, some of the conclave carelessly proposed *Jan's Fournier*, a *Cistercian* monk, and the lowest of the order of cardinals, who was thereupon immediately elected, he himself being astonished at their choice, and calling out, *that they had chosen an ass*. He was consecrated on the 1st of *January*, and took the name of *Benedict XII.* bestowing upon the cardinals 100,000 florins of gold, and, according to *Nauclerus*, sending 50,000 to repair the churches of *Rome*. He immediately sent letters to all the Christian princes, except the emperor and the king of *Sicily*, informing them of his elevation. He likewise denounced an anathema against the *Fratricelli*; revoked the benefices granted by his predecessor, if the incumbents were not in peaceable possession of them; and reserved to himself the bestowing of all the benefices that became vacant at his court, or within two days journey thereof. About the same time he also sent *Bertrand*, archbishop of *Yverdon*, to the *Romans*, who were persuaded by him to govern the city under the name of the pope. Being desirous likewise of extirpating heresies, he wrote to the

* POLYD. de rer. invent. lib. vi. c. 12. CIACON. in Joannem XXII.

† NAUCLER. Gen. 25.

(F) *John XXII.* added a 3d crown to the pontifical tiara. The first crown worn by the popes was sent by *Ciovis* king of *France* as a present to St. *John de Lateran*, and was placed by pope *Hormisdas*, about the year 515, upon his own head, above the cap which he usually wore. His successors, till *Forniface VIII.* used the single

crown; but that pope, on the occasion of his disputes with *Philip the Fair*, king of *France*, assumed a double crown, to signify his claim to both the spiritual and temporal authority. At last *John* added a third crown to the tiara, in which form it has been worn by all his successors (1).

(1) Hist. de Philip de Valois, l. 11.

king of *Bohemia* and the bishop of *Ohmutz* to proceed against those who published any doctrines contrary to the faith of the church of *Rome*. Mean while the wars betwixt the two factions still continued to desolate *Italy*; and, as the authority of the emperor was disregarded, each powerful prince attacked his weaker neighbour, for the enlargement of his territory. The emperor, to recover his authority in *He re-* that kingdom, sent an embassy to the pope, to treat of a reconciliation with the holy see; but, the pope insisting upon the emperor's abdication, nothing was effected. *Benedict*, from the emperor, however, not having the same animosity to *Lewis* as his predecessor, was not active in raising enemies against him, but contented himself with the formality of publishing the sentence of excommunication against him and his adherents.

THE following year, *Benedict* having, together with the publishes a cardinals and doctors, examined the opinion of his predecessor concerning the beatific vision, published the recantation of *John*, with a commentary of his own, to establish the catholic doctrine, and to clear the reputation of his predecessor. He therefore declared, that the souls of those who die free from guilt, or after death are purged from their sins, and likewise the souls of children, who, having received baptism, die before they arrive at the use of free-will, immediately after death, or the purgation above-mentioned, were admitted into the presence of God. A few weeks after, the embassadors of the emperor again arrived at *Avignon*, to negotiate a peace with the pope, having full power from *Lewis*, who offered to revoke all that he had done against *John XXII*. to annul the sentence published by *Henry VII*. and himself against *Robert* king of *Naples*, and several other articles greatly in favour of the see of *Rome*. As the pope gave a favourable reception to the ambassadors, the emperor soon after sent others with further concessions. But the negotiation was prevented from coming to a favourable conclusion by the intrigues of the kings of *Naples*, *Bohemia*, and *France*, which last being threatened with a war from the king of *England*, was afraid lest the emperor, after his reconciliation with the holy see, should give assistance to *Edward III*. his brother-in-law. The king of *Bohemia*, who the year before had contracted an alliance with *France*, was merely in the interest of *Philip*; and therefore wrote to the pope, that he, with the assistance of some other nobles, proposed to elect another king of the *Romans*. The interest of those princes with the cardinal being superior to that of

the emperor, the negotiation was broke off, and the embassadors of the emperor returned to *Germany*^a. The pope, being at this time desirous to prevent a war betwixt the kings of *France* and *England*, wrote to the emperor, to turn him from his alliance with *Edward*; but being likewise offended with the king of *France*, for neglecting his expedition into the *Holy Land*, he revoked the grant of the tythes which *Philip* had obtained from his predecessor. He also laboured to reform the discipline of the church, particularly of the *Benedictines*, *Cisterians*, and regular canons of *St. Augustin*. He restrained the *Dominicans* from preaching promiscuously, and from receiving confessions in the streets and public roads, excommunicated the *Bolognese* for refusing to submit to the church, and confirmed the sentence of excommunication of the bishop of *Wratisslaw* against the king of *Bohemia*, for unjustly seizing and possessing a castle belonging to that bishoprick^b.

The pope
endeavours in
vain to
reconcile
the kings of
France
and *Eng-*
land.

As hostilities had already commenced betwixt *France* and *England* in *Gascony* and *Xaintonge*, and the emperor, together with the *German* princes, had entered into a league with *Edward* at *Cologne*, the pope endeavoured to put a stop to the further progress of the war, and sent two legates into *France* and *England*, to treat of an accommodation. The legates were received with great respect at *Paris*; but *Edward* would not allow them to enter *England*, but sent deputies to treat with them on the continent, where, after several conferences, nothing was concluded on. *Benedict*, finding the king of *England* inflexible, wrote to the emperor, exhorting him not to engage in the war against *France*. But *Lewis* not returning a favourable answer to this letter, the pope wrote to all the faithful, prohibiting them from entering into alliance with *Lewis*. Soon after he received an embassy from the king of *England*, who desired leave to enter into an alliance with the emperor; but *Benedict* refused to give his consent, and, not being certain that the league was already concluded, he prohibited him from entering into any treaty with the enemy of the church. *Lewis*, however, being resolved to break with the king of *France*, wrote to the pope, complaining of that prince for having seized several fiefs of the empire, and desiring the assistance of his holiness in obliging *Philip* to restore what he had usurped. *Benedict* returned no answer to *Lewis*, but informed the king of *France* of the emperor's intention, and therefore

^a VILLAN. l. xi. c. 54.

^b BZOV. l. c. an. VILLAN. c. 60. MICHOV. l. iv. c. 22. CURYUS in ANN. X. Siles.

intreated him earnestly to a reconciliation with the king of England.

A FEW months afterwards *Benedict* receiving an embassy from several bishops of *Germany*, soliciting him to be reconciled to the emperor, he declared to them, that unless *Lewis* made a peace with the king of *France*, he could not give him absolution, as *Philip* had threatened to use him worse than his predecessors had done *Nicolas*, if he should absolve the emperor without his consent. The ambassadors returning without obtaining their purpose, the *German* princes, in defence of their own privileges, in a diet at *Frankfort*, published a perpetual edict, declaring, that whoever was elected king of the *Romans* by the majority of the electors, was thereby real king or emperor of the *Romans*, and did not need the consent or the approbation of the pope; and whoever dared to oppose that decree, should be accounted guilty of treason. A copy of this decree was sent to the pope, who, according to the relation of *Dr. Albert* of *Strasburgh*, the messenger, seemed not to be greatly offended, but sent a nuncio to the emperor, desiring him to send ambassadors to *Avignon*, to treat of an accommodation with the holy see. About the same time *Benedict* being informed that the king of *England* had assumed the title of vicar of the empire, and was about to march into *France* with a powerful army, threatened him with excommunication if he did not resign that title. Soon after, hearing that the *English* army had retreated without any action, he again wrote to the king, exhorting him to a peace with *Philip*, and offering himself as mediator. This year also, according to *Surita*, he sent two legates into *Sicily*, who laid that kingdom under an interdict, because the *Sicilians* had refused, since the death of *Frederic*, to return to the obedience of the king of *Naples*.

THE following year, the king of *Arragon* arriving at *Avignon*, *Benedict* gave him the investiture of *Sardinia* and *Corfica*, but refused to confirm his claims to the islands of *Majorca* and *Minorca*. About the same time he received an embassy from *Andronicus*, emperor of *Constantinople*, offering to treat of an union with the *Latin* church, on condition that the chief cities of the empire possessed by the *Turks* should be recovered by the *Latins* from the infidels, and restored to the *Greeks*; and a general council should be appointed, where the *Greeks* might have liberty to defend the

ALBERT. Argent. Chron. p. 129.
dict. l. iii. FACET. D. ii. c. 9.

SURIT. In-

and sells
the title of
vicar of
the empire
to several
nobles in
Lombardy.

A. D.
1340.

doctrine of the procession of the Holy Spirit. *Benedict* answered, that, if the *Greeks* would agree to the union, the princes of the west would then give their assistance against the *Turks*. He then dismissed the ambassadors, because they declared, that they had no commission from the patriarchs, but were only sent privately by the emperor. While *Alberto Visconti* dying at *Milan*, his brother *Matteo* succeeded to the principality; and the power of the emperor being discredited in *Italy*, he was reconciled to the holy see, and purchased the title of vicar of the empire from the pope for 50,000 florins of gold, and a yearly tribute of 10,000 *e*. His example was imitated by the other princes in *Lombardy*, who, being reconciled to the pope, acknowledged the empire to be vacant, and obtained the sanction of the apostolic see for their usurpations. *Mastino della Scala*, or *Scaliger*, obtained the vicarage of *Verona* and *Vicenza* for a yearly tribute of 5,000 florins; and, in like manner, *William Gonzaga* was appointed vicar of *Mantua* and *Reggio*; *Albert Carrara* of *Padua*; *Opizzo Este* of *Ferrara*, *Modena*, and *Argenta*, in consideration of certain sums of money paid to the pope; on account of which contracts *Villani* exclaims, “O avaricious and merenary church, how art thou degenerated from the good, humble, poor, and holy, institution of Christ!” The city of *Bologna*, irritating the princes of *Lombardy*, the following year submitted to the pope, and, promising to pay an annual tribute to the holy see, was absolved from the sentence of excommunication and interdict.

1341.
The emperor
enters
into an alliance
with the
king of
France.

ABOUT the same time *Benedict* being informed that *Margaret*, heiress of *Carinthia* and *Tyrol*, had obtained a pretended divorce from her husband *John*, the king of *Bohemia*’s son, and married *Lewis* marquis of *Brandenburgh*, son to the emperor, he annulled the marriage, because the divorce had been illegally obtained, and no dispensation granted of her consanguinity with *Lewis*. He likewise excommunicated the count of *Hainault*, and laid his province under an interdict, because he had rebelled against his sovereign the king of *France*; and entered into a league with *Edward* king of *England*: Soon after these two princes having agreed to a truce till the middle of the following summer, they intreated the pope to send two legates to *Arras*, who, with their plenipotentiaries, might in the mean time negotiate a peace. Not long after, the king of *France* having prevailed with the emperor to renounce his alliance with the king of *England*, and

* VILLANI, c. 100. ap. Murat. t. xiii. p. 82.
† Idem, c. 108—111.

† Idem, ut

to enter into a treaty with him, he sent ambassadors to *Avignon*, to excuse his proceeding to the pope. *Benedict* declared, that he had long desired that accommodation; however, he blamed the king for treating with *Lewis* before he was reconciled to the holy see. About the same time he prevailed with the kings of *France* and *England* to continue the truce another year; and not many months after he died at *Avignon*, on the 25th of *April*, in the 1342nd year and 4th month of his pontificate.

A. D.
1342.
Benedict
dies at
Avignon.

THE cardinals, according to a constitution of *Gregory X.* having mourned nine days for pope *Benedict*, entered the conclave on the 7th of *May*, and unanimously chose cardinal *Peter Proger*, a *Benedictine* monk, whom *Petrarch*, his cotemporary, calls a most learned pope. *Peter*, having assumed the name of *Clement VI.* was consecrated in the church of the *Dominicans*, on the feast of *Whitsuntide*; and soon after received an embassy from the *Romans*, intreating him to come to *Rome*, and to appoint the celebration of the jubilee for the middle of the century (G). *Clement* declared, that he could not with safety then return to *Italy*, as the emperor was threatening to enter that kingdom with an army, and had appointed vicars in many of the cities of the ecclesiastical state, in return for those of *Lombardy* that had received them from the pope. He excused himself likewise on account of the differences betwixt *England* and *France*, which he desired to accommodate. He accordingly sent two legates to these princes, who prolonged the truce for two years longer, in hopes of concluding a peace. Two legates were also sent into *Lombardy*, to form a league among the cities to oppose the emperor, against whom *Clement* ordered the anathemas of his predecessor to be again renewed; and because the archbishop of *Mentz* refused to publish them, he cited him to appear at *Avignon*. The following year, in the month of *January* *Clement* published a bull, appointing a jubilee to be held at *Rome* on the 50th year from the beginning of the century. Soon after he renewed all the censures of *John X.* against the emperor, whom he declared guilty of contumacy, and deprived of all dignity and honour;

Clem. VI.
elected
pope.

He excuses
himself
from going
to Rome

but, at the
desire of
the Ro-
mans, he
appoints a

^a PETRARCH. l. ii. rer. memor. c. i.

(G) *Petrarch*, who, the year before, had been created poet laureate by the king of *Naples*, was one of the deputies; and on his arrival at *Avignon*, in the name of the city and church of *Rome*, presented the pope with a poem upon his promotion.

jubilee to
be held in
Rome:

A. D.

1343.

and wrote to the archbishop of *Triers*, and the other elec-
tors, to proceed to a new election. About the same time he
entered into an alliance with the king of *Cyprus* and the *Vene-*
tians against the *Turks*; and, having ordered a crusade to
be preached against those infidels, he exhorted the knights
of *Rhodes* to arm against them, appointing *Hem* patriarch
of *Constantinople*, as his legate, to have the com-
mand of the expedition. *Clement* likewise appointed a cer-
tain sum to be raised from all the vacant benefices in *Eng-*
land, as a revenue for two cardinals; but being informed,
that the agents of the cardinals had been imprisoned by the
king's officers, and afterwards ignominiously expelled the
kingdom, he wrote to the king, complaining heavily of the
indignity offered to the agents. *Edward*, having called a par-
liament, by their advice wrote to the pope, desiring him to
forbear for the future from claiming the first-fruits of vacant
benefices, or from conferring bishopricks or abbacies upon
foreigners who did not reside in the island, as the right of
patronage belonging to himself and his nobles was thereby
totally annulled.

The empe-
ror makes
most sub-
missive
concessions
to the pope.

1344.

MEAN while the emperor, alarmed with the violent pro-
ceedings of the pope, and sensible that a great many princes
of *Germany* secretly favoured his designs, he sent an embassy
to *Avignon*, offering to submit to any terms that *Clement*
should prescribe. The ambassadors appeared in the consistory,
before the pope, on the 16th of *January*; and, hav-
ing presented the emperor's submission, signed by his own
hand, acknowledging all the heresies of which he was ac-
cused, resigning his children and all his possessions into the
hands and will of the pope, and abdicating the empire,
not to resume it, unless from the hands of his holiness. They
then desired to know the articles of penance which the pope
would be pleased to prescribe to *Lewis*. *Clement*, instead of
using that opportunity to conclude an accommodation, in-
sulted his submissive adversary, and required several other
grievous articles against the rights of the empire, which the

The dict of
Frankfort
support the
rights of
the empire.

embassadors had no authority to agree to. These articles
being laid before the diet at *Frankfort*, the assembly sent
deputies to the pope, desiring him to moderate his demands,
and declaring, that they would never agree to the articles
which he had proposed. This unexpected firmness in the
princes of *Germany* greatly irritated the pope against the em-
peror; he resolved to push his resentment to the utmost, and

† Bzov. ex cod: Vatic. d: reb. Angl. WALSING. in Ed-
ward. III.

begin to treat with the king of *Bohemia*, the archbishop of *Trier*, and some other princes, to proceed to the election of another emperor. About the same time he created *Lewis* of *Spain*, count of *Clermont*, then at *Avignon*, as ambassador from *France*, king of the *Fortunate Islands*, or *Canaries*, on occasion of his converting the inhabitants to Christianity, and to satisfy the king of *Bohemia*, he erected the church of *Prague* into an archbishoprick, granting the archbishop the honour of the pall, and the right of crowning the kings of *Bohemia*, which privilege formerly belonged to the archbishop of *Mentz*.

As the factions increased in *Germany* the following year, *The emperor* *Clement* again renewed his anathemas against the emperor, and exhorted the electors to proceed to a new election, and sent a legate *a latere* into *Italy*, to support the faction of the church in that kingdom. Being soon after informed of the murder of *Andrew* king of *Naples*, and husband of *Jean* the grand-daughter of *Robert*, he ordered an inquiry to be made after the murderers, against whom he denounced a sentence of excommunication, and gave a full commission to some counts to punish them, whether they should be found to be laymen or clergymen. About the same time, hostilities being again renewed betwixt the kings of *France* and *England*, *Clement* sent two cardinals to those princes, to endeavour to conclude an accommodation; but the *English* refused to hear him to any terms proposed by the cardinals, accusing the pope of partiality to the king of *France*. *Clement*, then despairing to reconcile the princes by intreaties or embassies, published a letter, addressed to all the prelates, ordering public prayers to be used for procuring peace among Christian princes. Being likewise informed, that his fleet, in conjunction with that of the *Venetians* and *Genoese*, had taken *Smyrna*, he ordered a crusade to be preached against the *Turks*, and appointed *Humbert Dauphin*, of *Vienne*, as general of the *Latin* army.

In consequence of the intrigues of the pope, *The king* *John* king of *Bohemia* arriving at *Avignon*, with his eldest son *Charles* marquis of *Moravia*, to negotiate for the empire in favour of *Charles*, *Clement*, to strengthen their party, deposed the archbishop of *Mentz*, as guilty of contumacy, and conferred the empire on *Gerlac* of *Nassau*, grandson of the emperor *Adolphus*. A few days after he published a bull against the

emperor is excommunicated.
A.D. 1345.

The pope endeavours in vain to conclude a peace betwixt France and England.

The king of Bohemia and his son arrive at Avignon;
1346.

^k CONTRAR. c. v. folit. l. ii. ec. 6. c. 3. WALS. ut supra.
^l VILLAN. c. 50, 51. See also the History of the Kingdom of *Naples*.
^m SPOND. Annal.

an negoti-
ate a
treaty for
the em-
pire.

emperor, deposing him from his dignity, and absolving all his subjects from their allegiance. This bull, which was dated on *Good Friday*, the 13th of *April*, was sent to all the prelates in Christendom, with a circular letter, ordering them to publish it in their churches. *Clement* at the same time wrote to the electors, enjoining them to proceed to election; and excluded the marquis of *Brandenburg* from the privilege of voting, under pretence that his father, the emperor, being an usurper, had no right to confer that privilege. Having thus secured a majority among the electors, he embraced that opportunity for extending the authority of the see of *Rome*, and accordingly entered into a treaty with the marquis *Charles*, who promised to revoke and annul all the acts made by *Lewis* of *Bavaria*, to confirm all the grants of former emperors to the see of *Rome*, to resign all pretensions to the territories of the countess *Methilda*, not to enter *Rome* but upon the day of his coronation, and never to return but with the leave of the pope, and to annul all proceedings of his grandfather *Henry VII.* derogatory to those concessions. This treaty, which ruined the authority of the empire in *Italy*, and established that of the popes, being sworn to by *Charles*, and confirmed by his father the king of *Bohemia*, *Clement* recommended him as a candidate for the empire, and he was accordingly chosen emperor a few months after by four electors at *Rentz*, three of the electors still adhering to the interest of *Lewis* of *Bavaria*. *Charles*, immediately after his election, sent ambassadors to the pope, who having sworn in his name that he would fulfil the former treaty, *Clement* published the news of his election in the consistory; and having with difficulty obtained the consent of the majority of the cardinals, he published a bull, confirming his election. About the same time he sent several nuncios into *Armenia*, to extirpate the errors prevailing in that church, and to exhort the king to give his assistance to the Christians against the *Turks*. He likewise admonished the doctors of the university of *Paris* not to employ their time in vain and useless questions, but to explain the catholic faith according to the sense of the fathers.

A revolution
at
Rome.

A. D.

1347.

DURING these transactions in *Germany* and *Avignon*, a great revolution happened at *Rome*, owing to *the Niccolò Gabrini di Rienzo*, the son of a miller and washerman, who, having received good education from his parents, and being of an active and enterprising genius, was created a public scribe or notary. He having been sent with the embas-

The History of Italy.

fact to pope *Clement*, to invite him to *Rome*, and having a denial from his holiness, upon his return he addressed the *Romans* in the capitol, and made a long and discourse to them, of the deplorable state of their city, and happiness of their antient liberty. His words had great effect on the people, that they unanimously declared him tribune of the people, and conferred upon him the supreme power. He immediately degraded the senators appointed by the pope; ordered several of the nobility, convicted of oppression, to be put to death; and banished the *Orsini*, the *Colonna*, and many other noble families. Having established his authority by the attachment of the people, and made himself respected by his regard to justice, he sent letters to all the cities of *Italy*, informing them of the liberty of the *Romans*, and desiring them to give their assistance to their mother city. His messengers were every-where treated with great respect; and several of the cities, concluding that the *Romans* were about to recover their antient grandeur, promised their assistance, and sent golden rings as tokens of their fidelity. Not only the *Italian* cities, but even foreign princes, sought his alliance: he received an embassy with an offer of friendship from *Lewis* king of *Hungary*, who was preparing to enter *Italy* with an army, to revenge the murder of his brother the king of *Naples*. About the same time ambassadors arrived from *Jean* queen of *Naples*, desiring his mediation with the king of *Hungary*. The tribune likewise received an embassy from the emperor *Lewis*, asking his friendship; and *Clement* wrote to him from *Avignon*, commending his proceedings, and exhorting him to govern *Rome* in his name.

THIS grandeur was of very short continuance; for *Nicolas*, being intoxicated with his authority, disdained to have any dependence upon the pope, and resolved to be absolute master in *Rome*. Accordingly, being desirous of the dignity of knighthood, he bathed himself in the font in which *Constantine the Great* had formerly been baptized, and then received his arms from the syndic of *Rome* and two knights before the altar of *St. Peter*; at the same time being crowned with the different crowns, he assumed the title of *Candidate of the Holy Ghost, severe and merciful, deliverer of the oppressed, restorer of the liberties of Italy, lover of the universe, and avenger of the injured*. He likewise published a letter, declaring *Rome* the new *Jerusalem*; and cited *Lewis* and *Charles of Bohemia*, with the other electors, to appear at *Rome*, to justify the rights and privileges which they assumed. These extravagant proceedings ruined his character; and the pope, looking

looking upon him as a mad enthusiast, published several bulls against him, accusing him of schism and heresy, upon which the ardour of the people in his favour greatly abated. Soon after, the banished nobles, entering the city by surprise with some troops, *Nicolas* was deserted by the people, and fled. *Lewis* king of *Hungary*, who was then at *Naples*, first, afterwards, skulked for some time, in the habit of a pilgrim, through the mountains, and at length was brought to *Avignon*, where he was detained a prisoner.

The emperor is killed by a fall. WHILE *Nicolas* was in the height of his grandeur at *Rome*, *Clement* was informed of the death of the emperor *Lewis* of *Bavaria*, who was killed by a fall from his horse on the 9th of *October*.

Soon after, hearing that the king of *Hungary* had entered *Italy*, he wrote to his legate, to prohibit the king, under pain of excommunication, from seizing any of the territories belonging to the apostolic see. The king replied, that the kingdom of *Naples* belonged to him by right of his grandfather *Charles Martel*, and that he did not regard an unjust excommunication, as God, who was superior

to the pope, knew the justice of his cause. A few months after *Jean* queen of *Naples* arrived at *Avignon*, having fled from the resentment of the king of *Hungary*. She pleaded her cause with such eloquence before the consistory, and in the presence of the *Hungarian* deputies, that the pope declared her innocent of the murder of her husband, and confirmed her marriage with *Lewis* duke of *Tarento*, and nephew of the late king *Robert*, *Jean's* grandfather. At the same time he purchased from her the city of *Avignon*, with all its territory, for 80,000 florins of gold; though some authors assert, that the sale was only pretended, and that *Jean* gave the city to the see of *Rome*, to procure the favour of the pope. Others allow the sale to be real, but say, that the price was paid by remitting the annual tribute due by the queen for the kingdom of *Naples*. The instrument of the sale, whether real or pretended, is still extant, as is likewise a golden bull granted by the emperor *Charles IV.* resigning to the pope and see of *Rome* all right and title of the empire to that city. About the same time *Clement* ordered the *Dominicans* and *Franciscans* of the province of *Hungary* to appoint learned men to preach the gospel to the *Cumani*, and other infidels of that kingdom, who adhered to

A. D.

1348.

Sells that city, to the see of Rome.

• VILLAN. c. 89. & 104. PETRAR. de reb. far. l. 3. BZOV.
• VILLAN. c. 206. • SPOND. Ann. v. 1. BZOV.
hoc an. vit. Clement. a Bosquet. ait. • SPOND. Ann.

the pagan rites of the *Tartars*. He likewise absolved *Waldemar* king of *Denmark* from the sentence of excommunication that he had incurred for visiting the sepulchre of Christ without leave from the apostolic see; and, as the plague raged in the most violent degree in *Italy*, and other countries of *Europe*, ^{A great plague rages in Europe.} the pope granted a general indulgence to all those who were penitent, and confessed their sins, and to the priests who attended and administered the sacraments to the sick, supporting at his own charge those that were stricken with the distemper at *Avignon*; and, to prevent the dead from lying unburied, hiring people to carry them to a field which he had purchased for that purpose (H).

As the *Jews*, in consequence of this plague, were massacred in great numbers in *Germany* and *Poland*, *Clement* published a bull in their favour, which was not able to stop the

A. D.

1349.

SPOND. ANNAL. MATH. VILLAN. C. 4.

(H) A great many authors give an account of this plague, which was not confined to one province or kingdom, but ravaged progressively the greatest part of *Asia* and *Europe*, and part of *Africa*, carrying off almost one third of the inhabitants, and in some places scarce leaving the sixth, or even the twentieth person. *Cantacuzenus*, the *Greek* emperor, has very elegantly described the various symptoms and different effects of the distemper (1), which is said to have appeared first in the kingdom of *Kathay*, in the year 1348, and to have proceeded gradually westward to *Constantinople* and *Egypt*, emptying cities of their inhabitants, and raging in one place about five months. From *Constantinople* it passed into *Greece*, *Italy*, *France*, *Spain*, and *Africa*, and by the coast along the coasts of the ocean into *Britain* and *Ire-*

land, and afterwards into *Germany*, *Hungary*, *Poland*, *Denmark*, and the other northern kingdoms. According to *Antoninus*, archbishop of *Florence*, the distemper carried off 60,000 people in that city, among whom was the historian *John Villani* (2); but, by the account of *Boccace*, the number of dead in *Florence* amounted to 100,000. Notwithstanding such a heavy scourge, several authors relate, that a general corruption of manners immediately after prevailed, those who survived being enriched with the possessions of the dead, and indulging themselves in vice and dissoluteness, from which the religious orders were not exempt, owing to the great wealth arising from the many pious legacies they then received, so that, according to *Petrarch*, the world was empty of men, but full of crimes (3).

(1) *Cantacuzenus*. lib. 3. c. 3. (2) *Anton. tit. xxi. c. 8. § 3.* (3) *Petrarch. de reb. Senil. ad Boccac. & ser. famil. l. viii. epist. 7. Marian. l. xvi. c. 13. Nauch. Græc. 4. Walsing. in Edw. III.*

fury of the people, who accused them of being the authors of their calamity, and for two years continued to persecute them and put them to death without any distinction of age. *The sect of or sex.* Mean while, as a means to remove the calamity, the flagellants' superstitious sect of flagellants again appeared, and revived. Hungary marched in troops through Upper and Lower many, Poland, France, England, and other countries, their numbers increasing as they went along. Both men and women marched naked to the waist, and whipped themselves twice a day, and once during the night. Notwithstanding this great appearance of penitence and mortification, their sect is said to have been composed of the most profligate people, and to have professed absurd and pernicious doctrines, as that the gospel ceased upon their appearing, that their scourging was preferable to martyrdom, and that the blood which they lost by that exercise mixed with the blood of Christ; that if any one scourged himself for 30 days, the guilt and punishment of his sins would be forgiven. These and many other errors being discovered to be the tenets of the sect, the pope published a bull against them, and prohibited all Christians from using those public scourgings, in consequence of which several princes published edicts against them, as disturbers of the public peace, so that in a short time they were totally dispersed.

WHAT, according to *Spondanus*, was, of much greater efficacy in removing the general calamity, was a bull published by the pope on the 10th of *April*, appointing a jubilee to be held the following year at *Rome*, promising a full remission of all their sins to those penitents who should visit the churches of *St. Peter*, *St. Paul*, and *St. John di Lateran*. Two cardinals were sent as legates to *Rome*, to superintend the solemnity, with full power to grant dispensations to those pilgrims who did not chuse to continue the full time prescribed by the pope, which was fifteen days for the *Italians*, and ten or five days for the *Ultramontans*, or foreigners. About this time *Cantacuzenus*, who had seized the empire of *Constantinople*, sent ambassadors to the pope, to justify himself from the false accusation of having made an alliance with the *Turks*, and exhorting his holiness and the princes of *Europe* to undertake an expedition into *Asia* against those infidels. *Clement* received the ambassadors with honour, and, upon their return, sent two bishops with them to *Constantinople*, declaring that he accepted of the empe-

The Greek emperor sends an embassy to the pope.

excuses, and desiring him to procure an union of the Greek church to that of *Rome*. *Cantacuzenus*, in return, wrote to the pope, expressing his desire of an union, but proposed that a general council of the eastern and western churches should assemble in some city near the sea-coast, where both the pope and he himself might be present w.

When this affair was transacting betwixt the *Greek emperor* and the pope, the jubilee commenced at *Rome*, where, notwithstanding the plague still raged with great violence in several parts of *Europe*, such numbers of people assembled, that, according to *Matthew Villani*, from *Christmas* to *Easter*, which happened that year on the 18th of *March*, there were continually from a million to twelve hundred thousand foreigners in *Rome*. During the summer, the number of pilgrims in the city was supposed to amount to 200,000; but, towards the end of the year, the concourse was almost as great as at the beginning, and chiefly of the better sort of both sexes, as the dispensations were then easily granted with regard to the time. According to *Meyerus*, scarce the tenth part of the pilgrims returned home, being cut off by the plague, or the fatigues of the long journey. And *Villani* relates, that the *Romans*, with great rapacity, practised all manner of extortion upon the pilgrims; and were so exasperated against the cardinal legate for dispensing with the time of visitation, that they attacked him and his retinue in the streets; and, as he endeavoured to shun their violence by retiring into *Campania*, he was poisoned, with several of his relations, upon the road. Mean while *Clement* being informed that the archbishop of *Milan*, who, since the death of his brother *Luchino*, was both spiritual and temporal sovereign in that city, had seized *Bologna*, and annexed it to his dominion, he laid the city of *Milan* under an interdict, and summoned the archbishop and his nephews to appear at *Avignon*. The archbishop neglecting the citation, *Clement* excommunicated him and his adherents; and afterwards, hearing that he solicited the assistance of the *Gibellines*, he sent the bishop of *Ferrara* as his legate into *Italy*, to form a league among the cities of *Lombardy* and *Tuscany* for their mutual defence, and the protection of the church. In the mean time his legate at *Naples* having concluded a truce betwixt the king of *Hungary* and queen *Jean*, who was now returned to *Naples*, it was agreed that all hostilities

w. *CANTACUZENUS*. l. vi. c. 9. SPOND. Annal. * *MATTH. VILLANI*, ap. Murator, t. xiv. l. i. c. 56. † *MEYER*. l. xiii. *VILLANI*. supra.

The queen
of Naples
declared
innocent of
the murder
of her hus-
band.

A. D.

1351.

The usurp-
ations of
the pope
are op-
posed in
England.

should cease till *April* next, and the cause of *Jean* in the mean time be again examined by the apostolic see.

ingly, the following year, her cause was re-examined before the consistory, who admitted of her excuse, namely, that she was under the power of witchcraft or incantation, which prevented her from loving her husband as she ought. The plea being confirmed by witnesses, the benevolent judges declared her innocent of all actions subsequent to that incantation; in which decision the king of *Hungary*, after some difficulty, at last acquiesced.

This affair being determined, *Clement*, upon a complaint from the king of *France* that the *English* had broke the truce, sent two legates to accommodate the differences betwixt the two kings; but their mediation having no effect, the war was again renewed. Mean time the parliament of *England*, finding no redress from the pope of the grievances they had formerly complained of, decreed, that whoever should accept of any benefice in *England* from the gift of the pope, should be punished with perpetual imprisonment: that, upon a vacancy, if the patrons neglected for four months to supply the benefice, their right should devolve to the king. They likewise ordained, that the king should supply those benefices then enjoyed by foreigners residing in *France*, and annulled the grants of money made by the pope to some cardinals from the provinces of *Canterbury* and *York*. These proceedings against the court of *Rome*, according to *Naclerus*, were owing to the resentment of *Edward*, who was affronted because the pope had refused to confer the dignity of cardinal upon one that he had recommended, though the year before he had promoted twelve cardinals at the request of the king of *France*; and *Harfsfield*, in his history of the *English* church, relates, that the act was soon after rendered ineffectual by the opposition of the legates and the archbishop of *Canterbury*.

At this time, according to *Matthew Villani*, great disturbances happened at *Rome*, in consequence of the wealth the *Romans* had acquired the year before by the concourse of foreigners. The bishop of *Orviele*, the vicar of the pope, finding his authority despised, fled to the capitol, but he was expelled from thence by *James Savelli*, of the faction of the *Colonna*, and the city continued for some time without any governor. At length the people chose one *John Cenci*, an eminent plebeian, as their rector or chief, and, in contempt

^a VILLAN. l. ii. c. 24. SUMMON. i. iii.
Gen. 46. ^c HARPSFIELD, Hist. Eccles. Angl. secul. 14.
c. 5.

of the nobility, obliged the vicar to confirm their choice.^a During these disturbances in *Rome*, *Clement* received an embassy from the emperor *Charles*, informing him of his intention of entering *Italy* to receive the imperial crown, and promising to attach himself to the party of the *Guelphs*. Soon after deputies arrived at *Avignon* from the allied cities of *Italy*, complaining of the hostilities of *Vicenti*, and desiring the assistance of the pope. *Clement* received the deputies very graciously, though he was not a little disconcerted upon their arrival, as he had entered into a private negotiation with *Vicenti*, who, by the influence of his money, had procured the interest of a great many cardinals, and by the same means had purchased the intercession of the king of *France*. The pope, that he might seem disinterested, proposed the choice of three things to the deputies, either to conclude a peace with the archbishop, or a league with the church against him, or lastly, to invite the emperor to their assistance. They being informed of the archbishop's interest with the pope, referred the choice of the three expedients to his holiness; who accordingly absolved the archbishop from the censures denounced against him, and granted him and his successors the vicariate of *Bologna* for 12 years, on condition of paying a yearly tribute of 12,000 florins to the holy see, and 100,000 florins for the expences of the war; but, that the interest of the allies might not seem neglected, a truce was concluded betwixt them and *Vicenti* for twelve months. Thus, says *Villani*, for money the greatest affairs may be transacted with the pastors of the holy church.^c *Vicenti* seems to have been determined to this accommodation from an apprehension of the emperor's arrival in *Italy*; for, before that expedition was mentioned, he treated the pope with the greatest contempt (1).

THE allied cities in *Italy*, being thus abandoned by the pope, entered into an alliance with the emperor, who pro-

The allied cities of

^a VILLANI. l. ii. c. 47.

^c Idem, l. iii. c. 4, & 5.

(1) A letter, supposed to be written by the archbishop of *Milan*, was dropped in the council, and addressed to the pope. It was dated from the middle of the year, and in the name of the prince of darkness, thanked his vicar the pope, and his counsellors and cardinals, for their great services, exhorting

them to a steady perseverance in their present course, that they might be intitled to a full reward in his kingdom. Then, mentioning the particular vices of each of them, he chided them for allowing their doctrine to differ from their life, and exhorted them for the future to teach as they lived.

Italy enter into a treaty with the emperor. Clement dies at Avignon.

missed the following year to enter Italy with 6000 horse, and to attack the territories of *Vicenti*, the allies stipulated join his army with 3000 horse, and to grant him a of 200,000 florins of gold^f. *Clement* survived this action but a few months, and died at *Avignon* beginning of *December*. From his regard to the king of *France*, he granted them a power of communicating, under both kinds, whenever they pleased to desire the eucharist^g. He likewise moderated the rigour of the constitution of *Gregory X.* with regard to the cardinals, when shut up in the conclave at an election. He is accused of having conferred honours and dignities upon his relations without measure, or regard to their merit, having created his nephew *Peter* a cardinal when only 17 years of age.

Innocent VI. elected pope.

A. D. 1333.

THE cardinals, upon the death of *Clement*, being informed that the king of *France* was hastening to *Avignon*, to have a pope chosen in his interest, they thought proper to prevent him; and, on the 18th of the same month, chose *Stephen Albert*, bishop of *Ostia*, who took the name of *Innocent VI.*; and, immediately after his consecration, wrote to all the Christian princes, informing them of his promotion (K). He likewise suspended, and afterwards annulled, the grants of reversion of benefices given by his predecessor *Clement*; at the same time commanding all prelates, and other ecclesiastical persons, to repair to their churches, under pain of an anathema, declaring, that flocks ought to be

^f VILLAN. c. 6, 7.
c. 44. sect. 7.

^g HENRIQ. lib. de Eucharist.

(K) *Innocent VI.* was born in *Limoges* in *France*, and, being bred to the law, he was for some time a proctor or attorney, and then a judge, at *Thoulouse*. Entering afterwards into orders, he was successively bishop of *Meaux*, *Clermont*, and *Cambray*, and by *Clement VI.* was created a cardinal priest, and afterwards bishop of *Ostia*, and major penitentiary.

In an ancient chronicle of the *Carthusians* it is mentioned, that when the majority of the cardi-

nals were determined to elect *John Birell*, the general of that order, as pope, they were dissuaded by a cardinal of *Perthgort*, who, knowing *John* to be a man of great justice and sanctity, declared, that, if he were elected pope, their fine mules would in a few days be drawing in the carts, as he was a professed enemy to worldly pomp and ambition. The cardinals, alarmed by his discourse, altered their resolution, and chose *Innocent VI.*

kept by their own shepherds, and not by hirelings^b. Being intent also upon reforming his own court, he reprehended the cardinals for their luxurious lives, and ordered them to follow the example of frugality set by himself. As the ecclesiastical state was at this time almost wholly usurped by different princes, and the city of *Rome* a scene of confusion and uproar, the *Romans*, upon account of a great dearth, having stoned their senator to death, *Innocent* sent cardinal *Aegilius Alvarus*, a *Spaniard*, descended from the ancient kings of *Leon*, as his legate into *Italy*, appointing him vicar over all the ecclesiastical state, with full power of assembling an army, and opposing the unjust possessors of the territories of the church. Together with the legate, *Innocent* sent *Nicolas Rienzo*, the former tribune, to oppose the designs of *Francis Baroncelli* at *Rome*, who, supported by the favour of the people, had expelled the nobility, assumed the title of tribune II. and *Roman* consul; and, throwing off the authority of the pope, had invited the *Gibellines* to an allianceⁱ. Not only *Rome*, but almost all *Italy*, was at this period desolated by intestine wars. Though the allied cities in *Tuscany*, being disappointed in their succours from the emperor, had concluded a peace with *Vicenti*, yet several other cities had formed a new league against him. The *Venetians* and *Genoese* were engaged in a most destructive war, which was carried on with great animosity; and, while the pope's legate had assembled an army at *Monte Fiascone*, against *John de Vico*, who had usurped a great part of the territories of the church, one frier *Morale*, a *Provençal*, and knight hospitaller, headed an army of freebooters, who acknowledged no faction. This knight had served the king of *Hungary* in his *Neapolitan* war, and, after his accommodation with queen *Jean*, had entered into the service of the church; but, not being able to recover his arrears of pay, he now deserted that party, and, by offering large pay to those who would serve under him, he quickly assembled an army of 2000 men, composed of *Germans*, *French*, and *Provençals*, who were dispersed through different parts of *Italy*. This army of banditti was called the *Grand Company of the March of Ancona*, which province was the first scene of their ravaging; and, their numbers continually increasing, they formed themselves into a military society, appointing a council, secretaries, quæstors, and other magistrates, and put garrisons into several cities which they made themselves mas-

A legate sent into Italy, in which is a scene of great confusion.

^a PLATIN. in vit. Innocent. VI. c. 78.

ⁱ VILLAN. l. iii.

Rienzo
again cre-
ated tri-
bune of
Rome

ters of ^k. Mean while the *Romans* received *Nicolas Riatzo* with the greatest demonstrations of joy; and *Baroncelli*, after a government of a few months, being put to death, they conferred the tribuneship on *Nicolas*, and sent deputies to the legate at *Monte Fiascone*, acknowledging their submission to the church.

DURING these commotions in *Italy*, *Innocent*, being informed that a great many heretics had fled from the mountains of *Tyndon* into *Calabria*, wrote to the king of *Naples*, and to the inquisitor, to proceed against them. He likewise sent a cardinal legate to the king of *England*, exhorting him to a reconciliation with the king of *France*; and wrote to the bishop of *Orvieto*, his vicar at *Rome*, desiring him to oblige the chapter of *St. Peter's* church to refund three fourth parts of all the offerings presented during the jubilee at *St. Peter's* altar, as one fourth part, according to antient custom, only belonged to them. As the Christians of the east were at this time harrassed by the continual incursions of the *Turks*, *Innocent* granted the third part of the tythes of the churches of *Germany*, *France*, *Bohemia*, *Greece*, and other provinces, for their assistance, and ordered the master of the knights of *Rhodes* to succour the city of *Smyrna*, at that time attacked by the *Turks*. Soon after, receiving an embassy from *Stephen* king of *Rascia*, complaining that some *Greek* bishops disturbed the peace of his kingdom, by deposing some bishops and abbots of the *Roman* communion, and obliging others to repeat their baptism and confirmation, desiring likewise the pope to send some learned and religious men into his kingdom, to reform all abuses, and that the king might be appointed by the holy see captain against the *Turks*. *Innocent* thanked the king for his zeal, nominated him captain according to his desire, and appointed the bishop of *Traw* as his legate, to extirpate the errors and abuses in that kingdom, particularly their opinion concerning the Holy Spirit, which they affirmed proceeded only from the Father; and their doctrine concerning the wafer in the eucharist, which they denied to be the real body of Christ.

The pope
receives an
embassy
from the
king of
Rascia;
A. D.
1354.

THIS embassy of the king appeared afterwards to be only a pretence, to prevent his being invaded by *Lewis* king of *Hungary*, who had formed pretensions to his kingdom¹. About this time also *Abdalla*, one of the kings of *Mauritania*, wrote to the pope, offering to embrace the Christian faith; but the professions in his letter, as appeared afterwards, were not sincere, but designed only to procure him

and ano-
ther from
a king of
Maurita-
nia.

^k VILLAN. c. 81, & 89.

¹ BZOV. 23 1356.

the assistance of the Christians against some of his neighbouring princes, with whom he was at war. *Innocent* wrote to him to persevere in his good intentions; and at the same time, hearing that *Peter* king of *Castile* had prevailed with two of his bishops to grant him a divorce from his queen, and had married the widow of one of his nobles, he wrote to the king, reproaching him with the heinousness of his crime, and ordered his nuncio in that kingdom to oblige the king to recall his queen, and, in case of his refusal, to proceed against him by ecclesiastical censures. Mean while two *Franciscans* being brought prisoners from *Montpelier* to *Avignon*, for disputing concerning the poverty of Christ and his apostles, contrary to the definition of *John XXII.* *Innocent* ordered them to be examined; and as they refused to recant their doctrine, and affirmed, that the opinion of pope *John* was a heresy, they were delivered to the civil magistrate, and publicly burnt ^m.

Two
Franciscans burnt
as heretics
at Avignon.

Soon after the pope received an embassy from the emperor *Charles*, who, in the beginning of *November*, had entered *Lombardy* with a small army. As the ambassador made a demand of the imperial crown for his master, *Innocent* wrote a long letter to *Charles*, excusing himself from going to *Rome* on the occasion of his coronation, but promising to commission some of the cardinals to perform that ceremony. He likewise wrote to his legate *Egidius* to assist the emperor with the troops of the church, and to dispose the *Romans* to receive him in an honourable manner, they having a few months before revolted against their tribune *Rienzo*, and put him to death. *Charles*, in the mean time, residing at *Mantua*, tried to conclude a peace betwixt the confederates of *Tuscany*, and the nephews of the archbishop *Vicenti*, whom that prelate, who died a few weeks before, had left heirs of his extensive conquests. As he had no forces to compel the parties to agree to an accommodation, his endeavours were ineffectual; however, having granted several articles unworthy of his dignity, he procured a truce betwixt them till the month of *May* following. Proceeding then to *Milan*, he was crowned with the iron crown in that city on the 6th of *January*; and receiving some money from the *Vicenti*, for confirming to them the vicariate of the empire in the territories they then possessed, he went from thence with great dispatch for *Pisa*. *Innocent*, in consequence of the embassy of the emperor, appointed the cardinal bishop of *Ostia* to perform the ceremony of the consecration, together with

The emperor enters Italy;

and is crowned king of Lombardy at Milan.
A. D. 1355.

^m REPTORFF in Annal. WALSHING. in Edw. III.

two other cardinals who solicited that office. As the conclave refused to bear the expences of the cardinals, and *Charles* was not able, those two who were so earnest in soliciting the deputation refused to go, on which account the pope appointed the legate *Ægidius* to assist *Bertrandi* bishop of *Ostia*, who, having received his commission in the beginning of *February*, set out for *Italy*, and joined the emperor at *Pisa* ⁿ.

Receives
the imperial crown
from cardinal
Bertrandi at
Rome.

CHARLES, soon after leaving *Pisa*, arrived in the neighbourhood of *Rome* with an army of 5,000 *Germans* and 10,000 *Italians*; and, having appointed *Easter* for the day of his coronation, he, on *Good Friday*, with some of his nobles, entered the city in the habit of pilgrims, and took a view of the principal edifices and churches. Two days after he marched into the city in a grand procession; and, being received with the greatest demonstrations of joy, he was crowned emperor by cardinal *Bertrandi*, in the church of *St. Peter*. According to his promise to the pope, he marched out of the city the same day, and refused to accept of the government of *Rome* offered him by the *Romans*. It appearing from this proceeding, and from his after-conduct, that he quite abandoned all the rights of the empire in *Italy*, he quickly lost his reputation, and was treated with great indignity by those, who, if he had asserted his own rights, would have been his firmest friends. At *Sienna* he held a long conference with the pope's legate; and, instead of accepting of the allegiance of the *Gibellines*, granted some troops to *Ægidius*, to assist him in quelling that faction. In consequence of these proceedings, finding himself odious to the *Italians*, he quitted that kingdom, and in the month of *July* retired with about 2000 men into *Germany* ^o.

The grand
company of
Ancona
ravages
Italy.

WHILE the emperor was thus dishonouring himself by his conduct in *Italy*, the grand company of *Ancona* having lost their chief, *Morale*, who was surprised and executed by the tribune *Rienzo* at *Rome*, they conferred the command on the count *di Lando*; and, after having served several months in the pay of the *Lumbar*d states, marched into *Romagna*, demanding a contribution of 30,000 florins of gold; but, upon receiving 12,000, they were prevailed upon to quit that province, and marched into *Ancona*. From thence they sent and demanded a contribution of 40,000 florins of gold from *Lewis* king of *Naples*; and, upon his refusal, they entered his kingdom, and immediately took *Pescara*, *Villa Franca*,

ⁿ VILLAN. l. iii. c. 103. l. iv. c. 71.
c. 14, 15. 20. 29.

• Idem, l. v.

and *San Fabiano*, and threatened to join the duke of *Durazzo*, who was then in rebellion. Mean while great disorders happened at the pope's court at *Avignon*, the cardinal of *Perigort*, upon a contest about precedency, having raised a tumult, in which some persons were killed, while other young cardinals took some young married women from their husbands by violence, and kept them publicly in their houses. *Innocent*, being informed of their infamous proceedings, reproved them in the consistory, and threatened to transfer his court to *Rome*.

ABOUT the same time he received an embassy from *John the Greek Paleologus*, who, by the voluntary abdication of his governor *Cantacuzenus*, had at length obtained the possession of the empire of *Constantinople*. The emperor solicited earnestly the assistance of the pope and the western princes against the *Turks*; and, in order to obtain his request, he promised an intire submission to the apostolic see, to send his eldest son to *Avignon*, as a security for his fidelity, and to assign a palace in *Constantinople* for the residence of the pope's nuncio, and three colleges for masters to teach the *Latin* tongue, which the sons of the *Greek* nobles should be compelled to learn. *Innocent*, the following year, sent two bishops to *Constantinople*, and wrote to the emperor to make the same confession before them, in the presence of the patriarch and a full assembly, in one of the chief churches, as he had wrote in his letter. The emperor agreed without difficulty to this proposal of the pope, who thereupon wrote to the kings of *Cyprus* and *Hungary*, to the doge of *Venice*, the senate and people of *Genoa*, and to the master of the knights of *Rhodes*, desiring them to assist the *Greek* emperor with arms, men, and money.

ABOUT the same time, being informed that the king of *France* had been defeated by the *English* at *Poitiers*, and taken prisoner, with his son, and several of his nobles, he sent the abbot of *Cluny*, and the cardinal of *Perigort*, to the emperor *Charles*, desiring him to intercede for the liberty of the king, and to offer his mediation to conclude a peace betwixt *France* and *England*. In consequence of the pope's endeavours to procure a reconciliation, some *English* deputies arrived at *Metz*, and were present at a diet held in that city at *Christmas*, but nothing was concluded on, with regard to a peace.

P VELLAN. l. iv. c. 15. § 9. 23. 40 58. 79.
c. 85.

BZOV. & WADDING. hoc an.

Idem,

Great con-
fusions in
Italy,

which is
ravaged
by the
troops of
the Vi-
conti,

MEAN while the kingdom of *Italy* continued still to be desolated by intestine wars, the grand company, under the command of *Lando*, ravaging and plundering *Naples*; while the two *Vicenti* at *Milan*, having poisoned their elder brother, still continued their wars against the other princes or tyrants of *Lombardy*. At the same time *Egidius* the legate having recovered by arms almost all the patrimony of the church, except *Forli* and *Faenza*, which were held by *Francis Ordelaffus* and *John* and *Richard Manfred*, he ordered them and their adherents to be excommunicated, and condemned as heretics, publishing a crusade against them, with the same indulgences as were given to those who fought against the *Saracens*. Having by this means greatly increased his army, he soon obliged the two *Manfreds* to surrender; but *Ordelaffus* still refused to submit, and, in contempt of his fulminations, made effigies of the pope and cardinals, whom he excommunicated; and, having apprehended some of the crusaders, he imprinted the figure of a cross with a red-hot iron, upon the soles of their feet. He was encouraged in his opposition by the *Vicenti*, who were jealous of the growing authority of the legate; and, seizing the priest, whom he had sent to publish the crusade in *Milan*, ordered him to be inclosed in an iron grate, and roasted to death, expelling likewise the bishop of *Parma*, who had granted his protection to the priest. Their troops at the same time ravaging their neighbouring states, several cities of *Lombardy* entered into a league against them, and took into their pay the grand company of *Lando*, who, having received a large sum from the king of *Naples*, had quitted that kingdom, and were then ravaging the territory of *Ravenna*. The emperor also, being desirous of humbling the *Vicenti*, had left the bishop of *Augusta* at *Pisa*, with a secret commission, as his vicar in *Italy*, ordering him not to act unless he saw a probability of success. The bishop, who had a great reputation in military affairs, thought proper at this time to publish his commission; and, being appointed general of the grand company, and the other troops of the confederates, he summoned the *Vicenti* to answer for the many outrages they had committed against the empire and the church. They despising his challenge, he advanced with his troops, and ravaged the territory of *Milan*; but, being surprised by the *Vicenti*, he was, after a desperate engagement, intirely defeated, and taken prisoner, together with *Lando*, and several other chief officers. To complete the devastation of *Italy*,

this year, according to *Villani*, the *Turks* first invaded that *Italy* like-kingdom, at the invitation of one of the nobles of *Romagna*. *wise ra-* Having landed their troops from 70 vessels, and a great *raged by* many smaller barks, they ravaged the country in a miserable *the Turks.* manner, and re embarked without meeting with any disturbance¹.

THE pope, in the mean time, being informed that *Peter* king of *Castile* had seized the revenues of cardinal *Ægidius* in his kingdom, from a persuasion that that prelate had been the chief adviser of the ecclesiastical censures that had been denounced against him, *Innocent* reprehended the king for his proceeding, and declared, that, as the cardinals were employed together with the pope in governing the universal church, they ought to be reputed as residing upon their benefices^u. As *Peter* was likewise at war with the king of *Arragon*, and they had both called in the *Moors* to their assistance, *Innocent* sent a cardinal as his legate into *Spain*, who concluded a truce betwixt the two kings for fifteen months. But, the truce being quickly violated by the king of *Castile*, the legate denounced a sentence of excommunication against him, and laid his kingdom under an interdict. A. D. 1357.

DURING these proceedings of the legate in *Spain*, *Innocent* was alarmed with the progress of a numerous troop of banditti, commanded by one *Arnold* of *Gascony*, an arch-priest, who, in imitation of the grand company in *Italy*, ravaged the southern parts of *France*, and raised contributions upon the people. As they approached *Avignon*, the *Innocent* pope caused the city to be fortified against their attempts; *fortifies* but he was freed from his alarms by a message from *Arnold* *Avignon* the captain, declaring that he had no intention of invading *against an* his territories^w. About the same time *Innocent* recalled his *army of* legate *Ægidius* from *Italy*, and sent *Androinus* abbot of *robbers.* *Clugny* as his successor; but as *Ægidius* had provided every thing for the attack of *Ordelauffus*, he was prevailed upon by the abbot to continue with the army for several months, during which time he reduced *Cesena*, with several other towns; and having, by money and ecclesiastical censures, prevailed *The legate* upon the grand company of *Lando*, which was sent against *Ægidius* him, to return to *Lombardy*, in the month of *August* he *quits the* laid siege to *Forli*, and, leaving the management of the rest *command* of the war to *Androinus*, he returned to *Avignon*, where he *of the* was received with great honours by the pope and the cardinals *pope's army* in *Italy*.

¹ VILLAN. c. 30.^u BZOV. hoc an.^w VILLAN.

l. vii. c. 87, & 96. l. viii. c. 8. 54. 96.

A. D. 1358. *nals.* *Androïnus*, having continued the siege for some time after the departure of *Egidius*, was at length obliged to raise it by the approach of winter, and the vigorous defence of the besieged. In the beginning of the spring he again invested the city; but *Ordelaïffus*, during the winter, having strengthened the garrison with part of *Lando's* company, his efforts to gain the place were rendered ineffectual.

The grand company are defeated. WHILE his army was engaged in the siege of *Forli*, the grand company, intending to pass into *Tuscany*, contrary to a treaty that they had made with the *Florentines*, were defeated in the passes of the *Appennines* by the inhabitants of those mountains, and *Lando* himself taken prisoner. The two peasants, who had seized *Lando*, being prevailed upon by a promise of 2000 florins to set him at liberty, he immediately repaired to the remains of his company in *Romagna*, and, being greatly exasperated against the *Florentines*, he used all means to reinforce his company, with the intention of invading *Tuscany*, and ravaging the territories of *Florence*. *Androïnus* in the mean time being obliged to raise the siege of *Forli*, and being unsuccessful in several other attempts, *Innocent* again sent *Egidius* into *Italy*. About the same time the bishop of *Ely* in *England* arriving at *Avignon*, and complaining that he had been tried and imprisoned by the king's judges, contrary to the privileges of ecclesiastics, the pope ordered the whole process to be transmitted to him by the judges, under pain of excommunication if they refused. The judges not only refused to obey the pope's mandate, but one or them even imprisoned his nuncio; which *Innocent* being informed of, he immediately excommunicated them, ordering the bishop of *Lincoln*, and some other prelates, not to allow the bodies of the judges, if they should die, to be buried in consecrated ground. This proceeding of the pope greatly offended the king; and soon after, having apprehended some persons who had delivered an apostolic letter to his treasurer, he ordered them to be put to death.

Innocent is refused the tythe of the ecclesiastical revenue in Tricrs, Mentz, &c. THE usurpations of the see of *Rome* this year likewise met with an opposition in *Germany*, where *Innocent* had sent the bishop of *Caëillon*, as his nuncio, to raise the tythe of all the ecclesiastical revenues for the use of the apostolic see. This extraordinary subsidy was refused by the clergy of *Tricrs*, *Mentz*, *Cologne*; and the following year the emperor held a diet of the princes of the empire at *Mentz*, to deliberate upon the demand of the pope. With the consent of the princes, *Charles* declared to the nuncio, that the

1359.



clergy of Germany could not submit to the proposed tax; and at the same time asked the bishop, with some warmth, why the pope was so earnest in demanding money, and so negligent in reforming the pride and dissoluteness of the clergy? He then addressed himself to the archbishop of *Mentz*, and strictly ordered him to reform his clergy according to the canons, especially with regard to their luxurious living, and the vanity of their dress; and if any ecclesiastic should prove refractory, he ordained that the revenues of his benefice should be confiscated, and disposed of according to the pleasure of the pope. *Innocent*, by the return of the nuncio, being informed of the determination of the diet, dissembled his resentment for the denial of the tythe, and sent other nuncios into the provinces of the empire, with orders to collect the half of the revenue of all vacant benefices for two years, for the use of the apostolic see. But, thinking the ecclesiastical liberty violated by the endeavours of the emperor to reform the clergy, he wrote to *Charles*, commending him for his zeal, but at the same time desiring him to desist from the secular sequestration of benefices, and to restore those that were already confiscated, contenting himself with desiring the prelates to chastise their irregular clergy. *Innocent* likewise wrote to all the archbishops of Germany, ordering them to correct and punish their clergy who were guilty of irregularities. In consequence of these letters of the pope, the emperor soon after published a bull, annulling all that had been done against the ecclesiastics, and confirming to them, under the notion of privileges, a great many exemptions, incompatible with the welfare of society. Having thus gratified the pope, he sent to him, desiring him to cancel some bulls in the *Clementine* constitutions, that were derogatory to the honour of the empire. It was not the temper of the court of *Rome* to part with any usurpation; accordingly *Innocent* replied, that as those bulls were part of the canon law, and publicly taught in the schools, he could not suppress them.

MEAN while *Andronicus*, abbot of *Cluny*, having returned from Italy, was sent as legate to reconcile the kings of France and England; which he at last effected, a peace being concluded by his mediation on the 3d of May, and confirmed by the apostolic see the 25th of the following. By this peace, the king of France obtained his liberty, on condition

Y NAÜCLER. Gen. 46. SPOND. Annal. z Mag. Chron.
Belg. sub Carol. IV. TOM. rer. Germ. Lindenb. RAI-
NALD. ad an. 1359.

and Eng-
land.

A. D.
1360.

Bernabo
Visconti
besieges
Bologna.

of paying three millions of gold ; but, as his kingdom was greatly exhausted by the long and destructive war, to raise part of this money he condescended to contract an alliance with the *Visconti* of *Milan*, giving his daughter *Isabel* to *John* the son of *Galeas Visconti* for 600,000 florins of gold. While *Galeas* was thus employed in aggrandizing his family by an alliance with *France*, his brother *Barnabo* was besieging the city of *Bologna*, which, notwithstanding the treaty lately concluded betwixt his uncle and the pope, the legate *Ægidius* had made himself master of. As the forces of *Barnabo* were very numerous, the pope solicited the assistance of the emperor against him ; he likewise invited the king of *Hungary* to succour the church ; and denounced a sentence of excommunication against the two *Visconti*, and their adherents. *Galeas Visconti*, declaring that he did not approve of his brother's proceedings, was quickly absolved from the sentence ; but *Bernabo*, despising the pope's fulmination, to shew his own superiority, ordered three other places belonging to the church to be besieged at the same time ; by which means he obliged the pope to an accommodation, and to consent to pay him a tribute of 20,000 florins for five years. This peace was quickly broken by *Bernabo*, who again besieged *Bologna*, and renewed his hostilities against other places of the ecclesiastical state. The pope, finding himself still too weak to oppose his arms, again solicited the emperor to interest himself in the affairs of *Italy*, in behalf of the church ; while his legate *Ægidius* went over into *Hungary*, to procure assistance from that kingdom. *Charles*, at the solicitation of the pope, published an imperial edict, ordering *Bernabo* to desist from hostilities, under pain of being deprived of all the dignities he had received from the empire. But as this edict was not supported by any troops, it was despised by *Bernabo* ; however, *Galeat Malatesta*, soon after, having entered *Bologna* with a strong reinforcement, made a successful sally against the enemy, and obliged him to raise the siege.

Great
commotions
in Rome.

DURING these disturbances in *Lombardy*, the city of *Rome* was again divided into factions, occasioned by the fickleness and instability of the people in the change of senators, who were neither connected with nobles nor plebeians in that dignity. To put an end to those divisions, the pope ordered his legate to appoint a stranger as their senator ; accordingly that dignity was conferred for six months on *Raimund* of *Siena*. The *Romans* were quickly disgusted with this form of government, and chose for themselves seven reformers of the commonwealth ; but the pope, disapproving of their proceeding,

proceeding, appointed the king of *Cyprus* as their senator, who had come into *Europe* to demand assistance against the *Turks*. The king dying soon after, the bishop of *Fermo* was appointed rector of *Rome*, and the count of *Fondi* was ordered to quell the seditious by arms^b. Mean while the kingdom of *France* being ravaged by great troops of robbers, who plundered the provinces under different leaders, *Innocent*, being apprehensive lest they should attack *Avignon*, ordered a crusade to be preached against^c them, and appointed the bishop of *Ostia* as general of the crusaders^e. The following year the plague again appeared in several places in *Europe*, and in *Egypt* and *Syria*. In *Milan* it raged with great violence, and, according to *Villani*, it carried off 11 cardinals and a great number of people at *Avignon*^d. *Innocent* himself did not long survive, but died the next year, on the 13th of *September*. A few months before his death, the *Romans* having revolted against their governor, and chosen one *Lelius Bonadota*, a shoemaker, as their senator, he, by the assistance of the people, expelled the greatest part of the nobility and gentlemen from the city. But, as the exiles assembled an army to revenge themselves on the opposite faction, the *Romans* again submitted to the pope, on condition that cardinal *Ægidius* should not have any authority over them^e (L).

Innocent
dies at
Avignon.
A. D.
1362.

A FEW days after the death of *Innocent*, the cardinals, to the number of twenty, entered the conclave, to chuse a successor. Fifteen of them gave their votes for a cardinal of the order of *St. Benedict*; but he refusing to accept of the pontificate, the cardinals, on the 28th of *October*, unanimously chose *William Grimoaldi*, a *Benedictine*, and abbot of *St. Victor*, of *Marfeilles*. As the abbot was then absent in *pope*. *Italy*, the cardinals wrote to him to come immediately to

^b BLOND. D. ii. l. x. VILLAN. l. ix. c. 87. Bzov. hoc an.

^c VILLAN. l. ix. x. xi. FROSSARD. lib. i. c. 214, 215. WAL-
SING. in Edw. III. ^d VILLAN. l. ix. c. 107. l. x. c. 38.

46. l. xi. c. 57. ^e Idem, l. xi. c. 25.

(L) *Innocent*, before his promotion to the pontificate, was persuaded by the insinuations of some people, that the famous *Petrarch* was addicted to magical arts; but, being afterwards undeceived, he solicited him by letters and presents, to come to *Avignon*, to be his secretary. *Petrarch* declined himself from accepting of that honour on account of his great age, and his love for a retired life (1).

(1) *Petrarch*. l. i. Senil. 3.

Avignon, but concealed his election till his arrival; a few days after which, on the 7th of *November*, he was consecrated pope, and took the name of *Urban V.* Having, according to custom, informed the emperor, and other kings and princes, of his promotion, he immediately ordered all the bishops at *Avignon* to return to their own sees, and published severe edicts against luxury in dress, as he himself continued to wear his monastic habit underneath his pontifical ornaments, and never laid aside the hard bed and parsimonious living proper to his order. He likewise abolished a privilege which the cardinals claimed, of affording a sanctuary in their houses to those who fled thither, after committing any atrocious crime. A few weeks after his promotion, he received a visit from the king of *France*; together with that prince came the deputies of *Bernabo of Milan*, who desired a peace with the holy see. *Urban* refused to grant their request, unless *Bernabo* restored all the territories that he had usurped from the see of *Rome*, and, by a true penitence, declared his submission to the church. Continuing firm in his resolution, notwithstanding the intercession of the king of *France*, that prince departed dissatisfied from *Avignon*; and *Urban* soon after published a bull against *Bernabo*, accusing him of heresy and schism, and many other horrid crimes; ordering him, under pain of excommunication, to justify himself before the first of *March*. This bull was sent to the patriarchs, archbishops, and bishops, of *Italy*, and, according to *Villani*, was published at *Florence* on the 29th of *January*; but, *Bernabo* neglecting the citation, *Urban*, on the 4th of *March*, held a public consistory, in which and deposes he declared him excommunicated, and deprived, together with all his posterity, of all honour and jurisdiction^f. He likewise freed his wife, as being a Christian woman, from the bond of marriage, absolved his subjects from their allegiance, and granted indulgences to all those who would take up the cross against him. By this proceeding *Urban* greatly offended the king of *France*, who had returned to *Avignon* to intercede for *Bernabo*; he likewise disgusted several cardinals, who received secret pensions from the *Vicenti*, to support the interest at the court of *Avignon* ^g. *Bernabo*, in contempt of this sentence, marched with an army into the territory of *Modena*, against the confederates; but his troops, from too great security, allowing themselves to be surprised, were defeated with great loss.

He excommunicates
and deposes
Bernabo.

A. D.
1363.

^f VILLAN. c. 31. 41. 44. SPOND. Annal.
ibid.

^g Idem

ABOUT the time he received this check in *Italy*, the king *The king* of *France*, with *Peter* king of *Cyprus*, and *Waldemar* III. of *France*, king of *Denmark*, being at *Avignon*, mutually bound themselves to undertake an expedition against the *Turks* within two years, and, together with many other nobles, received the cross from the hands of the pope. This crusade was owing to the solicitation of the king of *Cyprus*, whose kingdom had been for several years ravaged by the *Turks*; and the pope, being desirous to interest the *German* princes in his defence, wrote to the emperor and the *German* nobles, exhorting them to undertake an expedition against the infidels; but his letters had no effect upon *Charles*, who was then threatened with a war from the king of *Hungary*. As *The pope's* both parties were preparing for hostilities, *Urban* sent a legate con- nuncio into *Bohemia* and *Hungary* to prevent rupture, by whose mediation *Charles* was prevailed upon to give satisfaction to the king of *Hungary*, and promised to marry his cousin *Elizabeth*, daughter of *Bogeflas* duke of *Pomerania*. Accordingly, the following year, the peace being confirmed by the pope's legate sent for that purpose, the marriage was celebrated at *Cracow* with great magnificence. *A. D.*

DURING these transactions in *Poland*, a peace was likewise concluded betwixt the pope and *Bernabo Visconti*, owing chiefly to his defeat at *Modena*, and an edict of the emperor, who, from his usual complaisance to the pope, had ordered all the vicars of the empire to join their arms to those of the legate. The kings of *France* and *Cyprus* likewise acting as mediators, *Androinus*, lately created a cardinal, was sent to *Milan*, and concluded a treaty in the beginning of *March*, by which *Bernabo* ceded all the forts which he possessed in the territories of *Bologna*, *Modena*, and *Romagna*, to the holy see; and the pope absolved him from the sentence of excommunication, and, in consideration of the forts lately built, promised to pay him 500,000 florins of gold within eight years^b. Mean while the grand companies of robbers still increasing in *France*, *Urban* renewed his menaces and fulminations against them, in consequence of which several parties of them were routed.

THE following year *Urban* sent a legate to the emperor of *Constantinople*, to exhort him to an union with the *Roman* church, *The pope sends a le-*

^b VILLAN. l. xi. c. 64.
PETRAR. Senil. l. vii.

¹ FROSSARD. l. i. c. 230.

gate to the church, and to preach up a crusade against the *Turks* and emperor of *Saracens*. As *John Lusignan*, a relation of the king of *Cyprus*, at this time raised pretensions to the kingdom of *Armenia*, which he claimed by hereditary right, *Urban* also wrote to the prelates and nobles of that kingdom in favour of *John*, and exhorted them to reject the errors of the *Nestorians*, and others, and to embrace the purity of the catholic faith^k. A few weeks after, the emperor *Charles* arrived at *Avignon*, and was most honourably received by the pope, with whom he had several private conferences. According to *Corius*, *Urban* likewise crowned *Charles* king of *Arles*, in the city of that name, and promised the empire to his son *Wenceslaus*^l. Upon their return to *Avignon*, the pope held a solemn assembly, at which were present, besides the emperor, *Peter* king of *Cyprus*, and several other princes. *Peter* proposed to attack the infidels in *Egypt*; but the emperor opposed his opinion, and offered to march at the head of an army against *Amurath*, emperor of the *Turks*, who, by the assistance of the *Genoese*, had passed the *Hellepont*, and entered *Thrace* with an army of 100,000 men. This proposal was opposed by the count of *Savoy*, who declared, that it was more necessary to retake *Gallipoli*, and by that means cut off supplies from those *Turks* that had already entered *Europe*. The different opinions of the princes prevented any general enterprise from being concluded upon; *Charles*, however, promised to march into *Italy* at the head of an army, to reduce the *Vicenti*, in consideration of which engagement the pope granted him the tythes of the ecclesiastical revenues in *Bohemia* and *Germany*.

The princes retiring from *Avignon* to their different dominions, *Urban* soon after published a bull, ordering all the patriarchs, archbishops, and bishops, in Christendom, to hold provincial councils for restoring ecclesiastical discipline; and, for that purpose, ordered all prelates, under pain of excommunication, to reside in their proper dioceses, and to apply themselves diligently to the pastoral charge. He likewise prohibited any ecclesiastic from joining in marriage *Edmund* the son of the king of *England*, with *Margaret* the heiress of *Flanders*, although she had been betrothed to him by her father. This prohibition was owing to the pope's attachment to his own kingdom; for he soon after granted a dispensation for the marriage of the heiress with the duke of *Burgundy*, brother of the king of *France*^m. About the

The princes retiring from *Avignon* to their different dominions, *Urban* soon after published a bull, ordering all the patriarchs, archbishops, and bishops, in Christendom, to hold provincial councils for restoring ecclesiastical discipline; and, for that purpose, ordered all prelates, under pain of excommunication, to reside in their proper dioceses, and to apply themselves diligently to the pastoral charge. He likewise prohibited any ecclesiastic from joining in marriage *Edmund* the son of the king of *England*, with *Margaret* the heiress of *Flanders*, although she had been betrothed to him by her father. This prohibition was owing to the pope's attachment to his own kingdom; for he soon after granted a dispensation for the marriage of the heiress with the duke of *Burgundy*, brother of the king of *France*^m. About the

^k Bzov. hoc an.
de reg. Franc. MEYER. an. 1368.

^l CORIUS, Par. iii.

^m TIL.

same time, having received letters from the emperor of *Constantinople*, who promised to accomplish the union of the *Greek* and *Latin* churches, on condition of receiving assistance from the western princes against the *Turks*, *Urban* wrote to him, informing him, that *Lewis* king of *Hungary* was marching with a strong army to his assistance; and that the king of *Cyprus*, who, after his departure to *Avignon*, had sailed from *Venice* with a considerable army of crusaders, and taken *Alexandria*, intended to sail from *Thrace* against the *Turks*; he then exhorted him not any longer to delay the union from false pretences, but speedily submit to the *Roman* church, otherwise he would look upon him and the *Greeks* as heathens, and would give them no farther assistance. This letter was carried by the count of *Savoy*, who besieged *Varna*, the capital of *Bulgaria*, where the emperor was imprisoned, and took *Gallipoli* by assault. The emperor, having recovered his liberty, went to the king of *Hungary* at *Buda*, to whom he promised with an oath, that both he and his sons *Manuel* and *Michael* would submit to the *Roman* church, and fulfil whatever the pope should think necessary for their reconciliation. *Urban*, being informed of his submission by his chancellor and the bishop of *Nitria*, wrote to the emperor to persevere in his resolution; and sent him the form of the profession of faith, and abjuration of schism, formerly used by the emperor *Paleologus* on a like occasion. When the *Greek* chancellor returned, he likewise sent with him two legates, to complete the union, and to exhort the king of *Hungary* to a sacred expedition, and to give his assistance in putting an end to the schism. *Lewis* seems to have been very zealous in the service of the *Roman* church; for, having conquered *Bulgaria*, he sent for 2000 *Franciscans* to convert his new subjects. The vicar of *Bosnia* sent him eight, who in 50 days baptized upwards of 200,000 people.

URBAN, before he arrived at the pontificate, had expressed a great desire that the residence of the popes might be again transferred to *Rome*. After his promotion, continuing in the same sentiments, which were confirmed by a letter from *Petrarch*, he this year wrote to the doges of *Venice* and *Genoa*, desiring their gallies to conduct him to *Rome*, it being impossible to enter *Italy* by land. The *Vicenti* then guarded the passes of the *Alps*, by several troops of the banditti who had entered into their service. In the mean time

▪ SPOND. ANNAL. ° Idem, ex Chron. minor. P VIL-
LAN. l. xi. c. 26. PETRAR. Senil. l. vii.

A. D.
1367.

He em-
barks at
Marseil-
les.

Is received
in Italy
with great
joy.

he sent a legate into *Spain*, to reconcile the kings of *Castile* and *Arragon*; but his journey had no effect, for, besides the war with *Arragon*, *Peter* of *Castile* was attacked by his rebellious subjects, who, being assisted by the banditti from *France*, obliged him to fly the kingdom. In consequence of the pope's desire, in the beginning of the following year, several galleys arrived at *Marseilles* from *Naples*, *Venice*, *Genoa*, and *Pisa*; which *Urban* being informed of, he left *Avignon* on the last day of *April*, not without a great many reproaches from his court, who had no inclination to return to *Italy*. Having embarked at *Marseilles*, he arrived four days after at *Genoa*, and, proceeding next day on his voyage, on the 4th of *June* he landed at *Corneto* in *Tuscany*, where he was met by *Cardinal Ægidius*, and received an embassy from the *Romans*, with the keys of the castle of *St. Angelo*. A few days after he went to *Viterbo*, the inhabitants of which city received him with great respect; but they soon changed their disposition, and attacked the *French* cardinals, who were obliged to fly for refuge to the pope's palace. They quickly repented of their rashness; and, having obtained pardon from the pope, ordered the chiefs of the tumult to be put to death. *Urban*, after continuing four months at *Viterbo*, proceeded to *Rome*, where he was received by the clergy and the people with the greatest honours. Before he left *Viterbo*, he concluded an offensive and defensive alliance for seven years with the king of *Hungary*, the dukes of *Austria*, and several *Italian* princes, with the design of opposing the ambition of the *Vicenti*, and securing the quiet possession of the conquests of *Ægidius*; in consequence of which he was now regarded not as an imaginary, but as a real temporal prince. In that city he likewise received another embassy from the *Greek* emperor; to which he returned an answer after his arrival at *Rome*, writing to the *Greek* patriarchs of *Constantinople*, *Alexandria*, and *Jerusalem*, commending them for their intention of finishing the schism, and inviting them to come to *Rome*, together with their emperor. *Urban* received also a letter of congratulation from *Petrarch*, praising him for his return to *Rome*, and earnestly exhorting him to restore the church to its ancient purity. To this end, according to *Spondanus*, the pope this year confirmed the order of *Jesuits*, so called from their frequent mention of the name of *Jesus* (M).

ABOUT

¶ PETRAR. ut sup.

Mem. ix. Senil. i.

(M) This order was instituted a few years before by *John Colombine*, a nobleman, who, separating himself by con-
sent

ABOUT the same time, being informed that *Peter* king of *Difference Castile*, after defeating the rebels, had again got possession of his kingdom, and exercised great cruelty towards the ecclesiastics, he sent a legate to *Spain*, who, drawing the king to a conference upon the bank of a river, read the pope's letter, and, from a boat, declared him excommunicated; immediately after which he sailed down the river, and escaped. The king was so greatly exasperated at this proceeding of the legate, that he pursued him into the water on horseback; but, returning from his pursuit, he declared, that he would shake off the yoke of the pope, and persuade the kings of *Navarre* and *Aragon* to do the same: he threatened likewise to revenge the insult by a war, and made great preparations by sea and land; which *Urban* being informed of, he thought proper to take off the former censures, and sent a cardinal to *Spain*, who accommodated all differences, upon certain conditions not very honourable for the holy see. Mean while the pope caused several churches of *Rome* to be repaired; and prohibited, under severe penalties, the concealing or stealing of relics. In the beginning of the spring he received a visit from *Jean* queen of *Sicily*, and from the king of *Cyprus*, who were both treated with great honours. Soon after, to avoid the great heats, he retired to *Monte Fiasione*, where he published a bull against *Bernabo Visconti*, who continued to ravage *Lombardy* with great inhumanity and cruelty.

A. D.
1368.

As the pope had long solicited the emperor to enter *Italy*, The emperor and had concluded his bull with imploring his assistance for con- against *Bernabo*, *Charles* informed him, that he had assembled the an army with an intention of passing the *Alps*. The rights of pope, being still apprehensive of a visit from the *Germans*, the church, immediately desired his nuncio to ask an imperial confirmation of the rights of the church, which was granted without any hesitation by the emperor, in a very ample manner. This security being given, *Charles* entered *Italy* with a considerable army, and joined that of the pope, consisting of *Italy with an army*.

* MARIAN. l. xvii. cap. 10, & seq.

from his wife, embraced the confirmation of his order, life of austerity, and, by his and the regulation of the dress of the monks who professed the fervent discourses, quickly made many profelytes. Having attended the pope from *Cornet*, he obtained from him *Jerom* (1).

(1) *Bergom. l. xiv.*

20,000 men. *Verona* and *Vicenza* were quickly obliged to surrender, which determined *Bernabo* to sue for peace. A treaty was accordingly concluded, by which *Bernabo* agreed to evacuate all the places that belonged to the holy see, or to the *Italian* nobles, who were vassals and allies of the empire; to give no protection to the banditti that served in his troops; and to appear personally before the pope, to ask pardon for his crimes, and to receive absolution. This treaty being confirmed, the emperor published an edict, revoking the privileges of the cities and nobles who had adhered to *Bernabo*; however, upon receiving considerable sums of money, he made no difficulty of restoring them their antient rights, with several new ones. All differences in *Lombardy* being thus accommodated, *Charles* proceeded to *Viterbo*, where he had an interview with the pope, who was then returning to *Rome*. Upon the pope's arrival in the neighbourhood of that city, the emperor led his horse by the bridle as far as the church of *St. Peter*. A few days after, the empress arriving at *Rome*, the pope crowned her at the altar of *St. Peter*; after which ceremony the emperor retired to *Tuscany*, where he continued several months; but, finding himself despised by the *Italians*, he appointed the bishop of *Porto* as his vicar in *Italy*, and returned to *Germany*.

Urban AFTER the departure of the emperor from *Rome*, *Urban* publishes a bull, confirming the liberty of ecclesiastics, prohibiting, under pain of excommunication and interdict, all laymen from punishing the clergy, under any pretence whatever. The following year he again left the city, on account of the heats; and, while he continued at *Viterbo*, the *Greek* emperor arrived at *Rome*, where, in the presence of the bishop of *Ostia*, and three other cardinals commissioned by the

The Greek emperor arrives at *Rome*, and *Urban*, besides many other witnesses, he made a profession of all the articles of the *Roman* faith, which doctrine he swore upon the holy gospels always to acknowledge and believe. *Urban*, being informed that the emperor had confirmed the union, immediately hastened to *Rome*. He was met without the city by *Paleologus*, who, after having kissed his feet, led his horse by the bridle as far as the *Vatican* church, where he held the stirrup while his holiness alighted, and afterwards renewed his profession before the altar of *St. Peter*. In consideration of this confession, when the emperor began to talk of receiving succour, *Urban* recommended him to the *Venetians* and *Genoese*, and gave him leave to treat with *John Hawkwood*, an *Englishman*, who, after the death of *Lando*, had succeeded to the chief command of the banditti, and had rendered his name respected in *Italy* by his military exploits,

ploits, but was then under a sentence of excommunication on account of the assistance he had given to *Viconti*, who had again renewed his hostilities^t. The emperor's negotiations with *Hawkwood* had no effect, for that captain preferred the plunder of *Italy* to the honour of fighting against the *Turks*. What was his success with the *Venetians* and *Genoese*, is uncertain (N); but we find he did not quit *Italy* till the following year, as there is a bull extant, dated at *Rome* the 20th of *January*, wherein he confirms his former profession^u. After his departure, *Urban* created *William* of *Prato*, a *Franciscan*, archbishop of *Cambalu*, and sent him with twelve other *Franciscans* to preach the gospel in the kingdom of *Cathay*. He afterwards commissioned 60 other friars of the same order, and wrote to the Great *Khan*, and to the princes and people of *Tartary*, exhorting them to embrace the Christian faith. He likewise invited the *Vaivode* of *Walachia* to forsake the schism; and wrote to the *Greek* prelates and clergy, exhorting them to follow the example of their emperor. By the mediation of the emperor, he again granted a peace to *Bernabo*; but he prohibited *Frederic*, the possessor of *Sicily*, from contracting an alliance with the *Viconti*, by a marriage betwixt their children^w. About the same time he threatened to summon the king of *England* to answer at *Rome*, for neglecting to pay the allegiance and tribute due to the holy see, according to the concession of his predecessor king *John*. The bishop of *Ely*, the chancellor

A. D.
1376.

*Difference
betwixt
the pope
and the
king of
England.*

^t SPOND. Annal. VILLAN. l. 9—11.

^w Idem ibid.

^u SPOND. Annal.

(N) *Chalcondyles*, mentioning the emperor's journey to *Italy*, is quite silent as to the transactions at *Rome*, but says, when he went to *Venice* to ask assistance, he could obtain nothing but a loan of money from the usurers: that from thence he went to *France*, where his solicitations were ineffectual. He then returned to *Venice*, with the intention of sailing to *Constantinople*; but, being thrown into prison by his creditors, he wrote to his eldest son *Andronicus*, to remit the money

he owed. This prince, from a desire of retaining the sovereignty, wrote to his father, that it was impossible to raise the money; however, *Emanuel*, the younger son, hearing of his father's necessity, immediately raised what money he could, and went and offered himself as a hostage for his father till the payment of the whole sum. As this story is not mentioned by any other author, and, as *Chalcondyles* is frequently inaccurate and inconsistent, we think it deserves but little credit (1).

Urban^e
returns to
France,
and dies at
Avignon.

of the kingdom, informing the parliament of these menaces of the pope, they unanimously decreed, that the king was not bound by that extorted concession of *John*; and that, if the pope should proceed any further in his demand, they would oppose him to the utmost of their power. The parliament likewise renewed the former acts against the conferring of benefices upon foreigners, and the king prohibited any one from paying the tax of *St. Peter*^x. This vigorous opposition of the parliament of *England* obliging the pope at that time to desist from his pretensions, he confirmed the order of *St. Salvator*, instituted by *St. Bridget*, a noble lady of *Sweden*^y; and, at the solicitation of the cardinals, having determined to return to *Avignon*, he appointed two cardinals as his legates in *Italy*, and embarked at *Corneto* for *Marfeilles*. He arrived at that city on the 16th of *September*, and a few days after entered *Avignon*, having published, as a reason for his returning, that he intended personally to reconcile the kings of *France* and *England*. This accommodation, however, he was prevented from effecting; for, quickly after his return, being seized with sickness, he died at *Avignon* on the 19th of *December*.

Gregory
XI. is elected
pope.

A. D.
1371.

TEN days after the death of *Urban*, the cardinals unanimously chose cardinal *Peter Roger de Maumont*, who had been created a cardinal at 17 years of age, by his uncle *Clement VI*. As *Peter* was of a tender constitution, and not then 40 years of age, he refused for some time to accept of the pontificate; but at length allowing himself to be persuaded by the other cardinals, he was ordained priest on the 4th of *January*, and consecrated the day following, assuming the name of *Gregory XI*. On the day of his election, he wrote to the emperor, and the other sovereigns of *Europe*, informing them of his promotion; and, after his consecration, he sent two legates to the kings of *France* and *England*, to treat of peace; but those princes, being still inflamed with mutual resentment, could not be prevailed upon to hearken to an accommodation. *Gregory*, being likewise desirous of reconciling the kings of *Spain*, sent cardinal *Bertrand* thither as his legate, to assist the nuncios who had been commissioned by his predecessor *Urban*. Legates and nuncios were also sent into *Italy* and *Sicily*, to take care of the affairs of the church, and to prevent disturbances in those kingdoms. Meantime the pope having received complaints from *Eymericus*, the inquisitor of the faith in *Aragon*,

^x HARPSFIELD, secul. 14. c. 5. — — — — — ONOPHR. in Chron. Vit. Brig. ap. SUR. t. 4.

against some friers, who publicly preached opinions not authorized by the church, he prohibited any one from discouraging publicly upon those doctrines, under pain of excommunication. The friers complained of asserted, that if the consecrated wafer was lost, or devoured by a beast, it ceased to be the body of Christ, and returned to the substance of bread; and that even when taken by a communicant, the real body went to heaven, during the chewing of the wafer; which opinions were believed by several great men before the decree of *Gregory*, who did not absolutely condemn them as heretical, but only prohibited them from being publicly discoursed of². *Gregory* about the same time received an embassy from the king of *Denmark*, desiring his assistance against the *Jutlanders*, who had revolted from their allegiance, and chosen another prince. But deputies likewise arriving from the rebels, and representing the oppressions and exactions they suffered from the king, they found means to justify themselves to the pope, who wrote to *Waldemar*, and threatened him with excommunication if he did not alter his conduct with regard to his subjects. This unexpected *He is in-* message from the pope greatly exasperated the king, who *sulted by* immediately returned an answer in these terms: "*Waldemar the king of* the king, to the pope, wisheth health. We hold our life *Den-* from God, our kingdom from our subjects, our wealth *mark.* from our ancestors, and our faith from your predecessors; if you are not our friend, we restore you the faith by this present writing³".

GREGORY did not think proper to resent this contempt of the apostolic see by any ecclesiastical censures; but, being solicitous to repress the growing authority of the *Vicenti*, who again attacked the territories of the see of *Rome*, he published a bull, prohibiting any princes or nobles from contracting marriages with them or their children. At the same *He sends* time having assembled a considerable army, he gave the com- *an army* mand of it to *Amadeus* count of *Savoy*; and wrote to the *against the* emperor, the princes of *Germany*, and the king of *Hungary*, *Vicenti*; intreating their assistance in behalf of the church. His soli- *A.D.* citations had no effect upon the king of *Hungary* or the *1372.* *German* princes; but the emperor published a bull, granting a full power to the pope over all the lands and possessions of the *Vicenti*, which they held of the empire, under any title whatever. By this bull the pope was appointed imperial vicar in *Italy* for ten years, with a power of transferring that

² Direct. Inquis. EYMER. par. i. WADDING. hoc anno.
³ PONTAN. rer. Dan. l. viii.

and concludes a peace betwixt the king of Trinacria and the queen of Naples

dignity to others^b. The pope, having thus strengthened his authority in *Italy*, applied himself to put an end to the disputes betwixt *Naples* and *Sicily*; accordingly, by his means a treaty of peace was concluded, whereby *Frederic* was allowed the title of king of *Trinacria*, and *Jean* that of queen of *Sicily*; but *Frederic* and his successors were bound to render homage to the kings of *Sicily*, to pay an annual tribute of 3000 ounces of gold, and to furnish ten galleys and 100 armed knights in case of an invasion of the kingdom of *Naples*. Among other conditions, the pope added, that both the kings of *Sicily* and *Trinacria* should pay homage to the holy see, and that the immunities of the clergy should be confirmed by *Frederic*. The articles added by the pope being ratified the following year by *Frederic* and *Jean*, the apostolic nuncio went over into *Sicily*, and took off the sentence of excommunication and interdict from that island. In the mean time *Gregory* having received an embassy from the queen of *Armenia*, intreating the assistance of the *European* princes against the *Turks*, he wrote to her uncle, the prince of *Tarento*, to the master of the knights of *Rhodes*, to the king of *Hungary*, and the doges of *Venice* and *Genoa*, in her behalf. At the same time, being solicitous to stop the progress of the infidels, he exhorted the above-mentioned princes, and the *Greek* emperor, with the king of *Trinacria*, and the bishops and prelates of *Greece*, to assemble the following *October* at *Old Thebes*, to enter into a league against the enemies of *Christendom*^d; and, to supply the expences of the war, he sent collectors into all the provinces of *Europe*, to raise the taxes due to the apostolic see. *Gregory*, being no less earnest for the extirpation of heresy, animated the emperor and the princes of *Germany* against the heretics called *Begardi* and *Bequini*, who began to appear again in the empire. He likewise ordered the apostolic legate in *Sicily*, and the prelates of that kingdom, to repress the boldness of the *Fratricelli*, the *Dulcini*, and other heretics, who made a great shew of penitence in their lives, and worshipped relics as saints. He wrote to the count of *Savoy* to assist the inquisitors in suppressing the *Turlupines*, so called on account of their immodest tenets, and the depravity of their lives^e; and he ordered the inquisitors in *Arragon* to punish those who taught the doctrines of *Raimund*, a convert from *Judaism*, who asserted, that the devils ought to be worshipped: that, during tortures, it was lawful

The pope labours to extirpate heresy, and

^b Cod. Eccles. Burdegal.
Bzov. & Wadding. Annal.

^c Bzov. an. 1372. 1373.
^e Contin. Nangii.

to deny God by the mouth, provided he was still adored in the heart; and that it was more perfect to be a schismatic than a catholic. In consequence of these orders of the pope, the doctrines of *Raimund* were condemned, and his books committed to the flames. The *Turlupines* were also intirely suppressed, great numbers of that sect having been burnt at *Paris*, and elsewhere^f.

THE following year, *Gregory*, in imitation of his predecessor, by circular letters, advised all the bishops and prelates in Christendom to hold provincial and diocesan councils for the reformation of manners, and the restoring the discipline of the church. At the same time he exerted himself in behalf of ecclesiastical liberty, and, on that pretence, refused to grant the demands of the king of *England*, who, in consequence of an act of his parliament, had sent messengers to *Avignon*, requiring the pope to desist from conferring of benefices in *England*; and to leave, according to antient custom, the election of bishops to the clergy, and their confirmation to the metropolitans. The pope sent back the messengers to *England*; and made some demands upon the king, which he required to be granted, before he would hearken to those proposed by the parliament; and in the mean time, by his own authority, supplied the vacancies of some of the chief bishopricks in that kingdom. A few months after, the pope, being informed that one *Militzius*, a canon of *Prague*, had raised a sect in *Bohemia*, which maintained that antichrist was already come, and that there was no truth in the pope, cardinals, or bishops, but that the way of salvation was only to be found among them, he wrote to the archbishop of *Prague* to reprove *Militzius* as a heretic, and to punish his followers. About the same time he condemned to the flames an heretical book, intituled, *The Mirror of the Saxons*; and wrote to the archbishops of *Germany*, ordering them to publish his sentence of condemnation.

MEAN while his army in *Italy* having gained several advantages over the *Vicenti*, they again proposed an accommodation with the holy see; which was accordingly concluded, to the satisfaction of the pope, by the mediation of the dukes of *Austria*. *Gregory*, believing the peace solidly established in *Italy*, proposed to return to *Rome*, and fixed the time of his departure for the month of *September*, informing the emperor, and the kings of *Hungary*, *Sicily*, and *Trinacria*.

MEYER. l. xiii. EYMER. Direct. Inquis. par. ii. q. 20, &
s. Bzov. hoc an.

A. D.
1375.

and other princes, of his resolution. In the mean time he sent some *Dominicans* as his nuncios to the *Greek* emperor, to treat with him about the means of prevailing with the *Greeks* to embrace the union with the *Latin* church. He likewise sent the bishop of *Treviso*, with other bishops and *Dominicans*, into *Armenia*; and as the *Walachians*, who had lately abjured the schism, had no proper bishop, he committed the care of them to the archbishops of *Strigonia* and *Kolotza*, and to the king of *Hungary*^h (O). The pope, however, deferred his *Italian* journey; and the following year, being informed by the bishop of *Treviso*, who, in his way to *Armenia*, had stopped at *Constantinople*, that *Cantacuzenus*, formerly emperor, had been prevailed upon by the *Dominicans* to acknowledge the supremacy of the *Roman* church, he wrote to *Cantacuzenus*, inviting him to *Rome*, and exhorting him to use his authority with the other *Greeks*

^h SPOND. Annal.

(O) This year died the famous *Francis Petrarch*, in the 70th year of his age. He was born at *Arezzo* in *Tuscany*, his parents having been banished from *Florence* by the faction of the *Guelphs*. After he had learnt grammar, rhetoric, and logic, at *Carpentras*, he applied himself to the study of the law four years at *Montpelier*, and, after that, three years at *Bologna*. At the age of 22 years, hearing that his parents had died of the plague at *Avignon*, he went to that city; but soon after, to avoid the contagion, he retired to *Vaucluse*, in the neighbourhood of *Avignon*, where he first saw his mistress *Laura*, whom he has so greatly celebrated in his writings. Having received a letter on the same day from *Rome*, and the university of *Paris*, inviting him to come and receive the crown, with the honours due to a prince. Upon his arrival at *Rome*, the laurel

crown was conferred upon him, with great solemnity, in the capitol. He afterwards was created archdeacon of *Parma*; and, having visited *Verona*, *Parma*, *Venice*, and *Milan*, where *Galeas Visconti* made him a councillor of state, he stopped at *Padua*, and there received a canonicate, tho' he had formerly refused several benefices. He then bought a house at *Arqua*, where he lived five years, and received a favour from the *Florentines* he had formerly solicited in vain, namely, the restitution of all his paternal effects, and the revocation of the sentence of banishment against him; but their favour came too late, for he died a few years after at *Arqua*. He composed a great many treatises, and was esteemed by all the princes and great men of his time, being no less conspicuous for piety than for his eloquence and learning.

(1) Pet. Pogg. Boccace, Placide Cantanusi.

to embrace the union. To the same purpose he wrote to *Emanuel*, the emperor's younger son, and cautioned him from trusting to the *Turks*, with whom his father had concluded a truce, in consequence of which great numbers of infidels had entered *Constantinople*¹.

MEAN while the great superiority which the pope had acquired in *Italy*, by the inactivity of the emperor, and the success of the arms of his legates, was in great danger of being wholly ruined, by a general revolt of the cities subject to the holy see, occasioned by the tyrannical government of the legates, who not only oppressed their new subjects by grievous subsidies and exactions, but likewise built strong forts in each of their towns. The *Florentines*, at that time very rich and powerful, were the first who rose against the church, alleging, that the legates had prevented their city from receiving a supply of provisions during a great dearth; and that *John Hawkwood*, then in the service of the see of *Rome*, had ravaged their territory at the head of an army^k. Under pretence, therefore, that their liberty was in danger, they determined upon a war, the chief management of which they committed to a council of eight citizens. They imprisoned the pope's nuncio, destroyed the prison of the inquisition, and erected a standard, on which was written, in large letters, the *Latin* word *LIBERTAS*, declaring, at the same time, that whoever would revolt from the church should be comprehended in the league. In consequence of these proceedings, the cities of *Bologna* and *Perugia* immediately revolted, and were followed by more than 60 cities in *Romagna*, *Campania*, the *March*, and the duchy of *Spoleto*, who concluded an alliance with the *Florentines* and the *Vicenti*; and wrote to the emperor, and the king of *Hungary*, and other princes, in justification of their league, declaring, that though they refused to be governed by the church, yet they would still pay the usual tribute to the holy see^l. *Gregory*, thinking to stop the progress of the revolt, offered to enter into a negotiation for peace with the *Florentines*; and in the mean time he sent two legates to *Bruges* in *Flanders*, to reconcile the kings of *England* and *France*; and, being informed that the *Waldenses* were again become so numerous in *Dauphtay*, *Savoy*, and *Provence*, as to rise in rebellion against the inquisitors, he wrote to the prelates and rectors of the provinces, accusing them of negligence,

¹ BZOV. & WADDING. hoc an. CHALCOND. l. i.

IN. l. viii. Foggi. 2. ANTON. tit. xxii. c. 1. COR. PA

Annal. Mediol. ap. MURATOR. t. xvi. p

and, having desired the princes in those provinces to give their protection to the inquisitors, he sent the bishop of *Mussa* to assist them in extirpating the heretics^m.

Soon after, being alarmed with the strength of the confederacy in *Italy* against the church, he published a sentence of excommunication and interdict against the *Florentines*, depriving them of all their privileges, ordering their property to be seized, and their persons to be enslaved, in whatever country they should be found. In consequence of this censure, all the subjects of that state in *England*, *Germany*, and other kingdoms, were immediately declared slaves, and all their possessions seized, which obliged the *Florentines* to think of an accommodation with the holy see. They accordingly sent *Catharine* of *Sienna* to *Avignon*; to intercede for them with the pope, promising to send deputies to confirm whatever articles should be agreed to. The deputies, after several delays, at length arrived, but, instead of ratifying the articles, they spent the conferences in accusing the legatés and commanders of the church. *Gregory*, finding that they had no real desire of a peace, but intended to delude him with vain promises, raised an army of 6000 horse and 4000 foot in *Britany*, and other provinces of *France*, which he sent under the command of a cardinal into *Italy*, proposing himself to return to *Rome*. But, before he left *Avignon*, he granted a bull, allowing the electors to chuse *Wencelaus*, the emperor's eldest son, king of the *Romans*; and sent two nuncios into *Germany*, to be present at the electionⁿ. Having afterwards received an embassy from *Wencelaus*, informing him of his election, he allowed him to be crowned at *Aix-la-Chapelle*, by the archbishop of *Cologne*; and, leaving *Avignon* on the 13th of *September*, he embarked at *Marseilles* for *Italy*, and landed at *Corneto* on the 5th of *December*. After resting himself for some weeks from the fatigues of his voyage, he reimarked, and arrived at *Rome* on the 17th of *January*, where he was received with great demonstrations of joy.

The pope
returns to
Rome.

1377.

The Ro-
mans re-
tain the
sovereign-
ty of their
city.

By his presence at *Rome*, *Gregory* expected to re-establish the authority of the holy see in *Italy*, and to prevail with the rebels to submit; but he quickly found himself greatly mistaken; for though the *Romans*, upon his return, had suppressed the twelve captains of the wards, who were called bannerets, yet they soon after restored them, and resumed the government of the city, in opposition to the remonstrances of the pope. The rebels likewise were so far from

^m WADDINGTON.

ⁿ SPOND. ANNAL.

returning

returning to their allegiance, that even some cities, that had hitherto continued in their obedience, now entered into the league with the *Florentines* °; and *Hawkwood*, with his *English* troops, deserting the party of the church, made an alliance with *Bernabo Visconti*, who gave him his natural daughter in marriage P. *Gregory*, greatly afflicted with the bad state of his affairs, sent for the deputies of the *Florentines*, and admitted them to a kiss of peace, and a participation of the sacred ordinances; but he could not prevail with them to consent to any honourable terms of peace for the holy see: however, in the month of *June* they agreed to a cessation of arms for a few months. The pope in the mean time going to *Anagni*, from thence wrote to the emperor, the king of *France*, and other princes, complaining bitterly of the *Florentines*, who, in contempt of the interdict denounced against them, had compelled their priests to perform divine service, and protected a heretic, who explained the apocalypse, and other parts of Scripture, in the vulgar tongue q. Returning to *Rome* in the beginning of *November*, he wrote to *Bernabo* and *Hawkwood*, intreating them to hearken to a reconciliation. *Bernabo*, upon his repeated solicitations, at length declared his willingness to enter into a negotiation; and the *Florentines*, beginning to be weary of the expences of the war, which had cost them upwards of 3,000,000 of florins, a congress was appointed to be held at *Serazane* in *Tuscany*. A truce agreed to betwixt the pope and the confederates.

DURING these commotions in *Italy*, *Gregory*, being informed of the heresies published in *England* by *John Wickliffe*, wrote to the chancellor and university of *Oxford*, reproving them severely for allowing those erroneous doctrines to be published, and ordering them forthwith to deliver *John* as a prisoner into the hands of the archbishop of *Canterbury* and the bishop of *London*, to whom he sent nineteen articles taken from the propositions of *Wickliffe*, which he condemned as heretical. He wrote also to those prelates to examine the doctrines of *Wickliffe*, and to keep him prisoner in irons; but, if they could not seize him, to summon him publicly to appear before the apostolic see within three months. The king of *England* likewise received a letter from the pope, exhorting him to use his authority in extirpating heresy; but *Richard*, who, a few months before the arrival of the pope's letters in *England*, had succeeded his grandfather *Edward III.* being then a boy, his uncle the duke of

° *CRETIN.* l. viii. *ANTON.* tit. xxii. c. i.
Mediæ. ut supra, c. 139. q *SPERD.* Annal.

P *Annal.*

The papal
authority
is opposed
in Ger-
many. •

A. D.
1378.

Gregory
dies at
Rome.

The Ro-
mans vio-
lently com-
pel the car-
dinals to

Lancaster, and several other nobles, afforded their protection to *Wickliffe*; so that the archbishop of *Canterbury*, and the bishop of *London*, being prohibited by the nobles, and threatened by the citizens of *London*, dropt the prosecution, and excused themselves, by alleging, that *Wickliffe* declared, that he would submit his doctrines to the judgment of the church of *Rome* (P). • The authority of the pope was at this time also opposed in *Germany*, where several princes and magistrates had decreed, that no temporal possessions ought to be transferred to ecclesiastics; that no clergyman ought to be admitted as an agent or witness in civil affairs; that excommunicated persons ought not to be deprived of the benefit of the laws. But the emperor, zealous for aggrandizing the power of the popes, published a bull, ordering those decrees to be revoked; and prohibiting, under severe penalties, any one from molesting the clergy^a. Mean while *Gregory*, not depending greatly upon the pacific intentions of the confederates, wrote to the archbishop of *Rouen*, his nuncio, to solicit the king of *France* and the emperor to assist the church, and to send deputies to the congress. The king, receiving soon after a letter from the pope, sent four deputies to *Verrazana*, where the congress was opened on the 12th of *March*; but, as *Gregory* died on the 27th of the same month, the conferences were immediately broke off, and the deputies returned home^t.

BEFORE the death of *Gregory*, the benefactors consulted about the means of retaining the apostolic see in *Italy*, and, by the advice of the *Italian* prelates, they unanimously agreed to use their utmost endeavours, upon the death of the pope, to procure a *Roman*, or at least an *Italian*, to be elected as

^r WALSING. HARPSFIELD.
Annal.

^s BZOV. hoc an. ^t SPOND.

(P) The doctrines of which *Wickliffe* was accused were not all published at once. The chief of those which he at first advanced were, "That the wafer in the eucharist, after consecration, is not the real body of Christ, but its figure only; that the *Roman* church has no right to be the head of all churches; that the

"pope has no more authority than any other priest; that lay patrons may and ought to deprive a delinquent church of its temporal possessions; that the gospel was sufficient to direct any Christian; that no prelate of the church ought to have prisons for punishing delinquents"

(1).

(1) *Walsing.*

his successor. After *Gregory's* death, they accordingly ex-^{chuse an} horted the cardinals singly to chuse a *Roman* or *Italian*, Italian otherwise they threatened them with an insurrection of the ^{pope.} people.

When the cardinals entered the conclave, the tumult increased, and the common people having expelled the nobles, and brought a great many country people into the city, with great violence rushed into the conclave, and surrounded the palace, loudly demanding a *Roman* or *Italian* pope. At length, at the persuasion of the bannerets, the mob quitted the conclave, and the doors were shut; however, they continued all night round the palace, with great tumult and noise; and in the morning, when they heard the celebration of the mass, they rung the alarm bells, and, having obliged the cardinals to open the windows of the conclave towards the street, they declared, that unless they immediately chose a *Roman* or *Italian*, they would put them to death. In this extremity, the *French* cardinals, who were three fourths of the whole college, protesting that they only consented to an election from the fear of immediate death, they then named *Bartholomew* archbishop of *Bari*, a gentleman of *Naples*. As this gentleman was remarkable for his modesty and humility, and for his skill in the canon law, the cardinals were persuaded that he would acknowledge his election to be null, and would therefore abdicate the pontificate. They were, however, greatly disappointed; for the archbishop, who assumed the name of *Urban* VI. obliged the cardinals, six of whom had fled to the castle of *St. Angelo*, to come to the palace, and perform the ceremony of his coronation^u. The day after he wrote to those cardinals that remained at *Avignon*, informing them of the election of *Urban*, which they declared to be free and unanimous. To the same purpose they wrote to the princes and prelates in *Europe*. However, *Spondanus*, from a *Vatican* code, asserts, that one of the cardinals wrote secretly to the *French* king, desiring him to give no credit to their letters that were dated from

Urban
the sixth
is elected.

Rome^w. The *French* cardinals having thus in appearance ^{The} acknowledged the validity of the election, they behaved with ^{French} the usual obsequiousness for three months; but, under pre-^{cardinals} tence of avoiding the heat, they obtained leave to retire to ^{retire to} *Anagni*, *Urban* himself, with the four *Italian* cardinals, about ^{Anagni,} the same time going to *Tivoli*. At *Anagni* they immediately ^{and proceed} took the troops of *Britany* into their pay; and, having sum-^{to a second} moned the four cardinals that were at *Tivoli*, they wrote to

^u THEOD. de Niem. l. i. ANTON. tit
l. ii. c. 12.

^w SPOND. Annal. h

C. 2. FROSSARD,

Clement
VII. anti-
pope.

A schism
in the
church.

Urban to resign the pontificate. *Urban*, having then received a guard of 200 spearmen, and a considerable body of foot from the queen of *Naples*, sent three cardinals to *Anagni*, to exhort their brethren to return to their duty, but without effect; for on the 9th of *August* the *French* cardinals published a sentence against *Urban*, by the title of the archbishop of *Bari*, accusing him of being an apostate and antichrist. Soon after, having prevailed with queen *Jean* and her husband *Otho* of *Brunswick* to abandon *Urban*, they went to *Fondi*, where, on the 21st of *September*, they chose cardinal *Robert*, who took the name of *Clement VII* *.

THUS a violent schism arose in the church, to the great disturbance of several kingdoms in *Europe*, which were thereby involved in the miseries of war (Q). The emperor, with the kingdoms of *Portugal*, *Hungary*, *Poland*, *England*, *Bohemia*, *Denmark*, and *Sweden*, and the *Italians*, *Flemings*, *Saxons*, and *Westphalians*, acknowledged *Urban*; *France*, *Spain*, *Scotland*, *Cyprus*, *Sicily*, and some princes, submitted to the authority of *Clement*; while others continued in a neutrality, till the dispute should be determined by a general council. Mean while the two popes persecuted each other with mutual anathemas, and by offering plenary indulgences to all those who would take the cross in defence of their cause. What the one bound, the other loosed; and what

* SPOND. ANNAL. hoc an.

(Q) This schism continued upwards of forty years, and, according to several authors, was owing to the ill timed feverity of *Urban*, who took no pains to sooth the exasperated spirits of the cardinals; but, in a public discourse immediately after his coronation, reprehended them severely for their pomp and luxury, and threatened to punish those who should be guilty of simony, or receiving of bribes, adding reproaches against some of the college for privately corresponding with the enemies of the church. This unseasonable rigour, together with his kindness to the Ro-

mans, provoked the *French* cardinals to think of a second election, justifying themselves on account of the violence the conclave had suffered at *Rome*, a particular relation of which they published after their arrival at *Anagni*. Some authors greatly extenuate the violence offered by the *Romans*, while others are at as much pains to represent it in the worst light, every one writing in favour of the party he had espoused. The great number of treatises written on the occasion of this schism are collected in the *Vatican* library, and consist of thirty-two volumes (1).

tha. (1) Spond. Annal.

the

the one granted, the other annulled; in consequence of which a great corruption of manners quickly prevailed; the good were not honoured, and the bad were protected by either party; rapines and murders became frequent, the laws were despised, discipline abolished, and simony established as a public merchandize. *Urban*, before the schism, had concluded a peace with *Bernabo*, the *Florentines*, and the confederates, confirmed the election of *Wenceslaus*, without receiving any embassy from *Germany*, and threatened to excommunicate the king of *Arragon*, if he did not desist from his pretensions to the crown of *Sicily* (R). But finding himself abandoned by all the cardinals excepting one, and by the greatest part of the prelates and officers of his court, he began to be sensible of his imprudent conduct in acting too arbitrarily before his authority was established; and, having returned to *Rome*, created 29 new cardinals, chiefly *Romans* and *Neapolitans*. *Clement* likewise about the same time created six cardinals; and sent the troops of *Britany* and *Gascony*, and the *Roman* nobles that adhered to his party, to take possession of *Rome*; but, after several skirmishes, they were obliged to retire with considerable loss. Finding his arms unsuccessful, the following year he retired to *Naples*, where he was received by the queen with all the veneration usually paid to a pope; but the *Neapolitans* raising a tumult in favour of *Urban* their citizen, *Clement* was obliged to quit the city, and, as he had few followers in *Italy*, about the middle of *June* he embarked with his cardinals for *Marseilles*, and was received with great joy at *Avignon*.

A. D.
1379.

The anti-pope retires to Avignon.

URBAN, being now secure in *Italy*, resolved to revenge himself upon the queen of *Naples*, by declaring her excommunicated, and absolving her subjects from their allegiance; and as the emperor and the king of *Hungary* had jointly published a letter in his favour, he wrote to the king, inviting him to punish the queen for the murder of his brother, and to send *Charles* of *Durazzo* with an army to take possession of the kingdom of *Naples*. *Charles*, who at that time commanded the *Hungarian* army in the *Trevisan* against the *Venetians*, after some difficulties was prevailed upon to accept of the offer of the pope, and made secret preparations for his expedition. *Urban* accordingly published a sen-

(R) *Urban*, in opposing the pretensions of the king of *Arragon*, seems to have been actuated by motives of personal interest; for, according to *Theodo-*

ric de Niem, and others, he intended a match betwixt his own nephew *Francis Prignano* and *Mary* heiress of *Sicily*.

tence

A. D.
1380.

Urban
crowns
Charles of
Durazzo
king of
Sicily.

Disturb-
ances at
Paris,
account of
the exac-
tions of the
antipope.

A. D.
1381.

tence of excommunication and deposition against *Jean*, who to avert the storm with which she was threatened, took the grand companies into her pay, and, as she had no issue, adopted the duke of *Anjou*, the French king's brother, as her heir. But the year after, *Charles of Durazzo* arriving with an army of Hungarians at *Rome*, *Urban* conferred upon him the crowns of *Sicily* and *Jerusalem*, under the same conditions as the kings of *Naples* had formerly bound themselves to the holy see (S); and as *Charles* was in great want of money, the pope melted down and sold a great many gold and silver chalices, crosses, and images of saints, for the expences of the war. *Charles*, immediately after his coronation, marching for *Naples*, by a successful battle made himself master of the whole kingdom, and got the queen and her husband into his power; while the legate, whom *Urban* had sent to accompany him, having apprehended two cardinals and several prelates of the party of *Clement*, obliged them to abjure the antipope, and to throw the ornaments of their dignity into the fire. Mean while great disturbances were raised in *France* by the exactions of the antipope, who not only conferred the richest vacant benefices on his cardinals, but appropriated others by grants of reversion; and, as he had no other kingdom to supply the expences of his court, great sums of money were raised under the name of tythes and arrears due to the apostolic chamber. As, upon these accounts, the students, who were cut off from all hopes of preferment, deserted the university, *Die Rasi*, a doctor of divinity, went to the king, and represented their grievances with great freedom. The duke of *Anjou*, who was then regent, and supposed to be a sharer with the antipope in his exactions, being highly offended with this representation, imprisoned the doctor; but the whole university going in a body, and complaining of the outrage, the doctor obtained his liberty, and immediately after went to *Urban*, who wrote to the university, exhorting them to persevere in their opposition to the antipope. *Urban* soon after was alarmed at *Rome* by an insurrection of the *Romans*, who were offended with him for denying a petition that they had presented;

THEOD. de Niem. l. i.
Car. VI.

JUVEN. in reb. gest.

(S) The same author relates, that, before *Charles* was crowned by the pope, he was forced to promise to his new, *Francis*

Prignano, the duchies of *Capua* and *Amalphi*, and several other counties in the kingdom of *Naples*.

however,

however, the pope opposing their fury with constancy and firmness, they quickly laid down their arms, and asked pardon^b. About the same time *Charles* of *Durazzo* having caused the queen of *Naples* to be put to death, the duke of *Anjou*, whom she had adopted as her son and heir, arrived at *Avignon*, and was crowned king of *Sicily* by *Clement*. After reducing the *Provençals*, who had refused to acknowledge him as their sovereign, he passed the *Alps* with a numerous army, and entered the kingdom of *Naples*, where he was immediately joined by many of the nobles, and took several towns in *Apulia* and *Calabria*; but as his troops were not accustomed to the climate, and his convoys were frequently intercepted by the enemy, before the return of the spring his army was greatly lessened, and inferior to the forces of *Charles*.

A. D.

1382.

who con-

fers the

crown of

Sicily on

the duke of

Anjou.

1383.

MEAN while *Urban*, having left *Rome* to avoid the heats, after residing some time at *Tivoli*, resolved to go to *Naples*, to settle the commotions in that kingdom, and to obtain the confirmation of the promises of *Charles* in favour of his nephew. Though he was dissuaded from his journey by several letters from *Naples*, and by many of his cardinals; he nevertheless proceeded, and arrived at *Aversa* in the beginning of *October*, where he was received with great respect by *Charles*, who led his horse into the city. The pope took up his residence at the bishop's palace; but the following night he was conducted by force into the castle, where he was compelled to receive all the conditions upon which he had granted the kingdom of *Naples* to *Charles*. Proceeding from *Aversa* to *Naples*, he was again lodged in the castle; but after some time, at the intercession of the cardinals and nobles, *Charles* was reconciled to him, asked pardon for what he had done, and set him at liberty, promising likewise to fulfil what he had promised to his nephew^c. *Urban*, soon after his promotion, had desired the assistance of the king of *England* against the *French*, granting him, for that purpose, the tythes of all ecclesiastical revenues in his kingdom. In consequence of frequent letters from *Rome*, the bishop of *Norwich* at length assembled an army of 17,000 crusaders; and, about the time that *Urban* was preparing for his *Neapolitan* journey, transported his troops to *Calais*, with the intention of attacking the *French* as schismatics; but, after his arrival upon the continent, he altered his design, and invaded *Flanders*. The *Flemings*, who acknow-

Urban

goes to

Naples;

where he

is treated

with in-

dignity by

king

Charles.

^b WALSING. KRANTZ, Metrop. 14. Niem.

^c THEOD. de

leged *Urban*, being surprised by the *English*, lost several towns; but the king of *France* approaching with a formidable army, the crusaders dispersed, and the bishop returned in a disgraceful manner to *England*.

He published a crusade against the duke of Anjou.

A. D.
1384.

A rupture between the pope and the king of Naples.

THE following year *Urban*, still residing at *Naples*, excommunicated the duke of *Anjou*, and published a crusade against him, appointing *Charles* standard-bearer, and general of the crusaders. After the king's departure for the campaign, he himself went to *Nocera*, which had been granted to his nephew. As an edict had been published, prohibiting any one to buy victuals, or even salt or candles, unless from the king's warehouses, his court was quickly in great want of provisions, on which account a great many cardinals returned to *Naples*; but the pope recalling them, they all, except one, came back to *Nocera*, and shared in the indignities which he suffered in that city for several months. The king, in the mean time, being freed from his competitor by death, and having obtained the quiet possession of the kingdom, returned in the month of *November* in a triumphant manner to *Naples*. Though *Nocera* was within a day's journey of his capital, he neglected to visit the pope, but sent to him in a disrespectful manner, demanding why he left *Naples*, and desiring him to return immediately, as he had matters of importance to communicate to him. The pope, provoked to the last degree with his arrogance, replied, that Christian kings and princes did not use to call the popes to them, but thought themselves honoured by coming to the feet of the popes; and that, if he desired to see him as a friend, he must take off the heavy taxes with which he oppressed a kingdom that was a fief of the holy see. This answer greatly offended the king, who declared, that the kingdom was his own by conquest, and by right of his wife, and by his own authority he would raise what taxes he thought proper. The difference betwixt *Urban* and the king was chiefly fomented by cardinal *Realì*, who, in contempt of the pope's message, had remained at *Naples*.

THIS cardinal, for what reason is uncertain, had resolved upon the ruin of *Urban*, and, by corresponding secretly with the cardinals at *Nocera*, had persuaded them, that it was the opinion of divines, and those that were skilled in the canons, that when a pope acted imprudently, or despised the advice of the cardinals, it was lawful to appoint several curators to assist in the administration of the universal church.

The cardinals, having once assented to this opinion, proceeded further; and having alleged against the pope the crimes of heresy, ambition, avarice, and ingratitude towards the king, they formed a design, not only of deposing him, but of murdering him. The conspiracy being discovered by one of the cardinals, *Urban* immediately held a consistory, and, laying before them the proofs he had received of the plot, he ordered six, some authors say seven, of the cardinals to be seized and put in irons. Having by tortures wrested from them a confession of their guilt, he confined them to separate dungeons; and a few days after, to supply their places, he made a promotion of seventeen cardinals, among whom were the three ecclesiastical electors of *Germany*, the bishops of *Liege* and *Wratiflaw*, and a priest of *Bohemia* of a noble family, which six refused to accept of the dignity that was offered them. Immediately after these proceedings, he assembled the clergy and people of *Nocera*, and, giving them a particular account of the conspiracy, he erected a cross, and, with lighted candles, excommunicated the king and queen of *Naples*, cardinal *Real*, with the other convicted cardinals, and the antipope, with all his adherents. The king and queen were also deposed, the cardinals deprived of their dignities, and the city of *Naples* laid under an interdict.

CHARLES, highly exasperated at the pope's fulmination, who is imprisoned all the prelates and clergy that favoured *Urban* at *Naples*; and, marching with his army against *Nocera*, took and plundered the city, the pope having saved himself in the citadel, from whence thrice a day he denounced anathemas against the king's army, with bell and candles. *Urban*, after suffering for some time the miseries of a siege, at length, by means of two generals of the party of the late duke of *Angou*, he escaped from the citadel, and arrived with his cardinals, and those that were degraded, after a dangerous journey, at *Benevento*. From thence proceeding to *Barletta*, he embarked on board some *Genoese* galleys, and arrived on the 23d of *September* at *Genoa*, where he again committed his degraded cardinals to prison, excepting *Adam*, an *Englishman*, who, at the intercession of king *Richard*, was allowed to return to *England* (T). Immediately after the departure

GöBEL. Pers. ap. rer. Germ. scriptor. t. i
de Niem, l. i. c. 42.

THEOD. c. 49.

316. THEOD.

(T) This is the account of *Personam*, *Crantz*,
Theodoric de Niem, *Gobellinus*, *Summont*, and others; how-
ever,

A. D.
1386.

departure of *Urban*, *Charles* crossed the *Adriatic*, and went into *Hungary*, where, in prejudice of the rights of the daughters of the late king, he was crowned by a faction on the 31st of *December*, but was murdered a few weeks afterwards by the party of the queen. The news of his death arriving at *Naples*, the queen immediately crowned his son *Ladislaus*, or *Lancelot*, then a boy of ten years of age. But as the party of the duke of *Anjou* likewise crowned his son *Lewis*, who was supported by the antipope *Clement*, the queen solicited the assistance of *Urban* in the most submissive and pressing manner. Though it was the interest of the pope to support the party of *Ladislaus* in opposition to that of *Lewis*, yet, as the resentment for the injuries he had received from *Charles* had not yet subsided, it was with great difficulty he was prevailed upon to give assistance to his son. At length he sent a few troops; but, before their arrival, the *Clementine* party had taken possession of *Naples*, and gained several other advantages. Mean while *Urban* received an embassy from *Jagello* duke of *Lithuania*, who had renounced his idolatry, and, after his baptism, married the queen of *Poland*, and, by the name of *Uladislaus*, ascended the throne of that kingdom, to which he had annexed his hereditary dominions.

where he
puts the
degraded
cardinals
to death.

SOON after the pope, having rejected all intercessions in behalf of the degraded cardinals, ordered them to be put to death, as his own life was again in danger from the designs of their friends, who had more than once endeavoured to poison him, and had even assaulted his palace^b. As he made diligent inquiry to find out the authors of the assault, two cardinals fled from his court, and went to *Avignon*, where they were promoted to the same dignity by other titles. *Urban*, not being able to prevail with the doge of *Genoa* to punish those that had been guilty of the assault, left that city, and in the end of *December* arrived at *Lucca*, where he resided nine months. *Clement*, in the mean time, find-

A. D.
1387.

^b GODELIN. PERSON. ut supra, p. 309, 310.

ever, *Niem* adds, that, while the pope was on his journey from *Nocera* to the sea-coast, he ordered the bishop of *Aquila*, who was one of the conspirators, to be put to death and left unburied, imagining he wanted to

escape, as he was mounted on a bad horse, and, on account of sickness, occasioned by his long imprisonment, was unable to keep up with the rest of the company (1).

(1) *Niem*, c. 56.

ing his party strengthened, by the accession of the kings of *Navarre* and *Aragon*, and by some successes of his adherents in *Italy*, that he might, by an appearance of moderation, reconcile the minds of others, he sent legates thro' the different provinces of *Christendom*, to desire a general council, declaring, that he was willing to submit to the decision of the church, without whose determination he could not with a safe conscience resign the pontificate: that, if he was confirmed, he would create *Urban* a cardinal of the first rank, and, if the council should decide against him, he would submit to *Urban*. *Clement*, by this proceeding, gained a great many friends in *Germany*, from whence the princes and prelates sent an embassy to *Urban*, desiring him to consent to a general council, in order to procure the unity of the church, offering a place of security, and to defray the expences necessary on that occasion. The solicitations of the ambassadors were ineffectual; for *Urban* insisted, that there was no necessity to examine the justness of his title to the pontificate^k. About the same time he published a crusade against the *Clementines* that had seized *Naples*; and, having had some disputes with the *Florentines*, he left *Lucca*, and went to *Perugia*.

DURING his residence in that city, a division arose among the chiefs of the party of the duke of *Anjou* at *Naples*, who employed their troops in revenging their private quarrels. *Urban*, in hopes of recovering his interest in that kingdom, assembled a considerable body of horse, and, in the month of *August*, leaving *Perugia*, marched for *Naples*. But, having a fall from his mule, he was obliged to be carried in a litter to *Tivoli*, where he received an embassy from the *Romans*, inviting him to *Rome*. *Urban*, distrusting their fidelity, advanced with his troops to *Ferentino*; but they having almost wholly deserted for want of pay, he was obliged, in the beginning of *October*, to return to *Rome*, having been informed that the city of *Bologna* had revolted to the party of *Clement*. The following year, according to *Bonifagnius* and *Antoninus*, he had a dispute with the *Romans*, on account of some senator he had appointed, whom they suspected to be their enemy. To quiet the people, who threatened an insurrection, he published a bull for the celebration of a jubilee the following year at *Rome*; which solemnity he ordered for the future to be observed every thirty-three years, according to the number of years of our Saviour's

He marches from *Perugia* with some troops to recover *Naples*.
A. D. 1388.

^k MYTHI Chron. Germ. lib. xxvi.
ANTON. tit. xxii. c. 2.

^k NIEM, c. 66.

Dies at
Rome.

life¹. He hoped by this festival to enrich both the *Romans* and himself; but he died before the time arrived for its celebration: *Nicini*, who was present at his death, relates, that, after a sickness of twenty-eight days, he died on the 12th of *October*, and that it was generally believed he was poisoned^m.

Boniface
elected.

A FEW days after the death of *Urban*, the cardinals who were at *Rome*, to the number of fourteen, entered the conclave, and, after some disputes, unanimously chose *Peter Tomacello*, a *Neapolitan*, and cardinal priest, of the title of *St. Anastasia*. He was consecrated and crowned on the feast of *St. Martin*, by the name of *Boniface IX.* and immediately after published circular letters, informing all the Christian princes and prelates of his promotion (U). The news of his election so sooner reached *Avignon*, than *Clement* denounced a sentence of excommunication against him, the same anathema having been fulminated by *Boniface* against the antipope. Soon after, in consequence of the bull for the jubilee, great numbers of pilgrims arrived at *Rome*; but as they were not so numerous as at the former jubilees, *Boniface* sent the indulgencies into the different provinces of Christendom, to be conferred on those who, instead of the pilgrimage, would undertake other pious works. Those who were intrusted with the disposal of the indulgencies, were ordered to return a third part of the offerings to the pope. But as great abuses were committed in that sacred merchandize, the collectors were not only neglected by the people, but also imprisoned by *Boniface*, who, at the persuasion of *Adam* the *English* cardinal, whom he had restored to his dignity, declared, that a confession without penance did not intitle any one to the benefit of the indulgence, unless at the point of deathⁿ. About the same time the pope having received an embassy from the queen of *Sicily* and her son *Ladislaus*, desiring to be absolved from the sentence of excommunication denounced against them by *Urban*, and to receive the investiture of the kingdom, he sent cardinal *Acciaioi* to *Gacta*, where they then were, who crowned the young *Ladislaus*, with his wife *Constantia*, king and queen of *Sicily*.

A jubilee
celebrated
at Rome.

A. D.
1390.

¹ NIEM, c. 68. BONINSEGN. lib. iv. ANTON. tit. at supra.
^m NIEM, c. 69. ⁿ WALRING. in Rich. II.

(U) *Boniface* was born of a noble though poor family, and, according to *Niem*, was created a cardinal twenty years af-

and

and *Jerusalem*. Mean while the antipope having received an embassy from the knights of *Rhodes*, informing him of the danger of *Smyrna*, from the incursions of the *Tartars* under the command of *Tamerlane*, he published a bull, promising a plenary remission of sins to all those who would furnish money to the assistance of the Christians in *Asia*°.

THIS bull was soon after followed by a letter of *Boniface*, addressed to all the faithful, exhorting them to the obedience of the pope, and to defend the apostolic see. As the antipope was chiefly supported by *France*, *Boniface* exclaimed against that kingdom. He compared the residence of the popes on the banks of the *Rhone* to the captivity of the Jews at *Babylon*. He asserted, that the king of *France* had been deceived by false letters, as though *Urban VI.* had designed to deprive him of the kingdom of *Arles*; and that he engaged in defence of the schism, upon a promise from the antipope of obtaining the universal monarchy, and the tythes in perpetuity^p. *Boniface* seems to have published this letter from his apprehension of an expedition of the king of *France* into *Italy*, according to a rumour which then prevailed^q. He was likewise soon after alarmed by the proceedings of the parliament of *England*, who ordered all *English* subjects then at *Rome*, soliciting preferment, to return immediately, under pain of losing their benefices. The pope, apprehensive lest *England* should declare for the antipope, sent an abbot into that kingdom, to declare, that he had no intention to infringe the king's prerogative, but would nevertheless defend the ecclesiastical liberty. The abbot had orders also to inform the king, that the antipope and the king of *France* had entered into a treaty to invest the duke of *Tours*, that king's brother, with all the dominions of the church in *Italy*, to confirm the young duke of *Anjou* in the kingdom of *Sicily*, and to create some other person king of *Lombardy* and *Tuscany*; on which account the pope intreated the king of *England* to undertake the defence of the church, as the *French*, if they were once masters of *Italy*, would easily conquer *England*^r.

WHILE his nuncio was representing these things in *England*, *Boniface*, at the request of the *German* prelates, published a bull, confirming the edicts of the emperors *Frederic II.* and *Charles IV.* for the immunity and jurisdiction of ecclesiastics. He likewise canonized *St. Bridget*, and sent legates to mediate a peace betwixt the *Viceni* and the *Flo-*

A. D.
1391.

The pope informs the king of England of the ambitious views of the French;

and publishes a bull for the liberty of ecclesiastics, 1392.

° Bzov. hoc anno.

FROSSARD.

^p Epist. Bonif. fac. apud SPOND.

^q WALSHINGHAM in. II.

gentines, which was accordingly concluded the following *January*. Not long after the pope, on account of the many indignities and hardships he suffered from the bannerets of *Rome*, was obliged to quit the city, and retire to *Perugia*, where, at the intreaty of the queen dowager of *Sicily*, he granted a divorce betwixt her son *Ladislaus* and his young queen *Constantia*, for no other reason pretended, than because a report prevailed, that *Constantia's* mother had been debauched by *Martin* duke of *Monablenco*. He likewise sent two nuncios with a letter to the king of *France*, desiring him to give his assistance in restoring the union of the church. The two nuncios went first to *Avignon*, where they were injuriously treated, and detained prisoners by the antipope; but, at the request of the university of *Paris*, the king of *France* ordered them to be set at liberty. Upon their arrival at *Paris* the king admitted them to an audience, and desired them to inform *Boniface*, that he would endeavour to the utmost to promote the union of the church, for which purpose supplications and processions were then begun to be made at *Paris*. *Clement*, perceiving the inclinations of the *Parisians*, pretended likewise to desire the union, and added a peculiar office to the mass, granting great indulgences to those who celebrated it. But it appears, that his real intention was otherwise, for he soon after sent a master of the *Carmelites* to excite the *Parisians* against *Boniface*. The following year the pope, having received the verbal answer of the king of *France*, again wrote to the prince; but as *Charles* was then in a state of lunacy, his letter was neglected by those who had the administration of the kingdom. Meanwhile the books of *John Wickliffe*, having been carried into *Bohemia* by a young nobleman of that kingdom, who had studied at *Oxford*, his doctrines were embraced by great numbers of people at *Prague*; and, being publicly preached by *John Hus*, they were received likewise in several cities of *Germany*, particularly at *Augsburgh*, where one *Henry*, a priest of *Bamberg*, having received authority from the magistrates of the city, made inquiry after those who professed heretical doctrines, many of whom this year he ordered to be burnt, and commanded those who recanted their opinions to wear upon their breast and back a yellow cross for 12 months.

The followers of Wickliffe's doctrines are persecuted in Germany.

Boniface DURING these proceedings against the heretics in *Germany* many *Bonifaces* returned to *Rome*; but he continued but a *Rome*.

* SUMMONT.

CRUSII Annal. Suev. par. iii.

l. vi. c. 4.

few

few months in the city, when his life was in danger, from a violent insurrection of the Romans, who broke open the doors of his bed-chamber, and dragged from thence some canons of *St. Peter's* church, who had refused to agree to an alienation required of them by the bannerets. The king of *Naples*, who had come to *Rome* to demand succours from the pope against his competitor, immediately assembled some troops; and, having repulsed the mob, effected a reconciliation betwixt the *Romans* and his holiness. About the same time the university of *Paris*, having obtained leave from the king to consult of means to put an end to the schism, had concluded upon three expedients for that purpose, namely, either the resignation of both the pretenders, or a mutual compromise of both parties to elect a certain person, or, lastly, the determination of a general council. Notwithstanding the great opposition of the duke of *Berry*, the king's uncle, and *Peter de Luna*, the legate of the antipope, the university presented their resolutions in form of a letter to the king; which were graciously received by his majesty, who appointed a day for the further deliberation of that affair. At length, however, the intrigues of the antipope's legate prevailed; and the chancellor, by order of the king, prohibited the university from any further proceedings on that subject. *Clement* dying a few months afterwards, on the 16th of *September*, the king of *France* immediately wrote to his cardinals to delay the election of a successor, till he should send some messengers to treat of the means of an union. The cardinals likewise received letters to the same purpose from the university of *Paris*, from the king of *Arragon*, and other princes. *Boniface* also sent two legates to *Avignon*, and wrote to the king of *France* and university of *Paris*, exhorting them to use their utmost endeavours to put an end to the schism. The cardinals at *Avignon*, however, paid no regard to the solicitations of the king of *France*, but, ten days after the death of *Clement*, entered the conclave, and chose *Peter de Luna*, who took the name of *Benedict XIII.*; and wrote to the Christian princes, that he had been elected against his inclination, and would even willingly resign to procure the union of the church.

In consequence of these professions, the king of *France* assembled the prelates and doctors of his kingdom at *Paris*, in the beginning of *February*, to consult about the means of an union. The council, after mature deliberation, de-

method of
resigna-
tion, to put
an end to
the schism.

A. D.

1395.

creed, that the method of resignation was the most convenient; and that *Benedict* and the king ought first to inform the princes of their own party; and that the king alone should then acquaint the princes of the opposite party with the means proposed for the union; and that, after those princes should have persuaded *Boniface* to agree to a resignation, they should then consult about the manner of the future election. The king of *France* being informed that *Benedict* and his cardinals, before his election, had taken an oath, whereby they had bound themselves to endeavour to the utmost of their power to put an end to the schism, he sent to *Avignon* for a copy of the oath; but receiving only evasive answers from the antipope, he sent his brother and his three uncles, with several other eminent nobles, prelates, and doctors, to *Avignon*, to urge *Benedict* to remember his oath, and give peace to the church. This solemn embassy had no influence with the antipope; however, all his cardinals, except three, subscribed their assent to the method of resignation. During these transactions in *France*, the *Lollards* or *Wickliffites* in *England* expressed their contempt for both popes, by writings affixed to the doors of *St. Paul's* and *St. Peter's* churches; while the university of *Oxford*, at the desire of the king, examined the method of resignation proposed by the *Parisians*, which they condemned by numerous arguments, and proposed the way of a general council, which they proved to be preferable, on account of its authority and dignity. *Boniface*, being informed of the outrages committed by the *Wickliffites*, the following year wrote to the king of *England*, desiring him to assist the prelates of the church against the *Lollards*, and to condemn those who were declared heretics. About the time the king received the pope's letter, the archbishop of *Canterbury* held a council at *London*, which condemned eighteen propositions taken from the books of *Wickliffe*. Soon after the kings of *England* and *France* having an interview in the neighbourhood of *Calais*, *Richard* was married to the *French* king's daughter in that city; and, disapproving of the opinion of the university of *Oxford*, agreed, that the method of cession was most proper to put an end to the schism. Accordingly, the year after, ambassadors were sent in the name of both kings to the two competitors for the pontificate, desiring them to consent to a resignation. Both *Boniface* and *Benedict* refused to give a determinate answer to this proposal. *Boniface* likewise, having received another embassy from the

The kings
of Eng-
land and
France so-
licit both
popes to
resign.

diet at *Frankfort* to the same purpose, evaded giving a positive answer as to the cession, but treated the ambassadors with great respect, and granted particular favours to them and their friends*.

SOON after the emperor *Wenceslaus*, who had neglected to appear at the diet at *Frankfort*, sent deputies to *Rome*, to inform the pope, that he proposed an interview with the king of *France* at *Rheims*, to consult of the means for terminating the schism; and therefore desired his holiness to send two of his cardinals thither, with full power to treat upon that subject. *Boniface* wrote to the emperor, dissuading him earnestly from that journey; however, his letter had no effect, and *Wenceslaus* arrived at *Rheims* in the month of *March*, where he was treated with great magnificence by the *French* king. At his persuasion the emperor agreed to the means of cession; and the bishop of *Cambray* went as deputy from both princes, to desire *Boniface* to consent to a resignation. The pope, being informed by the bishop, that *Boniface* the emperor and the *French* king had determined to withdraw their obedience from that pope who refused to agree to the means of cession, declared, that if they could prevail with *Benedict* to abdicate, he would likewise satisfy both princes. The emperor, being informed at *Coblentz*, by the bishop, of this declaration of the pope, desired the king of *France* to oblige his pope to abdicate, and that he would then compel *Boniface* to resign. In consequence of this representation of the emperor; a general council of the nobles, prelates, and doctors of *France*, was held at *Paris*, which determined, that *Benedict* should be desired to resign; and, if he did not voluntarily agree to an abdication, he should be compelled to it by force. The bishop of *Cambray* accordingly went to *Avignon*; and *Benedict* absolutely refusing to abdicate, he quitted the city, which was immediately after invested by marshal *Boucicaut*, who, being admitted by the citizens, took possession of the palace, in which he confined the antipope under a guard of 100 men. Upon *Benedict's* refusal to abdicate, nineteen of his cardinals left *Avignon* before the place was invested. *Froissard* likewise relates, that he continued a prisoner for five years; and that the king of *France*, having withdrawn his obedience from him, solicited the king of *England* to refuse obedience to *Boniface*, and to agree to a neutrality; but though that prince inclined to hearken to the proposal of his father-in-law, yet the clergy

A. D.
1398.

* HARPSFIELD, Hist. Wicliff. c. 14. 1, iv. c. 97.

† FROISSAR.

of England would not consent^a. The French king likewise wrote to the emperor, informing him of what had been done to *Benedict*, and desiring him to act in the same manner towards *Boniface*; but *Wencelaus* excused himself, by alleging, that he must consult with the kings of *Poland* and *Hungary*, and with the princes of the empire^a.

Boniface publishes a bull, reserving the annates of all vacant benefices.

A. D.

1399.

THE pope, in the mean time, residing undisturbed at *Affisi*, published a bull, by which he reserved, for the use of the apostolic chamber, the first year's revenues of all vacant bishopricks and abbacies, under the name of *annates*, or first-fruits^b; so that whoever wanted to be promoted to the dignity of archbishop, bishop, or abbot, should beforehand be obliged to pay a yearly revenue of his church or abbacy. This bull was soon submitted to by the clergy in all the provinces of Christendom, except in *England*, where the bishopricks were only allowed to be taxed^c (W). Mean while, as

^a FROISSAR. c. 99.

^a BZOV. hoc an.

^b NIEM,

l. ii. c. 7.

^c SPOND. Annales.

(W) This is the first bull establishing perpetual annates, yet, if antiquity can give authority for that exaction, the payment of the first-fruits is mentioned by *Hosienfis*, who wrote about 130 years before this period; and in the council of *Vienne*, held under *Clement V.* it was decreed, that annates should be abolished; and that, in their stead, the 20th part of the revenues of priests should be paid to the apostolic see. *John XXII.* the successor of *Clement*, published a bull, whereby he reserved the first year's fruits of all ecclesiastical benefices that continued vacant for three years, archbishopricks, bishopricks, and abbacies, being exempted; but by degrees the first-fruits were exacted, without observing whether the benefices were vacant three years or not. The same pope afterwards published a bull, reserving for his life all benefices that became

vacant in his court. *Benedict XII.* who succeeded *John*, followed his example, which was also imitated by some succeeding popes; but the authority of their bulls extended no further than their own life. What was before local and particular, *Boniface* decreed to be universal and perpetual. Before the schism, annates are said to have been collected at different times after the incumbent had taken possession, and frequently great part of the tax was never raised: but after the schism, a large part of the tax was raised before the delivery of the bull confirming the collation, and bonds were given for the payment of the rest. Soon after the whole first-fruits were exacted beforehand; and, lastly, the tax under the name of annates was not only imposed at pleasure, but frequently doubled, tripled, and quadrupled (1).

(1) Spond. Cad. Victor. Niem, de Schismatic.

the beginning of a new century approached; when the *Romans* expected another jubilee, they sent deputies to *Boniface*, intreating him to return to *Rome*, being afraid, lest, if he should absent himself, the resort of pilgrims to their city would be greatly lessened. *Boniface* refused to consent to their request, unless they admitted the city to be governed by a senator of his own appointment. The *Romans*, not willing at that time to disoblige the pope, not only took the government from the bannerets, but received *Malatesta of Pesaro* as their senator, at the appointment of *Boniface*, to whom they sent money to defray the expences of his journey to *Rome*. Upon his return to *Rome*, *Boniface* fortified the castle of *St. Angelo*, the capitol, and the bridges, and by degrees made himself absolute master of the city, so that he is reckoned the first pope who intirely transferred the authority from the people^d (X). Though it does not appear that

^d PLATIN. in Bonif. IX. BLOND. D. ii. l. x.

(X) *Theodoric de Niem* and *Antoninus* describe a scene of devotion in *Italy* this year, to which they were eye-witnesses. *Niem* says it first arose from some seducers that had come into *Italy* from *Scotland*, one of whom pretended that he was *Elias* the prophet, and that the world would quickly perish by an earthquake. *Antoninus* is uncertain where that kind of devotion first appeared, as he says some asserted that it came from *Spain*, others from *Scotland* or *England*, and some from *France*, from whence, according to *Sigónius* and *Platina*, a priest arrived in *Italy*, clothed in white, with great appearance of modesty, and seduced infinite numbers of people of both sexes and all ages. The penitents, among whom were several cardinals and priests, were clothed in white linen down to their heels, with caps on their heads, which covered their whole faces, except their eyes. They went

in great troops of 10, 20, and 40,000 persons, from one city to another, calling out for mercy, and singing hymns in the *Latin* and vulgar tongue. Where-ever they came, they were received with great hospitality, and joined by the inhabitants of those places, as those who did not follow their processions were looked upon as heretics (2). They fasted or lived on bread and water during the time of their pilgrimage, which continued generally nine or ten days. At night they slept in churches, monasteries, and churchyards, men and women without distinction, or false suspicion. *Sigónius* and *Platina* relate, that the pilgrims stopped at *Viterbo*; and *Platina* says, that *Boniface*, afraid lest the priest intended, by their assistance, to seize the pontificate, sent a body of troops thither, who apprehended the false prophet, and carried him to *Rome*, where he was burnt (3).

(2) *Annal. Mediol. ap. Murator. Bonon. Anton. tit. xxii. c. 3. Niem, lib. ii*

(3) *Platinus, Sigon. de Episc. 16.*

A jubilee
celebrated
at Rome.

A. D.
1400.

Boniface appointed a jubilee to be held in the beginning of the century; and *Viſtorellus* affirms, that he ſearched the regiſter of that pope, without finding the leaſt mention of that ceremony; yet the following year great numbers of people ſlocked to *Rome* from different nations of *Europe*, particularly from *France*, although the year before the king of *France*, that he might not ſeem to acknowledge *Boniface*, and in conſideration of the poverty of his kingdom, had publiſhed an ediſt, prohibiting any one from going to *Rome*. As the plague raged this year in *Italy*, and eſpecially at *Rome*, where, according to *Boninſegnus*, 7 or 800 people died daily, very few of the pilgrims returned home, and great numbers of them were robbed, and the women raviſhed by the pope's ſoldiers in the neighbourhood of the city^f. A great many foreigners had an opportunity of eſcaping theſe dangers; for *Boniface* granted indulgences to the *Danes*, who ſhould viſit the cathedral church of *St. Laurent* at *Lunden*, and allowed the emperor to celebrate the jubilee at *Prague* after the *Roman* faſhion.

The pope
confirms
the election
of the duke
of Bava-
ria, as em-
peror.

A FEW months after, the electors of *Germany*, having depoſed *Wenceſlaus*, on account of his bad government, and choſen *Rupert* or *Robert* duke of *Bavaria*, and count palatine of the *Rhine*, as emperor, *Boniface* confirmed his election, and invited him to *Rome*, to receive the imperial crown. *Robert* being alſo invited by the *Florentines* to oppoſe the progreſs of *Galeas Viconti*, who had conquered almoſt all *Lombardy*, and four years before had purchaſed the title of duke of *Milan* from *Wenceſlaus*, he aſſembled a conſiderable army, and the following year entered *Italy* about the end of autumn. As the troops of *Galeas* were accuſtomed to war, they put the *Germans* to flight in a ſkirmiſh near *Breſcia*, ſo that the emperor was obliged to retire to *Trent*, where the greateſt part of his army left him, and went back to *Germany*. However, at the intreaty of the *Florentines*, who promiſed him a reinforcement, he advanced with the remains of his army to *Padua*, where he continued ſome months in expectation of ſuccours from the *Italians*, whoſe intereſt it was to humble *Galeas*. But as they did not exert themſelves ſo much as he expected, he left *Italy* in the month of *April*, and returned to *Germany*.

1402.

MEAN while in *France* the party of the antipope began to revive; the duke of *Orleans*, the king's brother, and the univerſity of *Boulouſe*, profeſſed their obedience to *Benedict*; the kings of *Caſtile* and *Aragon* ſupported his cauſe,

^a BENIN. 4.

^f NIEM de Schiſm.

and several treatises were published, condemning the proceedings of the council of *Paris*. On the other hand, the university of *Paris*, supporting its former decrees, declared, that whoever asserted that the withdrawing of obedience was unjust, were abettors and promoters of the schism. About the same time the cardinals who had seceded from *Benedict*, and who resided at *Senlis*, together with the patriarch of *Alexandria*, and some other prelates, declared, that, as the withdrawing of obedience from *Benedict* had not succeeded in putting an end to the schism, a general council should be called of those that adhered to *Benedict*. But this method was not followed; for great disputes arose, whether the antipope should not first be restored to his liberty, and be obeyed as formerly; which propositions were condemned by the majority, who published a great many reasons, justifying their opinion &c.

DURING these disputes in *France*, the duke of *Milan* ^{The duke of Milan} had marched with an army against *Bologna*; and having ^{dies while} taken that city, with *Pisa*, *Perugia*, and *Siena*, had provided ^{he was} a crown, with the intention of assuming the title of king of ^{proposing to} *Italy*, and sent his army to invest *Florence*, which was ^{assume the} reduced to the utmost despair. In the midst of these fluctuations he was seized with a fever, and died on the 3d of ^{title of} *September*, leaving his possessions to his two sons. ^{king of} *Boniface* *Italy*. seized the opportunity of his death to recover several cities of the ecclesiastical state which he had usurped. *Bologna*, *Perugia*, and *Ferrara*, voluntarily submitted, and some other places that resisted were taken and dismantled. About the same time, being informed that the *Hungarians* had imprisoned their king *Sigismund*, and offered their kingdom to the king of *Naples*, the pope encouraged *Ladislaus* to take possession of *Hungary*, and ordered cardinal *Acciajoli* to accompany him in the expedition as his legate. *Ladislaus* accordingly sailed to *Dalmatia*, and, at the intreaty of the *Hungarian* nobles, proceeded to *Javarin*, where he was crowned in the month of *August* by the cardinal legate. But he was immediately obliged to quit the kingdom; for *Sigismund*, who some time before had escaped from his confinement to *Germany*, had assembled an army in his brother's kingdom of *Bohemia*, and returned to *Hungary*, where he was joyfully received by the greatest part of his subjects. *Boniface*, by countenancing the claims of *Ladislaus* to *Hungary*, and confirming the election of the duke of *Bavaria*

A. D.
1403.

to the empire, lost the obedience of *Sigismund* and *Wenceslaus*, who from that time both acknowledged the antipope ^h.

The anti-pope escapes from prison, and in some measure recovers his authority. BENEDICT a few months before had made his escape from *Avignon*, and was again acknowledged by the king of *France*, upon his declaring he would consent to resignation, on condition either of the death, abdication, or deposition, of his adversary. This submission, however, was of very short continuance; for the antipope, notwithstanding the intreaties of his most zealous adherent the duke of *Orleans*, absolutely refusing to confirm the elections and collations that had been made during his confinement, the king, towards the end of *December*, published an edict, declaring, that he would defend the possessors, and prohibiting all his subjects from paying any money, under any pretence, to the antipope, or receiving any of his bullsⁱ. The following year likewise the university of *Paris* made a grand procession to the church of *St. Catherine*, for the extinction of the schism; but they were attacked by the servants of the duke of *Orleans*, who still adhered to *Benedict*. The antipope soon after sent two bishops, with some others, to *Boniface*, to treat of the means of a union. They arrived at *Rome* on the 21st of *September*, and, upon promising to pay the accustomed honours to the pope, they were admitted to an audience, in which they declared, that *Benedict* was most willing to treat of a union, and desired *Boniface* to appoint a safe place where conferences might be held betwixt the two popes for that purpose. As *Boniface* was then afflicted with a fit of the gravel, the nuncios of the antipope were desired to wait a few days. They accordingly had a second audience on the feast of *St. Michael*, when, instead of agreeing to a conference, both parties mutually reproached each other. *Boniface* survived this contest only two days; for, being seized with a fever, he died on the 1st of *October*. The nuncios were immediately after imprisoned in the castle of *St. Angelo*, in breach of the safe-conduct that had been granted them by the pope, and were not set at liberty until they paid 5000 florins^k.

A. D.
1404.

Boniface dies at Rome.

Innocent VII. is elected.

At the death of *Boniface*, there only remained 12 cardinals of his party, and, four of them being absent from the city, the other eight entered the conclave; and having bound themselves by an oath, that, which soever of them should be elected pope, he might freely abdicate, if the antipope would do the same, they unanimously elected *Cosmato Melcorato*, of the kingdom of *Naples*, a cardinal of the title

^h Magn. Chron. Belg.
Monach. JUVEN. in Car. VI.

ⁱ SPOND. ANNAL.

^k DIONYS.

of the *Holy Cross* in *Jerusalem*, who, having assumed the name of *Innocent VII.* was consecrated on the 4th of *November*. Immediately after his promotion, great disputes happened in *Rome* betwixt the *Guelphs* and *Gibellines*, about the government of the city. The families of *Colonna* and *Savelli*, with some other nobles and chiefs of the *Gibellines*, endeavoured to restore the government of the bannerets; but they were opposed by the *Ursini*, and other *Guelphs*. Several skirmishes ensued, till *Ladislaus* king of *Naples*, at the intreaty of the *Gibellines*, arriving with a large body of troops at *Rome*, settled the government on a footing not very advantageous for the church, as he left the power in the hands of the people, in hopes of usurping it afterwards himself¹. In consequence of this settlement, *Innocent* was greatly harassed with the impudent demands of the new governors, who had received some troops from *Ladislaus*. In his own defence, he was obliged to hire 2 or 3000 men as a guard; but, being of a mild disposition, he endeavoured to appease the *Romans* by offices of kindness, and created 11 cardinals, five of whom were *Romans*, and one of them of the family of *Colonna*. However, soon after, the *Gibelline* faction attacked his guard upon *Ponte Molo*; but, being repulsed, they made an unsuccessful attempt upon his palace. A few days after, some of the chief citizens came to the pope, to treat of a reconciliation. They were attacked upon their return, without his knowledge, by order of his nephew, and eleven of them, being apprehended, were cruelly put to death. The city, upon the news of their murder, was immediately in an uproar, and the friends of the deceased seized *Adrian's* bridge with a large body of troops, and prepared to attack the castle. *Innocent*, dreading the resentment of the *Romans*, so highly irritated, immediately left his palace, and fled with his army to *Sutri*, and from thence to *Viterbo*. Upon his departure the *Romans* broke into the palace, where they destroyed a great many books and registers; and a considerable reinforcement of troops arriving from *Ladislaus*, *Jahn Colonna* admitted them into the city and castle². *Innocent*, before he left *Rome*, had summoned a general council to be held in that city, for the extinction of schism.

MEAN while *Benedict* arrived by sea at *Genoa*, where he was received with the greatest demonstrations of joy: but as he brought a large body of troops along with him, which

¹ ANTON. tit. xxii. c. 4. NIEM, c. 34, 35. ² Comment. LEONARD ARETINI, ap. Murator. t. xix. p. 923. ³ NIEM, de Schism. ANTON. tit. xxii. c. 24. f. 1.

was daily increasing, the *Genoese*, afraid of their liberties, took an opportunity, when the forces were reviewing, to shut them out of their city. The antipope was greatly offended at their proceeding, and soon after returned to *Nice* in *Provence*; but, while he continued in *Italy*, he sent to *Innocent*, desiring letters of safe conduct for some persons whom he intended to send to him to treat of a union. *Innocent*, believing his professions were not sincere, refused his request; upon which denial his adversary triumphed, and published the transaction to the world, accusing the pope of having no inclination to terminate the schism. *Innocent* endeavoured to refute the assertions of the antipope; but *Niem* accused them both of mutual altercation, with a design to protract the schism°. During these disputes, *Innocent*, being informed that the king of *England* had caused the archbishop of *York* to be executed on account of an insurrection that he had headed, he excommunicated all those who were concerned in the prelate's death; but, as he himself did not long survive, the anathema was disregarded in *England*. The following year, the *Romans*, taking umbrage at the *Neapolitan* troops, and understanding that the pope was innocent of the murder of the deputies, intreated him to return to the city. He accordingly arrived in the beginning of *Lent*; and soon after excommunicated and deposed *Ladislaus*, for having attacked the territories of the church. The king of *Naples*, struck with this unexpected fulmination, immediately solicited an accommodation, which was concluded by the mediation of the pope's nephew and *Paul Ursini*. *Niem*, however, affirms, that *Innocent* intended to renew the processes against the king, but was prevented by death, which happened to him on the 7th of *November*.

He returns
to Rome,
where he
dies.

A. D.
1405.

Gregory
XII. is
chosen pope.

UPON *Innocent*'s death, his cardinals deliberated for some time whether or not they should omit to elect a successor, as the *French* had bound their pope by solemn promises to abdicate, on condition that the other pope would resign, or that his cardinals would supersede the election of a successor. At length the cardinals at *Rome*, being afraid of a sedition in the city, determined to proceed to an election; but previously bound themselves by an oath, that, which soever of them should be elected, he should abdicate the pontificate, on condition that the antipope would resign. *Angelus Corrarius*, a *Venetian*, and cardinal of the title of *St. Mark*, was elected pope, and took the name of *Gregory XII.* but, before his coronation, he renewed the former oath, and

wrote to the antipope, exhorting him to resign, and appoint a place where the cardinals of both parties might unanimously agree to the election of a pope; which letter was answered by *Benedict* almost in the same terms. Letters likewise passed between the cardinals of both parties. On the 15th of *March* *Gregory* sent other nuncios to *Benedict*, and, after much dispute, it was agreed, that the popes, with their cardinals, should meet at *Savona* on the *Genoese* coast, at the feast of *St. Michael*, or at *All Saints*. The *Genoese*, being informed of this determination, offered hostages for the security of both parties, and promised to furnish all necessities during the congress. The king of *France* likewise sent ambassadors to the popes, to exhort them to persevere in their intentions, who, arriving at *Rome* about the beginning of *July*, found *Gregory* averse to the congress at *Savona*, to which he raised several objections; and, notwithstanding all their remonstrances, insisted upon a change of place for the conferences. His objections gave great joy to *Benedict*, who wanted a fair pretence to delay the union; he therefore insisted upon standing to the former agreement, and obstinately refused to agree to any alterations in the preliminary articles. *Gregory* had some excuse for refusing to go so far from *Rome*; for, a few weeks before the arrival of the ambassadors, *Ladislaus*, with the *Sibelline* exiles, had surprised the city, and obliged the pope to save himself in the castle of *St. Angelo*; they were however again expelled with considerable loss by *Paul Urfini*.

He promises to abdicate, and exhorts the antipope to resign.
A. D. 1407.

He alters his resolution.

In consequence of the preliminaries agreed to, *Gregory* at length, with great reluctance, quitted *Rome* on the 9th of *August*, and in the beginning of *September* arrived at *Siena*, where he offered to resign the pontificate, on condition of enjoying during his life the patriarchate of *Constantinople*, some benefices in the republic of *Venice*, and the churches of *Tork* or *Oxford*, which were then said to be vacant, and that some territories in the ecclesiastical state might be conferred on his three nephews and their heirs. Though his cardinals agreed to this proposal, yet he found excuses for delaying his abdication; and let the time for the congress elapse without removing from *Siena*. Mean while *Benedict*, with his cardinals, had arrived at *Savona* on the 24th of *September*, and, after continuing there upwards of three months, he advanced in the beginning of *January* to *Portus Veneris*, that he might seem to take away all objection from *Gregory* for delaying the conferences. As the pope still continued at

A. D. 1408.

Siena, *Benedict* sent the archbishops of *Rouen* and *Taragona* to him, desiring him to agree to some intermediate place. Their journey was without effect; however, in the end of the month he advanced to *Lucca*. About the same time the king of *France* published a letter, addressed to all the faithful, declaring, that, if the schism was not quickly terminated, he would withdraw obedience from *Benedict* at *Whitsuntide*, and exhorting all other princes to reject the authority of both popes. Mean while the popes pretending a distrust of each other's intentions, all hopes of a conference vanished; and on the 9th of *May* *Gregory* created four new cardinals, contrary to the opinion of the college, who refused to associate with them, and deliberated among themselves

Is deserted about deserting the pope^a. Accordingly, two days after, they all, except four, left *Lucca*, and went to *Pisa*, where they published a writing, appealing from *Gregory*, first to Christ, then to a general council, and lastly to a future pope.

About the same time *Benedict* having sent letters to *Paris*, prohibiting the withdrawing of obedience, under pain of excommunication, the parliament ordered the letters to be burnt, and on the 25th of *May* published a neutrality with regard to both popes; and orders were sent to *Bussicard*, governor of *Genoa*, to seize *Benedict*. The antipope, having notice of these orders, immediately quitted *Italy*, and fled to *Elne*, on the coast of *Catalonia*; but, before his departure, his cardinals had likewise deserted him, and retired to *Leghorn*, where they entered into a correspondence with the cardinals at *Pisa*.

The cardinals likewise desert Benedict, and join those of Gregory at Leghorn.

THE cardinals of both parties soon after uniting at *Leghorn*, on the 24th of *July*, published letters, addressed to all the prelates of Christendom, appointing a general council to be held at *Pisa* the following year, on the 25th of *March*. The popes, being informed of this proceeding of the cardinals, likewise appointed general councils; *Benedict* summoned the council to assemble at *Perpignan* in *November*, while *Gregory* appointed it to be held the following *Whitsuntide* in the province of *Aquila*, or exarchate of *Ravenna*, the particular place to be mentioned afterwards. *Gregory* at that time had arrived at *Siena*, where he continued several months, and in *September* created nine new cardinals, five, or, according to *Niem*, twelve cardinals being likewise created by the antipope at *Perpignan*. From *Siena* the pope went to *Rimini*, where he wintered, the Romans re-

^a ARETIN. NIEM, ut supra.
t. i. p. 326.

[†] Rec. Germ. Script.

Alexander V. The new pope immediately presided at the council, confirmed their decrees, and annulled all the processes and sentences denounced by the popes against any persons, communities, kingdoms, &c. since the beginning of the schism. He likewise decreed, that a general council should be convened within three years afterwards; and in the 23d and last session, which was held on the 7th of *August*, he ordained, that the *Pisan* council should be prorogued till the other general one should assemble.

He confers
the crown
of Naples
on the
duke of
Anjou.

As *Ladislaus* king of *Naples* had seized *Rome*, with several other cities of the ecclesiastical state, and was daily making new conquests in *Tuscany*, the *Florentines*, *Siennese*, and cardinal legate at *Bologna*, made an alliance with his competitor *Lewis* duke of *Anjou*, who arrived at the council of *Pisa*, where he was received with great honour by *Alexander*. The pope confirmed to him the crown of *Sicily*, and appointed him standard-bearer of the church; after which ceremony he marched against *Ladislaus*, and quickly recovered the city of *Rome*, and several other places in the ecclesiastical state. Mean while *Gregory* held his council in the diocese of *Aquila*, but there is no mention of any of its proceedings; *Niem* relates, on the 5th of *September* he published a writing, as from his council, declaring his willingness to abdicate, but the conditions which he proposed were so impracticable, that it might easily be perceived he had no inclination to a union.

As neither *Gregory* nor *Benedict* quitted their pretensions to the pontificate, the church was at this time provided with three popes; but *Gregory* was now acknowledged only by *Ladislaus* and a few cities of *Italy*; and *Benedict* by the king of *Scotland*, the count of *Armagnac*, and the kings of *Spain*, *Portugal* excepted. All the rest of Christendom submitted to *Alexander*, who, after dismissing the council at *Pisa*, went from thence, first to *Pistoria*, and then to *Bologna*, from whence he wrote to *Subinco*, archbishop of *Prague*, ordering him to prohibit any one from discoursing either publicly or privately upon the doctrines of *Wickliffe*, and to allow the preaching of sermons in churches and church-yards. By this order the pope intended to prevent the *Bohemians* from any further examination of *Wickliffe's* doctrines, which had been embraced by great numbers in *Prague*; and a few years before been preached by *John Huss*. As the university of *Prague*, which consisted chiefly of *Germans*, had the former year condemned 45 of *Wickliffe's* propositions, *John Huss*

John Huss
publishes
the doc-

and his party had prevailed with *Wenceslaus* to deprive the *trine* of foreigners of their privileges; on which several thousands of *Wickliffe Poles* and *Germans* left *Prague*. After their departure, *John*, at *Prague*, being elected rector of the university, and appointed a preacher in one of the chief churches of the city, began to translate the writings of *Wickliffe* into the vulgar tongue, and in his discourses, without any reserve, exclaimed against the authority of the pope, purgatory, prayers for the dead, and several other doctrines of the *Roman* church. Upon hearing of the mandate of *Alexander*, he declared, that it was contrary to the actions and words of our Saviour and his apostles, who used to preach every-where; and he appealed to the pope himself, when better informed. *Alexander* was prevented by death from proceeding any further in that affair, as he died on the 3d of *May*, in the 11th month of his pontificate. A. D. 1410.

UPON the death of *Alexander*, the 17 cardinals who were *John* at *Bologna* chose cardinal *Balthasar Cossa*, a *Neapolitan*, who XXIII. is said by some authors to have been elected by force, as he elected. was legate in the city, and had the command of a great number of troops; however, *Niem* only alleges, that it was at the recommendation of *Lewis* king of *Naples*, who was on the neighbouring coast with a powerful fleet. His promotion gave great scandal, as he was more remarkable for his military than religious disposition; however, on the 25th of *May* he was consecrated, and took the name of *John XXIII*. Immediately after, being informed of the death of the emperor *Robert*, he sent nuncios to the electors, exhorting them to chuse *Sigismund* king of *Hungary*; and sent a legate into *France*, to demand the tithes, the revenues of vacant benefices, and the spoils of deceased clergymen, which he asserted belonged by natural and divine right to the apostolic chamber. The university of *Paris* opposed this demand with great vigour, and proposed to appeal to a general council, and to deprive all those of the degree of master of arts who should submit to the payment of the subsidy required. Soon after *John* went to *Rome*, where, on the 23d of *April*, being the feast of *St. George*, he consecrated several standards, and a few days after appointed *Lewis* king of *Sicily* and *Paul Ursini* generals of his troops against *Ladislav*, who obliged the kingdom of *Naples* to acknowledge *Gregory XII.* whom he retained at *Gasta*. The pope's army, advancing to *Cam-* 1411.

^u COCHLEII Hist. Hussit. l. i. ^w ARETIN. ut supra, ANTON. tit. xxvi. c. 6. GOBELIN. PERSON. ap. rer. Germ. Script. t. i. ^x MONSTRELET, l. i. c. 67, & 70.

His troops *pania*, on the 19th of May, entirely defeated *Ladislaus*, gain a victory over the pressing instances of king *Lewis*, *Paul Urfini* refusing to pursue the victory, *Ladislaus* had leisure to repair his loss; upon which *Lewis* returned to *Rome*, and, dissatisfied with the conduct of the *Italians*, soon after went back to *France*.

On the same day *Ladislaus* was defeated in *Campania*, the city of *Bologna* revolted from the church, two butchers having headed an insurrection and seized the government, which they held for more than a year. *John* being informed of the loss of *Bologna*, reinforced the troops with new levies, and, on the 16th of *June* created fourteen new cardinals. About the same time he received an embassy from the king of *Poland*, with very rich presents, desiring that he would approve of the war that he had with the *Teutonic* knights, and would declare that the sacred vessels taken out of the *Prussian* churches, and distributed in *Poland*, were lawful prizes. The pope granted these two requests, but refused a third demand made by the ambassadors, namely, that the king might have leave to cause a crusade to be preached against the *Tartars*. The pope refused to grant a crusade against the *Tartars*, because he intended to make use of those sacred soldiers in defending the ecclesiastical state. He accordingly, in the beginning of the following year, published a crusade against *Ladislaus*, who was thereupon induced to agree to an accommodation, although the terms were not very honourable to the holy see; for the pope engaged to pay a tribute to the king, on condition that he ceased hostilities, and refused to acknowledge *Gregory*.

against
whom he
causes a
crusade to
be preached.

A. D.

1412.

The Hussites, on account of this crusade, exclaim against the pope. THE preaching of this crusade at *Prague* gave a new opportunity to *John Huss* and his party to exclaim against the errors of the church: accordingly three of his followers, in three different churches, during the reading of the papal bull, called out that the pope was antichrist, who caused a crusade to be preached against Christians. These three were immediately apprehended and imprisoned, which *Huss* was no sooner informed of, than he came at the head of 2000 men to the magistrates; demanding the liberty of the prisoners, offering to answer himself for their crime, if it was any crime to speak the truth. The senate dismissed the mob, by promising that nothing should be determined against the prisoners: however, next morning, they ordered them to be executed. Their friends, among whom were a great many students, immediately assembled, and wrapping the

dead bodies in linen, carried them with great solemnity thro' the churches of the city, calling out, *These are the saints who have given their bodies for the testimony of God.* Soon after the administration of the church of *Prague* was given to the bishop of *Olmütz*, who, by the advice of several members of the university, proposed some articles to the regent and nobles, as proper to put a stop to the disorders. The other party likewise presented nine propositions, about preserving the rights and liberties of the kingdom of *Bohemia*, and against defaming *John Huss* and his followers as heretics, without examining their cause. The articles proposed by the bishop were approved by an edict of *Wenceslaus* ²; in consequence of which *John Huss* was banished the city: however the disturbances did not cease, his followers rather turned more outrageous, and censured the edict by public writings, which were again answered by the catholic doctors ².

DURING these commotions in *Bohemia*, the pope celebrated a general council at *Rome*, which assembly was not very numerous, and on that account was prorogued. However, by their advice, on the 6th of *January*, *John* published a decree against the *Hussites*, ordering the books of *Wickliffe* to be searched for, by the ordinaries, and to be burnt; and commanding all his followers to appear before the apostolic see within nine months, otherwise they should be convicted of heresy ². Soon after *Ladislaus* again commenced hostilities, by surprizing the city of *Rome*, where he committed great barbarities, the pope and his cardinals, with much difficulty, escaping to *Sutri*, and from thence to *Florence*. The king quickly after made himself master of all the ecclesiastical state, as far as the frontiers of *Siena* and *Florence*, while the pope earnestly solicited the assistance of the emperor *Sigismund*, who had entered *Italy* to terminate his differences with the *Venetians*. Though the emperor was desirous of putting a stop to the progress of *Ladislaus*, yet he would not consent at that time to engage in a war against him; but by frequent letters prevailed upon the pope to agree to a general council, as the most proper means to procure the peace of *Italy*. *John* accordingly sent two legates to the emperor, with full power to determine the place and time for holding the council, but cautioned them, in the most earnest manner, not to agree to any place under the power of the emperor ². The legates, for what reason is uncertain, agreed to hold the council at *Constance*, an imperial city, in the dio-

A general council is held at Rome.
A.D.
1413.

The emperor enters Lombardy.

² *ÆN. SYLV. C. 25. DUBRAV. l. 23. COCHL. l. i.* ² *SPOND. Annal.* ² *LEONARD. ARET. ap Murator, t. 19.*

cese of *Mentz*; and the emperor published a letter, addressed to all the prelates, inviting them to come to the council, to be opened in that city on the 1st of *November*, in the following year, promising them a safe conduct both in their coming and returning, and full security during their residence.

Confer-
ences
betwixt
him and
the pope.

THE pope, upon being informed of the proceedings of his legates, was greatly afflicted, as he foresaw that he would not be master of the deliberations of the council. But as there was no means of receding, he went to *Placenza*, where he had a conference with the emperor; and proceeding from thence to *Lodi*, on the 10th of *December*, he published a bull, appointing a general council to be held at the time and place above-mentioned, not having been able to prevail with the emperor to agree to the nomination of any other city. *Sigismund*, before he left *Italy*, wrote to the two antipopes, exhorting them to appear at the council, but both *Benedict* and *Gregory* protested against that assembly, and used their utmost endeavours to prevent its meeting. Mean while *John* having returned to *Bologna* from thence, wrote to the king of *France*, and to the university of *Paris*, desiring them to sollicit the *Bohemian Hussites* to forsake the heresy of *Wickliffe*. But the entreaties of the university were without effect, for the *Hussites* every day more and more detested the *Roman* church; and *Peter* of *Dresden*, having been obliged to quit his native country on account of his religious principles, insinuated to *Sacobellus*, one of their preachers, eminent for his learning and probity, that the church of *Rome* deceived the people, by denying them the use of the cup in the sacrament of the eucharist, contrary to the words of our Saviour, who says, *Except ye eat the flesh of the son of man, and drink his blood, ye have no life in you*^d. This new opinion of the necessity of communicating under both kinds was received by the *Hussites* with great applause, as they now thought they could plainly convict the *Roman* church either of ignorance or wickedness.

Ladislau
dies at
Naples.

WHILE the most inveterate enemies of the apostolic see were strengthening their party in *Bohemia*, the tranquillity of *Italy* was, in some measure, restored by the death of *Ladislau*, he having died at *Naples* on the 6th of *August*. By his death *John* was delivered from a formidable enemy, and had now no great inclination to attach himself to the emperor; however, as every thing was settled for the meeting of the council at *Constance*, and as he was pressed to go thither by the cardinal, on the 1st of *October* he set out for

^c *ÆN*, ut supra,

^d *John vi.* 53.

that city, the magistrates having previously sworn to and signed some articles that he had proposed to them for his security: *John* arrived at *Constance* on the 28th of *October*, accompanied with nine cardinals, and all his court; and on the 1st of *November*, after the celebration of mass by the pope and cardinal of *Florence*, read a schedule concerning the celebration of the council, as a continuation of that of *Pisa* for the reformation of the state of the church, to be opened on the 30th of the month. • The council however was not opened till the 5th of *November*, when the first session was appointed to be held on the 16th. On that day the pope made a discourse to the synod; after which the same cardinal of *Florence* read the pope's admonition, concerning the moderation to be observed in the assembly, and about the consideration of those things that regarded the peace of the church, and the extirpation of the errors of *Wickliffe*; and to prevent any disturbance about precedency, he declared that, with regard to the order of sitting in the assembly, no prejudice should arise to any person or church. The ministers and officials of the council were then appointed; namely, four prothonotaries to inspect and commit to writing all that should be done in the synod, under whom were four notaries, one from each of the four principal nations of *Italy*, *France*, *Germany*, and *England*. The guard of the council was committed to *Berthold Ursini* a *Roman*. Besides, there were appointed four searchers of the votes, four doctors of law as advocates of the council, two procurators, and lastly, four masters of the ceremonies; after which proceedings the council was prolonged till the 17th of *December*.

Two days before the opening of the council, *John Huss* arrived at *Constance*, having left *Prague* in a triumphant manner on the 15th of *October*, and being received everywhere with great honours during his journey, not in consequence of the safe conduct of the emperor, for that was not granted till the 18th of the month, and could not reach him till a few days after. Upon his arrival at *Constance*, he employed his time in preaching to the people; and refusing to desist at the desire of the pope, he was apprehended and shut up in one of the chambers of the palace. The emperor being informed of this proceeding by one of *John's* followers, sent orders to enlarge the prisoner; but they were not obeyed by the pope, who insisted that he himself had not given *John* a safe conduct. However, his confinement was in some measure relaxed: he was committed to the keeping of the bishop of *Lausanne*; and four cardinals, with the generals of the *Dominicans* and *Franciscans*, and six archbishops and bishops,

The emperor comes to the council.

A.D.
1415.

bishops, were commissioned to examine him (S). During these transactions the emperor received the crown at *Aix-la-Chapelle*; and having with great expedition prepared every thing for his journey, arrived in the evening of the 24th of *December* at *Constance*, with a grand retinue, and immediately went with the pope to the church, where, during the celebration of mass by his holiness, he assisted in the habit of a deacon, according to custom. As the second session, on account of the emperor's absence, had been prorogued to the month of *March*, he in the mean time convoked a general congregation of the members of the council, and laid before them his negotiations with the antipopes, in order to terminate the schism. He then regulated what regarded the liberty, security, and subsistence, of the strangers at that time in *Constance*, the number of whom amounted to about 100,000 *: he likewise, at the request of the members, left the council at full liberty to deliberate and determine in matters of faith, thereby exposing *John Huss* to the resentment of the fathers, in violation of his own safe conduct (T). Soon after some cardinals arrived from the antipopes, in quality of nuncios, and, after a dispute, it was resolved to admit them with the ornaments of their dignity. The nuncios of *Gregory* proposed to prosecute on his part the means of cession, and desired that *John* might not preside in the council, to the decrees of which they promised all obedience. But those of *Benedict* only proposed a conference with the emperor and *Ferdinand* king of *Aragon*, to be held in the city of *Nice*, on the *Genoese* coast.^f

* VONDER HARDT. l. ii.
tor & Diariis cerretani.

^f SPOND. Annal. ex act. Vic-

(S) *Spondanus* affirms, without mentioning his authority, that *John Huss*, finding his adversaries ready to prosecute him, attempted to make his escape from *Constance*, by concealing himself in a cart loaded with straw; but that he was discovered, brought back to the city, and committed to prison.

(T) *Naucler* relates, that *Si-*

gismund was assured he could not be accused of breaking his word, because the council, which is above an emperor, not having given any safe conduct to *John Huss*, the emperor himself had no right to grant him his protection, especially in matters of faith; and that *Sigismund*, as a true son of the church, acquiesced in this decision (1).

DURING the month of *February* several other congrega-^{The pope}tions were held, in which it was determined, contrary to ^{is accused}the inclination of the pope, that the lay deputies of the ^{of several}kings, republics, and universities, should be admitted as ^{crimes,}members of the council, and that in the public sessions the votes should be given not by particulars but by nations. About the same time a memorial was presented, containing a long accusation of *John XXIII.* which, according to *Niem*, was thought to have been presented by an *Italian*, and included all the mortal sins, and an infinite number of abominations ^{8.} The pope, terrified with this accusation, proposed to confess himself to the council; but he was in some measure freed from his apprehensions, for it was resolved to suppress the memorial. However, it was agreed among all the nations, that the abdication of the pope was the most proper means to terminate the schism: accordingly *John*, finding the council unanimously fix'd in that resolution, with great reluctance, and after many subterfuges, accepted of a form of resignation presented to him by the patriarch of *Antioch*. The next day, being the 2d of *March*, was held the second session of the council in the cathedral church, where the pope, after the celebration of mass, read aloud the form of his abdication, by which he promised, vowed, and swore, before God, the church, and the council, to give peace to the church, by his resignation of the pontificate, on condition that the two antipopes would do the same, or in any case wherein his abdication might be of service to the church. ^{He promises to abdicate;} He had no sooner read this form, than the emperor took off his crown, threw himself on his knees, and embraced his feet: the patriarch of *Antioch* likewise thanked him in the name of the whole council. Then, according to *Spondanus*, *Sigismund* and the whole council promised, that, if the other two popes did not likewise resign, they would stand by him, and assist him against them with all their temporal forces ^{9.}

SIGISMUND having agreed to a conference with *Benedict* at *Nice*, in the month of *June*, mean while assembled another congregation; and on the 15th of *March*, by their advice, demanded of the pope, 1. That the council should not be dissolved till the union was effected: 2. That it should not be transferred elsewhere: 3. That the pope should not leave *Constance*: 4. That he should name a proxy, who should abdicate in his name: 5. That he should confirm the above propositions by his bulls: and, lastly, That

⁸ NIEM, ap. Vonder Hardt. t. ii. p. 291, & t. iv. p. 41, 42.
⁹ SPOND. ex act. Victor.

the prelates and others, summoned to the council, should not depart, unless on account of sickness or poverty. The pope granted the first demand; as to the second, he declared, that it seemed more convenient to transfer the council to some place in the neighbourhood of *Nice*; to the third, that it would be more expedient that both he and the council should go towards *Nice*; to the fourth, that he chose rather to abdicate personally than by proxy; and to the last, he returned no answer. The council were not at all satisfied with these answers; and being apprehensive lest the pope should delay his abdication under various pretensions, they again solicited him to name the emperor, and those prelates that were to accompany him to *Nice*, as his proxies. *John* still refused to consent, as being sensible that, if he once named proxies, he had then no opportunity to recede; and finding that the council was resolved to oblige him to abdicate, he asked leave of the emperor to quit *Constance*, pretending that the air of the city was prejudicial to his health¹. *Sigismund*, who had placed guards at the gates of the city to prevent any one from leaving the council, was so far from giving him liberty to depart, that he obliged him to promise not to quit the city till the council was dissolved. *John*, however, having concerted his retreat with the duke of *Austria*, notwithstanding the vigilance of the emperor, on the 20th of *March* escaped from *Constance*, disguised in the habit of a groom, and fled to *Schaffhausen*, about four miles distance, from whence he wrote to *Sigismund*, declaring that he had not retired with the intention of avoiding to fulfil his promise of abdication, but that he might execute it with liberty and security.

*but first
from Con-
stance.*

*The council
continues.*

THIS sudden flight of the pope occasioned great disputes among the members of the council; some affirming, that, as he had retired, the council was thereby dissolved, while others maintained that the authority of a council, in the necessities of the church, was superior to that of a pope. These last were supported by *Sigismund*, who, with the nobles of his court, went through the city, and with great prudence and firmness quieted the disturbances; and calling the four different nations together, assured them that he would protect the council, and, with the hazard of his life, would procure the union of the church. Accordingly, to support the authority of the council in the third session, which was held on the 26th of *March*, it was decreed, that as the council had been legally assembled in *Constance*,

¹ Roo hist. Aust. l. iv. p. 136. STUMPHIUS, p. 38.

it was not dissolved by the retreat of the pope or any other prelates; that it ought not to be dissolved till the church was reformed in faith and manners, both in the head and members; nor ought it to be transferred elsewhere without mature deliberations; and that no members ought to retire till it was dissolved, unless their reasons for removing were approved by the council, and that then they should be bound to leave their proxies with those who remained. The next day three cardinals that had been to the pope returned to *Constance*, with a letter and mandate from him, declaring that he was willing to appoint proxies for his abdication, and desiring that the king of the *Romans* and the council would provide for his security, and that of the duke of *Austria*, who had been put to the ban of the empire for assisting him to make his escape. What reception these offers of the pope met with does not appear; but two days after he protested before a notary and several witnesses, that he was not bound to perform what he had promised and sworn at *Constance*, as he was influenced by fear and force. He then left *Schaffhausen*, and proceeded, in the midst of a heavy rain, to the castle of *Louffenberg*. The fourth session of the council was held the next day, which was the 30th of *March*, in which it was decreed, that the council, having been legally assembled, represented the catholic militant church, and received its authority immediately from Christ; and that every one, of what dignity soever, the pontifical not excepted, was bound to obey its decrees, regarding the faith and extirpation of schism; that all the censures of the pope against any prelates or ecclesiastics should be null and void; and that none should be accounted cardinals, but those who were acknowledged such before the succession of *John* ^{*Its authority is declared superior to the pope.*}.

• IN the fifth session, which was held on the 6th of *April*, the council explained and confirmed their former decrees: they then resolved, that *John* was bound to resign, in any case whatever, that would promote the union of the church; that if he refused he should be reckoned deposed; and if he would not return to *Constance*, the council should proceed against him as a person suspected of heresy, and author of schism. After these determinations some overtures were read, regarding the condemnation of *Wickliff's* doctrine, and for regulating the manner of proceeding in discussing the cause of *John Huss*, to examine which several doctors of divinity and law were appointed. Mean while the pope re-

tired from *Louffenberg* to *Friburgh*; but before he left that castle he wrote to the different princes of *Europe*, and to the university of *Paris*, excusing his flight from *Constance*, alleging that the emperor had deprived the council of liberty, by shutting the gates of the city, and that he had presumed, on different occasions, to preside at their deliberations; that although in general councils no difference of nations ought to be observed, yet it had been ordained, that each nation should have but one voice, although from *France* and *Italy* there were present 200 prelates, and only three from *England*, with nine other ecclesiastics; and that in the assemblies, laymen as well as clergymen had been admitted to give their votes, although by the canons the right of voting in general councils only belonged to cardinals, patriarchs, archbishops, and bishops. The council, in their own justification, published a letter, addressed to all the faithful, wherein they declared, that the pope had prohibited any one to leave the council, under pain of excommunication; that, nevertheless, the city being daily deserted, he had desired the emperor to provide against the evil, who thereupon had not shut the gates, but only guarded them for part of a day; that, for dispatch of business, the council had appointed the form of deliberating by nations, but, nevertheless, in the sessions every member had a liberty of speaking what he pleased; that *John* had acted contrary to the example of former popes, particularly of *Symmachus* and *Sixtus*, who did not seek to diminish the authority of the council by their flight, but submitted humbly to its decrees: they then concluded, with testifying their desire that *John* would return to their council.

On the 17th of *April*, a few days before they published this letter, the sixth session of the council was held, wherein it was decreed, that *John* should be obliged to appoint proxies for his resignation, according to a form then read, and that an honourable embassy should be sent to him to inform him of this decree, and to invite him to return to the neighbourhood of *Constance*. *Ferome* of *Prague*, the associate of *John Huss*, was likewise summoned to the council, and a safe-conduct granted to him; but, according to *Spondanus*, it was mentioned as an exception, in as far as the catholic faith admitted. A few days after the ambassadors of the council found the pope at *Brisac*, from whence, after their arrival, he fled to *Neuenburgh*, with the design of putting himself under the protection of the duke of *Burgundy*. But he was prevailed upon to return to *Friburgh*, where he had a conference for three days with the ambassadors, and promised

to resign, on condition of impunity for his past and future proceedings, and that he should still continue cardinal, and be appointed *legate à latere* for his life in *Italy*, with several other extravagant articles. The legates giving an account of their embassy in the seventh session, held on the 2d of *May*, the council then summoned the pope to appear at *Constance* within nine days, to answer for his flight and other matters, and granted him a safe-conduct, which was confirmed by the emperor. *Jerome of Prague* was likewise declared contumacious, for not having appeared according to his former citation. Two days after was held the eighth session, wherein the writings of *Wickliffe* were prohibited, and ordered to be burnt; a great many of his propositions were condemned, and his bones were ordered to be dug up and thrown into profane ground. The day following, by the advice of the council, *Sigismund* was reconciled to the duke of *Austria*, who finding himself unable to preserve his dominions, in consequence of the ban, came and submitted in a most humble manner, promised to bring the pope back to the council, and as a security resigned, by a solemn act, all his possessions into the hands of the emperor. Immediately upon this agreement, *Sigismund* sent two archbishops, and a body of 300 men, to *Friburgh*, to seize the pope, who seemed not displeased to return to *Constance*, but, while he protracted the time, he sent a proxy to two cardinals to plead his cause before the council. This bull, however, was rejected at the ninth session, which was held on the 13th of *May*, the council insisting that proxies could not be admitted, as the citation was personal. Accordingly the next day, in the tenth session, *John* with his followers were declared contumacious, and a sentence of suspension from the pontificate was denounced against him, as guilty of simony and many other scandalous vices. A few days after the pope arriving, under a guard, at *Ratoffcell*, within two leagues of *Constance*, five cardinals were sent to him to inform him of the proceedings of the council; to which he declared his submission, but wrote to the emperor and the council, entreating them to have some regard to his honour, his person, and his estate. In the following session, which was held on the 25th of *May*, fifty-four articles were read against the pope, accusing him of various crimes, for the proof of which the witnesses were mentioned: three other articles were likewise added, concerning his poisoning his predecessor, and denying the resurrection of the dead and a future life; but for these no witnesses could be produced. The articles for which there was proof were carried to the pope,

A.D.
1415.

The council deposes the pope.

and he was desired to answer them; but he still declaring his willingness to submit to the council, on the 29th of *May*, in the twelfth session, a definitive sentence of deposition was denounced against him, which he next day confirmed by a public instrument, and immediately laid aside all the pontifical ornaments.

John Huss desires his doctrine to be examined.

THIS affair of the deposition of the pope being terminated, to the satisfaction of the council, they proceeded next to decide the cause of *John Huss*. On the 7th of *June* he was called before a private assembly, where the emperor was present, who exhorted him to submit to the authority of the council, and promised, from a regard to his brother *Wenceslaus* and the kingdom of *Bohemia*, he would dismiss him safe; otherwise, instead of being a protector to him in his errors, he would, with his own hands, light the fire to which he would be condemned. *John* pleaded the safe conduct that he himself had given him, and declared, that he came to the council not to defend his doctrines with a perverse obstinacy, but to retract them if he should be taught any thing that was better. The next day he was again called before the emperor and several prelates, and desired to abjure twenty-six heretical articles, drawn from his treatise upon the church; *John* required of them not to be compelled to do any thing against his conscience. He said several of the articles he had never taught, and therefore could not renounce them; the rest he was willing to forsake upon being instructed better. The emperor and the prelates not being satisfied with these conditional submissions, *John* was reconducted to prison; and in the thirteenth session, which was held on the 15th of *June*, the proctors of the council desired the condemnation of some errors concerning the eucharist: accordingly it was decreed, that though Christ instituted and administered the sacrament after supper under both kinds, of bread and wine, nevertheless, according to the laudable custom of the church, and the authority of the sacred canons, it ought not to be consecrated after supper, nor received by the faithful, unless when fasting, except in case of sickness, or of any other necessity admitted by the church; and although in the primitive church the same sacrament was received by the faithful under both kinds, yet, to avoid several scandals, the custom had been justly introduced, that the laity should receive it under the bread alone, as it ought to be most firmly believed that the intire body of Christ is wholly contained under each kind separately; and that those who obstinately asserted that the observation of this custom was sacrilegious and unlawful, ought

ought to be punished by the ordinaries, and inquisitors of heresy.

In the next session, which was held on the 4th of July, Gregory the emperor presided, till the deputies from pope Gregory XII. *abdi-* read his bulls, approving the council, not as having assembled *caes the* by order of pope John, whom he stiled *Balthasar Cossa*, but *pontificate* as summoned by the authority of *Sigismund*. The emperor then retired to his own place, and the council confirmed all the proceedings of Gregory, during his administration of the pontificate; received his six cardinals, and himself as a seventh, into the sacred college, and annulled all the censures that had been denounced by either party against the other. *Charles Malatesta*, lord of *Rimini*, as proxy for Gregory, then made a solemn renunciation of the pontificate in his name; upon which the council sung *Te Deum*, and decreed, that Gregory should be always accounted next to the pope in dignity and rank, and declared him perpetual *legate à latere* in the march of *Ancona*. Two days after, in the fifteenth session, *John Hufs* was introduced into the council, and placed upon a high seat in the view of the whole assembly, as a person convicted of heresy by those who had been appointed to examine him, altho' his judges had used no arguments to disprove his doctrines, but only insisted that he ought to submit his judgment to a general council. After he was seated, an order was read, enjoining the strictest silence, under pain of excommunication and two months imprisonment: then the propositions of *Wickliff* were read and condemned: *John Hufs* was declared an obstinate heretic; ordered to be degraded, and to be delivered to the secular court; and his writings to be burnt. In consequence of this sentence, he was stripped of his sacerdotal habit, a paper mitre, painted with devils, was put upon his head, and he was delivered to the magistrate of *Constance*, who the same day ordered him to be burnt alive without the city. *Æneas Sylvius*, afterwards *Pius II.* in his history of *Bohemia*, relates, that he walked to the stake as chearfully as if he had been going to an entertainment, and, while he was burning, sung an hymn with a loud and strong voice¹. Though his ashes were thrown into the lake, yet his disciples carried off the earth on which he suffered, which was distributed amongst his followers, and preserved by them as sacred relicks^m. The news of his death no sooner reached *Bohemia*, than the nobles and barons, who had embraced his doctrine, wrote threatening letters to the council, and entered into an association for their mutual

John Hufs
is con-
demned
and burnt:

¹ *Æn. hist. Boem. c. 36.*

^m *Idem ibid.*

defence". In the same session the council condemned that opinion, "That it was lawful and meritorious to kill a tyrant, by any means, notwithstanding any alliance with him, or oath of allegiance (U)."

The emperor goes to Perpignan, where he has a conference with Benedict ;

who refuses to abdicate.

THE council having now removed two popes, in the next session, held on the 11th of July, appointed twelve proxies, to accompany the emperor to the conference with the king of Arragon and Benedict XIII. which was now to be held in Spain. Four days after, in the seventeenth session, the emperor received the benediction of the council, and anathemas were denounced against any who should interrupt his journey, and indulgences granted to those who prayed for his success. On the 18th Sigismund quitted Constance, with an escort of 4000 horse, and arrived soon after at Narbonne ; but, being obliged to delay his journey on account of the sickness of the king of Arragon, he did not reach Perpignan before the 18th of September. Benedict, or Peter de Luna, at first refused to come to the conferences, unless the emperor would honour him as pope ; but Sigismund absolutely rejecting that demand, he at last arrived at Perpignan. However, he still refused to abdicate, and insisted that, as he had now no competitors, the only way to terminate the schism was to acknowledge him as pope. The emperor, highly offended at this obstinacy, threatened to compel him to a resignation, and left Perpignan. After he had returned to Narbonne, being informed that Benedict had fled to the strong city of Peniscola, on the coast of Valentia, he invited him to return to Perpignan, but without effect. By this obstinacy Benedict lost all his adherents ; the clergy of Scotland acknowledged the authority of the council of Constance, and the kings of

ⁿ In Paralip. ad Ursperg.

(U) The acts of council do not mention what it was that gave occasion to this decree ; but Spondanus, with great probability, refers it to the dispute raised in France, on account of the murder of the duke of Orleans by his cousin the duke of Burgundy, in 1407. One John Parvi, a Parisian divine, had justified this murder in eight articles he had published, al-

leging, that, as the duke of Orleans was a tyrant, above the reach of the laws, it was lawful and meritorious to kill him. These articles were condemned by the bishop of Paris, and by the inquisitor ; and, the affair being carried before the council, it was debated there with great warmth, and some of those, who held the affirmative, were in hazard of their lives (1).

(1) Spond. Annal. hoc an.

Aragon, Castile, and Navarre, and the count of *Armagnac*, sent deputies to the emperor at *Narbonne*, where a capitulation was concluded, under twelve articles, whereby it was agreed, that the prelates at *Constance* should write circular letters to the princes and prelates hitherto in the obedience of *Benedict*, inviting them to the council; and that, upon their arrival, they should consult with the rest about the union and reformation of the church, and the election of a new pope.

DURING these transactions of the emperor, the council assembled on the 17th of *August*, and appointed some bishops from each of the nations to judge the causes and complaints that should be brought before the council. In the next session, which was held on the 23d of *September*, *Jerome of Prague*, a layman, and master of arts, publicly signs a re-
 abjured the errors of *Wickliffe*, and acknowledged himself ex-
 cantation;
 posed to the severity of the canons if he should ever teach any thing contrary to the catholic doctrine; which abjuration and profession he delivered to the council written with his own hand. He, however, afterwards retracted, and endeavoured to escape; but was brought back from the confines of *Bohemia* by *John* duke of *Bavaria*, and shut up in a dark and loathsome dungeon in the bottom of a tower, in which situation he continued several months. In the same session the council confirmed the decrees of the emperor *Frederic II.* and *Charles IV.* concerning immunity of ecclesiastics; and in the twentieth session, held on the 29th of *November*, a monitory was published against *Frederic* duke of *Austria*, for his invasion of the privileges and possessions of the church of *Trent*. There are no other proceedings of the council mentioned during this year; but on the 31st of *January*, in a general session, the capitulation of *Narbonne* was confirmed, and a few days after letters of convocation to the *Spanish* princes and prelates were published, according to the form agreed to betwixt the deputies. Mean while *Ferdinand* king of *Aragon* prohibited, by a public edict, any of his subjects from obeying *Benedict*; who, in return, assembled his friends at *Peniscola*, and demanded a sentence of deposition and excommunication against *Ferdinand*. After the publication of the citation for the *Spanish* prelates, the deliberations of the members of the council were not so frequent, as they waited for the arrival of the emperor, who had proceeded to *France*, and from thence to *England*, to reconcile these two kingdoms, and to ask succours against the *Turks*, who were then ravaging *Hungary*. In the twenty-first session, which was held on the 29th of *May*, *Jerome of Prague*, after having,

A.D.
1416.

but re-
tracts, and
is con-
demned
as a heret-
ic, and
burnt.

with great eloquence and intrepidity, defended his doctrines in several private audiences, was introduced into the council, and condemned as an obstinate and relapsed heretic. He was then delivered to the secular magistrate, who ordered him to be burnt alive; which punishment he suffered with the greatest constancy and firmness. When the executioner was going to light the fire behind him, he called out to him to light it before his face; for if he had been afraid of burning he never would have come to *Constance* (W).

ABOUT

(W) *Poggio* of *Florence*, secretary of *John XXIII.* who was then at *Constance*, gives an account of the behaviour of *Jerome* before the fathers, in an elegant letter to his friend *Leonardo* of *Arezzo*, and says, that, tho' he was shut up in a dark and nasty dungeon for 340 days, where he could not even see, yet, upon his trial, he cited so many learned and wise men, and so many doctors of the church, in defence of his opinions, that it would have appeared extraordinary, even tho' the whole time of his imprisonment had been spent in leisure and study. He declares, that he had never seen any whose eloquence approached so near to that of the ancients; that he answered his accusers with the greatest wisdom and confidence; and that, if his faith was the same with what he professed, there could not be found against him the least cause of offence: that he frequently answered the reproaches and railings of his opponents by a jest or sarcasm, which obliged many of the assembly to smile. On the last day of his audience, having with difficulty obtained leave to speak, he mentioned many upright men that had been unjustly con-

demned by wicked judges, particularly *Socrates*, *Plato*, *Anaxagoras*, *Zeno*, *Rutilius*, *Boethius*; then, proceeding to the sacred scriptures, he mentioned *Joseph*, almost all the prophets, *Susannah*, *John Baptist*, our Saviour, *Stephen the Martyr*; and all the apostles, he said, had been condemned, not as being good men, but as despisers of God, and seditious ringleaders of the people; that the most holy and learned fathers, *Augustine* and *Jerome*, had differed from one another without being suspected of heresy. He then mentioned his friend *John Hus*, whom he praised as a good, just, and holy man, who had never preached against the doctrines of the church, but against the abuses of the clergy, and the pride and pomp of the prelates, who wasted the patrimony of the church, designed for the support of the poor and strangers, upon whores and dogs, and in feasting, gluttony, and vain apparel. As his discourse was frequently interrupted by the captious objections of his opponents, there was none whom he did not answer, and either obliged all to blush or to be silent. When a noise arose in the assembly he stopt, without being disconcerted,

ABOUT the same time the duke of *Austria*, having refused to obey the monitory, and having fled from *Constance*, the council informed the emperor of his flight; who immediately put him to the ban of the empire. A few months afterwards the twenty-second session was held, on the 15th of *October*, in which was regulated the order of sitting to be observed by the deputies of *Arragon* and *Naples*, who had arrived at the council; and it was decreed, that the votes of the deputies of *Arragon*, together with those of the deputies of *Portugal*, *Castile*, and *Navarre*, should have the same authority as if all the bishops of those kingdoms were present: by which means a fifth nation was added to those already appointed by the council. In the following session, held on the 5th of *November*, twelve commissaries were nominated to determine the manner of proceeding against *Peter de Luna*; and in the next session, which was held on the 18th of the same month, a form of citation was read, summoning the same *Peter*, as a schismatic and heretic, to appear within seventy days after intimation made to himself, or the publication of the summons in any church of the diocese wherein he resided. In the two following sessions, which were held on the 14th and 24th of *December*, the deputies of the count of *Foix* and of the king of *Navarre* were admitted into the council; and a decree was made, ordaining, that no honour or detriment should accrue to any nation by the order of sitting, debating, or subscribing.

A FEW weeks after, the emperor returned to *Constance*; The emperor and in the twenty-seventh session, held on the 20th of *February*, the duke of *Austria* was declared guilty of contumacy; and in the next session, held on the 3d of *March*, *Frederic* and his adherents were excommunicated, for having invaded the possessions of the church of *Trent*, and violated his oath to the emperor. The twenty-ninth session was held on the 8th of *March*, the day appointed for the appearance of *Peter de Luna*; but, as he had not obeyed the summons, the council declared him contumacious; and two days after, in the thirtieth session, the deputies that had been sent to *Spain*, informing the assembly that they had cited the said *Peter* personally, and received from him an evasive answer, the council immediately approved the withdrawing obedience from him. In the next

ed, and sometimes even re- proved the authors of the disturbance, and intreated for leave to speak, as it would be the last time they would ever hear him (1).

(1) *Pag. Flor. epist. ex rer. Boem. script.*

Benedict
XIII. is
deposed.

session, held on the 31st of *March*, a monitory was published against *Philip Viconti* count of *Virtu*, who had thrust the bishop of *Asti* into prison; and the bishop of *Bayonne*, in *Guienne*, tho' appointed by *Benedict*, was confirmed by the council, because his competitor, who had been nominated by *John XXIII.* was lately dead. The five following sessions were wholly employed in the cause of *Peter de Luna*, who, after several citations, and examinations of witnesses against him, on the 26th of *July*, in the thirty-seventh session, was solemnly deposed, and all Christians were absolved from yielding him obedience. Before this definitive sentence was published, the emperor, with the princes of *Germany*, and the *English* deputies, had endeavoured to prevail with the council to proceed to the reformation of the church; and the marquis of *Brandenburgh* particularly proposed, that the clergy of *Germany* should be prohibited, by a canon, from purchasing any immovable possessions. This motion for a reformation was, however, strenuously opposed by the cardinals and the other nations, who urged that it was first necessary to elect a pope; and, each party defending their opinion with great warmth, the council was on the point of being dissolved. The emperor at length calmed their spirits, and, after two sessions spent in frivolous disputes about precedency, in the thirty-ninth session, which was held on the 9th of *October*, a perpetual decree was made, that, fifteen years after the dissolving of the council of *Constance*, another should be held, and, within seven years after that should be dissolved, a third should be held, and for ever afterwards councils should be held every ten years; the place of meeting to be appointed by the pope, who should have liberty to contract, but not to lengthen, the term for their convocation; and if a schism should arise in the pontificate, within a year after the dissolution of the council, it should then assemble the year after without any citation. In the fortieth session, held on the 30th of *October*, it was decreed, that the future pope, before the dismissing of the council, should reform the church in the head and members; they then proceeded to regulate the form of the election, and ordained, that six deputies of each of the nations should enter the conclave, together with the cardinals; and whoever should be chosen, by two-thirds of the cardinals and deputies, should be accounted a true pope. Accordingly in the forty-first session, held on the 8th of *November*, thirty deputies were nominated, and entered the conclave with twenty cardinals of

Martin V. the three obediences. After great disputes, *Otho Colonna*, a
is elected Roman, and cardinal deacon of *St. George*, was chosen pope
pope by the on the 11th of *November*; who, in honour of the saint
whose

whose feast was then celebrated, took the name of *Martin V.* *deputies* Historians remark, that the emperor might have seized this *and cardinals.* opportunity to recover the right which his predecessors enjoyed, of confirming the popes before their coronation; but he dropt that pretension for the peace of the church; and when the conclave was opened he entered, and prostrated himself at the feet of the pope, who was afterwards conducted to the cathedral church with the greatest solemnity, the emperor and the elector of *Brandenburgh* holding the reins of his horse, and a hundred princes, the ambassadors of twelve kings, and a whole council, following him.

MARTIN having notified his election to the Christian princes, on the 28th of *December* presided at the forty-second session, in which *Sigismund* and the duke of *Bavaria* petitioned to be freed from the keeping of the late pope *John*. During these *The doctrines of the Hussites approved by the university of Prague.* transactions of the council, the *Hussites* in *Bohemia*, in resentment for the death of *John Hufs* and *Jerome*, having destroyed a great many monasteries of the *Dominicans*, prevailed with the university of *Prague* to approve their doctrine of communicating under both kinds. Accordingly *John*, cardinal rector of the university, published a declaration in the name of the whole body, professing, that they did not decide presumptuously against the catholic apostolic *Roman* church, nor seek to introduce any novelty, but rather adhered to the assertion of the council of *Constance*, which had approved the communicating under both kinds, as instituted by our Saviour, and long practised by the primitive church: they therefore exhorted all those, who were concerned for their salvation, to prefer the institution of Christ to any edict of men. *Wenceslaus* being unable, by his own authority, to quell the commotions raised by the *Hussites*, wrote to his brother *Sigismund* for his assistance.

MEAN while *Martin* sent the cardinal of *Pisa* as his legate to *Peter de Luna*, to exhort him to resign the pontificate; but *Peter*, tho' he was likewise solicited by some of his own cardinals to abdicate, would not consent, but declared that he would confer with *Martin* about the means of restoring peace to the church. The council again assembling on the 21st of *March*, published some decrees concerning exemptions, first fruits, dispensations, simony, tythes, and other ecclesiastical grievances, and concerning the lives and dress of the clergy; by which, and by some agreement with each of the nations which is not mentioned, the pope decreed, that the former statute of the council, about reforming

A. D.
1418.

the church, was fully executed (X). According to *Platina*, the pretence used for delaying to proceed to the reformation was the long continuance of the council, therefore, in the forty-fourth session, held on the 19th of *April*, according to a former decree, a future council was appointed to be held at *Pavia*. Three days after was held the forty-fifth and last session of the council,* in which the deputies of the king of *Poland*, and of the wawode or duke of *Lithuania*, having desired the pope to condemn a certain book containing a great many heretical doctrines, *Martin* took an occasion from thence of declaring, that he held, and would firmly observe, all the decrees of the council in matters of faith. This his declaration he ordered to be repeated by the advocate of the council, thereby, according to *Spondanus*, intending to elude giving his consent to those decrees made in the fourth and sixteenth sessions, concerning the superiority of a council above a pope, and its authority of reforming the church in the head and members; which doctrines, according to that writer, ought only to be admitted during a schism, when it is uncertain which of the pretenders to the pontificate is the real pope^p. A bull, condemning the errors of *Wickliffe*, *John Hufs*, and *Jerome of Prague*, was then read, together with a form of examining their adherents, and receiving the penitents. Lastly, *Martin* granted a plenary absolution to all those who had attended at the council, both masters and servants; after which it was dissolved by cardinal *Roginald*, who, by the order of the pope, pronounced these words, *Go in peace*; to which the whole assembly answered, *Amen*.

The council
of Con-
stance is
dissolved.

^p SPOND. ANNAL. AN. 1418.

(X) *Gobelinus Persona* relates, that, before the election of *Martin*, several learned men of each of the nations, by the appointment of the council, drew up a form of reformation of the church, which, after the election of the pope, some nations desired to be confirmed; but as they were not all equally zealous, and the cardinals appeared very backward in that affair, the French nation went to the emperor, and desired him to urge the pope to proceed to a reformation. *Sigismund* answered, that, while he was earnest that the reformation should precede the election of a pope, they opposed him; therefore, as he had not now the same authority as when the apostolic see was vacant, they ought to apply to the pope (2). •

(2) *Gobel. Person. æt. vi. c. 69. Edit. Meibom. t. i.*

MARTIN soon after quitted *Constance*, and went to *Geneva*, The pope where he continued till the month of *September*. He then returns to passed the *Alps*, and was received with great honour by Italy, and *Philip* duke of *Milan*, whom he reconciled to *Pandulphus Malatesta*, lord of *Brescia*. From thence he proceeded to A.D. *Mantua*, where he continued four months, and sent several 1419. legates to the cities of *Italy*, to reconcile their differences, and facilitate his own journey to *Rome*. In the beginning of February Martin left *Mantua*, and went to *Florence*, by *Ravenna* and *Forli*, to avoid *Bologna*, which had then revolted from the church. He was received by the *Florentines* with great honour, and continued upwards of eighteen months in that city, till he had established his authority in *Italy*; and recovered the greatest part of the territories of the church; for, at his arrival, the castle of *St. Angelo, Ostia*, and *Civita Vecchia*, were garrisoned by the *Neapolitans*, and the *Romans* had submitted to *Brachius* lord of *Perugia*, who had reduced that city and a great part of the ecclesiastical state; and, as he had served several years under *Balthasar Cossa*, the late pope *John*, was a great enemy to *Martin*. *Brachius* was soon after expelled from *Rome* by *Sfortia Visconti*, then constable of *Naples*; but, still refusing to submit to the church, he was excommunicated by *Martin*. However, the authority of the pope was at that time so weak, that *Brachius* and his adherents, in their turn, excommunicated his holiness, who was likewise exposed to the scoffs of the common people (Y). By the intercession of the *Florentines*, *Brachius* soon after submitted, and came and threw himself at the pope's feet; who appointed him vicar over several of the cities he had formerly usurped. The queen of *Naples* likewise restored the places which she had seized, and sent her seneschal to *Florence*, desiring the pope to send a cardinal to *Naples*, to perform the ceremony of her coronation. *Martin* granted her request, on condition that she set her husband at liberty; who had been long confined in prison, while she indulged herself openly in lasciviousness. About the same time four cardinals, who had deserted *Benedict*, came and submitted to the pope; and soon after *Balthasar Cossa*, who had escaped from the guards that were conducting

1 SUMMONT. Hist. Neap. l. iv. c. 3. •

(Y) *Papa Martino non vale un quattrino*, pope Martin is not worth a farthing (3).

(3) *Leon. Arc. ep. Murator. t. 19.*

him

him into *Italy*, came and threw himself at his feet, and acknowledged him true pope, and canonically elected. His submission was very acceptable to *Martin*, who created him cardinal bishop of *Tusculum*, and dean of the sacred college: however, he did not long enjoy this return of prosperity, but died a few months after, and was most honourably interred at the expence of his friend *Cosmo di Medicis*; who, by his means, had raised his fortune to such a degree, as to be accounted, not only the richest citizen of *Florence* but of the whole world.

The Huffites commit great outrages in Bohemia.

A.D. 1420.

A crusade preached against them.

DURING these transactions in *Italy*, the catholics in *Bohemia* were miserably oppressed by the *Huffites*, who had expelled them from *Prague*, and several other cities of the kingdom, and, since the death of *Wenceslaus*, had refused to acknowledge his brother *Sigismund* as their king; because he had previously refused to confirm to them liberty of conscience (Z). *Martin* being informed of their horrid outrages, at the entreaty of *Sigismund*, published a crusade against them on the 1st of *March*, with the usual indulgences, and sent legates into *Germany* to attend the emperor; who, being delivered from his apprehensions of the *Turks* in *Hungary*, had raised an army of 200,000 men, with which he entered *Bohemia*, and besieged *Prague*. But, not-

* PLATIN. * COLHLÆ.

(Z) Besides the *Huffites*, who were divided into two sects; namely, those who denied transubstantiation, and those who were called *Calixtins*, and communicated under both kinds, the sect of *Adamites* was at this time introduced into *Bohemia*, by one *Pikard*, from *Holland*, who quickly made a great many profelytes of both sexes; and, having taken possession of an island surrounded by a river, called himself *Adam*, the son of God, and asserted that all others, who were not of his sect, were children of the devil. His followers walked naked, and lived promiscuously; but,

as they were obliged to plunder others for their subsistence, *Zisca*, the general of the *Huffites*, attacked their island, and put them to the sword. There was likewise another sect, who called themselves *Orebites*, from the mountain *Oreb*, on which *Moses* received the law from God. Tho' they did not entirely agree with the *Huffites*, yet they were equally zealous enemies to the catholics, plundering and destroying the monasteries, and burning the monks and priests, or exposing them naked in the middle of winter to the rigours of the season (4).

(4) *Æu. c. 41, 42, 43. Cocb. in. hist. Huffit.*

withstanding

withstanding the great superiority of his numbers, he was obliged to raise the siege, and was defeated in five engagements, with the loss of his baggage, provisions, and artillery. About the same time, the pope, having received an embassy from *Manuel the Greek* emperor, with an offer of embracing the *Latin* faith and rites, if reasonable conditions were proposed, he appointed cardinal *Fonseca* as his legate *a latere* to go to *Constantinople*; but he first sent the general of the *Dominicans* to sound the real disposition of the emperor. Soon after, having recovered *Bologna*, he erected the church of *Florence* into a metropolitan, in return for the kind reception he had met with from that city; which he quitted on the 9th of *September*, and proceeded to *Rome*, where he was received with the greatest demonstrations of joy, the *Romans* appointing the day of his arrival to be observed as a holiday. *Martin* immediately caused the city to be repaired and decorated, and applied himself to humanize the *Romans*, who were become almost barbarous; he was, however, in some measure interrupted in these designs by *Brachius* of *Perugia*, who again revolted, and renewed his hostilities in the ecclesiastical state.

A. D.
1421.

In the mean time the *Hussites*, to justify their proceedings, published a letter, accusing the emperor of having violated their privileges, alienated the marquise of *Brandenburgh* without the consent of the states, plundered the churches, and carried off the archives of the kingdom: they then proposed four articles, from which they declared they would never recede; namely, concerning the freedom of communicating under both kinds, the preaching of the gospel without constraint, depriving the clergy of all superfluous endowments, and extirpating, by a reformation, all mortal sin in every rank and dignity. This letter was signed by *Conrad* archbishop of *Prague*, who had espoused their party, and by a great many barons and deputies of the cities; who a few months afterwards held a diet, or *holy synod*, as they called it, at *Prague*, in which they published twenty-two articles explaining their faith. Ambassadors were likewise sent to *Poland* to make an offer of their crown to *Uladislaus*, or *Jagellon*; but, he rejecting the offer, the *Hussites* applied to the duke of *Lithuania*, who, being offended at *Sigismund*, sent his brother *Coribut*, with a large body of *Lithuanians* and *Poles*, to the assistance of the rebels, at the same time

A. D.
1422.

* AVENT. Annal. Boior. l. vii. p. 652. See also the History of the German empire. " LEON. ARET. ap. Murator. PLATINA.

informing the pope of the reasons why he had taken them into his protection. A few weeks afterwards *Martin* sent cardinal *Branda*, bishop of *Placenza*, as his legate into *Germany*, to prosecute the war against the *Hussites*, and wrote to the waiwode, desiring him to recall his troops from *Bohemia*; which request was, after some time, complied with, in consequence of a new accommodation betwixt the emperor and his cousin the king of *Poland*.

The Greek emperor desires a general council to be held at Constantinople. SOON after *Martin* received a letter from the emperor of *Constantinople*, expressing his desire of an union with the *Roman* church, but refusing to embrace that union by submitting to the faith of the *Latin* church, as the nuncio declared his ambassadors had asserted at *Florence*. He requested only that an universal council might be called, after the manner of the seven ancient ones; that it should assemble at *Constantinople*, as the *Greeks* were unable to go elsewhere on account of the incursions of the *Turks*, and the poverty of the empire; that the pope should furnish the expences of those who attended at the council, as the emperor, at whose charge they formerly assembled, was not able; and lastly, that his holiness would compel those under his obedience, by severe censures, to assist the *Greeks* in their extremity. What was the consequence of this letter is not mentioned; but the following year, according to *Onuphrius*, *Martin* celebrated a jubilee at *Rome*; however, as *Italy*, *Germany*, and *France*, were then the scenes of destructive wars, this solemn festival seems to have been but little attended to. Mëan while, as the time for celebrating the council of *Pavia* now drew near, the pope, with the advice of the cardinals, sent four prelates to that city; who, in the month of *May*, opened the assembly; at which were present only three other ecclesiastics, namely, two abbots from *Burgundy*, and a *Carmelite* friar from the clergy of *England*™. As the plague raged in *Pavia*, and the fathers did not attend, after two months the pope transferred the council to *Siena*, where the 1st session was opened on the 8th of *November*. The four prelates, that were first sent to *Pavia*, presided in the name of the pope, and, with the consent of the fathers, confirmed the sentence of condemnation published against heresy at *Constance*, and likewise made some additions to the bull of *Boniface*, VIII. concerning heretics, ordaining, that whoever expelled them from their territories, or delivered them into the power of the ordinaries or inquisitors, or, when desired, punished them with the secular arm, should enjoy the

A general council at Pavia;

it is transferred to Siena.

same indulgences as those who personally visited the *Holy Land*. As very few prelates came to this council, it was dissolved in the month of *February*, another being appointed to be held seven years afterwards at *Basil*, and the necessary reformations in the mean time being left to the pope and his cardinals. According to *Platina*, *Martin* dissolved the council to prevent the intrigues of *Alphonfus* king of *Arragon*, who, being offended that his pretensions to the kingdom of *Naples* were rejected, had sent a deputy to *Siena* to renew the cause of *Peter de Luna*.

ABOUT the same time, a war arising betwixt the duke of *Milan* and the *Florentines*, *Martin*, in resentment for the assistance given by that republic to *Brachius* of *Perugia*, declared for the duke. A few months after, having sent an army to assist the queen of *Naples* against *Brachius*, who was besieging *Aquila*, in an engagement, fought on the second of *June*, *Brachius* was entirely routed, and mortally wounded. In consequence of this victory queen *Jane*, and her adopted son *Lewis III.* duke of *Anjou*, remained in quiet possession of *Naples*; *Martin* recovered *Perugia*, and the other places in the ecclesiastical state that had been usurped by *Brachius*, and the *Florentines* were deprived of their chief support against the arms of duke *Philip*. Not long after the anti-pope *Benedict* died at *Peniscola*, in the 30th year of his pontificate, having, on his death-bed, bound his followers to elect a successor, under pain of eternal damnation. Accordingly the two cardinals of his obedience, after his decease, chose *Ægidius*, a canon of *Barcelona*, who was compelled by the king of *Arragon* to accept of the mock dignity, and assumed the name of *Clement VIII.* *Martin*, upon hearing of his intrusion, immediately denounced an anathema against him and his adherents, and cited them all to appear at *Rome*.

MEAN while his legate cardinal *Branda*, having gone with the emperor and several other princes to *Presburg*, to be present at the coronation of queen *Sophia*, prevailed with *Uladiслаus* to grant 5,000 horse to *Sigismund* against the *Hussites*, and to confiscate the possessions of *Coribut*, who had again entered *Bohemia*. *Eric* king of *Denmark*, *Sweden*, and *Norway*, and *Peter*, brother of the king of *Portugal*, who were both present at the coronation, likewise granted succours to the emperor; but, notwithstanding all these reinforcements, the *Hussites* were every where victorious, and not only repulsed the imperialists and crusaders, but, in their turn, invaded *Misnia*, which they ravaged in a terrible manner *. They, however, this year suffered a considerable loss

The pope joins in a war against the Florentines.
A. D. 1424.

Peter de Luna dies, and is succeeded by Clement VIII.

Alphon-
sus is en-
treated to
desert the
antipope.

A. D.
1425.

loss in the death of their blind and valiant general *Zisca*, who died of the plague, after he had agreed to a personal conference with the emperor. *Martin* in the mean time earnestly solicited the *German* princes to a new expedition against the *Hussites*, and wrote to the emperor, exhorting him to act with vigour against them. Being desirous likewise to extirpate the remains of the schism, he sent the cardinal of *Foix* as his legate *a latere* into *Arragon*, to prevail with *Alphonfus*, who was his relation, to desert the antipope. The cardinal, having sent a nuncio to inform the king of his commission, set out on his journey; but at *Charpentiers* he received a letter from *Alphonfus*, who declared he could not acknowledge him as a legate, till *Martin* had granted him some things which he demanded of him by a special messenger. After two other prohibitions to enter his kingdom, the king at last allowed him to act as legate, but under such restrictions as were rejected by the cardinal; who left *Arragon*, and retired to the territories of his brother the count of *Foix*; from whence the following year he sent frequent messengers to the king, desiring a conference, and with propositions for an accommodation. The messengers returned without receiving any satisfactory answer from the king, who still kept up his resentment against *Martin*, and published an edict, prohibiting the prelates of his kingdom from receiving any apostolical letters, or from executing them or those of the legate, under the penalty of forfeiting all their possessions. The cardinal legate protested against this edict, and informed the pope of the king's proceedings; who, on the 15th of *July*, published a most severe sentence against him and his kingdom. About the same time he sent cardinal *Nicolas Albergatus*, bishop of *Bologna*, to mediate a peace betwixt *Philip* duke of *Milan* and the *Florentines* and their allies, who prevailed with each of the parties to send deputies to *Ferrara*; where, after three months spent in negotiating, a treaty was concluded on the 1st of *January*.

The Hus-
sities ra-
vage sever-
al pro-
vinces of
Ger-
many.

MEAN while the several sects of the *Hussites*, namely, the *Calixtins*, *Taborites*, *Orphans*, and *Orebites*, having, since the death of *Zisca*, conferred the chief command upon one *Procopius*, a priest, and for that reason called *the Shaven*, this general, no less intrepid than his predecessor, gained a signal victory over the duke of *Austria* in his own dominions, and a few months afterwards entirely defeated an army of 100,000 *Germans*, commanded by the counts of *Veideu* and *Schwartzensburgh*; after which he made himself master of

some places on the borders of *Moravia*, and ravaged *Austria* in a terrible manner; as far as the *Danube*. The pope, greatly affected with the miseries which the catholics suffered in *Bohemia* and *Germany*, and finding his endeavours to assist them hitherto ineffectual, on the 16th of *March* created cardinal *Henry*, bishop of *Winchester*, and uncle of the late *Henry V.* of *England*, his legate in *Germany*, *Bohemia*, and *Hungary*, with full power of causing a crusade to be preached every where against the *Wickliffites* and *Hussites*, with the same indulgencies as the crusaders against the *Saracens* had formerly enjoyed. As *Henry* had great authority in *England*, the pope expected large succours from that kingdom; accordingly the cardinal, after some dispute, having obtained leave from the regent of the kingdom to exercise his legatine authority², published a crusade against the *Hussites*; in consequence of which he raised a considerable body of forces, with whom he marched the following year into *Bohemia*^a.

A. D.
1427.

WHILE the crusade was preaching in *England*, the king of *Arragon*, influenced by the censures of the pope, at length invited the cardinal of *Faxi* to enter his dominions; and, upon his arrival at *Valentia*, received him with the greatest honour and respect, conducting him bare-headed into the city. Altho' two days after he opposed some proceedings of the legate by a public edict, yet he was prevailed upon to enter into a negotiation with him, in which several articles were drawn up, containing the mutual demands of both parties; and it was agreed, that the legate should carry them himself to the pope, and return afterwards to *Arragon* to terminate the differences. Accordingly, two galleys being provided, the cardinal embarked for *Rome*, where he arrived on the 8th of *January*. Immediately after, the demands of *Alphonfus* were taken into consideration, and answers to each of them were drawn up and sent to the king; which were not approved by him. As the plague at this time raged in *Rome*, and the cardinals were dispersed, the accommodation of the differences was delayed, and the whole year was spent in reciprocal messages and objections^b. *Martin* in the mean time published a bull, prohibiting lay officials from usurping any authority over ecclesiastics^c; and, as the *Bo-lognese* had again revolted from the holy see, he sent an army against them, and laid their city under an interdict. In the begin-

The pope's
legate
treats
with the
king of
Arragon
about
abandon-
ing the
antipope;

1428.

^a Bzov. hoc an. HARP. sec. 15. c. 10 & 20. ^b Michov. Hist. Polon. l. iv. c. 52. ^c Aët. Leg. ap. Bzov. hoc an.

^d SPOND. Annal.

ning of the following year, he again sent the cardinal of *Thisci* to *Arragon*, who arrived at *Barcelona* about the middle of *May*, where he was received by the king and the prelates with great honours. *Alphonfus* nevertheless delayed the conferences upon various pretences; but, at the entreaties of his brother the king of *Navarre*, he at length condescended to treat. However, after several disputes, the legate refusing to publish his absolution, till he reversed the decrees against the authority of the see of *Rome*, the conferences were broken off; and the king next day proposed to set out on an expedition against the kingdom of *Castile*. On the morrow, the legate having obtained an audience, the king at last consented to his demands; and his brother and himself, having received the benediction of the cardinal, immediately departed. Next day the revocation of the king's decrees was published; and two of his counsellors, being appointed to act according to the directions of the legate, went to *Peniscola*, where, on the 26th of *July*, the antipope *Clement* or *Ægidius*, in the presence of his cardinals and court, voluntarily abdicated the pontifical dignity, confirming his abdication by a bull, and exhorting his cardinals to elect another. They accordingly proceeded to an election in the usual manner, and unanimously chose *Otho Colonna*, or *Martin V.* to whom, in the person of his legate, all the adherents of the late antipope submitted, excepting two cardinals, who, for their obstinacy, had been thrust into prison before the election; however, they soon after acknowledged their fault, and asked pardon.

who, by
his volun-
tary abdi-
cation, at
last ter-
minates
the schism.

A.D.
1431.

THE schism being thus terminated, after it had continued fifty years and ten months, the legate, before he left *Spain*, held a council at *Tortosa* for the restoring of discipline, the sessions being prorogued to the beginning of the following year. *Martin* soon after sent one of the cardinals as his legate *a latere* to be present at the general chapter of the *Franciscans*, held at *Affisi*, with a full authority of reforming the order in the head and members, and to repress the power of the *Hussites*; who, at different times, had made irruptions into *Misnia*, *Silesia*, *Moravia*, *Lusace*, and *Franconia*. The following year he created cardinal *Julian* his legate *a latere* in *Germany*, with a full authority of carrying on the sacred war. As this cardinal was remarkably eminent for his prudence, eloquence, and learning, a few weeks afterwards *Martin* published another bull, appointing him to preside, in his name, at the council to be held at *Basil*, in consequence of the decrees of those of *Constance* and *Siena*. This bull was dated on the 1st of *February*, and twenty days after

after the pope was seized with an apoplexy, of which he died, in the 63d year of his age, and 13th of his pontificate.

THE fourteen cardinals who were in *Rome* at the death of *Eugenius Martin*, entered the conclave on the 1st of *March*, and next IV. is day elected *Gabriel Condellmero*, of an ancient *Venetian* family, elected. cardinal priest and bishop of *Siena*, who, assuming the name of *Eugenius IV.* was consecrated on the 11th of the same month (A). Immediately after his election a *Franciscan* treacherously conspired against his life, by exciting animosities betwixt him and the *Colonna*, relations of *Martin*, and by endeavouring to seize the castle of *St. Angelo* by surprize, with the intention of delivering it to that family. The designs of the *Franciscan* being discovered, he was seized and put to death; after which *Eugenius* put an end to the tumults, by concluding an accommodation with the *Colonna*. During this intestine disturbance, the pope had written to He con- cardinal *Julian*, confirming his legation in *Germany* against firms the the *Bohemians*, and regulating what regarded the holding legation of of the council at *Basil*. The cardinal, being desirous to pro- cardinal ceed against the *Hussites* before he went to the council, ear- Julian; nestly solicited the *German* princes to send the quota of troops to the general rendezvous, which had been fixed upon the former year in a diet at *Nuremberg*. But altho' the expedition had been appointed for the 24th of *June*, yet, upon account of the delays of the allies, the army did not assemble before the 1st of *August*; when, according to some authors, it amounted to 40,000 horse and 50,000 foot, while others affirm, that it consisted of 130,000 men. *Julian* in the mean time sent the auditor of the sacred palace, and the general of the *Dominicans*, to *Basil*, to open the council in his name, and in that of the apostolic see, and soon after entered *Bohemia* with a *German* army, which, in return for the barbarities committed by the *Hussites*, ravaged their territories without mercy. But, after they had advanced a

(A) *Eugenius* came to *Rome* during the pontificate of his uncle *Gregory XII.* who made him his treasurer, and afterwards Bishop of *Siena*, and then, a cardinal.

Spondanus relates, upon the authority of an author of *Bourdeaux*, that the cardinals, before they proceeded to the election of *Eugenius*, drew up certain articles which they swore to

observe; among those, that the pope should, for the future, insert in the apostolic letters, not only the words *by the advice*, but *with the consent*, of our brethren; that the pope should not create new cardinals, without the concurrence and approbation of the old; and that the cardinals should enjoy one half of the patrimony of the church.

who enters considerable way into the kingdom, *Bohemia* *with a* *German* *army,* *which is* *entirely* *defeated.* *Procopius*, who had assembled his forces, attacked them with such impetuosity, that, after a weak resistance, they were intirely defeated, with the loss of their artillery, provisions, and baggage; amongst which was the pope's bull, and the legate's cross and vestments, which served for subjects of derision to the victors ^d. After this victory the *Hussites* ravaged *Moravia*, *Austria*, and *Silesia*, and likewise made an irruption into *Hungary*. Cardinal *Julian*, despairing to reduce them by force, upon his return to *Nuremberg*; proposed to the emperor to invite them to the council of *Basil*; and, soon after arriving at that city, he wrote to the *Bohemians* from thence, offering them a safe conduct, and a free conference upon the articles of their faith, before the general council.

A general council held at Basil; THIS council, according to the decrees of that of *Constance* and *Siena*, ought to have assembled on the 2d of *March*, without any citation: accordingly, on that day, a *Benedictine* abbot, with some other clergy, assembled at *Basil*, and declared that they were ready to wait for other prelates, and in the mean time would consult together for the safety of the Christian people. On the 23d of *July*, the two deputies sent by *Julian* solemnly opened the council, and the cardinal himself arriving in *October*, by the authority of the fathers then assembled, wrote to the catholics in the neighbourhood of *Bohemia*, not to enter into any treaty with the *Hussites*. The offering a free conference to the *Bohemian* secretaries, and some other proceedings of the council, began already to give umbrage to the pope; therefore, on the 12th of *November*, he sent a full power to *Julian* to dissolve the council, and to summon another to meet at *Ravenna* within eighteen months (B), alleging, as his reasons for this translation,

^d COCHL. Hist. Huss. l. vi.

(B) *Martin*, a little before his death, had created four cardinals, who were then absent from *Rome*. As *Eugenius* suspected they were not in his interest, he endeavoured to exclude them from the college, and for that purpose, on the 23d of *October*, published, that those, who were promoted to the cardinalship in a private consistory, should not be accounted cardinals, till they

had received the ensigns of their dignity; namely, the red hat, the ticle, and ring, and that even then they could not have an active voice in the election of a pope, or in any other public affair, till the pope had granted them leave, and solemnly opened their mouth. In consequence of this bull, *Dominicus Capranica*, one of the new promoted cardinals, was not allowed to enter *Rome*; but being,

translation, that he was informed few prelates had arrived at *Basil*; that there was not a safe access to the city, on account of the war betwixt the dukes of *Austria* and *Burgundy*; that many of the citizens were *Hussites*, and persecuted the catholics; and that the *Greek* emperor and patriarch, who proposed to treat of an union with the *Latin* church, had desired that the council might be transferred to *Bologna*. The pope wrote on the same subject to the emperor; but *Sigismund*, who had entered *Lombardy* with the intention of receiving the *Italian* and imperial crowns, returned an answer to the reasons alleged by the pope, and declared, that the reformation of manners, and re-union of the *Hussites* to the church, ought to precede any treaty with the *Greeks*, who would even despise the *Latin* church when they observed it corrupted and divided; that, if the council was dissolved, the *Hussites* would triumph; and that all *Germany* would be infected with their doctrines, several of which already began to meet with approbation from some princes and states, who had concluded a truce with the sectaries. Cardinal *Julian* likewise hesitated to execute the pope's orders; but, considering that the number of prelates and deputies of the kings and princes was daily increasing, and that the continuation of the council was absolutely necessary to quiet the troubles in *Germany* and *Bohemia*, he determined to proceed, as the pope had not peremptorily required him, but only given him a power to dissolve the council: he accordingly appointed the first session to be held on the 14th of *December*, and informed the pope and the emperor of his proceeding; the last of whom wrote to the cardinal and the fathers, exhorting them to persevere in their design, and to cut off as rotten members all those who should endeavour to defer or dissolve the council. *Sigismund*, before he had passed the *Alps*, had sent his deputies to *Basil*, and had appointed the duke of *Bavaria* as protector and defender of the council. They having arrived at that city, the first session was held according to appointment; in which, after the celebration of

ing, nevertheless, received as a been by the council of *Con-*
cardinal by the council of *Basil*, stance. This shutting of the
Eugenius began to be apprehensive lest his authority should mouth has since been declared
to be only a ceremony, to
be attacked by the fathers, and teach the new cardinals mo-
desty and reserve at their first
himself treated in the same entrance into the consistory (5).
manner as *John XXIII.* had

mass, and the performance of the usual prayers and ceremonies, the bishop of *Coutances* ascended the pulpit, and read the decree of the council of *Constance* for the celebration of general councils, and other writings confirmed by the authority of the popes *Martin* and *Eugenius*, appointing the city *Basil* for the place of convocation of the present council. He then proceeded to declare the purposes for which the present assembly had met, and read several decrees of former councils for the security of the members, for regulating the manner of proceeding in the sessions, and for preventing disturbance and disputes about precedency. The ministers and officials of the council being then appointed, the session was dismissed.

The emperor is crowned at Milan.

The pope dissolves the council by the plenitude of his power.

A. D.
1432.

The fathers at Basil refuse obedience to his bull.

MEAN while the emperor, having received the iron crown at *Milan*, proceeded to *Parma*, where he spent the winter. *Eugenius* likewise, continuing fix'd in his resolution to remove the council from *Basil*, on the 18th of *December* published a bull, with the consent of the ten cardinals who were with him, dissolving that council by the plenitude of the apostolic authority, and appointing another to be held eighteen months afterwards at *Bologna*. The reason he gave for this proceeding, was the invitation given to the *Bohemians* to confer upon the disputed articles, which he alleged was injurious to the apostolic authority, and to the councils of *Constance* and *Siena*, by which these same *Bohemians* had been already solemnly condemned, and therefore, according to the canons and decrees of the fathers, ought to be denied all farther audience. *Eugenius* was intreated by the emperor, and *Henry* king of *England*, to revoke this decree; and a certain doctor published a treatise, justifying the invitation given to the *Bohemians*. Cardinal *Julian* likewise wrote with great freedom to the pope, urging the necessity for celebrating the council at *Basil*, declaring that it could not be dissolved without the greatest scandal, and that it ought to be supported, even tho' *Rome* and the patrimony of the church were sure to be lost; that to raise 30,000 crowns, that were demanded for the *Bohemian* war, he ought to sell the crosses and chalices; and that, if he did not revoke his bull, there was very great danger of a schism, as the fathers at *Basil* were determined to continue the council. Accordingly, the fathers that were there assembled, on the 21st of *January*, published a letter, addressed to all the faithful, informing them that they were firmly determined to continue the council which had been lawfully assembled, and would not leave *Basil* till they had completed the work for which they had come together, desiring all men to assist them, and enjoining the prelates, under the penalties of the canons, to hasten to the council.

IN consequence of this letter, the clergy of *France* assembled at *Berry*; and having declared, in several propositions, that the council was lawfully assembled, and ought not to be transferred, they exhorted the king to send ambassadors to the pope, to intreat him to order the council to be continued, and in their own name appointed the archbishop of *Lyons* to solicit the pope. They likewise intreated the king to allow the prelates of his kingdom to go to the council, and to send his deputies thither, granting a fourth part of a tythe of the ecclesiastical revenues for their expences. A few days before the prelates of *France* had published their propositions, the second session of the council was held at *Basil*, on the 14th of *February*, in which, after mass, and the usual prayers, the bishop of *Perigueux* ascended the pulpit, and read the decrees of the council; among which there was one, declaring that, upon the authority of the apostolic see, and the decrees of the councils of *Constance* and *Siena*, the synod of *Basil* was lawfully assembled. That no doubt of its authority might remain, he then read two propositions from the decrees of the council of *Constance*; the one, that a general synod, lawfully assembled, received its authority immediately from Christ, and ought to be obeyed by the highest dignity, the pontifical not excepted; the other, that whoever, of whatever dignity, should refuse obedience to its decrees, ought to be punished. In the third session, which was held on the 29th of *April*, the proceedings of the council with *Eugenius* and the cardinals were read; how that, upon hearing that the pope, moved by false information, had by a bull ordered it to be dissolved, they had sent several nuncios to his holiness, petitioning, but without effect, the revocation of that bull; the fathers, therefore, upon the authority of the decrees published in the former session, warned the pope to revoke the said bull, and to come personally to the council within three months, or, upon a lawful impediment, to send his legates with a full power; they likewise cited the cardinals to come to *Basil* within the same time, otherwise they would provide for the necessities of the church as the Holy Spirit should direct.

DURING these proceedings of the council, their legates, who had been sent to *Germany* to invite the *Bohemians* to send deputies to the synod, after several difficulties, at length prevailed with the *Hussites* to appear at the diet at *Egra*, which was held on the 27th of *April*. The *Bohemians*, after complaining of the unjust war which they had been obliged to sustain for so many years, declared their willingness to appear at the council of *Basil*, to prove their four propositions

by the authority of the scripture and the doctors of the church ; but they demanded several princes and nobles as hostages for the security of their deputies at the council. The catholics thought the demand of hostages dishonourable, and insisted that it was a presumption in the *Hussites* to undertake to reform the church ; but that they ought implicitly to submit in every thing to the decision of a general council ; which last proposition was rejected with disdain by the *Hussites*, who thought it absurd, that divine and self-evident truths should be subject to human decisions, or that they should chuse their most bitter enemies for their judges, who had already unjustly condemned them and those truths unheard *. At length it was agreed, that, for the security of the *Bohemian* deputies, the council should grant a safe conduct, in the most ample terms, and the princes and deputies of the cities then present should engage their word of honour for their safety,

The council grants a safe con- THE council being informed of the proceedings of their deputies at *Egra*, on the 20th of *June*, held the fourth session, in which they granted a safe conduct to the *Bohemians* (C),

* Epist. Boem. & Morav. ad Christ. fid. ap. rer. Boem. scrip. p. 233.

(C) The safe conduct granted to the *Bohemians* was expressed in the most ample terms. The council solemnly engaged the public faith for the security of all those who should be sent from *Bohemia* and *Moravia* to the synod, to the number of 200 persons ; they were allowed to celebrate the service after their own manner in their houses, provided divine service, according to the catholic form, was not interrupted by them, neither in *Basil* nor on the road ; and if any of the retinue committed any thing to violate the safe conduct, the criminal should be judged by themselves. On the other hand, if the catholics should do any thing to the prejudice of the

safe conduct, the council should judge them, with the consent of the deputies : the catholics should not, in their sermons or conferences, declaim against the four articles of the *Bohemians* ; and the deputies should be allowed freely to give their proofs from scripture and the holy doctors in defence of the said four articles ; namely, that the eucharist ought to be administered under both kinds ; that the gospel should be preached freely and publicly ; that the clergy should be deprived of all civil dominion ; and that public and heinous crimes ought to be extirpated from the faithful, by those to whom it belongs (1).

(1) *Treb. Bell. Huss. c. 79. Conc. Labb. t. xii. p. 482 & 484.*

and appointed a nuncio to go to the emperor in *Italy*, to de-
 fire him to grant them his imperial protection. As *Eugenius* ^{duet to the}
 at this time was dangerously ill, the council decreed, that, if ^{Bohemi-}
 the see should happen to become vacant, the future pope
 should be elected no where else but at *Basil*, and that the
 pope, during the continuance of the council, should create no
 new cardinals; they then ordered a bull or seal to be made
 for the letters and acts of the synod, and, as they did not ap-
 prove of the nomination of the cardinal of *Foix* by *Eugenius*
 to be vicar and governor of *Avignon*, they granted that com-
 mission to *Alphonfus*, cardinal of *St. Eustachius*. In the 5th
 session, which was held on the 9th of *August*, the judges were
 appointed for the causes relating to the faith, and a decree was
 made, prohibiting the members to be called from the council
 to the *Roman* court. A few days after, four nuncios arriving
 from the pope, they were admitted to a public audience;
 and after enlarging upon the advantages of peace and union,
 and the authority of a pope above a council, they then de-
 clared, that, as *Eugenius* could nor, on account of his bad
 health and other reasons, quit *Italy*, he offered the council
 the choice of any city in the ecclesiastical state for holding
 their sessions, and, upon their fixing the place, he would not
 prorogue their meeting, but would immediately go thither
 himself. The council refused to comply with the pope's
 request, and affirmed that their authority was supreme, and
 that those, who endeavoured to dissolve them, sinned against
 the Holy Ghost, and created a schism in the church. In the
 next session, which was held on the 6th of *September*, and at
 which were present, besides the legate, two cardinals and
 thirty-two mitred prelates, the proctors of the council stood
 up, and accused the pope of contumacy, because he had
 not revoked the bull for dissolving the council, nor had ap-
 peared personally, or by others, within the time appointed at
 the third session. The council, however, at that time de-
 ferred any further proceedings against the pope and the car-
 dinals, as the nuncios of *Eugenius* declared that they could
 produce reasons justifying their absence.

THE seventh session was held on the 6th of *November*, in *Several*
 which was renewed the decree of the fourth session, prohibiting *decrees a-*
 the election of a pope to be made but at the place of the *gainst the*
 council's residence. In the eighth session, which was held on *authority*
 the 18th of *December*, sixty days more were granted *of the*
Eugenius; within which time, if he did not revoke his bull *pope.*
 for dissolving the council of *Basil* and convoking another, the
 fathers would proceed against him without any farther warn-
 ing or citation. They then declared all his promotions and
 • ordinations

ordinations of churches to be null ; ordered the patriarchs and bishops to come to the council under the penalties of the canons, and the cardinals under the pain of losing their benefices ; and decreed, that, during the continuance of the council of *Basil*, no other council could be convoked, and that the pope could not deprive those of their benefices who adhered to, or were present at, the council of *Basil*, nor lay new taxes on the territories of the *Roman* church or others, under any pretence, nor alienate or mortgage them ; and any such acts were declared null. It is probable the council was encouraged to these proceedings by the countenance of the emperor ; who, on the 22d of *November*, published a bull, declaring, that, as he had from the beginning favoured the council of *Basil*, so he would still protect it to the utmost of his power. This bull was dated from *Siena*, where *Sigismund* had resided several months, having been occupied the whole summer in small skirmishes with the forces of the *Florentines* and *Venetians*, the pope himself favouring them, being apprehensive lest the emperor, after his coronation, should exert himself still farther in defence of the council of *Basil*†.

The deputies of the Hussites arrive at Basil.

A.D.

1433.

WHILE the emperor was soliciting the pope by letters and messengers to agree to his coronation, the deputies of the *Hussites* set out from *Bohemia* for *Basil*, where they arrived on the 4th of *January* with great pomp, being attended by 300 armed gentlemen, and the people running out without the city, and crowding the walls and the streets through which they were to pass, and looking with astonishment at their fierce and martial appearance. They were received with great hospitality : a few days after, being introduced to the council, cardinal *Julian* made a long discourse to them, recommending peace and union ; and as the catholic church, which could be no where better represented than in a general council, could not err in the faith, he exhorted the *Bohemians*, as sons of the church, to hearken to her voice, by submitting to the decrees of the council of *Basil*. *Rockysanus*, one of their deputies, answered in a few words, and, after expressing his gratitude to God for his favours, and to the legate and council for their hospitality and kindness, he asked a day when they might be heard upon their four articles. The council assigned the 16th of the month, when *Rockysanus* began his discourse on the first article, which he continued for three forenoons successively ; *Nicolas*, the

† BLOND. Dec. iii. l. 9. RAINALD, ad an. 1432, n. 20.
ÆNE. Hist. Boem. c. 49.

Taborite, discoursed upon the second article for two days; and *Udalricus*, a priest of the *Orphans*, upon the third article for other two days. Lastly, *Peter Payne*, an *Englishman*, illustrated the fourth article in three forenoons. The catholics then proceeded to their defence, and *John de Ragusa*, general proctor of the *Dominicans*, spent eight days in answering to the first article; *Ægidius Carlerius*, dean of *Gambray*, discoursed four forenoons on the second article; and *Henry Kaltefleiter*, a *Dominican*, employed three days in discussing the third article. Lastly, *John Palomar*, archdean of *Barcelona*, discoursed three days on the last article. The *Hussites* not being convicted by these answers of the catholics, *Rockyjanus* impugned the discourse of the *Ragusan* for six days; and, one dispute begetting another, they debated fifty days without any appearance of an accommodation^b. At length the duke of *Bavaria*, the protector of the council, proposed to terminate their differences by a friendly conference; but this method also failing of success, the *Bohemians* urging to return, both parties agreed, that the council should send deputies to treat with the *Hussites* in a diet to be held on the 7th of *June*. Accordingly the fathers named ten of their most learned brethren, who, on the 14th of *April*, set out for *Prague* with the *Bohemian* deputiesⁱ.

BESIDES these proceedings with the *Hussites*, the council, in the ninth session, which was held on the 22d of *January*, had solemnly taken the emperor under their protection; declaring all the censures published against him by the pope to be null and void, and ordering all his subjects to obey him as formerly. In the following session, which was held on the 19th of *February*, the proctors of the council again accused the pope of contumacy, and some prelates were appointed to draw up the process against him. Tho' no persons appeared at this session for the pope, yet a few days after three legates arrived at *Basil* from him, with proposals to transfer the council either to *Bologna* or to some other city of *Germany*, which the council would not agree to. He himself in the mean time, after the departure of these legates for *Basil*, had thought proper to confirm the council by a bull, which he published two days before the sixty days were elapsed. Notwithstanding this condescension, in the next session, which was held on the 27th of *April*, the council published several decrees to the prejudice of the papal authority. They confirmed the decrees of the council of *Constance* for holding of synods, and determined that the pope was bound to come

^b COCHL. Hist. Hussit.

ⁱ ENK. Hist. Boem. c. 50.

to the council in person, or by his legates, as well as all others who had that privilege, under pain of being, *ipso facto*, suspended from the pontificate, and other benefices and dignities, unless they repented within four months; that a council could not be transferred or dissolved by a pope, without the consent of two-thirds of the members; and that, for the future, the popes should be obliged to swear to observe these decrees. • A few weeks after, the synod received a letter from the emperor, dated at *Viterbo*, informing them that the pope had appointed legates to preside at the council in his name; but as some interruption had prevented their journey, he had sent others in their room, whom *Sigismund* entreated the council to receive with respect. Notwithstanding this letter, the fathers at *Basil* rejected the pope's bull confirming the council to be capitious and deceitful, and would not admit the deputies appointed by him to preside; alleging, that, by their commission, they came rather to hold a new council than to confirm that which was already held.

The emperor is crowned at Rome.

MEAN while in *Italy* a peace was concluded betwixt the duke of *Milan*, and the *Florentines*, *Venetians*, *Luceſe*, and other allies on both sides; and *Sigismund* having sworn to two cardinals at *Viterbo* to defend the catholic faith and the holy see, not to make any treaty with heretics, schismatics, *Turks*, and pagans, and to renew the privileges and donations granted by his predecessors to the *Roman* church, the pope at length consented to his coronation. He was accordingly received at *Rome* with great pomp, and crowned on *Whitsuntide* with the usual ceremonies. Having continued some time in that city, and created several knights, he returned through the territories of the *Venetians*, to whom he was now reconciled; and, crossing the *Alps*, arrived at *Basil* on the 11th of *October*.

The deputies of the council arrive at Prague.

DURING these proceedings in *Italy*, the deputies of the council arrived at *Prague*, and, in a numerous assembly of the *Bohemian* nobles, clergy, and commoners, which was held on the 7th of *June*, proposed an union with the clergy, previous to the discussion of the four articles. But the *Bohemians* absolutely refusing to agree to this proposal, the deputies then required that they would draw up the articles in what manner they thought proper to be sent to the council. This request was complied with, and, on the 11th of *August*, the *Bohemians* delivered their four articles to the deputies, together with the conditions of the union; namely, that they would obey their legal governors in every thing as far as they were bound by the law of God; but if a council, a pope, or the prelates, should command what was pro-

prohibited by God, or omit what was written in the canon of the Bible, they would not obey; and that, after the conclusion of the union, the council should prohibit all princes and prelates to scandalize the *Bohemians* as heretics, or to commit hostilities against them. The deputies having departed from the council, the *Bohemian* nobles, during their absence, rejected the arbitrary authority of *Procopius*, and, by the advice of *Mainard of Newhouse*, chose one of the nobility as their annual governor, and appointed several others as his counsellors, to whom they trusted the administration of the government. The *Taborites* and *Orphans* in the mean time still acknowledging *Procopius*, under his command besieged *Pilsen*, while some of them ravaged *Hungary*, and others assisted the *Poles* in their war against the *Teutonic* knights. Soon after the deputies returned to *Bohemia* with the remarks of the council upon the four articles. In the last, instead of the words, *by those to whom it belongs*, the council had substituted, *according to the law of God and the institutions of the holy fathers*; and to that about preaching the gospel they had added, *by proper persons sent and approved by their superiors, freely but not irregularly, and saving the authority of the pope*. As to what regarded the dominion and secular possessions of the clergy, the council had altered that article, and declared, *that ecclesiastics, who are administrators of the possessions of the church, ought to administer faithfully, but these possessions cannot be usurped without sacrilege*. As the *Bohemians* were less anxious about these articles, they insisted upon having the explication of the council upon the article concerning the eucharist before they would give their answer. The deputies then declared, that the council gave permission to the *Bohemians*, namely to those who had arrived at the years of discretion, to communicate under both kinds, on condition that their priests should always declare to the communicants, *that they ought firmly to believe, that the flesh of Christ is not under the bread alone, nor his blood under the wine alone, but that he is wholly under each kind separately*. After much dispute on both sides, these alterations in the articles were at length agreed to by the *Bohemian* nobles, who sent three deputies to *Basil* to inform the council of their submission. The fathers received this news with great joy, and drew up the treaty of peace under the title of *Compactata*; which was agreed to by the nobles, and some years afterwards received by all the *Hussites*.

THE council of *Basil*, during these transactions with the *Hussites*, were not unmindful to support their authority in opposition to the pope, and being informed that he had published

The council make alterations in the articles of the holy fathers; and to that about preaching the gospel they had added, by proper persons sent and approved by the Bohemians; the council gave permission to the Bohemians, namely to those who had arrived at the years of discretion, to communicate under both kinds, on condition that their priests should always declare to the communicants, that they ought firmly to believe, that the flesh of Christ is not under the bread alone, nor his blood under the wine alone, but that he is wholly under each kind separately. who at length submit to the church.

lished a bull, declaring all their proceedings null and void, excepting in those things which he had allowed them to treat of in the twelfth session, which was held on the 13th of July, they intended to proceed to his deposition: but, in regard to the emperor's requests, they granted him sixty days more, within which time if he did not revoke his proceedings against the council, they declared him, *ipso facto*, suspended from all administration of the pontificate in spirituals and temporals. A decree was likewise made for the legal election and confirmation of bishops and prelates, without any reservations, and according to the ecclesiastical canons, concerning age, learning, and manners, thereby putting a stop to annates. In the next session, which was held on the 11th of September, the proctors of the council again accused the pope of contumacy; but the fathers, at the intercession of the duke of *Bavaria*, granted him thirty days more. At this session two nuncios appeared from the pope, who brought with them two bulls from his holiness. By the one, *Eugenius* confirmed the council from its first opening for the extirpation of heresies, wars, and bad morals, as though no translation or dissolution of it had ever been ordained, on condition that the legates, whom he had appointed, should preside at the sessions; and all decrees made by the council, against the authority of the pope, cardinals, or others adhering to him, should be reversed. The second bull gave authority to three prelates to demand the said revocation of the proceedings of the council, and to revoke and declare null all that had been done against the council by the pope.

The pope annuls the proceedings of the council. As the fathers at *Basil* still insisted, that nothing that they had done could or ought to be revoked, *Eugenius* annulled their decree, made in the twelfth session, against the pope and the cardinals; and soon after a long letter was published, addressed to all the faithful, in defence of the pope, asserting that the fathers at *Basil* were greatly deceived, when they imagined that a general council was superior in every thing to a pope; and concluding with an exhortation to the princes and faithful, to advise the council at *Basil* to admit his legates, and, in case they should refuse to comply, to oppose them to the utmost of their power. The pope afterwards disowned this letter; but the fathers judging it, as well as others, to be genuine, on the 11th of October, assembled in the church to proceed finally against the pope, when news being brought of the arrival of the emperor, they deferred the affair for some days, and went out to meet him. In the fourteenth session, which was held on the 7th of November,

ember, and at which the emperor was present, the term for proceeding against *Eugenius* was again prorogued ninety days, on condition, nevertheless, that within that time he should adhere to the council, and revoke all that he had decreed against it, especially the last three letters, and likewise confirm all its proceedings. On the 26th of the same month was held the fifteenth session, in which several decrees were made, appointing provincial synods to be celebrated every three years, and diocesan assemblies twice or thrice, or at least once, in a year. The manner of celebrating those synods was likewise determined, and matters about which they were to deliberate was specified, particularly the cen-^{The empe-}sure of manners both in ecclesiastics and regulars. At this ^{ror re-}or the preceding session, must have happened what we find ^{ceives an}related by *Krantz*, namely, that the king of the *Turks*, hav-^{embassy}ing not only concluded a truce but agreed to a perpetual peace ^{from the}with the emperor, sent a solemn embassy to the council to ^{Turks as}have the treaty confirmed. The ambassadors brought very ^{Basil.}rich presents for the emperor, who, after the business for which they had come was concluded, dismissed them with magnificent gifts for their master ^k.

MEAN while the duke of *Milan*, imagining that the pope ^{The duke}had favoured the *Florentines*, and his own countrymen ^{of Milan}the *Venetians*, in the late war, and finding that his authority ^{seizes the}was greatly lessened by the opposition of the council, he sent ^{church pa-}all the bishops in his dominions to *Basil*. Under pretence of ^{trimony.}marching an army into *Apulia*, he seized the *Picene* territory, and several other places of the ecclesiastical state, pretending that he had received a letter from the council, constituting him their vicar in *Italy*. • He likewise sent another army, under the command of *Fortebrace*, who took possession of *Tivoli*, and made himself master of the greatest part of *Campania*. Very few cities of the patrimony continuing faithful to the church, and the *Romans* seeming to threaten a revolt ¹, *Eugenius* in this extremity at last consented to adhere to the council, and about the middle of *December* published a bull, according to the form prescribed in the fourteenth session, revoking all his proceedings against the council, and declaring it lawfully assembled. This bull being read in the ^{The pope}sixteenth session, which was ^{addres to}held on the 5th of *February*, ^{the council.}the fathers declared that the pope had thereby satisfied the citation and request of the council; and on the 24th of

^k Saxon. KRANTZ, l. ii. c. 22. an. 1433. ¹ RAIN.
Annal. Ecclef. t. xviii. an eod. BLOND. Dec. 3. l. 5. PLATI-
NA in vit. Eugen. POGO. Hist. Flor. ap. Murator. t. xx.
384. LEON ARÆT. Comment. ut supra

A. D.
1434-

April, the legates of the pope incorporated with the other members of the council, but not in their public character: they were likewise obliged to swear to act faithfully, for the honour of the council, and to defend its decrees, particularly that of the synod of *Constance*, about the superiority of a council over a pope, and not to depart from *Basil* without leave. Accordingly in the next session, which was held on the 22d of the same month, the legates, together with cardinal *Julian*, were allowed to preside, but without any coactive jurisdiction, and saving the manner of proceeding hitherto observed in the council, and that all acts should be passed under the council's seal. The eighteenth session was held on the 24th of *June*; and the emperor being absent, the fathers renewed the decree of the council of *Constance*, concerning the authority of a general council over a pope; and, at the same time, received a treatise composed by the patriarch of *Antioch* in support of that doctrine.

*Is obliged
to fly from
Rome in
disguise.*

MEAN while the pope was harrassed by various misfortunes, which are minutely related by his secretary the historian *Blondus* ^m. *Fortebraccio* having, by the assistance of the *Colonne*, taken possession of *Ponte Molo* and the *Flaminian gate* ⁿ, the *Romans* were prevailed upon to revolt, and had resolved to seize the pope. *Eugenius*, being informed of their design, disguised himself in the habit of a benedictine, and embarking on board a small vessel sailed down to *Ostia*, but not without great danger from the *Romans*, who pursued him, and shot several arrows into his vessel. At *Ostia* he went on board a galley, and sailed from thence to *Pisa*, and afterwards to *Florence*; from whence, on the 20th of *June*, he wrote to the council, informing them of what he had suffered, and confirming his former purpose of countenancing their proceedings. The *Romans* in the mean time plundered all his effects, imprisoned his nephew cardinal *Condelmero*, and endeavoured to get possession of the castle of *St. Angelo*, but without effect. The council having received the pope's letter, soon after sent two cardinals, as their legates, into *Italy*, to accommodate all differences betwixt *Eugenius* and the duke of *Milan*, and to prevail with the revolted cities to renew their allegiance ^o. About the same

*Deputies
arrive at
Basil from
the Greek
emperor.* ^{*}

time three deputies having arrived at the council, from the emperor and patriarch of *Constantinople*, to treat of an union with the *Latin* church, after several private conferences betwixt them and the legates, and other members of the coun-

^m BLOND. Dec. iii. l. 5 & 6.
^{at supra.}

ⁿ RAIN. Annal. Eccles.
^o SIGON. vit. Nicol. Alberg. c. 14.

cil, it was agreed, that an œcumenical council should be held in the east, namely, in *Calabria, Ancona*, or any other maritime city, at *Bologna*, or *Milan*, or *Buda*, *Vienna*, or, lastly, in *Savoy*; and if the *Greek* emperor could not be prevailed upon to come to *Basil*, then the fathers of the council should go to any city the *Greeks* should chuse, within a month after the arrival of the eastern prelates: that those of *Basil* should send 8000 ducats for defraying the expences of assembling the eastern prelates at *Constantinople*; that the western church should support those of the east at the council, to the number of 700 persons, and bear the expence of their voyage both in coming and returning. These, and some other less material articles, being agreed to, were approved and confirmed by the council in the nineteenth session, which was held on the 7th of *September*, and afterwards ratified by the pope. In the same session a decree was published, whereby the *Jews* were compelled to hear sermons, and several former decrees were renewed, prohibiting all communication with them in faith, manners, conversation, commerce, dress, or lodging. A decree of the council of *Vienne*, about the study of the *Hebrew, Arabic, Greek, and Chaldaic* languages, was ordered to be observed.

DURING these proceedings, the synod having been informed that the *Orphans* and *Taborites*, who had refused to agree to the compactata, had been attacked and entirely defeated by the other party, under the command of *Mainard*, together with the catholics, they sent twelve deputies to *Ratisbon*, who had several disputes with those of *Bohemia* of the party of the *Taborites*, who insisted that, for the sake of uniformity, the catholics should be compelled to communicate under both kinds; but their demand was rejected by the emperor, and the other deputies. *Sigismund* at the same time complained to the deputies of the council against some proceedings of the fathers, that were derogatory to his authority; namely, that, while he was in *Italy*, they had written to the duke of *Milan* to restore the patrimony of the church, and not to the emperor, although it was the emperors who had granted that donation to the popes; that, while he was at *Basil*, the council had sent a cardinal to *France*, and others to the pope, without acquainting him; and that they had assumed the cognizance of causes that did not belong to their jurisdiction, particularly the dispute between the two pretenders to the duchy of *Saxony*. As he could not allow of these proceedings, he declared he had therefore left *Basil*; but

A. D. 1435. if the council would diligently attend to the reformation of manners, he would come most willingly, even from paradise, to assist at their deliberations ⁹.

Several
decrees a-
gainst the
concubin-
age of the
clergy.

WHAT satisfaction the emperor received from the council is uncertain; but the following year we find he desired the fathers again to appoint deputies to treat with the *Bohemians*. His request was complied with; and on the 23d of *January* the deputies departed from *Basil* for *Beronne* in *Bohemia*, the place fix'd for the congress. The day before they departed the twentieth session was held, in which several decrees were made against the concubinage of the clergy. Those who were publickly convicted of keeping concubines, or refused to dismiss those women with whom they were suspected to have an unlawful commerce, were deprived of their revenues for three months; and if, after that, they neglected to turn off their concubines within a limited time, they were, *ipsis factis*, deprived of their benefices, and rendered incapable of succeeding to others. Mean while *Eugenius*, being informed of the death of the queen of *Naples*, he sent a nuncio immediately into that kingdom, requiring the nobles and people not to give their allegiance to any prince, but to him who should be confirmed by the apostolic see. This message was not agreeable to the *Neapolitans*, who declared that they would accept of no king but *René*, duke of *Anjou*, who, upon the death of his brother *Lewis*, had been adopted by the late queen, and was at this time a prisoner to the duke of *Burgundy*. Before his arrival, *Casua*, and some other places in that kingdom, were seized by *Alphonfus*, king of *Arragon* and *Sicily*, who on this occasion renewed his pretensions to the crown of *Naples*. Hostilities in the mean time still continuing betwixt the troops of the duke of *Milan* and those of the pope, and the *Venetians* and *Florentines*, *Picininus*, the duke's general, had formed a plot with the bishop of *Novara* to seize *Eugenius*, when he should go to the country for the summer; but their design being discovered, the bishop was apprehended and sent back to *Milan*, his life having been spared at the intercession of the cardinal *Albergatus*, who soon after passed the *Alps*, to be present at the famous congress held at *Arras*, for negotiating a peace between the kings of *France* and *England* and the duke of *Burgundy*. The general council likewise sent some cardinals and prelates to be present at this congress; and on the 21st of *May* gave a mandate to the cardinal of *Arles*, who was commissioned by the pope to go to

⁹ SPOND. Annal. ex act. Binian.
h. 6.

⁹ BLOND. Dec. iii.

Arras, ordering him to cause the libraries and archives of the universities, churches, and monasteries, to be searched for books relating to the conception of the blessed virgin, and to send such as he could find to the council.

THE twenty-first session was held a few weeks after, on *Annates* the 9th of *June*, in which a decree was made, prohibiting ^{are abo-} for the future the payment of any money, under any pretence ^{lished by} or name whatever, for the confirmation of elections, ad- ^{the coun-} missions, &c. or for the provision, collation, or investiture, ^{cil.} of any churches, monasteries, dignities, benefices, or ecclesiastical offices, or for a benediction, pall, or ordination, allowing only a competent salary to the writers, abbreviators, and registers of the letters, for their trouble: whoever acted otherwise were declared to incur the penalty of simony, and ordered to be punished by their superiors; and, if the decree was violated by any pope, a complaint was ordered to be made to a general council. Decrees were likewise made in the same session, about the modesty and gravity to be observed in celebrating the divine service, about the decency of apparel, and the punishment of those who were negligent or absent on that occasion. Besides the above-mentioned decree, abolishing annates or first fruits, others were made in the general congregations, ordering the collectors of the revenues of the apostolic chamber to come to the council, to give an account of their receipts and disbursements, and annulling all appeals of causes that had been decided by the council. These decrees were not passed without long and warm disputes, the legates of the pope protesting against the injustice of the proceedings of the fathers, in not previously acquainting the pope: but their opposition was without effect; for the council having published the decrees, sent two legates to *Florence* to obtain the concurrence of *Eugenius*. *John de Bachenstein*, one of the legates, declared, that if the pope would acquiesce in the demands of the council, they would provide for his holiness and the cardinals, by some more honourable means; but if he would not concur, they would, nevertheless, cause their decrees to be inviolably observed. *Eugenius* sent his answer to the council by two nuncios, who discoursed warmly in favour of the apostolic see, and remonstrated against the injury done to it by abolishing annates; but they were answered by cardinal *Julian*, in the name of the council, who refused absolutely to revoke the decrees, which were the occasion of a new breach betwixt the fathers and the pope. About this time the council sent nuncios to *Constantinople*, to intreat the emperor to agree to the articles that had been concluded with his deputies; and

Their decree is opposed by the pope.

to prevail with him, if possible, to consent to celebrate the oecumenical council at *Basil*. During their absence the twenty-second session was held, on the 15th of *October*, in which the council condemned a treatise of an *Augustine* monk, concerning Christ and the church, as containing many erroneous and scandalous propositions (D); but they did not proceed against the author, though he did not appear, as he alleged canonical excuses for his absence. The council having, about this time, taken cognizance of a dispute betwixt the republic of *Venice* and the patriarch of *Aquileia*, ordered the republic to restore all the possessions which it had usurped from the patriarchate, under pain of an interdict against the state, and a sentence of excommunication against the doge, senate, and nobles; but, notwithstanding this sentence, the republic neglected to make any restitution.

The Venetians contemn their authority;

which is courted by the Venetians, the king of Arragon.

A. D. 1436.

WHILE the authority of the council was contemned by the *Venetians*, it was on the other hand courted by *Alphonfus*, king of *Arragon*, who not being able to prevail with the pope to favour his pretensions to the kingdom of *Naples*, in resentment resolved wholly to addict himself to the council: he therefore wrote to the fathers, desiring them to send one to take the government of *Rome*, and of the patrimony of the church, as he was resolved to reconquer and restore both. At the same time he charged *Eugenius* to adhere to the council, and not to oppose him in taking possession of *Naples*, otherwise he must blame himself for the consequences. Whether the council was influenced by these declarations of *Alphonfus* is uncertain; but in the twenty-third session, which was held on the 24th of *March*, they altered the bulls then in force, with regard to the manner of election of a pope and conclave, prescribing a form of an oath to be taken by the pope at his election, to be renewed every year on the same day, or the day of his coronation. By this oath the pope obliged himself to observe the decrees of all general councils, particularly that of *Basil*, and to endeavour to the utmost of his power to extirpate the heresies, reform the manners, and

New restrictions laid upon the pope

(D) These were some of his propositions, namely, that Christ sinned daily, and always had sinned, not asserting this of our Saviour in his person, but in his members, which, being united to the head, he affirmed made one Christ; that all those who were justified were not members of Christ, but only elect; that the human nature in our Saviour was real Christ, and the person of the word (1).

(1) *Tristram, & Bellarm. de Script. Eccles.*

procure peace to Christendom, and the frequent celebration *and cardinals by the* of general councils. Several other articles were added, pre-
scribing the manner of reforming the pope's family, and the *council.*
Roman court; and concerning the administration of the pa-
trimony of the church, particularly that the pope should not
appoint his own relations or kindred within the third degree,
as dukes, counts, governors, generals, &c. of provinces and
cities of the ecclesiastical state; that the half of the reve-
nues of all the possessions of the church should belong to
the cardinals, by whose advice all serious and important mat-
ters should be transacted, and whose number should not ex-
ceed twenty-four, to be elected from all the provinces of
Christendom by the other cardinals, after a strict examination
of their morals and learning; and that they should not be
relations either of the pope, or of those cardinals already in
the college: lastly, the decrees concerning the liberty of
elections, and the total annulling of papal reservations, were
confirmed. In the next session, which was held on the 12th
of April, one of the nuncios having returned from *Constanti-*
nople, and informed the council that the emperor had at
length agreed to hold the œcumenical council in some mari-
time city of *Italy*, the fathers published a safe conduct for
all the *Greeks* who should come to that assembly; and at the
same time granted plenary indulgences, with full remission
of all sins once in life, and at the point of death, to all those
who should grant one week's expences of their family towards
the holy purpose of the union of the *Greeks*. But that the
indulgences might not seem to be given away entirely for *expences*
money, some pious works were also enjoined; nevertheless of the
the legates of the pope exclaimed against the decree as a *Greeks.*
base and venal prostitution (E). A few weeks afterwards
Eugenius sent two cardinals, as his legates, to *Basil*, to make
fresh remonstrances against the decrees concerning elections,
confirmations, annates, and indulgences, and to desire the
fathers to appoint the place for celebrating the council with
the *Greeks*, offering, if they would agree with him as to the
nomination of the place, and transfer themselves thither di-
rectly, to give 60,000 crowns towards the expences of the
eastern prelates; which sum he affirmed was more than the
indulgences would raise. This offer however was rejected
by the council, who persisted in their own justification, and

(E) According to one of the this session only ten bishops and
editions of the acts of the thirty abbots (1).
council, there were present at

answered, that it was not yet proper to determine the place for the œcumenical council.

An entire
reconcilia-
tion is ef-
fected be-
twixt the
Hussites
and the
emperor,

DURING these disputes with the fathers at *Basil*, *Eugenius* had again got possession of *Bologna*, and by the prudence of the archbishop of *Florence*, who commanded his troops, had recovered several places that had been seized by the king of *Arragon*. About this time likewise the deputies of the council, who had been sent the former year into *Bohemia*, and had broke off the conferences upon a dispute about settling the article concerning the usurped church-lands, now assembled, with those of *Bohemia*, at *Iglavia*, where a complete réconciliation was effected betwixt the *Hussites* and the church. Tho' one of the deputies had brought with him from the council a mitigation of the article rejected the year before by the *Bohemians*, yet, from *Æneas Sylvius*, one of the members of the council, it would appear, that the réconciliation was chiefly owing to a private treaty between the *Hussites* and the emperor, which last promised that the church-lands should be possessed by the present occupiers, till they were redeemed by money; that the exiles, monks, and nuns, should not be permitted to return to *Bohemia*; that the pope should have no authority to dispose of the churches in that kingdom; and that *Rockysanus* should have the archbishoprick of *Prague* *. The *Bohemian* deputies were dismissed with magnificent presents, and the emperor soon after proceeding to *Prague*, was crowned in that city with great solemnity; but he quickly violated the private treaty, by recalling and protecting the monks, expelling *Rockysanus* from *Prague*, and acting by force against the remains of the *Taborites*, to whom he had granted a five years protection †.

who is
crowned
at Prague.

A. D.
1437.

WHILE *Sigismund*, by his perfidy, was rendering himself odious to the *Bohemians*, the dissensions revived with great warmth betwixt the council and the pope, about determining the place for celebrating the œcumenical council. *Eugenius* wanted to fix upon some city in the ecclesiastical state, or in *Tuscany*: but in the twenty-fifth session, which was held on the 7th of *May*, the majority of the fathers decreed, that the council should be celebrated, if possible, at *Basil*, or at *Avignon*, or, lastly, in *Savoy*; and for the support of the *Greeks*, all ecclesiastics, even the pope and cardinals, should give a tenth of their revenues: and as the city of *Avignon* offered to lend 70,000 florins of gold, they mortgaged so much of the money, to be raised by the indulgences

* *ÆNE. SYLV. Hist. Boem. c. 52.*
SPOND. Annal. hoc an.,

† *Idem ibid.*

for their payment. These decrees were published by a factious party of the council, who had seceded from the presidents, and celebrated the session by themselves. They were by far the most numerous, but among them there were very few prelates of any rank. As they had refused to be present at the deputations and general congregations, the other party, who adhered to the presidents and legates, fixed upon *Florence*, or *Utinum*, in *Friuli*, for the residence of the council, or any other safe place mentioned in convention betwixt the pope and the *Greeks*, which could soonest furnish the money, and fit out the galleys, for transporting the eastern prelates. Both parties persisting obstinately in their opinions in the above session, they sat apart, and each ratified their own previous resolutions; but the decree of the minority was confirmed by *Eugenius*, who appointed a nuncio to go, with two others of that party of the council, to *Constantinople*.

ABOUT a month after their arrival, the nuncios, of the factious part of the council, landed from two galleys of *A-vignon*, and intreated the emperor to come to that city, or *Basil*, or *Savoy*, declaring, that, before he could arrive at *Italy* in the ships of *Eugenius*, that pope would be deposed; but if he would agree to sail with them to any of the three places above-mentioned, the princes, whose letters they brought, would furnish succours against the *Turks*. The *Greek* emperor however, notwithstanding these declarations, adhered to the other party, and in the end of *November* embarked, with several prelates, for *Venice*, on board nine galleys furnished by the pope. During these proceedings at *Constantinople*, the factious party of the council having been informed that *Eugenius* had confirmed the decree of the minority, they were greatly irritated against him; and in the twenty-sixth session, which was held on the 21st of *July*, they published a monitory, accusing him of several crimes, and citing him and his cardinals to appear within the sixty days. In the following session, which was held on the 25th of *September*, they declared the late creation of the archbishop of *Florence* to the cardinalate to be void, as being contrary to a decree of the council; they likewise annulled the decree appointing *Florence*, or *Utinum*, for the residence of the œcumenical council, as being sealed clandestinely, and against the appointment of the council; and to procure the favour of the emperor, they wrote to him, informing him of their proceedings against *Eugenius*, and desiring him to protect the council by his authority. *Sigismund*, who was then languishing in his last illness, and died a few months afterwards,

in the 70th year of his age, wrote to the fathers to act with more moderation, to cease their proceedings against the pope, and to take care lest, instead of uniting the *Greeks*, they should occasion a schism among the *Latins*. Notwithstanding this advice, the sixty days granted to the pope being elapsed, the council, in the next session, which was held on the 1st of *October*, declared *Eugenius* guilty of contumacy, the other party protesting against their proceeding, and the deputies of *Spain* declaring their dissent, in the name of their king and the prelates of their nation.

Eugenius transfers the council of Basil to Ferrara;

MEAN while *Eugenius*, being encouraged by the success of his nuncios at *Constantinople*, on the 16th of *September* published a bull, wherein, after recapitulating the violent proceedings of the council, he transferred it, by the plenitude of his power, immediately to *Ferrara*, which city he assigned for the future œcumenical council. The fathers at *Basil*, instead of giving obedience to this bull, in the twenty-ninth session, which was held on the 12th of *October*, published a decree, wherein, having accused the pope of being the author of the dissension, they declared the translation and dissolution of the synod to be null, and charged the pope to revoke his bull, which if he did not do within four months, they declared him, *ipso facto*, suspended: they likewise prohibited, under pain of excommunication and interdict, any one from going or sending to *Ferrara*, or from acting contrary to the decrees of the council of *Basil*. A few days after they published a letter in justification of their former monitory against the pope; and in the thirtieth session, which was held on the 21st of *December*, they published some explanations of the article concerning the eucharist, in the treaty formerly concluded with the *Bohemians*; but these explanations were not different from what had been already agreed to by the *Bohemian* deputies.

A. D.
1438.

THE following year was remarkable, not only for the dissensions betwixt the pope and the council of *Basil*, but also on account of the warm disputes in the council of *Ferrara*. On the 22d of *January* the fathers at *Basil* celebrated the thirty-first session, in which they published three decrees; by the first, they annulled all frivolous appeals to the *Roman* courts, and ordained, that those who were above four days journey from *Rome* should terminate all their suits at their proper residence, and all legal appeals should be carried to *Basil*, and not to the pope. By the second, they prohibited the pope from granting any reservations of benefices, and ordained that livings should be given only to prudent and learned men. The third was expressly against *Eugenius*,

genius, whom they suspended from the pontificate, assuming ^{be is su-} the administration thereof to themselves, and appointing three ^{suspended by} persons out of each of the nations as administrators of the ec- ^{the council} clesiastical state. At this session, and some weeks before, ^{of Basil.} there were great contests and confusion among the fathers. Cardinal *Julian*, and the other cardinals, being apprehensive of a schism, left *Basil* about the beginning of *January*. The cardinal of *Arles*, who was the only one that remained, was created president by the fathers, who cited the archbishop of *Tarantaise*, and the two nuncios that had been sent by the minority to *Constantinople*; the first for having put to the torture a deputy of the duke of *Savoy*, sent by the council into *Greece*, and the two last for having falsely called themselves nuncios of the council to the *Greek* emperor.

IN the mean time several prelates having assembled at *Ferrara*, in consequence of the citation of *Eugenius*, cardinal *Albergatus*, who had been appointed legate à latere by the pope, presided at the first session, which was held on the 10th of *January*, and in which it was decreed, that the council of *Ferrara* was lawfully assembled, as that of *Basil* had been transferred for necessary and just reasons; that it ought to endeavour to procure the union of the *Greeks*, and to accomplish those matters which had been begun, but not finished, by the council of *Basil*; all the transactions of which, after the translation, were declared null, excepting those which regarded the *Bohemians*, if they were confirmed by the council of *Ferrara*; lastly, all were absolved from the oaths they had taken to the council of *Basil* ^u. A few weeks after *Eugenius* came to *Ferrara*, and having in a general congregation complained of the injurious proceedings of the council of *Basil*, he declared, that if he had done any thing amiss he submitted himself willingly to the correction of the fathers. Two days after he regulated the order of sitting in the assemblies; and presiding in the second session, which was held on the 15th of *February*, he not only declared the seditious decrees of the council of *Basil* to be null, but also that those who continued at that assembly had incurred the penalties of excommunication, and privation of dignities and benefices, which they were rendered incapable of possessing for the future. All those who were assembled at *Basil*, under pretence of the council, were ordered to depart, under pain of excommunication, within thirty days, after which time the magistrates of the city were ordered to expel them, under the same penalty; which was also denounced against

^u SPOND. ANNAL. ex Cod. VATIC. & ACT. PATRICIAN.

those

The Greek emperor, with the eastern prelates, arrive at Ferrara.

those who should carry any merchandize or provisions into the city, if the above-mentioned persons should continue contumacious. The *Greek* emperor and patriarch, with the prelates of that church, having about this time arrived at *Venice*, sent five deputies to the pope to inform him of their arrival; and soon after sailing up the *Po*, they landed at *Ferrara*, where they were received with the greatest honours by *Eugenius* and the cardinals * (F). The pope, at the intreaty of the emperor, sent nuncios and letters to the kings and princes of christendom, exhorting them to send their deputies to the council within four months. In the mean time the fathers at *Basil*, in their thirty-second session, which was held on the 22d of *March*, condemned the conventicle, as they called it, at *Ferrara*, and declared, whatsoever should be done in it by the suspended pope, or in his name, to be null and void, at the same time denouncing penalties against those who repaired to *Ferrara*.

The œcumenical council is opened in that city.

THEIR decrees, however, were despised by the other council, who appointed the œcumenical council to be opened at *Ferrara* on the 9th of *April*, on which day, both the *Latins* and *Greeks* having assembled in the church of *St. George*, and being seated according to the order previously agreed upon (G), a decree of the patriarch of *Constantinople* was first

* CHALCOND. l. i. & vi. PHRANZ, l. ii. c. 14. SPOND. Annal. ex act. Concil.

(F) The *Greek* prelates would not condescend to kiss the pope's feet; some of them gave him only a common salutation, and others kissed his hand and cheek (1).

(G) There were great disputes betwixt the *Greeks* and *Latins* about the order of sitting. The pope proposed that the *Latins* should sit on one side of the church, and the *Greeks* on the others, and that he himself should be seated at the head before the altar, in the middle betwixt both; but this was objected to by the *Greek* emperor, who claimed that place as due to him. At length it was a-

greed that the pope should sit at the head of the *Latins* on the right side of the church, and the emperor at the head of the *Greeks* on the other, and that the book of the gospels should be placed, with lighted tapers, betwixt the heads of *St. Peter* and *St. Paul*, upon a throne erected before the altar.

Besides the proxies of the eastern patriarchs, there were present, according to *Kfantz*, the metropolitan of *Kiovia* and of all *Prussia*, with several *Muscovite* and *Russian* prelates, and a retinue of 200 horse. The metropolitan of the *Georgians* was likewise said to be present,

Spond. Annal.

and

first read, by which he declared that he consented to the celebrating of an œcumenical council at *Ferrara*, to which assembly he ordered all who were concerned either to come or send, within four months, under pain of excommunication. Another decree of the pope was then read to the same purpose, and both received the assent of the fathers (H). After *Easter*, the *Latin* fathers proposed to employ the time, till the arrival of the deputies of the princes, in examining the controverted doctrines betwixt them and the *Greeks*; to this the eastern prelates, after some difficulty, assented, and twelve persons were chosen on each side, who assembled twice a week, and disputed about purgatory and the blessedness of saints; but, after they had spent two months in those disputes, they left the question undecided.

MEAN while the *German* electors, having assembled at *Frankfort*, chose *Albert*, duke of *Austria*, as emperor. After his election, a general diet being held in the same city, it was agreed to adhere both to the pope and the council of *Basil*, but not acknowledge the decrees of either party against the other. This determination, which was called the *German neutrality*, offended both *Eugenius* and the fathers of *Basil*: however, as *Albert* renewed the safe conducts, granted by his predecessors to the council, they, in return, gave him all the money raised in *Austria* by the indulgences, for the journey of the *Greeks*. At the same time they proceeded with their usual violence against the pope; and having confirmed their former decrees, and those of *Constance*, concerning the power of a general council above a pope, and that those who asserted otherwise were heretics, the proctors of the council then produced 150 articles of accusation against *Eugenius*, which they offered to prove by witnesses and public documents. Notwithstanding the remonstrances of the deputies of the kings of *France*, *Spain*, *England*, and other princes, these articles of accusation were received in a general congregation, and ordered to be proved by witnesses within thirty days, but, before that time was elapsed, twenty-

and deputies from the emperor of *Turkey*, and from the *Iberians* and *Walachians* (2).

(H) The *Patrician* acts call this the third session, counting the two that preceded the coming of the *Greeks*; but others begin the first session only at the

8th of *October*, when the dispute commenced about the procession of the holy spirit. The council itself is known by the name of the *Florentine*, having been transferred to that city on account of the plague, which raged in *Ferrara*.

A neutrality also observed by the Gallican church.

two witnesses were admitted to prove the articles of accusation. The king of *France* in the mean time, being uncertain what course to take in the disputes betwixt the pope and the council of *Basil*, assembled the nobles and prelates of his kingdom at *Berry*, and by their advice published the pragmatic sanction, by which he acknowledged the legality of the council of *Basil*, and in some measure its authority. We say, in some measure, for they did not receive its decrees absolutely, but with certain modifications, to render them more accommodated to the customs and usages of the kingdom; all those however were received simply that tended to retrench the authority of the pope. The king, by an edict, ordered this pragmatic sanction to be observed inviolably thro' his dominions; but as the clergy of *France* thereby usurped an authority, not only above a pope but also above a general council, it was soon after abrogated both by *Eugenius* and the king *.

DURING these transactions in *France*, the *German* princes, in a diet held at *Nuremberg*, proposed to the deputies from the council of *Basil*, that, to determine all disputes, a third place should be chosen for holding a general council, at which should assemble the prelates from *Basil* and *Ferrara*, with the pope and the *Greeks*. The deputies of the council declared that they had no authority to agree to that proposal, but demanded only that the diet would approve of the decrees of the council against *Eugenius*. The princes refused to grant their request; but declared, that they would still adhere to the neutrality concluded at *Frankfort*. The deputies of the kings of *France*, *England*, *Aragon*, and *Portugal*, and of the duke of *Milan*, were of the same opinion; and the deputies of the council still refusing all the terms of accommodation that were offered, another diet was appointed to be held on the 1st of *March* at *Frankfort*, which assembly, on account of the plague, was afterwards held at *Mentz* 2.

Disputes between the Greek and Latin Sathgrrs.

MEAN while the *Greeks*, finding that none of the prelates came from *Basil*, and that few or none arrived from any other place, made some objections to the council of *Ferrara*; but these scruples being removed by *Eugenius*, who asserted that, where he was with the cardinals, and the emperor and patriarch of *Constantinople*, with the legates of others, there was an universal synod, they agreed to celebrate the sessions, and to dispute, in the first place, upon two points, namely,

* GAGUINI Hist. Franc. l. x. 48. DUPIN, tit. xii. p. 54. de gest. Conc. Basil.

2 DUMONT, t. iii. p. 48. AENE. SYLV. Comment.

whether it was lawful to add any thing to the creed, and whether the addition, *and from the son*, was just. As the pope was distressed with the gout, the first session was held on the 8th of *October*, in a large chapel of his palace, and six disputants being appointed by each party, *Bessarion* of *Nicea*, one of those on the side of the *Greeks*, made a long and eloquent harangue, which is still extant, wherein, after invoking the protection of God, he commended the emperor, the pope, and the fathers, for their pious intentions, and exhorted them to constancy and perseverance, till the union was accomplished. Nothing else was done in this session; and in the second, which was held three days after, the archbishop of *Rhodes*, for the *Latins*, made another speech in praise of the pope, the emperor, and the whole council: after which it was ordained, that the disputes should be carried on by syllogisms, and the option being given to the *Greeks* either to impugn or defend, they chose the first, and left the *Latins* to answer their objections. The five following sessions, which were all held in the same month, and several other private congregations, were spent in debating upon the expression *and from the son*. The *Greeks* opposed that addition, as contrary to the decrees of the first general councils, which prohibited any addition to the creed; but the *Latins* asserted, that it was not so much an addition as an explanation of the words *from the father*, and urged that the *Nicene* fathers had taken the liberty to add explications to the apostles creed, and other councils had done the same to the *Nicene* (1). The same dispute was continued in the five following sessions, which were held in the month of *November*, and in which the *Greeks* at last granted that it was lawful to explain the words of the creed, but not to add that explanation to the creed itself. The same dispute was the subject of the three following sessions; at the first of which arrived the deputies from the duke of *Burgundy*; but as they neglected to salute the emperor, that prince threatened to dissolve the council if they did not give satisfaction for the insult; wherefore, at the intercession of the fathers, they were prevailed upon, at the next session, to pay their compliments to the emperor. At the following session, *Mark* of *Ephesus* endeavoured to conclude the dispute by a very long discourse; but still the matter was left undecided, cardinal *Julian* declaring, that, if the *Greek* should produce ten arguments, he would advance ten thousand.

(1) This whole dispute is published at *Rome* and in contained at full length in the *Germany* by *Binius*.

The council transferred to Florence.

A. D.

1439.

THE *Greeks* being unmoved by the arguments of the *Latins*, and finding them equally uninfluenced by theirs, began to think of returning home, and proposed, as their final concession, that the words in dispute should be admitted in a definition apart; but the *Latins* refused to agree to this proposal, urging that, since the words were admitted as orthodox, they ought not to be expunged from the creed. As the plague raged at this time in *Ferrara*, the pope proposed to transfer the council to *Florence*, but to this the *Greeks* made great objections; at last, however, they gave their consent, on these conditions: that the council should not be transferred from *Florence*, but be concluded within four months; that they should be furnished with provisions; and that eight months stores should be sent by the pope to *Constantinople*. Accordingly, in the sixteenth session, which was held on the 11th of *January*, the translation of the council was published, and the fathers immediately after proceeding to *Florence*, held the seventeenth session in that city, on the 26th of *February*, in which, after a long dispute betwixt the emperor and cardinal *Julian*, it was agreed, that the two parties, for the future, should dispute in private assemblies; but this method was observed only a few weeks; for in the six following sessions, which were held in the month of *March*, the public disputations were again resumed, first concerning the meaning of the word *procession*, and afterwards about the acceptation of the words *nature*, *essence*, *substance*, *subsistentia*, and *hypostasis*, in the divine persons, how far they meant the same thing, and in what respects they differed. After these sessions the emperor assembled all the *Greek* metropolitans in the lodgings of the patriarch, who had been confined for some time by sickness, and laid before them the calamities which would befall the *Greek* empire, if the schism was not terminated: he therefore exhorted them to lay aside their disputes, and find out some method for an agreement, especially as the *Latins*, by the addition of the words *and from the son*, did not acknowledge two principles. The greatest part of the *Greeks*, being influenced by this exhortation of the emperor, did not dispute in the two following sessions, but only attended to the discourses of the *Latins* in proof of their doctrine; and afterwards holding a great many conferences in the lodgings of the patriarch, they at length unanimously agreed, that the holy spirit proceeded from the father and from the son, as from one principle and one substance. This opinion being committed to writing and delivered to the pope, was approved.

proved by him and the *Latins*, who, as a testimony of their joy, embraced the *Greeks* with great affection.

EUGENIUS then proposed to terminate the other points wherein the two churches differed, namely, concerning the fire of purgatory, and using leavened or unleavened bread in the sacrament of the eucharist, and the supremacy of the *Roman* see. Their deliberations were interrupted by the death of the patriarch of *Constantinople*, which happened on the 9th of *June*; but a few days after, the debates being resumed, an union was likewise effected in these points. The *Greeks* agreed as to the pains of purgatory, but would not determine absolutely whether it was fire, darkness, a whirlwind, or any thing else; they allowed that either leavened or unleavened bread may be consecrated in the eucharist; they likewise acknowledged in general the supremacy of the pope, but would not allow of appeals to him from other patriarchal sees, or that he had a power of celebrating œcumenical councils without the emperor and patriarchs. In the next session a decree was drawn up, wherein these restrictions were mentioned in general terms, which was subscribed by the pope, the cardinals, and several *Latin* prelates, and by the emperor, the proxies of several patriarchs, and fourteen metropolitans. The pope then desired that the *Greeks* would chuse a successor to the patriarch of *Constantinople*, whom he might confirm, and to whom he would give a large sum to support his dignity, promising likewise to remove the *Latin* patriarch of that title; but the *Greeks* refused absolutely to agree to that proposal, alleging that the patriarch must be chosen at *Constantinople*, by the whole province. The union being thus accomplished, the pope published a letter, addressed to all the faithful, informing them of the translation; and besides what had been stipulated with the emperor, he promised, upon an emergency, to furnish twenty armed gallics for six months for the defence of *Constantinople*, and to solicit the Christian princes to send him succours by land. Before the departure of the emperor, which happened towards the end of *July*, deputies arrived at *Florence* from the patriarch of *Armenia*, to treat of an union. *Eugenius*, with the approbation of the synod, appointed three cardinals, and some doctors, to confer with the deputies; and, after frequent conferences, the *Armenians* professing to hold and approve the doctrines that were held and taught by the *Roman* church, *Eugenius* delivered to them a decree, containing a summary of the *Roman* faith.

The union
is accom-
plished
with the
Greeks.

DURING these proceedings at *Ferrara*, the *German* princes, in a diet held at *Mentz*, proposed to oblige the council of *Basil* to put a stop to the proceedings against *Eugenius*. Although this proposal was approved by the deputies of several princes of *Europe* who were there present, yet those from *Basil* would not consent to it, and left the city. After their departure the legates of the pope arrived, and solicited the princes to reject the council of *Basil*; but their solicitations not being hearkened to, they protested against the proceedings of the diet, and departed. Mean while the fathers at *Basil*, to strengthen the articles against *Eugenius*, drew up eight propositions, which they called *the truths of the catholic faith*, tending to prove that the pope was a heretic, because he had presumed to dissolve the council, contrary to the monitory of the fathers. These propositions occasioned great clamour and uproar in the council, so that the confusion and noise resembled the concurrence of two armies in an engagement. After long and vehement debates, which are mentioned at large by *Aeneas Sylvius*, one of the members^a, the violent party found means by fraud to publish the articles in a general congregation. The cardinal of *Arles* then appointed the thirty-third session to be held on the 14th of *May*, at which none of the prelates of *Spain*, and only about twenty-one of the other nations, would consent to be present; but as there were a great many priests, the cardinal caused them to bring the relics of the saints into the assembly, and ordering them to supply the place of the absent bishops, he read the decree, confirming the above propositions. The deputies of the emperor, and of other princes, appeared a few days afterwards at the general congregations, and desired the fathers to agree to some third place for the council; but their request was denied, and *Eugenius* was ordered to be cited against the 23d of *June*, to hear his sentence. The thirty-fourth session was celebrated on that day, and *Eugenius* being called by two bishops, and not appearing, was declared guilty of contumacy, and deposed from the pontificate; all Christians were absolved from his obedience, and prohibited from adhering to him, under the pains of heresy and schism, and the loss of all their honours, benefices, and dignities (K). The same day the fathers deliberated whe-

Great confusion in the council of Basil;

which deposes Eugenius.

^a *ÆNEAS* ibid.

(K) According to *Patricius* as for deposing a private bishop there were present at this session only seven bishops, where twelve are necessary. About this time the emperor, and the kings

whether they should immediately proceed to an election of another pope; but, notwithstanding the plague raged at that time in *Basil*, it was resolved to delay the election for two months: accordingly a decree for that purpose was published in the thirty-fifth session, held on the 8th of *July*; and it was added, that, by the departure of any prelates from *Basil*, the council should not be reckoned dissolved, without the consent of two-thirds of those that remained. *Eugenius* in the mean time, being informed of their proceedings, renewed his former decree against them; and in a general session, held on the 5th of *September*, condemned the truths of the catholic faith, in the sense they were taken in by the council of *Basil*, as being contrary to the scriptures, the fathers, and the council of *Constance*.

THE fathers at *Basil*, before they were informed of these decrees of *Eugenius*, celebrated their thirty-sixth session on the 16th of *October*, in which they published a decree confirming the immaculate conception of the blessed virgin (L). Although the diet of *Mentz* had appealed from their decree against the pope to a future general council, and the emperor *Albert* had proposed a reconciliation, yet they resolved immediately to proceed to a new election; and in the thirty-seventh session, which was held on the 22d of the same month, they decreed, that the election should be made in the council by the cardinal of *Arles*, and thirty-two other ecclesiastics, whether prelates, priests, or deacons; that the election should not be valid, unless two thirds of the electors concurred; and that the person elected should swear to believe and maintain the catholic faith, and to observe and execute the decrees of the councils of *Constance* and *Basil*. The thirty two electors being accordingly nominated in the thirty-eighth session, which was held on the 27th of *October*, they entered the place assigned for the conclave; and nine days after, upon a scrutiny, *Amadeus*, duke of *Savoy*, was found to be duly elected. This prince, five years before, had signed his dominions to his two sons, and, with six of the nobles, had assumed the habit of a pilgrim, and had chosen a most elegant retreat at *Ripallia*, upon the banks of the lake of *Geneva*. Although he was still a layman, had been married, and was not dignified with the title of doctor, yet, in the

kings of *England* and *France* expostulated with the council in behalf of the pope (1).

(L) *Spondanus* relates, that,

upon publishing this decree, so great was its efficacy, the plague immediately ceased at *Basil*!

(1) *Epilog. Ab. Patriſien. Spond. Annal. in cod. S. Viſtor.*

and takes
the name
of Felix
V.

thirty-ninth session, the council confirmed his election, and appointed the cardinal of *Arles*, with twenty-five others, as their legates, to carry their decree to the duke, who, with great difficulty, was prevailed upon to give his consent. At their earnest intreaties he at length submitted; and assuming the name of *Felix V.* laid aside his beard and pilgrim's habit, and being dress'd in the pontifical ornaments, was consecrated in the church of the monastery of *St. Maurice*, on the 17th of *December*. *Eugenius*, upon hearing of the intrusion of *Felix*, thought proper to strengthen his own party by a new creation of cardinals: accordingly in the general council and public consistory, he nominated seventeen from the different nations of *Europe*, two of whom were *Greeks*, who had continued in *Italy* after the conclusion of the union.

Frederic
III. is
elected em-
peror.
A. D.
1440.

ABOUT this time the emperor *Albert* having died in *Hungary*, the following year the electors, being assembled at *Frankfort*, chose *Frederic*, duke of *Austria*, as his successor. The legates of the council at *Basil* appeared at that diet, and intreated the new emperor and the *German* princes to renounce the neutrality, and acknowledge *Felix*; but the *Germans* still adhered to their former resolutions, and declared that they would endeavour to procure the peace of the church. Mean while the fathers at *Basil* in the fortieth session, which was held on the 25th of *February*, published the consent of *Felix*, and ordered all Christians to yield him obedience. That their new pope might come to *Basil*, with some appearance of dignity, they granted him a power to create nine cardinals, even before his coronation; nevertheless they found fault with his bull, appointing the cardinal of *Arles* legate à latere and president of the council, and ordered it to be erased from the registers, and to be drawn up in other terms. *Eugenius* in the mean time, in a public session held on the 21st of *March* at *Florence*, denounced an anathema against the duke of *Savoy* and all his adherents, as heretics and schismatics, if they did not repent within fifty days. The fathers at *Basil*, in their forty-first session, held on the 21st of *July*, condemned this sentence of *Eugenius* as scandalous, schismatical, and heretical, and prohibited any one, under severe penalties, from receiving or publishing it. The next day *Felix*, who a few weeks before had arrived at *Basil*, was ordained bishop by the cardinal of *Arles*, and afterwards crowned with great solemnity. In their forty-second session, which was held on the 5th of *August*, they ordained, that, for the support of *Felix* and his court, the fifth penny of the real value of all benefices, both secular and regular,

Eugenius
denounces
an anathe-
ma against
Felix and
his adhe-
rents.

regular, should be paid to his collectors for five years, and for five years more the tenth penny, under pain of suspension and interdict. In favour of *Germany* they exempted all benefices that did not exceed five marks of silver, and allowed, that if any nation found themselves aggrieved by the above tax, they might make a composition with *Felix*. Soon after, in a general congregation, they published a long letter, addressed to all the faithful, supporting, by many arguments, the authority of a council above a pope, and urging them to yield obedience to *Felix* ^b (M).

DURING these proceedings in the western parts of *Europe*, ~~The~~ the Greek emperor having returned to *Constantinople*, the Greeks clergy, the monks, and the rest of that city, refused to celebrate divine service with those who had returned from *Italy*, or to mention them in their prayers, which caused great confusion in that church, and occasioned a delay in electing the patriarch, none being found who would accept of that dignity ^c. Other authors relate, that, by the persuasions of *Mark* of *Ephesus*, who never assented to the propositions concluded upon at *Florence*, the *Greeks* would not accept of the union; and that even those, who had been in *Italy*, quickly renounced the articles to which they had assented in the œcumenical council, notwithstanding the endeavours of cardinal *Condellmero*, who had been sent as legate to *Constantinople* ^d. The metropolitan of *Russia*, who had been created a cardinal by *Eugenius*, upon his return was likewise treated with indignity, and imprisoned at *Moscow* ^e. Mean while *Eugenius*, having received an accusation against his general cardinal *Vitelleschi*, that he had entered into a secret treaty with the duke of *Milan*, and intended to surprise *Florence*, and seize the pontificate, he sent orders to the governor of the castle of *St. Angelo* to entice him within the

^a MONSTRELET, vol. ii. ad. an. 1439. ^b TURCOGRET. THEODOS. ZYGOMALÆ, l. i. ^c CHALCOND. l. vi. ANTON. tit. xxii. c. 2. ^d MICHOV. rer. Polon. l. iv. c. 57.

(M) Both *Eugenius* and *Felix*, at this time, were using their utmost endeavours to have their authority acknowledged by the different princes of *Europe*. According to *Æneas Sylvius*, *France*, *England*, *Spain*, *Italy*, and *Hungary*, submitted to *Eugenius*; *Savoy*, *Switzerland*, *Basel*, *Strasbourg*, *Camp* in *Pomerania*, and *Albert*, one of the dukes of *Bavaria*, adhered to *Felix*. The king of *Arragon*, the *Poles*, and those of *Bretagne*, only acknowledged the council; and *Germany* embraced a neutrality, neither absolutely acknowledging the council, nor the two competitors for the pontificate.

nia, and *Albert*, one of the dukes of *Bavaria*, adhered to *Felix*. The king of *Arragon*, the *Poles*, and those of *Bretagne*, only acknowledged the council; and *Germany* embraced a neutrality, neither absolutely acknowledging the council, nor the two competitors for the pontificate.

fortress, and to detain him a prisoner. He was accordingly surpris'd, but, endeavouring to defend himself, he received some wounds that occasioned his death. His successor was *Lewis*, archbishop of *Florence*, and patriarch of *Aquileia*, who having defeated and entirely routed the general of the duke of *Milan* at *Anglaria*, was created a cardinal ^f (N).

The Jacobines in Egypt, embrace the Roman faith; ABOUT this time an abbot arriving at *Florence*, from the patriarch of the *Jacobines* in *Egypt*, to treat of an union, he was heard in a general congregation on the last of *August*; and, after several other conferences, a decree was drawn up and published in the twenty-ninth session, held on the 5th of *February*, containing an exposition of the *Roman* faith, which, by a public instrument written in *Arabic* and *Latin*, the abbot accepted, and received in the name of the patriarch and all the *Jacobines* ^g. Soon after *Eugenius* sent legates to the diet, which was convoked at *Mentz*, to consult about means to terminate the schism. At this assembly likewise arrived the cardinal of *Arles*, and two other new cardinals of *Felix*; but the princes declared that they would not acknowledge the cardinals, nor admit the cardinal of *Arles* as legate à *la-tere*, to which dignity he pretended. After long disputes, the deputies from *Basil* at length consented to drop their pretensions, and to act only as legates of the council. Both parties were then heard by the diet for several days alternately; but as they proposed no means of union, the diet, together with the ambassadors of the emperor, the king of *France*, and other princes, resolv'd that, to procure the

^f ARETIN. Comment. ap Murator, t. xix. p. 942. VOLA-
TER. l. xxii. ^g SPOND. Annal. ad an. 1441.

(N) This year cardinal *Branda* made an attempt at *Milan* to abolish the office of *St. Ambrose*, and to introduce the *Roman*. To forward his design he expelled the *Cistercian* monks, and introduced the *Carthusians*; but the citizens complaining to the duke, the *Cistercians* were restored. The cardinal nevertheless, having got into his possession the book of the *Ambrosian* rites, suppos'd to be written by that saint's own hand, and carefully preserved

in the church of *St. Thecla*, on Christmas-day he caus'd divine service to be celebrated according to the *Roman* office; which proceeding so exasperated the citizens, that they ran with torches to his house, and threatened to set it on fire, if he did not restore the book. The cardinal, greatly terrified with their menaces, threw the manuscript to them from the window, and next day fled from *Milan* (1).

(1) *Corius*, p. 82.

peace of the church, a general council ought to be convoked in some other city than *Basil* or *Florence*; and if either of the popes refused to name the place, the emperor should appoint six cities in *Germany* and six in *France*, one of which should be chosen for the place of the council, which should absolutely meet on the first of *August* of the following year.

THE council of *Basil*, after the return of their deputies, held their forty-third session on the 1st of *July*, in which they published a decree, appointing the celebration of the feast of the visitation of the blessed virgin. They had warm disputes for a long time among themselves about the form of this decree. As the first decree for this festival was made by *Boniface IX.* during the grand schism, and was never received by those who followed the antipope, some of the members proposed that the bull should now be published in the name of *Felix*; with the approbation of the sacred council, or, at least, with the addition of the words, *pope Felix presiding*; but the other party prevailed, that the decree should be published in the name of the synod alone. About the same time *Eugenius* received a letter from an *Ethiopian* abbot settled at *Jerusalem*, ^{which is} also re-
^{ceived by} professing the subjection of his church to that of *Rome*, and informing him that the emperor of *Abissinia*, commonly the *Abis-*
called Prester John, proposed to send ambassadors to the council of *Florence*, not with an intention to dispute, but to receive the judgment of the pope in matters of faith. ^{A. D. 1442.} In consequence of this letter, *Eugenius*, in the thirtieth session, which was held on the 24th of *April*, transferred the council, with the consent of the members, from *Florence* to *Rome*, to be continued in the *Lateran* church within fifteen days after his return to that city. The fathers at *Basil* took an occasion from this new translation to accuse the pope, alleging, that he had returned to *Rome* to prevent his being compelled to celebrate a council in *Germany*. Soon after they celebrated the forty-fourth session on the 9th of *August*, in which they published a decree, concerning the entire restitution of all those who had been robbed of their benefices on account of the council, ordering the usurpers and detainers to be expelled by the assistance of the secular arm.

MEAN while the cardinal of *Arlas* and two cardinals of *The pope Felix* appeared as their deputies at the diet held at *Frankfort*, where the emperor presided. *Frederic*, proposing to go to *Aix-la-Chapelle* to receive the German crown, appointed several bishops to hear the arguments of the deputies of both ^{council of Basil sent deputies to}

the diet of parties. Upon his return, the diet finding that the deputies
Frank- only renewed the arguments used the former year at *Mentz*,
fort. resolved still to adhere to the neutrality, and proposed the
 celebration of a council in some other city than *Basil* or *Flo-*
rence. The emperor a few weeks afterwards arriving in the
 neighbourhood of *Basil*, after several conferences prevailed
 with the fathers to agree to a translation of the council. He
 then entered the city, and had an interview with *Felix*, to
 consult of the means to procure the peace of the church; and
 departing after three days, *Felix* likewise quitted the city,
 and went to *Lausanne*, on pretence of re-establishing his
 health, promising to return to the council in the spring.
Eugenius in some measure likewise complied with the de-
 mands of the emperor, declaring, that, tho' to doubt the
 authority of the council of *Florence* was to oppose the catho-
 lic faith, yet in regard to the *German* princes, upon his ar-
 rival at *Rome* he would assemble a greater number of prelates
 to consult whether it was expedient to celebrate another
 council, and in the mean time would send his legates into
Germany.

The pope THE pope about the same time sent cardinal *Julian* as his
recovers legate into *Hungary*, to mediate a peace betwixt the party
some of the that adhered to the infant, son of the late emperor *Albert*,
patrimony, and the other faction, who had conferred their crown upon
and the king of *Poland*; and to excite them both against the
A. D. *Turks*, who were then besieging *Belgrade* with an immense
 1443. army. He likewise denounced an anathema against *Francis*
Sforza, who had usurped several places in the ecclesiastical
 state; but, this censure being despised by his adversary, he
 had recourse to temporal arms, and in a short time recovered
 the territory of *Picenum*¹. In the beginning of the follow-
 ing spring, he left *Florence* and proceeded to *Siena*, where he
 continued six months. During his residence in this city,
Alphonfus king of *Arragon*, who the year before had con-
 quered *Naples*, proposed a reconciliation with him, on con-
 dition that he confirmed his new conquests. The king at the
 same time was negotiating with *Felix*, who, on condition
 that he adhered to the council of *Basil*, promised to confirm
 his adoption by queen *Jane*, and the title of his kingdom,
 and to give him 200,000 crowns to recover the patrimony
 of the church. *Alphonfus* accepted of these conditions; but
 his ambassadors in the mean time obtaining better terms from
Eugenius, he again started new difficulties with *Felix*, and,

¹ GOLDAST de Stat. Imper. p. 303.
 ap. Murat. t. xx. p. 415.

² RAG. Hist. l. viii.

on the 14th of *June*, concluded a treaty with the pope, who gives the offered to give him the kingdom of *Naples* with the same investiture of forms and rights as had been used by former popes, and to absolve him from the payment of all the money which he owed to the apostolic chamber, on condition that *Alphonfus* took the oath of allegiance to him, restored the towns belonging to the church which he had seized, and sent six galleys against the *Turks*, and 4000 horse against *Francis Sforza*. Some other articles were agreed upon, with regard to the liberty of ecclesiastics, and the privileges of the subjects, as they had been settled by *William II.* The pope likewise legitimated *Ferdinand*, the king's natural son; but, to prevent his being reproached with such a concession, he stipulated that the bull should not be published during his life. Immediately after the conclusion of this treaty, *Alphonfus* published a letter, declaring, that he acknowledged *Eugenius* as the undoubted vicar of Christ, and ordering all his subjects to yield him obedience. He likewise wrote to the prelates of his dominions who were at *Basil*, desiring them to quit that city; and, according to the acts of *Patricius*, he, together with the *Venetians*, *Florentines*, and other *Italians*, exhorted the emperor to agree to the celebration of a general council at the *Lateran*.

THE council of *Basil* in the mean time solicited the return of *Felix*; but he replied, that he found it more for the advantage of his cause to reside at *Geneva* or *Lausanne*, and at the same time entreated them to relax the decree against the creation of cardinals. After much dispute, the fathers at last granted his request, and in the forty-fifth session, which was held on the 13th of *May*, they decreed, that another general council should be celebrated after three years in the city of *Lyons*, which city had been chosen by *Felix*, to whom they granted a power of shortening the term. Nevertheless, they ordained that the council of *Basil* was not thereby dissolved, but that they intended to continue it in that city, provided the magistrates did not violate the safe conduct which they had formerly granted. This is generally reckoned the last session of the council of *Basil*, both the printed and manuscript acts concluding at this period. Nevertheless some prelates remained five years longer both at *Basil* and *Lausanne*, altho' there is scarce any author that takes the least notice of their proceedings. Several of their decrees tended to remove the gross corruptions and abuses that at that time deformed the Christian religion; but, in their proceedings against *Euge-*

The pope
returns to
Rome.

nus, they seem to have been influenced more by faction and resentment than by motives of piety. Not long after *Eugenius* proceeded from *Siena* to *Rome*; but, instead of being received with acclamation, the day after his arrival the people threatened to mutiny, as the taxes had lately been doubled, and a new duty laid upon wine. To appease their murmurs the pope called out in the street, declaring that he abolished the late exactions, and a few days after he wrote to the princes of *Europe*, informing them of his intention to celebrate a general council in the *Lateran* church ^m.

A crusade
preached
against the
Turks.

A. D.

1444.

HAVING this year ordered a crusade to be preached against the *Turks*, many volunteers went into *Hungary* from *France* and *Germany*, by whose assistance *Uladiſlaus* gained a signal victory over the infidels, and pursued them as far as the confines of *Thrace*, gaining several other advantages over them. On the news of these successes, great preparations were made by the pope in *Italy* to carry on the war, and in conjunction with the *Venetians*, *Genoese*, and the duke of *Burgundy*, he sent a fleet of seventy galleys to the *Helleſpont*, under the command of cardinal *Condellmero*, to prevent the infidels from receiving any succours from *Asia*. *Amurath* being informed of the great preparations against him in *Europe*, and hearing likewise of the revolt of some provinces in *Asia*, prevailed with the king of *Hungary* to agree to a truce for ten years; after the ratifying of which he passed the *Helleſpont*, and marched against the rebels. *Eugenius* was greatly offended with the king for agreeing to any treaty with the infidels, and absolved him from the oath, which he affirmed he was not at liberty to take without his permission. Cardinal *Julian* likewise insisting that now was the time for extirpating the *Turks* from *Europe*, *Uladiſlaus* was prevailed upon to renew the war, and marched with his army into *Lower Masia*; but *Amurath*, having bribed the *Genoese* to transport his army over the *Helleſpont*, attacked the *Hungarians* at *Varna*, and gained an entire victory, *Uladiſlaus* and cardinal *Julian* being among the number of the slain ⁿ. *Eugenius* in the mean time sent deputies to the diet of *Nuremberg*; but, tho' others appeared likewise for *Felix*, the *German* princes still adhered to their former resolution, and proposed a council to be held either in *Germany* or *France*. About this time *Abdalla*, archbishop of *Edeſſa*, arriving at *Rome*, in the name of the *Syrian* patriarch and nation, to treat of an union, the pope celebrated the thirty-first session in the

^m PLATINA in Vit. Eugen.
ⁿ ENÉAS SYLV. Europ. c. 5.

ⁿ GOREL. Comment. l. i.

Lateran, in which a decree was published, explaining the three doctrines in which the *Syrians* differed from the *Roman* church, namely, concerning the procession of the Holy Ghost, and the two natures and two wills in Christ. This decree was accepted in the public session by the *Syrian* deputy, in the name of his nation.

THE following year *Aeneas Sylvius* arrived at *Rome* as an ambassador from the emperor, and in an elegant discourse, having asked pardon for what he had done and written against *Eugenius* at *Basil*, he explained the purport of his embassy; which was to desire the celebration of a council in *Germany*. The pope refused to grant his request, and soon after, deputies arriving from the *Maronites* and *Chaldeans* in *Cyprus*, professing their submission to the *Roman* church, in a general congregation he published a decree in their behalf. These different sects of eastern Christians had been prevailed upon to send their deputies to *Rome* by the archbishop of *Colosse*, or *Rhodes*, who had been sent into the east by *Eugenius*, to solicit their submission to the *Roman* see; however the authority of the apostolic see was not thereby greatly enlarged, but the vanity of the pope was gratified by the empty ceremony. While *Eugenius* was receiving the submission of the *Maronites* in *Cyprus*, his authority was opposed by the catholics in the same island, the king not only refusing to grant the archbishopric of *Nicosia* to the person appointed by the pope, but even expelling him from the island, and throwing the pope's nuncio into prison. However, soon after, at the solicitation of the master of the knights of *Rhodes*, the king admitted the archbishop, and set the nuncio at liberty.

ABOUT this time, the pope having deposed the electors of *Cologne* and *Triers*, in resentment for their adherence to the council of *Basil*, the other electors, offended with his proceeding, assembled at *Frankfort*, and entered into a treaty of union, that, if *Eugenius* did not annul the sentence of deposition, abolish the grievous taxes with which he oppressed *Germany*, and acknowledge the supremacy of councils, according to the decrees of that of *Constance*, they would then adhere to *Felix*. They desired the emperor to accede to their treaty, but he refused, and only consented to petition the pope to reverse the sentence. *Aeneas Sylvius* accordingly having represented to the pope the danger of a general schism in *Germany*, he agreed to revoke his decree, and sent two legates to another diet, held in the same city, in the month of *September*, with a full authority to grant every thing to

A. D.
1445.

A. D.
1446.

The Germans re-nounce the neutrality, and adhere to Eugenius;

A. D.
1447.

the *Germans* that might facilitate the union, without prejudice to the apostolic see. The fathers, who still remained at *Basil*, likewise sent their deputies to this diet, and before their departure they declared in a public assembly, that they would convoke a general council, and would transfer themselves to whatever city the emperor and electors, or their ambassadors, should name in the approaching assembly. Great disputes arose in the diet upon several points, but chiefly with regard to the treaty of union betwixt the electors, which the legates insisted upon being annulled, before they would begin the negotiations. The *German* princes refusing absolutely to comply with their demand, *Æneas Sylvius* proposed some articles as a medium, by which the interests of *Germany* and the pretensions of the pope might be reconciled. These propositions were embraced by the diet, who appointed ambassadors to proceed to *Rome* to obtain the approbation of the pope. The ambassadors, upon their arrival, were received with great honour, and three days afterwards had an audience in a private consistory, where *Æneas Sylvius*, in the name of the rest, proposed the four articles agreed to in the diet; first, that a general council should be convoked, and the place and time for its meeting determined; that the pope should confirm by a bull the declaration of his legates concerning the pre-eminence and authority of general councils; should redress the grievances of the *German* nation; and lastly, should revoke what had been done to the prejudice of the two electors. The reconciliation being effected in a few other conferences, during the absence of *Eugenius*, who was sick, the ambassadors were admitted into his bed-chamber, and, after they had made their submission to him as pope, he delivered the bull into the hands of *Æneas*, by which he confirmed a great many things concerning benefices and annates which had been decreed by the council of *Basil* after the schism, absolving all those who had adhered to that council after its dissolution, if they returned to the obedience of the apostolic see within six months. He promised to convoke a general council within ten months, provided he could obtain the consent of the sovereigns of *Europe*; if not, he offered to assemble another within eighteen months in a city that should be judged convenient. He acknowledged the authority of councils truly œcumenical, without declaring whether they were superior to a pope or not, and he received that of *Constance* in the same manner as it had been received by *Martin V.* and his successors; and lastly, he promised to redress the grievances of the *German* nation, and to re-establish the archbishops and electors.

electors^p. *Eugenius* survived the publication of this bull ^{who dies} but sixteen days, and died on the 23d of *February*, in the ^{few days} sixteenth year of his pontificate. He is said, by *Platina*, to ^{after at} have been a great patron of schools and learned men, tho' ^{Rome.} not very learned himself; to have favoured the monks, to whom he granted many privileges; but he is accused of inconstancy, and a love for war^q.

ON the eleventh day after the death of *Eugenius*, eighteen *Nicolas* cardinals entered the conclave, and unanimously chose *V. is* *Thomas of Sarzana*, so called from a little town in the ^{elect} territory of *Lucca* where he was born. He had been created a cardinal a few months before by *Eugenius*, upon his return from the last diet of *Frankfort*, and is said at first to have refused the pontifical dignity; but, at the intreaty of all the cardinals, he submitted, and assuming the name of *Nicolas V.* in memory of cardinal *Albergati*, who had been his great patron, and in whose family he had lived several years^r, he was consecrated on the 16th of *March*. While the cardinals were in the conclave, one *Stephen Porsaro*, a *Roman* knight, assembled several citizens in one of the churches, and exhorted them to assert their liberty, or, at least, to limit the power of their governors; but the archbishop of *Benevento* opposing his proposal, the sedition was prevented. *Eugenius* having for some time before his death been engaged with the duke of *Milan*, and the king of *Naples*, in a war against the *Florentines*, *Alphonfus* had arrived with his army at *Tivoli*, on his way to *Tuscany*; but, hearing of the pope's death, he deliberated whether he should advance or return. At length, *Nicolas* having sent a cardinal to *Ferrara* to treat of a general peace, *Alphonfus*, the duke of *Milan*, the *Venetians*, and the *Florentines*, sent their deputies thither; but their conferences were broke off by the sudden death of the duke of *Milan*. *Nicolas* in the mean time sent cardinal *Carvajal* as his legate into *Germany*, to notify his election to the emperor, who assembled the states of the empire at *Aschaffemburgh*, where the neutrality was finally abolished, and *Nicolas* acknowledged as lawful pope^s, the emperor soon after publishing a decree for that purpose. About the same time the king of *France*, who likewise desired to acknowledge *Nicolas*, held a congress at *Lyons*, at which were present the archbishops of *Cologne* and *Triers*, the deputies of the other

and acknowledged
by the empire,

^p Comment. Pii II. l. i. ANTON. l. xxii. c. 11. *Res. Mogun.*
t. i. p. 762. RAINALD. ad an. 1446. ^q PLATIN. in Vit.

Eugen. ^r Idem in Vit. Nicol.

^s LEIBN. par. i.

p. 77. COCHL. l. ix. in fin.

electors, with those of the kings of *England* and *Sicily*, and the cardinal of *Arles*, with others from *Felix*. After some conferences they proceeded to *Geneva*, where *Felix* was; and, with his consent, composed some articles, which, if *Nicolas* would agree to, *Felix* promised to abdicate.

and the
Poles, who
send an
embassy to
Rome.

A. D.
1448.

MEAN while *Nicolas* received an embassy from *Poland*, desiring a tax of ten thousand florins to be raised upon the ecclesiastics for a war against the *Tartars*; the hundredth penny was likewise demanded, and a remission of *St. Peter's* pence, and the right of conferring all the benefices in *Poland*. The pope only granted their first demand, and allowed the king to supply ninety vacancies in the province of *Gnesna*. Soon after he confirmed, by a bull, some articles that had been agreed upon betwixt his legate and the emperor, with regard to the method of provision of vacant benefices in the empire (O); and, being informed of the disturbances in *Bohemia*, he appointed the same cardinal as his legate in that kingdom. The cardinal, upon his arrival at *Prague*, was received with great respect by *Mainard* of *New-house*, the administrator of the kingdom, and by the clergy and university. The states of the kingdom being then assembled, the *Hussites*, who were the most powerful party, demanded of the legate to confirm the compactata concluded at *Basil*, and to confirm the archbishopric of *Prague* upon *Rockysanus*.

His legate
is obliged
to quit
Bohemia.

The legate, refusing to grant these two points, was immediately obliged to quit the kingdom; and *Mainard*, being accused of an intention to destroy their privileges, and subject them to the emperor and the pope, they formed a conspiracy against him, and admitted *George Podiebrad*, the chief of the *Hussites*, into *Prague*; who, having imprisoned *Mainard*, assumed the administration of the government, in which he was afterwards confirmed by the young king *Ladisläus*. During these proceedings in *Bohemia*, the deputies from the king of *France* and the other princes arrived

(O) See a translation of this bull or concordat at the end of the History of the German Empire. Its regulations have not been exactly observed by the following popes, since, upon the complaint of the states of the empire, the emperors have always promised, in their ca-

pitulations, not to allow the concordat to be violated. The vacant benefices in *Germany* at this day are conferred according to its regulations, and the bishoprics of *Toul*, *Metz*, and *Verdun*, have been comprehended in it by particular bulls (1).

(1) *Scbil, de Libertat Eccles. Germ.* t. i. l. vii. p. 929.

at *Rome*, with the articles agreed to at *Geneva*. *Nicolas* received them with great honour, but refused to confirm all the articles. However he agreed to several of them, which being afterwards presented to *Felix*, he consented to abdicate.

THE remains of the council of *Basil*, which had been obliged to quit that city and retire to *Lausanne*, determined to shew their authority in terminating the schism; accordingly, on the 23d of *April*, they published a decree, permitting *Felix* to resign the pontificate, and, as a grateful acknowledgement for the assistance he had given to the persecuted church, they created him a cardinal and bishop of *Subiaco*, and perpetual vicar and legate of the apostolic see in the territories of the duke of *Savoy*; that he should enjoy the next rank to the pope, should use every-where ensigns of his legation, and should not be obliged to appear personally at the court of *Rome* or general council. They then ordered all Christians to obey *Nicolas*, after which they dissolved the council. This news was received at *Rome* with great joy, the people the following night riding through the streets with torches, and calling out, *Long live Nicolas*. The pope likewise ordered supplications in the *Vatican*, and, on the 16th of *June*, published three bulls; by the first of which he confirmed all promotions, elections, or settlements whatever, formerly approved by *Felix*, or the councils of *Basil* and *Lausanne*; by the second he restored all those who had been deprived of their dignities or benefices by *Eugenius* for adhering to the council of *Basil*; and by the third he declared null and void all that had been done and written against *Felix* and his adherents, and ordered all such writings to be abolished, and expunged from the registers of *Eugenius* and all other places. As the duke of *Milan* had died without a will, or any lawful heir, his dominions became immediately the subject of dispute, and, notwithstanding the utmost endeavours of *Nicolas* to procure a peace, hostilities still continued betwixt the *Venetians* and *Francis Sforza*, the last of whom, having married the natural daughter of the late duke, pretended to be his heir. *Francis*, having stormed *Placenza*, and obliged the *Venetians* to agree to a peace, turned his arms against the *Milanese*; and in the beginning of the following year, having obliged the city of *Milan* to surrender, he was soon after acknowledged as duke.

* ANTON. t. xxii. c. 12. Poc. Hist. Flor. ap. Murat. t. xx. p. 424, 425.

A jubilee
celebrated
at Rome.

A.D.
1450.

NICOLAS was chiefly desirous of pacifying *Italy*, that the pilgrims, who should visit *Rome* on account of the jubilee, might meet with no interruption. In consequence of his bull for that purpose, this festival began to be celebrated at *Rome*, with great solemnity, at *Christmas*. Immenſe crouds of people, of both sexes, and all ranks, arrived at that city during the whole year; the pope, who, with his cardinals, viſited the ſacred places almoſt every day, being obliged frequently to ſhorten the term of fifteen days viſitation appointed for foreigners; by that means to leſſen the great courſe of ſtrangers, who were frequently trampled to death. Towards the end of the jubilee, *Aneas Sylvius* arrived at *Rome* from *Naples*, and in a public conſistory declared the intentions of the emperor to come the following year to *Italy* to receive the imperial crown. He likewiſe deſired the pope to agree to celebrate a general council in *Germany*, and informed his holineſs, that, at *Naples*, he had concluded a treaty of marriage betwixt the emperor and *Eleonora*, the niece of *Alphonſus*, and ſiſter to the king of *Portugal*. The pope, having received a bad impreſſion of the deſigns of the emperor, did not ſeem to reliſh his journey into *Italy*; but, *Aneas Sylvius* diſpelling his apprehenſions, he agreed to the propoſal of the emperor, and created *Aneas* biſhop of *Siena*. The biſhop, ſoon after his return to *Germany*, was ſent by the emperor into *Bohemia*, as his ambaffador to the ſtates, who had aſſembled at *Beneſchaw*, and threatened to elect another king, as *Frederic* had refuſed to part with his pupil *Ladiſlaus*. *Aneas*, by his eloquence, had ſuch an influence upon the ſtates, that they not only declared themſelves ſatiſfied with the proceedings of the emperor, but appointed ſeveral nobles of their kingdom to accompany him in his journey to *Italy*.

The indul-
gencies of
the jubilee
year ſent to
Germa-
ny and
Poland.

ABOUT the ſame time the pope ſent cardinal *Cusanus* as his legate into *Germany*, to diſpoſe of the indulgencies of the jubilee year, to raiſe money for the *Turkiſh* war. For the ſame purpoſe he ſent another legate into *Poland*, ordering that every one ſhould put the half of that money which he would have expended in his journey to *Rome* into a public coffer, and that the half of the money ſo collected ſhould be given to the king as a ſubſidy for the war againſt the *Turks*; that one half of what remained ſhould be given to the queen to be beſtowed in dowries to poor maidens, and

* ANTON. ut ſup. PLATIN. in Vit. Nicol.
Annal. ad an. 1451.

* ÆNEAS SYLV. Hiſt. Boem. c. 58.
ejuſd. Epiſt. 129. ad Carl. Carvajal.

the other half sent to the pope to repair the churches of *Rome* ¹. Upon the murmurs of the people, he afterwards reduced his share to an eighth of the whole. Being likewise informed of the death of *Amurath*, emperor of the *Turks*, and the succession of his son *Mohammed II.* a young prince of great ambition; and an implacable enemy of the Christians, he wrote to *Constantinople*, reproaching the *Greeks* with the breach of the union concluded at *Florence*, and requiring them to abandon the schism, if they expected any assistance from the western princes ². The *Greeks*, notwithstanding the calamities with which they were threatened, seem to have had no inclination to unite with the *Roman* church; for this same year they wrote to the *Bohemian Hussites*, commending them for rejecting the *Roman* innovations, and preserving the ancient faith, in which they exhorted them to persevere; at the same time desiring them to unite with them, not according to the pretended and erroneous union concluded at *Florence*, but according to the immutable decree delivered by the fathers, and observed by the *Greeks* ³.

MEAN while the emperor, having settled the affairs of *Germany*, entered *Italy* with the young king of *Bohemia*, *peror en-* and a large body of nobility; who, to prevent giving umbrage *ters Italy,* to the pope and the states of *Italy*, came with a very small *and* military escort. He was received every-where with great *A. D.* honour, and at *Sieha* he was joined by the young empress, *1452-* who had arrived by sea from *Lisbon*. Proceeding with her to *Rome*, he arrived at that city on the 9th of *March*, where he was received by thirteen cardinals, all the clergy and magistrates, with great ceremony, and conducted to the steps of *St. Peter*, where the pope waited for him in his pontifical ornaments. *Nicolas*, a few days after, by the plenitude of his power, conferred upon him the crown of *Lombardy*, and, on the 16th of *March*, he was solemnly crowned emperor of the *Romans*, after taking the usual oath to the pope. The empress being likewise crowned, *Frederic* proceeded with her to *Naples* to visit her uncle *Alphonfus*, who entertained them for two weeks with great magnificence. Upon his return he created the marquis of *Este* duke of *Modena* and *Reggio*, at *Ferrara*; and, proceeding from thence to *Venice*, was received with great magnificence by that republic, and soon after returned to *Germany*. *is crowned at Rome.*

¹ Michov. l. iv. c. 59. & 65.

² Ext. apud Rerum Boem. script.

³ SPOND. Annal. hoc an.

Constantinople is taken by the Turks.

A. D.
1453.

FREDERIC, during his residence at *Rome*, proposed a general expedition against the *Turks*, for the assistance of the *Greeks*, against whom *Mohammed* was making immense preparations^b. This motion, however, produced no good effect; for, excepting a few auxiliaries from the *Venetians* and *Genoese*, the *Greeks* received no assistance from any other *European* states, and the *Turkish* emperor advancing against *Constantinople* in the beginning of *April*, with an army of 250,000 men, and a fleet of 320 great and small ships, on the 29th of *May* took that city by storm, killing 40,000 men, and taking 60,000 captives, and thereby putting an end to the *Greek* empire^c. After the city had been pillaged for three days, *Mohammed* published an edict, promising his protection to the Christians who should return to *Constantinople*. He not only allowed them to elect a new patriarch, but, according to the custom observed by the emperors, presented the person elected with a golden pastoral staff enriched with diamonds, and conducted him, with acclamations, to his palace. The pope, upon hearing of the loss of *Constantinople*, renewed his exhortations to the Christian princes to unite their arms against the infidels. For this purpose, the following year, a diet was held at *Ratisbon*, at which was present the duke of *Burgundy*, who was very zealous for the expedition; but, the emperor not seeming to interest himself with warmth in the design, nothing material was effected^d. It was only agreed to hold another diet at *Frankfort* in the month of *September*, to apply to the *French* for a body of horse, and to request the *Italians* to fit out a fleet for *Greece* and *Asia*. Almost all the kings and princes of *Europe* were invited to send their deputies to the diet at *Frankfort*. In the mean time, one *Simonctus*, an *Augustine* friar, by his frequent exhortations, at length prevailed with *Sforza*, the *Venetians*, and *Florentines*, to conclude a peace, which was afterwards ratified at *Naples* by *Alphonfus*, and *Dominicus Capranius*, cardinal of the holy cross, an alliance being likewise concluded betwixt all the states of *Italy*, except the *Genoese*, for twenty years, each party agreeing to refer their future disputes to the decision of the pope, and not to renew hostilities against one another, unless authorized by an apostolic bull^e. During the negotiations at *Naples*, the diet was celebrated at *Frankfort*, and, by the persuasions of *Aeneas Sylvius*, the assembly agreed to grant 10,000 horse

The Germans promise to

^b *ÆN. Epist.* 399.
^c *PHRA. l. iii. & alii plur.*
^d *Comment. Pli II. l. i.*
^e *Poo. Hist. apud Murat. ut sup. PLATIN. in Vit. Nicol. V.*

^e *PHRA. l. iii. & alii plur.*
^d *Comment. Pli II. l. i.*
^e *Poo. Hist. apud Murat. ut sup. PLATIN. in Vit. Nicol. V.*

and 32,000 foot to the *Hungarians*; after which resolution, the electors of the empire, and the princes of *Germany*, had a conference with the emperor at *Neustadt*, to consult of the means for raising the troops; but their deliberations, when they were almost brought to a conclusion, were interrupted by the news of the death of the pope, which happened on the 22d of *March*. *Nicolas* is celebrated by the historians of those times for his great liberality, especially to learned men. He was at great pains and expence in procuring the ancient *Greek* authors, and causing them to be translated into the *Latin* tongue; and likewise sent learned men into all the kingdoms of *Europe*; to search the monasteries and churches for the manuscripts of the *Latin* authors ^f.

send auxiliaries to Hungary. A.D. 1455. Their march is prevented by the death of the pope.

A FEW days after the death of *Nicolas*, the eighteen cardinals who were at *Rome* entered the conclave, and, according to *Æneas Sylvius*, the greatest number of them proposed to elect cardinal *Bessarion*, one of the *Greeks* who had remained in *Italy* after the council of *Florence*; but the archbishop of *Avignon* objecting to him as a neophyte, or new convert, and urging the danger of a schism, he was set aside, and *Alphonso Borgia*, a cardinal priest, was elected, who took the name of *Calixtus* III. *Alphonso* was born of a noble family, at *Sativa* in *Spain*, and having distinguished himself by procuring the abdication of *Ægidius*, the successor of *Peter de Luna*, he was created bishop of *Valentia* by *Martin* V. *Eugenius* IV. promoted him to the cardinalate for his services in procuring a peace betwixt him and *Alphonfus* king of *Naples*, and at his promotion to the pontificate he had now entered the 77th year of his age, and was very decrepit. However, immediately after his coronation, he engaged by a solemn vow to make war upon the *Turks*, and, to execute that design, acted with great spirit and vigour. He sent legates and preachers into the different provinces of *Europe*, to excite the Christians to a crusade against the infidels, imposed a tythe upon all ecclesiastical persons of whatever dignity for the support of that war, wrote to the king of *Persia* and to the king of the *Tartars* to attack the *Turkish* provinces in *Asia*, and, ordering sixteen galleys to be built and fitted out at *Rome*, sent them, under the command of cardinal *Lewis*, patriarch of *Aquileia*, to attack the islands and maritime places in the *Archipelago*. In consequence of his ardour, several princes of *Europe* likewise expressed their fondness for that expedition. The king of *Naples* and the duke of *Burgundy* took the cross, promising either to go in person, or to

Calixtus III. is elected. He acts with great vigour against the Turks.

^f Idem. ibid. SPOND. Annal.

send a body of troops against the infidels. The emperor about the same time sent *Aneas Sylvius* to Rome to congratulate the pope upon his promotion, and to promise his assistance against the *Turks*. This embassy, however, was not without great opposition from the *German* princes, who insisted that the pope ought to confirm the concordata that had been ratified by his predecessor, before the emperor yielded him obedience; but their remonstrances were over-ruled by *Aneas*.

Differences between him and the king of Naples. IN the mean time the king of *Naples* and *Arragon*, instead of fulfilling his vow against the *Turks*, quarrelled with *Calixtus*, whom he did not find so compliable with his inclinations as he expected. As the pope had formerly been his counsellor, and had obtained the cardinalate by his interest, the king imagined that his demands would meet with no denial, and therefore desired not only the eventual investiture of *Naples* for his natural son *Ferdinand*, but also the possession of the march of *Ancona*, and several other places in the ecclesiastical state. The pope refusing to grant these demands,

A. D.
1456.

Alphonfus conceived a great resentment against him, which continued during his whole life ^h. *Calixtus*, notwithstanding the enmity of the king of *Naples*, did not abate in his zeal against the *Turks*; and, in the beginning of the following year, ordered processions to be made, and prayers to be used, over all *Europe* against the infidels, with the offer of large indulgences. Soon after he had the satisfaction to

An army of crusaders marches to the relief of Belgrade. find that his endeavours were not altogether unsuccessful; for, tho' the Christian princes gave little attention to the crusade, yet *John Capistran*, a *Franciscan*, who had made himself famous by his preaching in *Germany*, marched from thence at the head of 40,000 crusaders, and, joining the *Hungarian* army under the command of *Hunniades*, raised the siege of *Belgrade*, killing 40,000 of the enemy, and

1457.

taking 200 pieces of cannon. Not long after the pope created nine cardinals, among whom was *Aneas Sylvius*; and the following spring, having received a letter from *Hungary*, informing him that *Mohammed* had entered into an alliance with the sultan of *Egypt*, and was assembling an immense army to renew the siege of *Belgrade*, and had sworn not to retire till he had taken the city, altho' he should hear of the loss of half of *Asia*, he wrote to the emperor and the king of *Naples*, urging them to send succours to the *Hungarians*.

^h Comment. Pii II. l. ii. SPOND. Annal. RAINALD ad an. 1456.

His information, however, was false, for the *Turkish* emperor marched into *Albania* against *Scanderbeg*. But, if the *tian Hungarians* had been invaded, the Christian princes were ^{princes do} not at all in the humour of giving them assistance. *Alphonfus* ^{not second} king of *Naples* fitted out a considerable fleet, under pretence ^{the efforts} of joining that of the pope, but he employed ~~it~~ ^{o' the} in invading ^{pope.} the territories of *Genoa*. The kings of *Castile*, *Denmark*, and *Poland*, allowed the pope's collectors to carry off one half only of the tax raised by the tythe and indulgencies, and retained the other as a supply against their particular enemies ¹. The king of *France* is accused by *S. Antoninus* and *Aeneas Sylvius* of having totally misapplied the money that was raised against the *Turks*. *Antoninus* affirms, that he ordered it to be deposited with some faithful persons, to be afterwards expended in paying the *French* soldiers that should engage in the crusade; but, in reality, he fitted out a small fleet, and made a descent on the *English* coast at *Sandwich* ^k. According to *Aeneas*, the son of *Renè* duke of *Anjou* employed twenty-four galleys, that had been built at *Avignon* by the cardinal legate, in an expedition against the kingdom of *Naples* ¹. The *Germans* likewise, thinking themselves greatly aggrieved, made loud complaints against the proceedings of the pope; they accused him of violating the concordata, and quite exhausting the kingdom by his excessive taxes. Several princes and prelates had therefore proposed ^{The Ger-} to enter into a pragmatic sanction, the chief articles of which ^{mans} were, that the *Germans* should not be obliged to obey the apostolic see, and that no money should be carried from thence to the court of *Rome*. *Calixtus* ordered *Aeneas Sylvius* to justify his proceedings to the *Germans*. The cardinal accordingly wrote not only to the emperor, but to the chancellor of the archbishop of *Mentz*, answering particularly all the articles of their grievances. As to the excessive taxes, he declared that the pope had exacted no money from *Germany*, excepting the annates which were of great antiquity; what had been offered for the *Turkish* expedition, which indeed required vast sums, he had not avariciously hoarded, or lavished in luxury, but employed in subsidies to *Scanderbeg* and the *Greeks* in the *Archipelago*, and in fitting out a fleet against the *Turks*, by which he might justly boast that he had done more for the common cause than all the princes of *Europe* besides. By the concordata he insisted that the

¹ MARIAN. l. xxii. c. 19. KRANTZ, 8 Dan. 30 & 33. Idem 12, Wandal. 33. ^k ANTON. t. xxii. c. 16. sect. 1. ¹ Comment. Pii II. l. 4. in p. 412

expel his
nuncios.

A. D.
1458.

The pope,
upon the
death of
the king of
Naples,
claims
that king-
dom ;

but dies at
Rome.

pope was not bound to confirm all elections, but only such as were canonical, and that, altho' by the plenitude of his power he had a right even to set aside a canonical election, yet he had not hitherto used that privilege ; that, whatever were their grievances, to pretend to oppose the apostolic authority by any pragmatic sanction was iniquitous, or to appeal from that see to a general council was absurd, being a confounding and perverting of the whole state of the catholic religion ^m. The *Germans*, however, still remained dissatisfied ; one *James Wimpheling* published an answer to the letters of *Æneas* ⁿ, and the bishop of *Wurtzburg* not only took the money from the collectors, but expelled the pope's nuncios from his territories, in which proceeding he was countenanced by the archbishop of *Mentz* ^o.

THE pope in the mean time sent other two galleys to join those under the command of the patriarch of *Aquileia*, who had recovered several islands from the *Turks*, and taken and sunk a great many of their ships. About the same time the peace of *Rome* being greatly disturbed by the family of the *Urfini*, who had had recourse to arms to assert their right to a certain territory, *Calixtus* appointed his nephew *Borgia* governor of *Rome*, and general of the church forces. Soon after, being informed of the death of *Alphonfus* king of *Naples*, he immediately conferred several wealthy bishoprics in that kingdom, which authority he durst not use during the life of the king. He likewise declared the kingdom of *Apulia* vacant by his death, and to have fallen to the apostolic see, charging *Ferdinand*, under pain of excommunication, not to concern himself with it, or assume the name of king ; and warning the princes and states of the kingdom, under the same penalty, not to adhere to him. *Ferdinand* at first endeavoured to sooth the mind of the pope by letters and embassies ; but, finding him inflexible, he appealed to a future council, and assembled an army, with which he proposed to march to *Rome* ; but he was quickly freed from his inveterate enemy by death, which happened to him on the 7th of *August*, in the third year and fourth month of his pontificate ^p (P).

CALIXTUS

^m *ÆN. Epist.* 305. 334, 335, &c.
Ger. edit. Freher. ^o *ÆN. Epist.* 337.
l. xvi. c. 48, & seq. *PLATINA*.

ⁿ *Extat. t. 2. rer.*
^p *P SURIT.*

(P) *Calixtus*, during his short pontificate, was very earnest in promoting his relations, hav-

ing on the very day of his election created two of his nephews cardinals, one of whom was afterwards

CALIXTUS being interred with the usual ceremonies, a Pius II. is few days after the cardinals entered the conclave, and on the third day chose for his successor *Aeneas Sylvius Piccolomini*, who took the name of *Pius II.* and was consecrated on the 5th of *September* (Q). He immediately wrote to all the Christian

terwards pope, by the name of *Alexander VI.* The brother of this last he created duke of *Spoleto*, and appointed him governor in the ecclesiastical state, proposing likewise to give him a large possession in the kingdom of *Naples*. But, being prevented by death, the Romans obliged his nephew, the duke, to fly to *Civita Vecchia*, where he soon after died (1).

(Q) *Aeneas Sylvius Bartholomeo Piccolomini* was born on the 18th of *October* 1405, at *Corsignano*, a small town in the territory of *Siena*, which he afterwards erected into a bishop's see by the name of *Pienza*. His parents had been banished from *Siena* and lived in mean circumstances at *Corsignano*, where *Aeneas*, while he was at school, was obliged to assist in the management of a farm. He was educated, however, with great care; and, having finished his academical studies at *Siena* and *Rome*, when he was 26 years of age he went with cardinal *Capranica*, as his secretary, to the council of *Basil*. He was afterwards secretary to other prelates, and was sent by cardinal *Albergati* to *Scotland*. Upon his return he was honoured by the same council with the offices of referendary, abbreviator, chancellor, and agent general, and was sent several times as their deputy to *Stras-*

burg, Frankfort, Constance, Trent, and Savoy. He was secretary to the antipope *Felix V.* and afterwards to the emperor *FredERIC III.* who honoured him with the poetical crown, and employed him in different embassies to *Rome, Milan, Naples, Bohemia,* and elsewhere. In the midst of these negotiations, he always found leisure to publish some treatise or other, and was so delighted with writing, that, even after he was pope, in the midst of his great occupations, and altho' he was afflicted with the gout, he could not desist. When he perceived the factious and violent proceedings of the council of *Basil*, he deserted that party, and, notwithstanding the activity he had shewn in opposing the interests of *Eugenius*, he was esteemed by that pope, who appointed him his secretary. *Nicolas V.* created him bishop of *Trieste*, and, upon his resigning that see, appointed him bishop of *Siena*, and employed him as his nuncio in *Austria, Hungary, Moravia,* and *Bohemia*. During the pontificate of *Calixtus III.* who created him a cardinal, he resided chiefly at *Rome*, having, as he confessed himself, during all the time of his former services, scarce acquired so much as would purchase a pair of shoes (2). His works, with his life prefixed, were published in

(1) *Ciaccon, & Platin, in Hist. An. 1382.*

(2) *Epist. Car. I. Papien. 365. Ffist.*

Christian princes, informing them of his election; which gave great joy to the emperor, the kings of *Spain* and *Naples*, and particularly to the duke of *Modena*, who expressed his gratitude for the services formerly done him by *Aeneas* with the emperor, by fireworks and a magnificent tournament at *Ferrara*. *Pius*, being very desirous of opposing the progress of the *Turks*, proposed to form a general league against them, and for that purpose convoked an assembly or convention of all Christian princes and free states, to meet the following year, on the 1st of *June*, at *Mantua*. He sent cardinal *Bessarion*, as his legate, to the emperor, to excite that prince to act with vigour against the *Turks*; and, after some hesitation, he gave the title of king to *George Podiebrad*, who, upon the death of *Ladislaus*, had been elected by the *Bohemians*; but, tho' he had professed his obedience to the *Roman* church, was still suspected of inclining to the *Hussites*, by which sect he had hitherto been supported. In the mean time *Pius* endeavoured to quiet the disturbances in *Italy*, and notwithstanding the remonstrances of *Renè*, duke of *Anjou*, formerly adopted by the queen of *Naples*, he confirmed the kingdom of *Apulia* to *Ferdinand*, the present possessor, and sent the cardinal *Ursini* to perform the ceremony of his coronation ⁹ (R).

He gives
the investiture of
Naples to
Ferdinand,

A. D.
1459.

THE following year, having appointed the prince of *Colonna* governor, and cardinal *Cusa* legate of the city, he left *Rome* in order to proceed to *Mantua*; but, before his departure, he made a decree with the consent of the cardinals, that, if he should happen to die without the city, his successor should

⁹ SPOND. ANNAL.

one volume at *Basil*, in 1551. The commentaries of *John Gabeline*, his secretary, which were generally believed to be written by himself, were published at *Rome* in 1584, and afterwards at *Helmstadt* in 1700. According to the cardinal of *Siena*, his nephew, one may justly apply to him part of two lines from *Virg. l. i. v. 382, 383*.
Sum pius Aeneas
—fama super æthera notus (3).

(R) Some authors relate, that, as an acknowledgement for this service, *Ferdinand*, whose father had left him 6,000,000 of gold, gave a large sum of money to the pope, and likewise gave his natural daughter *Mary* in marriage to *Antonio Piccolomini* the pope's nephew, with the duchy of *Amalfi*, and dignity of great justiciary of the kingdom (4).

(3) Joan. Anton. Campan. in vit. Æn. Plat. Ciacon. Meyer. ex Monstrelet.

(4) Collenut. l. vi.

not be chosen any-where else than at *Rome*. He likewise left some cardinals, auditors of the rota, and advocates, to judge the causes that should come before the *Roman* court in his absence. He proceeded by slow journies to *Corfinium*, and from thence to *Siena*, which city he erected into a metropolitan, creating his nephew *Antonio* the first archbishop. While he continued at *Siena*, he received the ambassadors of *Receives* the emperor, the kings of *Castile*, *Portugal*, and *Hungary*, *ambassadors* and of the duke of *Burgundy*, and several *German* princes. *assadors* The *Germans* complained, that he had given the title of king *from the* of *Hungary* to *Matthias*, the son of the general *Hunniades*, *superior* altho' the barons of that kingdom had chosen the emperor. *and other* But *Pius* alleging that *Matthias* had been solemnly acknowledged by the states, and was in possession of the kingdom, *Christian* and consequently had a right to the title of king, which had been conferred upon him by *Calixtus*, the *Germans* ceased their complaints, and, together with the other ambassadors, yielded obedience to him as pope publicly in the church. The ambassadors from *Bohemia*, that they might not by their submission offend the party of the *Calixtins*, yielded obedience to the pope in a private consistory. This instance of regard to that sect confirmed the suspicions of the catholics, that *George Podiebrad* had not acted sincerely in abjuring its doctrines: the ambassadors of the *Silesians*, who had protested against his election, now declared to the pope that they would not obey him, and demanded the assistance of ~~his holiness~~ to protect the Catholic religion in their province. *Pius* promised to them to write to the king to cease his hostilities against them, and to remit all disputes concerning religion to the apostolic see, declaring that, if he refused to obey, he would use other means to secure their religion. He then proceeded from *Siena* to *Florence*, and from thence, by *Bologna* and *Ferrara*, to *Mantua*, where, a few days after his *A convention* arrival, he opened the convention on the 1st of *June*, and, in *tion held* a speech from his throne, complained of the neglect of the *at Mantua* princes who had omitted to send their plenipotentiaries to the assembly. Ambassadors had arrived from the despot of *Morea*, and from *Cyprus*, *Rhodes*, *Lefkos*, *Albania*, *Epirus*, and some states on the coasts of *Illyria*; but they all came to request succours, excepting the *Ragusans*, who offered auxiliaries against the infidels. The pope, having quieted the disputes about precedence by a decree, declaring that the superiority or inferiority of places should give no honour or dishonour to those who occupied them, then gave audience to

the duke of *Cleves*, ambassador from the duke of *Burgundy*. Though the duke at first refused to promise any succours, and insisted much upon the impracticability of a general crusade, as several of the chief powers in *Europe* were engaged in private quarrels; nevertheless, at the pressing instances of the pope, he stipulated 2000 horse and 4000 foot, to be maintained at the expence of the duke of *Burgundy* during the continuance of the war. Ambassadors likewise arrived from the *Florentines*, *Siennese*, *Lucchese*, and *Bolognese*, offering succours on their part; the duke of *Modena*, excusing himself on account of sickness, sent his brother, who, in his name, offered 300,000 crowns for the expedition; the duke of *Milan* came personally to the assembly, and stipulated his quota of auxiliaries: the *Genoese*, though they durst not concern themselves in a public manner, as they were then under the dominion of the king of *France*, yet promised in private to concur with the *Italian* states. The ambassador of the king of *Naples* took an oath in his master's name, whereby he promised to engage personally in the crusade, and the *Venetians* sent their ambassadors, and promised to contribute largely to the expedition, if the other Christian princes would engage not to desert them during the continuance of the war. It was then unanimously decreed, that the war should be carried on, both by sea and land, by an army of 50,000 men, and a fleet of 40 gallies and eight smaller ships; that the clergy of *Italy* should pay the tythe of their revenues for three years, the laity the thirtieth, and the *Jews* the twentieth, of their whole effects. Soon after ambassadors arrived from the king of *France*, and from *Renè* pretender to the crown of *Naples*, who refused to engage in the crusade, unless the *English* would conclude a peace, but complained of the favour shewn by the pope to *Ferdinand* in prejudice of the right of *Renè*. *Pius*, in justification of his own proceedings, re- criminated against the *French*, who, in prejudice of the apostolic see, had published the pragmatic sanction in their kingdom; and finding that he could expect no assistance from them or the *English*, who were engaged in civil dissensions, he sent a legate *à latere* to solicit the emperor and *German* princes to furnish the 42,000 men that had been promised at the diet of *Frankfort* during the pontificate of *Nicolas*. The *Germans* before they would agree to this demand, held another diet at *Nuremberg*; however, nothing was concluded at that assembly, and the affair was put off till the following year.

A general
alliance is
formed a-
gainst the
Turks.

† PLAT. in Paneg. in Iud. Bessar. Mss. p. iii. c. 24.

PIUS in the mean time, having consulted the prelates and ^{The pope} cardinals who were present on the 16th of January, published a decree, condemning and prohibiting, under pain of ^{condemns} appeals to excommunication and interdict, all appeals to future general ^{future general} councils as contrary to the canons, and ridiculous, as appealing to what did not exist, and as they nourished rebellion against the apostolic see, and confounded all ecclesiastical discipline, and the hierarchical order. A few weeks after, having made an elegant discourse to the ambassadors of the princes and states, he dissolved the convention, after it had continued eight months, an end being thereby put, not only to their deliberations, but also to all further thoughts of executing what had been agreed upon. From Mantua Pius returned to Siena, where, with the consent of the sacred college, he created six cardinals, among whom was his nephew Francis Bicolomini, then a student at Perugia. About the same time the cardinal Cusa, who enjoyed the bishopric of Brescia in commendam, having been imprisoned by Sigismund, duke of Austria, with whom he had for several years been at variance (S); Pius, upon being informed of this outrage, excommunicated the duke; and hearing that he contemned the anathema, he cited him to give an exact account of his faith. Sigismund appealing from this citation to a future council and a future pope, Pius published another sentence against him, declaring him guilty of sacrilege. Gregory Heimburg, syndic of Nurem, published an appeal against this last sentence, which exposed him to the resentment of the pope, who denounced an anathema against him, and ordered all his effects to be confiscated. The

A. D.
1469.

* Comment. PII II. l. ii. & iii.

† ÆN, Epist. 120 &

400.

(S) Sigismund, who as count of Tyrol was patron of the church of Brescia, was offended that the cardinal should possess that bishopric as a sinecure, which custom, though common in Italy, France, Spain, and England, was very rare in Germany, which was one reason why there were very few German cardinals. The duke, length, allowed the duke quiet possession, who soon

after finding that Sigismund was in possession of a certain fief of his church, for which he made no acknowledgement, he desired him to deliver it up, or to take a new investiture. This was the occasion of their dissension; and the duke thinking himself deceived, and not receiving satisfaction at the convention of Mantua, imprisoned the cardinal, but quickly after set him at liberty (1).

*Difference
betwixt
him and
the kings
of Castile
and Po-
land:*

pope, about the same time, was engaged in disputes with the kings of *Castile* and *Poland*. As the bishop of *Leon*, who had come as ambassador from the king of *Castile*, died at *Siena*, *Pius* appointed the cardinal of *St. Sixtus* as his successor, who was disapproved of by the king, who would not allow him to take possession. The king of *Poland* likewise refused to confer the church of *Cracow* upon the person nominated by the pope, but caused his chancellor to be elected by some of the canons; and although the pope had ordered the person appointed by him to be received, under pain of excommunication, the king, nevertheless, opposed him with such vigour, that he was obliged to drop his pretensions, and the chancellor remained in quiet possession *.

MEAN while *Pius* received an embassy from the patriarchs of *Antioch*, *Alexandria*, and *Jerusalem*, declaring that they had at last accepted of the decree of union published in the council of *Florence* *. A few days after ambassadors arrived from *Monobasia*, a fortified city on the coast of the *Morea*, offering to surrender their city to the pope, as their sovereign *Demetrius Palaeologus* had revolted to the *Turks*. *Pius* accordingly received the city in the name of the *Roman* church, furnished it with provisions, of which it was in great want, and sent a governor to take upon him the command. In the mean time the pope was informed of a great commotion in *Rome*, where one *Tiburtius* (whose father had been executed for a conspiracy during the pontificate of *Nicolas*) had assembled a great body of young men, and, under pretence of freeing the city from the yoke of the priests, had committed great outrages, and taken possession of the church of *St. Maria rotunda*, the magistrates not daring to make opposition. The pope, to put a stop to the tumult, immediately proceeded to *Rome*, and, soon after his arrival, having apprehended *Tiburtius* and his chief associates, he ordered them to be put to death †.

*be quells a
commotion
at Rome,
and*

*assists Fer-
dinand
against his
competitor
the duke of
Anjou.*

NOTWITHSTANDING the pope's great desire to establish peace among the Christian princes, he at the same time made himself a party in the civil dissensions in the kingdom of *Naples*, where *John*, the son of *Renè*, duke of *Anjou*, had arrived in the end of the former year with a considerable body of *French* troops, and raised a formidable rebellion against *Ferdinand*, who was this year defeated at *Sarno*, and obliged to fly to *Naples*. *Pius*, having a desire to see the *French* power increase in *Italy*, immediately sent succours to *Ferdinand*,

* CROMER. l. xxiv. MICHOV. l. iv. c. 60.
Annal. † Comment. PII II. l. iii. PIATINA.

* SPOND.

and

and joined his forces with those of the duke of *Milan*, to oppose *Picenninus*, who intended to march to the assistance of the rebels. About the same time he countenanced the *Genoese* in expelling the *French* garrison, and asserting their liberty. In the beginning of his pontificate, having sent a legate to the Christians of *Iberia*, *Armenia*, and *Mesopotamia*, to excite them against the *Turks*, he now received the ambassadors of those people, and of several other heathen nations, their allies, who had come through *Cholchis* and *Scythia*, and from thence, by *Hungary* and *Venice*, to *Rome*. At their audience in a private consistory, they promised to attack the *Turks* in *Asia*, with an army of 120,000 men, if the *Europeans* would agree to unite their forces against them at the same time. *Pius* being still very zealous in promoting the crusade, in the beginning of the following year sent these ambassadors into *France*, that they might influence, if possible, the *French* king and the duke of *Burgundy*, heartily to espouse the common cause². They accordingly proceeded to *France*, together with *Lewis the Franciscan*, who had been sent legate into *Asia*; but they could obtain nothing from *Charles* or the duke of *Burgundy*, but picked up a considerable sum of money by begging from the people. Upon their return to *Venice*, the pope having discovered them to be impostors, and that *Lewis* had prevailed with some ignorant bishops to grant him episcopal and patriarchal he ordered him and his companions to be apprehended; but they having private notice, immediately made their escape³.

A. D.
1461,

In the mean time *Thomas Palaeologus*, formerly despot of part of *Morea*, having fled from *Corcyra*, arrived at *Rome*, the pope received him with great hospitality, and appointed him a pension of 300 crowns a month, to which the cardinals added 200^b. A few weeks after he excommunicated the duke of *Austria*, for refusing to give satisfaction to the cardinal *Cusa*; and denounced the same sentence against *Sigismund Malatesta*, who, instead of paying the usual tribute for the fiefs which he possessed in the church patrimony, had seized several other castles, and raised a considerable army, with which he had defeated the churches legate. As *Dietherus*, who the year before had been elected archbishop of *Mentz*, had neglected to appear at *Rome*, and to pay 14,000 crowns for the annates, and other expences of his admission, the pope, about this time, denounced a sen-

A dispute about the archbishopric of Mentz.

² *ÆN. Epist.* 576.
ment P 14 II₁

³ *Ejusd. Epist.* 377.

^b Com-

tence of excommunication against him: but the archbishop appealed from this bull to a future council, and laid his grievances before an assembly of the princes at *Mentz*. As the pope's nuncios supported the interests of the court of *Rome* at this assembly, the archbishop found that the princes did not espouse his submission to the holy see. However, he again neglected to fulfil his engagements, and, without waiting till he was absolved from the sentence of excommunication, exercised the functions of his office. This contumacy offending the pope, he ordered the chapter to proceed to a new election, who accordingly chose *Adolphus* of *Nassau*, whom the pope confirmed in the see (T).

The pope
sends a le-
gate into
France,
to congra-
tulate the
king;

who re-
vokes the
pragmatic
sanction.

IN the midst of this dispute with the archbishop of *Mentz*, *Pius* being informed of the death of the king of *France*, sent a legate into that kingdom, to congratulate *Lewis XI.* his successor, and to prevail with him to revoke the pragmatic sanction, and send auxiliaries to the Christians against the *Turks*. *Lewis* immediately promised, with an oath, to annul the pragmatic sanction, without calling any assembly of the prelates or nobles; which promise he soon after performed, by a letter which he wrote to the pope, allowing the apostolic see the same authority in his kingdom as it enjoyed during the pontificate of *Martin V*^c. This proceeding of the king was opposed by a great many prelates of his kingdom, and the university of *Paris* appealed both from the king and the pope to a future council^d. At the same time it gave great satisfaction to the pope, who soon after promoted his legate in *France*, with five others, to the dignity of cardinal^e. At this juncture likewise he wrote a long letter to *Mohammed*, emperor of the *Turks*, exhorting him to desist from persecuting the Christians, and to embrace the Christian faith; promising him, if he would be baptized, the empire of the

^c Ap. *ÆNEAS* Epist. 388.
^e SPOND. Annal.

^d BELLEFOR. l. v. c. 119.

(T) this new election occasioned a war betwixt the two pretenders; but the party of *Adolphus* being strongest, *Dietrichus* agreed to an accommodation, which continued but a short time; for, at the instigation of the count *Palatine*, he renewed the war, which lasted till the year 1463; when, in

compassion for the miseries with which the diocese was afflicted, he wholly resigned his right to *Adolphus*, reserving only some towns for his life. Upon this agreement he received absolution from the pope's nuncio, and lived to succeed *Adolphus* afterwards in 1478 (1).

(1) *Muller*, p. 3, c. 20. Comment. P. II. v. 1.

Greeks, as his predecessors had transferred the Roman empire to Charlemagne † (U).

THIS good correspondence betwixt the pope and the king of France was of very short continuance; for although in the beginning of the following year the king sent a most splendid embassy to Rome, which confirmed the abrogation of the pragmatic sanction, yet, as the pope would not consent to abandon Ferdinand, a misunderstanding immediately ensued. The king offered to send a powerful army against the Turks, if the pope would countenance the succession of the duke of Anjou to the kingdom of Naples, and if Genoa should return to the obedience of France. The pope answered, that he would withdraw his auxiliaries from Ferdinand, if both parties would submit to the decision of the apostolic see: some preliminaries were accordingly proposed to procure a truce, during which all differences might be terminated by an amicable accommodation. However, as the pope still continued to assist Ferdinand, and some persons at Rome had informed the king, that Pius, since the abrogation of the pragmatic sanction, prosecuted the war with more earnestness, as he now drew more money from France than formerly, Lewis wrote to him, and sent another ambassador to Rome, threatening to recall all Frenchmen from the Roman court. This threatening message had no effect upon Pius, who declared that the French were at liberty to leave his court when they pleased; and that he would not desert Ferdinand while the duke of Anjou continued his hostilities ‡. However, soon after the pope endeavoured to mitigate his answer; and the college of cardinals, at his desire, wrote to the king, entreating him not to give credit to calumnies, but to cultivate a friendship with his holiness, who never mentioned him but with the greatest regard.

A. D.
1462.

A mis-
under-
stand-
ing be-
twixt him
and the
pope.

† EN. Epist. 396.

‡ Comment. l. viii.

(U) This letter has been most justly censured as unapostolical, and the pope has been condemned as making a merchandize of the gospel, which ordains a restitution of all pos-

sessions unjustly acquired. With the same justice a Jew, convicted of being a fraudulent bankrupt, ought not to be punished, if he would consent to be baptized (1).

O nimium faciles, quæ trifida crimina lædis
Flumina posse tolli putatis aqua (2).

(1) Du Pleſſis myſteræ Iniquité, p. 547., Privet, Remarque ſur la reſponſe au myſtere d'Iniquité, p. 617. Histoire des Papes à la Haye, Bayle's Dict. Crit. Art. Bonnet II. rem 2.

(2) Ovid Faſtor. l. ii. v. 27.

The pope
receives
an embassy
from the
king of
B

PIUS, at this period, had likewise received an embassy from *George Podiebrad*, king of *Bohemia*, to demand the confirmation of the compactata by the apostolic see. The pope replied, as the conditions on which these compactata had been granted had been frequently violated by the *Bohemians*, they could not now be of any force; and as the king at his coronation had sworn to obey the apostolic see, he ought to unite himself sincerely with the *Roman* church, without which union his kingdom could not stand. The ambassadors reporting this answer to the states, which had assembled at *Prague*, the king broke out into reproaches against the pope, and declared, that though he had sworn to extirpate heresy, yet as he had never believed the doctrine of the communion under both kinds to be a heresy, he was determined to die in that faith. The pope's nuncio being afterwards admitted to an audience, and insisting upon implicit obedience to the *Roman* church, the king ordered him to be imprisoned; but, at the intercession of the emperor, about three months afterwards he set him at liberty; *Frederic* at the same time, in consideration of the assistance he received from *George*, in the dispute with his brother about the succession of *Austria*, interceded in his behalf with the pope. Though *Pius*, at the emperor's intercession, delayed his censures against the king of *Bohemia*, yet he again denounced an anathema against *Malatesta* and the duke of *Austria*, against *George Heinberg*, who had espoused the duke of *Austria's* cause. His troops soon afterwards defeating *Malatesta* at *Senogallia*, and *Ferdinand* gaining a signal victory over the party of the duke of *Anjou* at *Froja*, *Pius* renewed the deliberations about the *Turkish* expedition; and having procured the hearty concurrence of the *Venetians*, he sent the bishop of *Ferrara*, as his legate, to the king of *France* and duke of *Burgundy*, who brought nothing but fine promises from these princes, which were never put in execution ^h.

he de-
es him
oblige
catho-
of Si-
a to
mit to
go-
nment.

THE following year the pope received another embassy from the king of *Bohemia*, excusing his behaviour at the diet of *Prague*, promising obedience to the apostolic see, and desiring the pope to oblige the inhabitants of *Breslau* to acknowledge him for their king. As *Podiebrad* was strongly suspected of heresy, the pope absolutely refused to revoke the bull which he had granted to the *Silefians*, absolving them from their allegiance; but, at the intercession of the emperor,

he did not yet denounce an anathema against the king¹. However, on *Good-Friday* he again excommunicated *Sigismund* of *Austria*, and *Malatesta* prince of *Rimini*; and having received an embassy from the king of *Bosnia*, desiring assistance against the *Turks*, and cathedral churches to be erected in his kingdom, which had lately been converted from *Manichism*, he promised to send bishops thither to instruct and govern the new converts, and to write to the king of *Hungary*, and to the *Venetians*, to assist them against the infidels. Before the return of these ambassadors, *Bosnia* was invaded and conquered by the *Turks*; but, in compensation for this loss, the *Venetians* being instigated by the pope's legate, cardinal *Bessarion* declared war against the *Turks*; and fitting out a powerful fleet recovered the *Morea*, and several islands in the *Archipelago*^k. In the mean time the king of *France* still kept up his resentment against the pope, and published three decrees; by the first of which, he declared himself the only competent judge of all disputes about conferring of benefices in his kingdom, or disposing of the revenues of those that were vacant: by the second he ordained, that the presidents of parliament, and all his officers, should enjoy the same privileges, in judging of causes relating to benefices, as those which the apostolic see had granted to the university of *Paris*; and by the third, he assumed to himself the right of judgment over all possessors of benefices. The pope sent two legates into *France*, to endeavour to appease the king, with an offer of a five years truce in *Sicily*, if he would consent to take arms against the *Turks*. What was the effect of this embassy we don't find mentioned; but the king soon after published some other edicts against reservations, and the exactors of the spoils of deceased priests¹; the extortions of the court of *Rome*, as *Spondanus* confessed, furnishing continual matters of complaint; so that nothing is more frequently mentioned than such grievances in the history of *France*, *England*, *Germany*, and *Spain*^m.

Pius being still chiefly intent upon the *Turkish* expedition, Pius still about this time sent nuncios to the duke of *Burgundy*, to remind him of his vow; and having received a favourable answer from that prince, at his desire he invited all the states of *Italy* to send their deputies to *Rome*. Upon their arrival, the ambassadors of the duke of *Burgundy* declaring, that, in the beginning of the spring, he was determined to conduct a

¹ Ap. COCHLÆ. l. ii. ÆN. Epist. 401.

xii. CHALCOND. l. xii. ad. fin.

^m SPOND. Annal. huc an.

^k Comment. l.

¹ Comment. ut supra.

and pro-
mises to
sail him-
self into
Asia.

fleet in person against the *Turks*, the pope then asked the *Italian* deputies, what auxiliaries their states would furnish. The greatest part of the *Italians* answered, that they had only come to hear the proposals of the pope; and the *Florentines* even advised his holiness to allow the *Venetians* to carry on the war alone, which would probably ruin them in the end, and thereby secure the liberty of *Italy*. Pius detested this advice, and soon after, in a private consistory, declared to the cardinals, that, as *Ferdinand* was secured in the possession of *Naples*, and *Malatesta* defeated, he was determined to fit out as great a fleet as the revenues of the church could allow, and to sail himself into *Asia* or *Greece* against the infidels, in hopes that his example would influence the Christian princes. His proposal was greatly approved by the cardinals; however, the chief states of *Italy* manifested no great forwardness to engage in the expedition, and only offered the subsidies that had been agreed upon at *Mantua*ⁿ. The duke of *Milan*, indeed, offered to send his son with a body of horse; and the *Genoese* promised to fit out eight or ten ships, but they desired to know before-hand what share their state should have in the profits of the expedition^{*}.

His health
is greatly
impaired.

A.D.

1464.

THE pope, not at all discouraged by the backwardness of others, on the 19th of *October* published a bull, addressed to all the faithful, informing them of the necessity of the expedition, and that he himself intended to command a fleet, which was to sail from *Ancona* about the beginning of *June* P. A few days after he wrote to the doge of *Venice*, desiring him to come with a fleet to the general rendezvous at *Ancona*, and not to excuse himself on account of his age, as he himself, and the duke of *Burgundy*, were both old men. Tho' the pope's health at this time was greatly broke by his continual fatigues, and especially by the pains of the gout, with which distemper he was afflicted during the greatest part of his pontificate, he, nevertheless, exerted himself with the greatest assiduity in promoting the expedition. As his pains increased, and were attended with a fever, in the end of winter he went, by the advice of the physicians, to the baths of *Retriolana*, in the diocese of *Siena*, where he continued some months. While he was at *Siena*, he received the disagreeable news that the duke of *Burgundy* declined engaging personally in the expedition. He wrote to that prince, exhorting him not to desert the common cause in which he was en-

^{*} Comment. ut supra. ⁿ SUMONET in vit. Sforzæ. ap. Murator, t. xxi. NÉVIER, l. v. FOLLIER, l. xi. ^p Ap. ÆN. Epist. 412.

gaged,

gaged, both by his honour and conscience. However, his letter had not the desired effect upon the duke, who only sent his two natural sons with 200 men, and promised to come the next year personally, if he was not prevented by death or sickness &c. The king of *France* likewise excused himself, being apprehensive of a civil war, as the nobles of his kingdom had entered into a private conspiracy against him. No assistance could be expected from the kingdoms of *Spain*, who were then engaged in mutual wars; and in the end of the former year, the *Venetians* had been defeated by the *Turks* at *Corinth* and *Mitylene*, and been obliged to abandon the *Isthmus*.

NOTWITHSTANDING all these discouragements, the pope still persisted in his resolution; and having returned for a few days to *Rome*, he set out from thence, in a litter, for *Ancona*, where he arrived by slow journies about the middle of *July*. Soon after his arrival, he absolved and dismissed great part of the crusaders, who had come into *Italy* without money for their subsistence during the expedition; whereas by his bull, he had only offered indulgences to those who fought in his army, for one year, or eighteen months, at their own charge (W). In the mean time news arriving that the *Turks* had encamped in the neighbourhood of *Ragusa*, as tho' they had an intention to besiege that city, the pope immediately proposed to embark for its relief, in hopes that if he should succeed, the Christian princes would be excited to follow his good fortune. He altered his resolution upon hearing that the *Turks* had retired, and a few days after he had the satisfaction to be joined by the doge of *Venice*, with a considerable fleet for the expedition; but his

¹ Idem Epist. 382. SPOND. Annal. ² PLATINA. MON-
STRELET, vol. iii. ³ CHALCOND. l. x. SABELLIC. 3.
Dec. 8. ⁴ PAPIENS. CARD. ep. 41. PLATIN.

(W) *Krantz*, in his *Wandalia* and *Saxonia*, relates, that the ignorant preachers in *Germany* assured the common people, that provisions and arms would be furnished to them for the expedition. Great numbers accordingly went into *Italy* in rags, without arms, begging their subsistence upon the road, to the derision of the *Italians*, who admired their simplicity. Many went to *Venice* in expectation of embarking at that city. Others went to *Ancona*; but the greatest number of all went to *Rome*; and very many, after they were dismissed by the pope, perished with hunger in their return home (1).

(1) *Krantz*. *Wandal.* l. xii. c. 30. *Saxon.* l. xii. c. 3.

where he
dies.

distemper still increasing, he assembled the cardinals, and recommending to them the prosecution of his design, and unity in the election of a new pope, died on the 13th of *August*, in the 58th year of his age, and the 6th of his pontificate. He was of a short stature, gray haired before the usual time, and in his countenance, which was early wrinkled, there appeared a mixture of severity and good-nature. He neither loved money nor contemned it, but would never be present when it was told out, or laid up. Altho' he was very learned, and greatly addicted to study, yet, by some, he is accused of having from avarice neglected to encourage the men of genius of his time; but *Platina* attributes this neglect not to avarice, but to the expensive wars in which he was engaged, which continually exhausted his treasury. The same author relates, that he was void of fear and inconsistency, and seemed as little elevated with his good fortune as dejected at his bad. He had a great contempt for a splendid table, and went frequently to fountains, groves, and country retirements, where he entertained himself not in a pompous but in a plain simple manner. Besides his histories and orations, he left behind him several grave and judicious sentences after the manner of proverbs, which are mentioned by *Platina* and other authors " (X).

AFTER the death of *Pius*, the crusaders, who had assembled at *Ancona*, immediately dispersed: and the cardinals consulting with the doge of *Venice*, agreed to give the galleys built by *Pius* to that republic, the doge promising to restore them, if the pope that should be elected disapproved of their decree. The cardinals likewise unanimously gave the 48,000 crowns, that had been collected by the late pope, to *Matthias*, king of *Hungary*; then determining that the future election should be made at *Rome*, they returned to that city, and entered the conclave on the 24th of *August*.

" CARD. PAPIENS. Epist. Comment. PII II. PLAT. SPOND. Annal.

(X) We have here added some of those sentences. " To find out the motion of the stars, has more of pleasure in it than profit. " God's friends enjoy both this life and the life to come. As a'l rivers run into the sea, so do all vices into courts. Unskilful physicians kill the body, and ignorant

priests the soul. A wandering monk is the devil's bondslave. There was great reason for prohibiting priests to marry, but greater for allowing them. He cherishes an enemy who pardons his son too often. Mens faults are concealed by liberality, and discovered by avarice, &c."

Having

Having drawn up several decrees for the right administration Paul II. of the pontificate, and each having sworn to observe them *is elected*: if he should be elected pope, the next day they gave their votes, and, at the first scrutiny, cardinal *Peter Barbo*, a *Venetian*, and nephew of *Eugenius IV.* was elected, who assumed the name of *Paul II.* and a few days after was consecrated and crowned with the usual solemnities *. He had very little learning, as he was of an indolent spirit, and did not apply himself to study till he was advanced in years, after the promotion of his uncle *Eugenius*, at which time he was preparing to go from *Venice* on a trading voyage. Before his election was published, he again subscribed, and swore to observe, the articles agreed to in the conclave: however, quickly after, he endeavoured to abolish them, at the persuasion of the archbishop of *Milan* and the bishop of *Treviso*, who, finding themselves excluded by the articles from entering the sacred college so soon as they expected, urged, that it was unworthy of a pope to be only the administrator of the decrees of other people, and prevailed with him to draw up other articles in the name of the cardinals, under pretence that the former were useless. *Paul*, who was very fond of unlimited power, readily consented, and as readily obtained the subscription of several of the cardinals, who put their names to the new articles without ever reading them. All the rest of the fathers were compelled by threats to subscribe, except cardinal *Carvajal*, a *Spaniard*, who declared that he never remembered to have changed his mind in his youth, and would not now in his old age †.

ABOUT the same time *Paul*, in resentment for some denial which he had formerly received from *Pius*, dismissed all the clerks of the *Breves*, and confiscated their effects, under pretence that they were unqualified for their offices; accusing them of a conspiracy, and even of heresy, because they, with other men of learning, had formed an academy at *Rome*, and disputed about the immortality of the soul, and other articles of the Christian faith, after the manner of the ancient *Platonists* and *Academics* ‡. *Platina* the historian, who was one of the abbreviators, complains of the injustice which they suffered, as they had not only bought their places, which were therefore confirmed to them by a bull, but were men of such merit as to be an ornament to the court. Great intercession was made in their behalf, and *Platina* begged, in

* Comment. PAPIENS. l. ii.
Epist. 156, 180, 181, 182.

† Idem ibid, & ejusd.
‡ Append. PAPIENS. Epist.

the name of his colleagues, that their cause might be judged by the auditors of the *Rota*; which request greatly enraged the pope, who replied, that he ought not to be referred to judges, who had all the law in his own breast. *Platina*, after having been rejected twenty days without obtaining audience, at length wrote to the pope, that he, with his colleagues, intended to intreat the Christian princes to convoke a general council, where their wrongs might be redressed: but instead of prevailing upon the pope by this means to restore them to their places, he drew the whole resentment of his holiness upon himself; for he was immediately put in irons, and imprisoned in a high tower, where he continued all the winter ^a. In the mean time *Paul*, to gratify the cardinals, allowed them to wear a red hat and a mitre of damask silk, which only the popes had formerly worn^a; and granted 100 crowns a month to those whose yearly revenue did not amount to 4000. As he had granted the ornaments of a pope to the cardinals, he resolved to augment his own; and being very fond of precious stones, which he took great pains to procure, and which he spent whole nights in viewing, he caused a new pontifical mitre to be made with three crowns; which he adorned with diamonds to the value of 120,000 crowns ^b.

He exhorts the Christian princes to an expedition against the Turks.

DURING these private transactions, the pope had sent nuncios to the different princes of *Europe*, desiring them to unite their arms against the *Turks*, and had appointed three cardinals to have the perpetual direction of all matters relating to that expedition. Being in some doubt whether he should continue to grant reservations, which were greatly complained of, he was persuaded by cardinal *Garvajal* not to neglect that prerogative of the apostolic see, which, with great difficulty, had been established ^c. However, at the next consistory, by the advice of all the cardinals, he refused the request of a *French* bishop, who desired a certain abbacy in *commendam*, being resolved, in order to avoid scandal, in some measure, to restrain that custom, as upwards of 500 abbeys had been given in *commendam* since the pontificate of *Calixtus*; and one of the cardinals expressed his apprehensions, lest, in a short time, there would not be a monastery in *France*, that would have an abbot. *Paul*, about the same time, received an embassy from the emperor, professing his obedience to him as pope, and likewise to intercede for *George Podiebrad*, whom *Pius*, before

He receives an embassy

^a PLATINA in vit. Paul II.
^b SPOND. Annal. PLATINA.

^c Comment. PAPIENS. l. ii.
^c PAPIENS. Epist. 92.

he had set out for *Ancona*, had cited to appear before him *from the* within 180 days. As the time was not yet elapsed, and the emperor, king of *Bohemia* promised, if the citation was suspended, to *and* send an embassy to *Rome*, and submit to the orders of the apostolic see, *Paul* granted the request of the emperor's ambassador, in hopes that the aversion hitherto shown by *George* to the see of *Rome*, proceeded more from his personal hatred to *Pius*, than from any attachment to the sect of the *Calixtins* ^d. A few months after ambassadors arrived at *Rome* from *Ferdinand*, king of *Naples*, who desired that the pope *from the* would send a cardinal legate to be present at the marriage of king of his son with the daughter of the duke of *Milan*. The am- *Naples*, bassadors likewise declared, that *Ferdinand* had received an embassy from the grand *Turk*, congratulating him upon subduing the rebels, and exhorting him to further conquests, by offering a subsidy of 800,000 crowns a year, if he would make war upon any of the states of *Italy*. He proposed also an alliance betwixt some of their children; or, if that could not take effect, on account of the difference of religion, then he offered a young *Greek*, who was descended from the emperors, with a dowry of 200,000 crowns, or as much more as the king pleased. *Ferdinand* promised to be directed in his answer to *Mohammed* by the determination of the consistory, but what that was does not appear; for the cardinal of *Pavia* gives us only a part of the speech of cardinal *Bessarion*, condemning any alliance with the *Turks*, or even any correspondence by ambassadors ^e. It is probable that the other fathers were of his opinion, and rather exhorted *Ferdinand* to join the other states of *Italy*, in assisting the king of *Hungary* against the *Turks*. *Federic*, the younger son of *Ferdinand*, soon after arriving at *Rome*, in his way to *Milan*, whither he went to fetch his brother's bride, was received with great honour, the pope himself presenting him with a golden rose, which is a present made annually to some Christian prince or other ^f.

THE king of *Naples* likewise sent some troops to assist the pope, in quelling a rebellion raised by the counts *Anquillara*, *who assists* who the year before had succeeded their father, whose *him in re-* ample they followed, by usurping the territories of their *ducing the* neighbours, and refusing to submit to the pope. *Paul*, by *counts of* the assistance of the *Neapolitans*, surprized and subdued the *lara*. counts, within fourteen days after the commencement of hostilities, and took from them nine castles, some of which

^d COCHLÆ. Hist. l. xii. PAP. Comment. l. ix. ^e Ejusd. Epist. 85. ^f PLATINA.

*A difference be-
twixt him
and the
king of
Naples,*

appeared almost impregnable. Quickly after a difference happened betwixt him and *Ferdinand*, who, in consideration of the succours he had sent him, desired a remittance of the tribute which he owed the church; which request was rejected by the pope, who replied, that *Ferdinand* owed the quiet possession of his kingdom to the assistance of the apostolic see, and was even bound by his tie to send succours to his holiness. As *Ferdinand*, about this time, secured himself in the possession of his kingdoms, by putting to death *Picenninus*, lord of several towns in *Albruzzo*, though he had come to *Naples* upon his safe conduct, he threatened to declare war against the pope, unless he would remit the tribute, and restore several towns that belonged to the kingdom. *Paul*, to prevent a rupture, immediately sent a legate to *Naples*, who found means, in some measure, to appease *Ferdinand*, who offered, if the pope would remit the tribute, to give 60,000 crowns to the king of *Hungary*, and to send 500 horse, and as many foot, into *Epirus*. In consequence of a convention held the former year at *Rome*, to deliberate about the means of opposing the *Turks*, the *Venetians*, about this time offered to grant an annual subsidy of 50,000 crowns to the *Hungarians*, on condition that the pope would indulge them with the tythe of ecclesiastical revenues, the thirtieth penny of the citizens, and the twentieth from the *Jews*. The duke of *Milan*, on the same condition, offered a reinforcement of 2000 horse and 1000 foot; and the *Florentines* 1000 horse and 500 foot, or a subsidy of 24,000 crowns. The other states made no offer of any assistance; and even these, not having obtained their request from the pope, performed nothing. While the *Italians* thus excused themselves from furnishing succours against the *Turks*, the famous *Scanderbeg* was entirely defeated by them in *Albania*, and obliged to fly into *Italy*; and the infidels making themselves masters of the whole province, carried off a great part of his subjects into captivity, while others escaped in boats, and took refuge on the *Italian* coasts, filling that kingdom with consternation. The pope immediately published a letter, addressed to all the faithful, informing them of the calamity of the *Albanians*, and earnestly exhorting them to oppose the progress of the *Turks*, either by men or money.

*Scanderbeg is de-
feated by
the Turks,
and oblig-
ed to fly
into Italy.*

*Paul ab-
solves the
Silesians*

In the mean time, being informed that the king of *Bohemia* had again attacked the catholics of *Silesia*, he absolved them from their vassalage to that crown, and put them under

† PAPIENS. Epist. 54 & 65.

* Ejusd. Epist. 193.

the protection of the king of Hungary. *Podiebrad*, nevertheless, was resolved to force them to a submission; but his measures being thwarted by several catholic lords, particularly by one *Hynco*, or *Zdenco*, he besieged him in the fort of *Zarasten*. During the siege *Zdenco* found means to escape to *Rome*, where he was graciously received by the pope, who sent him with letters of recommendation to the emperor. *Paul* likewise ordered *Podiebrad* to raise the siege, under pain of excommunication; to prevent which sentence, the king of *Bohemia* wrote to *Rome*, in the name of the rest of the nobles, blaming *Zdenco* as the author of the disturbances, at the same time desiring the pope to send a nuncio to the emperor, where conferences might be held, to treat of the reduction of *Bohemia* to the catholic religion. This letter did not at all alter the former resolution of the pope, who still ordered *Podiebrad* to raise the siege, and sent a nuncio to the emperor, desiring him not to treat with the king of *Bohemia* before he had laid down his arms. *Podiebrad*, notwithstanding the threatnings of the pope, would not desist from his purpose, and, after a siege of almost twelve months, made himself master of the place¹. The pope, upon receiving this news, immediately wrote to his nuncios in *Germany*, to desire the *German* princes not to oppose the proceedings of the apostolic see against the king of *Bohemia*. At the same time the catholic lords having revolted, he absolved them from their allegiance, appointed *George* to appear at *Rome* within a certain time, and ordered his nuncio to raise forces for the assistance of the *Bohemian* catholics, and to publish a crusade, if there was occasion, against *Podiebrad*. The king despising this citation from *Rome*, the pope declared him convicted of perjury, sacrilege, and heresy, and pronounced against him a sentence of excommunication, but delayed publishing the decree, that it might not be treated with contempt, as he could not find any one who could put it in execution; the emperor indulging himself in a slothful inactivity, and the kings of *Poland* and *Hungary* being wholly engaged in opposing the *Turks*. At length, encouraged by cardinal *Carvajal*, who insisted that in great matters much ought to be left to God, the pope, on *Christmas-day*, published the sentence of excommunication and deposition against the king, in the church of *St. Peter*. About the same time he confirmed the bishoprick of *St. Andrews* in *Scotland* to *Patrick Grahame*, who, after his election, had come to *Rome* without the king's leave: and, to

from their
allegiance
to the king
of Bohe-
mia,
A. D.
1466.

against
whom he
publishes
a sentence
of excom-
munication
and deposi-
tion.

¹ Hist. Bohem. c. 30. PAPIENS. Comment. l. vi.

put an end to the pretensions of the archbishop of York, who claimed a superiority over the Scots prelates, he created the bishop primate of Scotland, and appointed him his legate in that kingdom for three years^k.

He desires the parliament of Paris to confirm the abrogation of the pragmatic sanction. THE following year Paul sent a legate into France, to procure a decree of the parliament of Paris, confirming the abrogation of the pragmatic sanction; but their journey was in vain: for, although they again obtained the king's edict for the abrogation, which was published at the chatelet, yet the parliament opposed their proceeding, and the university of Paris appealed from the legate and the edict of the king to a general council, and ordered their appeal to be inserted in the acts^l. Mean time the nuncios of the pope arrived in Poland, and offered the kingdom of Bohemia to Casimir, or to any of his sons. The same proffer was likewise made by deputies from the catholic nobles of Bohemia; but as George Podiebrad was then at the head of a considerable army of Bohemians and Germans, Casimir did not chuse rashly to accept of the offered crown, but declared that he would first endeavour to reconcile Podiebrad with the holy see. He accordingly sent an embassy to the king of Bohemia, who insisted that he had never done any injury to the pope, nor had ever violated the compactata of the council of Basil; but, if he had in any thing offended, he was willing to submit to the arbitration of Casimir. However, the catholics refusing to agree to an arbitration, before they could receive the permission of the pope, in the mean time a truce was agreed to for five months. During these transactions in Poland, the emperor, at the repeated solicitations of the pope, assembled a diet at Nuremberg, to consult of means to oppose

The pope's legate desires the Germans to protect the Bohemian catholics.

the Turks, and protect the catholics of Bohemia. The bishop of Ferrara, the pope's legate, represented the great danger to which those catholics were exposed, who had withdrawn their allegiance from Podiebrad, unless they were assisted by the Germans, as the king of Poland manifested no great earnestness in their behalf. His representations however had little effect upon the princes, who had no great desire to see the king of Poland possessed of the crown of Bohemia; and being divided among themselves, singly courted the favour of Podiebrad. The emperor likewise was dissatisfied with the pope, and alleged that, tho' he might condemn Podiebrad, he had no right to dispose of his kingdom, which depended entire-

^k BUCHANAN, l. xii. c. 24.
MEYER DE COMMINES.

^l MONTELEST, Me-

ly upon the empire^m. The diet then broke up, after having resolved that the empire should maintain 20,000 men for six years against the *Turks*, and that the pope should be solicited to establish a solid peace among Christian princes.

PAUL indeed, the following year, reconciled several states ^{Paul gives} of *Italy*, that had taken up arms as auxiliaries to the opposite ^{Bohemia} factions in *Florence*; and, after the conclusion of that treaty, ^{to the king} he entertained the *Romans* with sumptuous feasts and races, ^{Hungary;} proposing eight cloaks to be run for separately, by old men, ^{A.D.} middle aged, young men, *Jews*, horses, mares, asses, and ^{1468.} buffaloes. However he was still determined to put his decree in execution against *Podiebrad*; and all thoughts of an arbitration being laid aside, he ordered his legate, the bishop of *Ferrara*, to offer the crown of *Bohemia* to *Matthias*, king of *Hungary*. *Matthias*, whether from ambition, or zeal for the catholic cause, readily accepted of the offer; and having concluded a truce with the *Turkish* governor of *Pannonia*, marched with an army into *Moravia*, attended with the legate, who had denounced an anathema against all those who should assist the heretics. After some unsuccessful attempts, he had a conference with his father-in-law *Podiebrad*; and agreeing to a truce till the end of the year, he left his army in *Moravia*, and returned to *Hungary*.

DURING this unsuccessful campaign of *Matthias*, ^{he is alarmed} the pope was greatly alarmed at *Rome* with the report of a con- ^{with the} spiracy against him, said to be headed by one *Callimaco*, who ^{report of a} had a correspondence with some banditti in the wood of *Ves-* ^{conspiracy} *litre*. *Paul* immediately ordered a great many citizens and ^{at Rome.} courtiers to be imprisoned, among whom was the historian *Platina*, who being brought before the pope, was threatened with torments and death, unless he would make a confession. *Platina*, conscious of his own innocence, answered without fear; and to relieve the pope from the terrors with which he seemed to be seized, endeavoured to persuade him that the report of the plot must have been false, as *Callimaco* was an unfit person for such an enterprize, being a bad orator, slothful, ambitious, poor, without forces and dependents, and besides almost blind. But this discourse served only to aggravate his crime; the pope, in a passion, saying to those who were present, "This fellow must be forced by the rack to confess the truth, for he understands the true art of plotting." Although a few days afterwards the pope was fully informed of the falsehood of the plot, yet, that he might not seem to have acted from levity, he ordered *Platina*,

and a great many other prisoners, to be put to the torture, several of whom died under the hands of the tormentors. *Platina* was stretched upon the rack twice in one day, and, with a great many others, continued a whole year in prison.

The emperor arrives at Rome in consequence of a vow. In the mean time the emperor, in consequence of a vow, arrived at *Rome*, where he was treated with great magnificence by the pope, who spent on that occasion 18,000 ducats. Four days after his arrival, he assisted at a public consistory, and proposed, as the most proper expedient to engage the Christians in a league against the *Turks*, that a convention should be held at *Constance*, at which the pope and he should assist in person, and to which other Christian princes should be invited. The pope remembering the former proceedings in that city, did not relish this proposal; but, after much consultation, it was agreed that letters should be written, in the name of the emperor and pope, to the princes and states in Christendom, inviting them to send their ambassadors to *Rome*, to treat about the means of defending the faith; and that the *Venetians* should be indulged with a tenth of clergy, a twentieth of *Jews*, and a thirtieth of the laity in their own dominions.

The pope insults those who were imprisoned, on account of the conspiracy. AFTER the departure of the emperor, who continued only seventeen days at *Rome*, the pope visited *Platina*, and the other prisoners; and that his severity might seem to have some foundation, he charged them with many crimes, particularly that they disputed concerning the immortality of the soul, and called the being of a God in question, and were too great admirers of *Pagan* antiquities. *Platina* answered to the two first accusations, that both divines and philosophers, for the sake of argument, have made a question of propositions which they really believed; and he assures us, that no person could be more fond of *Pagan* antiquities, than the pope himself; for he procured as many statues of the ancients as he could, and placed them in a house that he had built near the capitol: among the rest he took away a porphyry tomb of St. *Constantia* from the church of St. *Agnes*, against the inclination of the monks; and in the foundation of his house he laid a great number of medals of gold, silver, and brass, struck with his own image. Two days after the pope visited the prisoners a second time; and, after some discourse, went away in a passion, upbraiding *Platina* with ingratitude against so good a friend as he had been to him. At length, wearied with the intercession of the cardinals,

A. D.
1469.

nals, he set them at liberty ^a (Y). About the same time be- ^{They are as}
 ing informed that *Malatesta*, prince of *Rimini*, had revolted ^{last set at}
 from the church, and contracted an alliance with the king ^{liberty.}
 of *Naples*; the duke of *Milan*, and the *Florentines*, he sent
 an army against him, and besieged him in *Rimini*; but the
 allies of *Malatesta* sending some troops to his assistance, the
 army of the pope was defeated, and obliged to raise the
 siege; *Paul* soon after consenting to a peace upon very dis-
 honourable terms ^o.

MEAN while *Matthias*, having returned to *Moravia*, was ^{The Bohe-}
 declared king of *Bohemia* and marquis of *Moravia* at *Olmutz*, ^{means}
 and proceeding from thence to *Breslau*, he was there received ^{give their}
 as prince of *Silesia*. Upon his return to *Moravia*, he took ^{crown to}
Victorin, one of the sons of *Podiebrad*, prisoner, and made ^{the son of}
 himself master of several towns: however, he was soon after ^{the king of}
 defeated by *Victorin's* brother, and obliged to return to *Hun-*
gary for succours. *Podiebrad* likewise, in order to thwart
 the ambitious views of *Matthias*, proposed to the states at
Prague, to settle the succession of *Bohemia* upon *Ladislaus*,
 son of the king of *Poland*. This settlement gave satisfaction
 to both the factions; and *Casimir* promising to support the
 interests of his son, *Matthias* quickly lost a great many par-
 tizans: however, he still resolved to support his claim, and
 sent an ambassador to the pope, desiring him to discounte-
 nance the pretensions of *Ladislaus* P. *Paul*, about the same ^{The pope}
 time, received another embassy from the king of *Poland*, ^{supports}

* PLATINA in vit. Paul II.
 Annal. PLAT.

° PAP. Epist. 276. SPOND.
 P CROMER. l. xxvii. DUBRAV. l. xxx.

(Y) *Platina*, upon being re-
 leased from prison, was sent
 for by the duke of *Mantua* to
 the baths, his right arm having
 contracted a great indisposition
 during his imprisonment. *Paul*
 at first prohibited him from go-
 ing, promising to do great things
 for him in a short time; but, at
 the intercession of cardinal *Bes-*
sarion, he at last allowed him
 to depart from *Rome*. After
 he had returned, the pope fre-
 quently boasted the great kind-
 ness he had for him, and pro-
 mised to the *Venetians* and *Mi-*

linese ambassadors to provide
 for him in an honourable way.
 After *Platina* had spent two
 years in expectation, he propos-
 ed to go to *Bologna*, with the
 cardinal of *Mantua*, who was
 legate of that city; but the pope
 desired him to stay and renewed
 his former promise: however,
 death prevented him from ful-
 filling it (1). *Sixtus* IV. re-
 stored him to his employments,
 and made him keeper of the
Vatican library, which place
 he enjoyed but a few months,
 dying in 1481 (2).

(1) *Platina*,

(2) *Tritem. & Belarmin de Script. ecclsi.*

the claim
of Mat-
thias.

A.D.

1479.

desiring him to confirm the election of his son; but the pope being determined to support the interests of *Matthias*, sent the bishop of *Forli* as his legate to *Casimir*, declaring that he could not abandon the king of *Hungary*, who had deserved so well of the apostolic see, and exhorting him to give one of his daughters in marriage to *Matthias*, and to assist him against *Podiebrad* the enemy of the church.

A bull is
published
for cele-
brating
a jubilee
every 25
years.

1471.

THE pope being soon after informed that the *Turks* were besieging *Negropont*, with an army of 120,000 men, and a fleet of 100 galleys, he ordered public supplications to be made in the church of *St. Peter* and in the *Lateran*, to which last he went himself on foot, carrying the image of the virgin *Mary*. This same year he likewise published a bull, reducing the jubilee to the twenty-fifth year, to commence in the year one thousand four hundred and seventy-five; and having prevailed with the emperor to convoke a diet at *Ratisbon*, to consult of means to oppose the *Turks*, who, besides their present successes in the *Archipelago*, the year before had made an irruption into *Carniola*, he sent two legates to be present at that assembly. The diet, which was very numerous, was accordingly opened on the 22d of *June*, by the bishop of *Trent*, who, in the name of the emperor, made a speech in the *German* language; and representing the great calamities of the Christians, and the late ravaging of *Carniola*, one of the hereditary provinces of the *Austrian* family, he exhorted the princes to imitate the valour of their ancestors, in opposing the infidels, and defending the Christian religion. The two legates addressed the assembly to the same purpose. However, although the *Venetian* ambassador offered, on the part of that republic, a fleet of 120 sail, and the princes proposed, according to a general assessment, to raise an army of 200,000 men, yet nothing was effected, by reason of the slothful inactivity of the emperor, which occasioned one of the legates to write to the cardinal of *Pavia*, that they would surely beat the *Turks*, if the emperor would fight with as great vigour as he then snored.

The pope
dies at
Rome.

DURING these transactions in *Germany*, the pope, having erected *Ferrara* into a duchy, and given the investiture of it to *Borso*, marquis of *Este*, soon after died at *Rome*, on the 25th or 26th of *July*, of a fit of an apoplexy, no person being present at his death. During the pontificate of *Paul*, all offices at the *Roman* court were exposed to sale; and under this pretence he sold bishoprics, and other benefices, to the

† SPOND. Annal.

† CAMPAN. Epist. 18, 19. ap. PA-
PIENS. Epist. 375, 376, 386, 387.

highest bidder, the office being sold, and the church given gratis. Those candidates, whose pretensions were only supported by learning and a good life, were always set aside. He likewise increased the number of vacant benefices, by supplying them chiefly by translations, by which means he brought into his treasury large sums of money, of which he was very fond. He was a great enemy to human learning, and dissuaded the people of *Rome* from putting their children to grammar schools, declaring, that they were sufficiently learned if they could read and write *. The same author relates, that he was reputed a just and a merciful man; that he adorned the city with several magnificent buildings, and was sometimes liberal to the poorer cardinals and bishops, and to the sick and distressed.

THE cardinals having mourned the usual time for the death of *Paul*, on the 7th of *August* entered the conclave to elect a successor. The pontificate was at first offered to cardinal *Bessarion*, under certain conditions; but he declaring that he would not accept of it under any restrictions, the cardinals applied themselves to *Francis della Rovere*, a cardinal priest, who consenting to what they desired, two days after was chosen pope, and assumed the name of *Sixtus IV.* *Sixtus IV. is elected.* *Francis* was born in the territory of *Savona*, on the *Genoese* coast, according to *Onuphrius*, of noble parents; but others relate, that his birth was obscure, and that his father was a fisherman, which employment he himself at first followed †: and the *Venetian* ambassador, in his speech of congratulation, expressly declares, that he was not indebted to his ancestors for his nobility, but was rendered noble by his virtue and learning ‡. He was by profession a *Franciscan*; and having acquired a great character by several treatises which he published on obscure points of divinity, he was elected general of his order, and was created a cardinal without any solicitation, and during his absence, by *Paul II.* Immediately after his promotion to the pontificate, he proposed to convoke a general council at the *Lateran*, for the reformation of the church, and to consult of means to defend Christendom against the *Turks*; but the emperor objecting to the place, this expedient of a council was dropt, and four legates were created, with full authority, to each of whom he assigned a pension of 500 crowns a month. Cardinal *Bessarion* was commissioned as legate to the king of *France*, to reconcile that prince with the dukes of *Burgundy* and *Brittany*. The

* PLATINA.
& fact. l. iii. c. 4.

† MASSON de vit. Pontif. FULCOS. de dict.
‡ SPOND. Annal.

cardinal of *St. Mark* was sent into *Germany*, to endeavour to conclude a peace with the king of *Hungary*, and *Ladislaur*, son of the king of *Poland*, who a few months before, by the death of *Podiebrad*, had succeeded to the crown of *Bohemia*. *Roderigo Borgia*, his vice-chancellor, was sent into *Spain*, and *Oliver Gassaffa* to *Venice*, and the knights of *Rhodes*, to take upon him the command of the fleet against the infidels^w. Collectors were likewise sent to all the provinces of *Europe*, to raise the tax agreed to at the convention of *Man-tua*; and indulgences were granted to those who engaged in the crusade, or contributed to the expenses of the war. The cardinal of *Pavia*, who was then absent, quelling an insurrection in *Umbria*, mentions a fifth legation, but does not inform us particularly what it was. He at the same time expressed his apprehensions of the bad success of those pompous legations, and complains that the pope had violated the laws made in the conclave, by creating two of his nephews cardinals, who had not arrived at their 30th year^x (Z). The pope indeed quickly found the bad effects of his liberal and free disposition; for having given donations of the same thing to three or four different persons, his court was immediately disturbed with quarrels and disputes. To prevent these for the future, he gave the privy-seal to one *Montemirabile*, a man of experience, who vacated such donations as were not regularly granted.

Matthias
refuses an
accommodation
with the

MEAN while the legates, having received their instructions, departed from *Rome*. The cardinal of *St. Mark* having proceeded to *Poland*, was received by *Casimir* with great honour; but he did not succeed in his endeavours to procure a peace, which was owing to the backwardness of *Mat-*

^w ONUPHR. in vita Sixt. 414, 416, &c.

^x PAPIENS. Epist. 408, 408,

(Z) One of these young men was afterwards pope, by the name of *Julius II.* The other, *Peter Riario*, died two years afterwards, in the 28th year of his age, having killed himself by his voluptuous excesses. His uncle, who is accused of being too indulgent to his relations, and censured for promoting them to dignities and honours, by unjustifiable means, created

him legate in *Italy*, and conferred upon him a great many rich benefices; but he lived in so luxurious and extravagant a manner, that in two years he spent 200,000 crowns, and left a debt of 70,000. He maintained 500 domestics, and is commended for his liberality, being wont to declare, that all honest men were welcome to be his guests (1).

(1) Addit. Vistoriel, ad Clason, Papiens Epist. 528, 529, 548.

thias, who had lately concluded a treaty with the emperor, ^{king of} and therefore judged that he should be able, by force, to ^{Poland.} make good his pretensions to *Bohemia* against *Ladislavus*. A.D. Cardinal *Bessarion*, after he had entered *France*, was prohib- 1472. ited to come to *Paris* by the king, who was offended that he had first visited the duke of *Burgundy*. At length, after two months delay, he gave him permission to come to the capital: however, he dismissed him at the first audience, without hearkening to his proposals for peace, or promising any succours against the *Turks*. The cardinal immediately returned to *Turin*, and sailing from thence, down the *Po*, to *Ravenna*, soon after died in that city, in the 77th year of his age (A). The king of *France*, that he might not seem, by his treatment of *Bessarion*, to have any personal animosity against the pope, soon after the departure of that cardinal sent an embassy to the apostolic see, to demand the celebration of a general council at *Lyons*; and that the archbishop of that city might be promoted to the dignity of cardinal. His ambassador likewise requested, that no Frenchman should be received into the sacred college without the king's knowledge or consent; that the annates should be regulated according to the decrees of the councils of *Constance* and *Basil*; that the bishoprics in *France* might be conferred only on such persons as were agreeable to the king; that the *French* clergy might be exempted from the tythe for the *Turkish* war; and that ecclesiastical causes might not be carried to the court of *Rome* in the first instance. The pope did not think proper to grant any of these demands; but four years afterwards he created the archbishop of *Lyons* a cardi-

† Ejuſd. Epiſt. 437, 455, &c.

(A) *Bessarion* was most eloquent both in *Greek* and *Latin*, skilled in all the sciences, and a great defender of the *Platonic* philosophy against the followers of *Aristotle*. He wrote several treatises in divinity, philosophy, and the *Belles lettres*; and as he was the oldest, so he was likewise reckoned the wisest of all the cardinals. His actions and his discourses were always suitable to his dignity.

All matters debated in the consistory, were generally referred to his decision; and, according to the cardinal of *Pavia*, the whole weight of affairs was supported by him alone (1). *Platina*, who wrote a panegyric upon him, relates, that the republic of *Venice* gave him 30,000 crowns for his library, which consisted chiefly of *Greek* books (2).

(1) *Pap. Epiſt.* 127, 488.
biſt. Venet. l. viii. in fin.

(2) *Plating in Paneg. Pet. in Juſtin. in*

nal *. In the mean time cardinal *Borgia* had arrived at his native city of *Valentia*, of which he was bishop, and made a discourse to his clergy, composed by the cardinal of *Pavia* *. At *Madrid* he assembled the clergy of *Castile*, reconciling *Henry* to *Ferdinand*, prince of *Arragon*, who had married his sister *Isabel* against his will, although he produced the pope's bull, dispensing with the consanguinity. *Henry* was so displeased with his proceedings, that he sent an ambassador to the apostolic see to accuse him; upon which the legates thought proper to return to *Rome* (B).

DURING these transactions the pope had terminated all the differences betwixt the apostolic see and the king of *Naples*. The duchy of *Sora* was restored to *Ferdinand*, who gave it with his natural daughter to one of the pope's nephews. The tribute, which was owing both by his father and himself, was remitted, in consideration of which he promised to defend the church of *Rome* at his charge, and to furnish two galleys for the protection of the *Roman* coast. He likewise fitted out a fleet of seventeen ships to act against the *Turks*, in conjunction with that of the pope and the *Venetians*. *Sixtus* having given his benediction to the fleet in the *Tyber*, and granted full remission of sins to all those who died during the expedition, cardinal *Caraffa* sailed from thence the beginning of *June*, and soon after joined the *Neapolitans* and *Venetians*. The whole fleet, which consisted of eighty-five sail, made an unsuccessful attack upon *Attalia*, or *Satalia*, a city of *Pamphilia*; but afterwards, when the *Neapolitans* had returned home, the legate surprised and plundered *Smyrna*, and arrived at *Rome* about the end of *January*, with twelve camels laden with booty, and twenty-five *Turkish* captives ^b. *Sixtus*, during his ab-

Cardinal
Caraffa
sails with
a fleet a-
gainst the
Turks.

* Idem Epist. 450. BZOV. hoc an. * Ap. PAPIENS. Epist. 441. ^b ONUPHR. in Sixtus IV. PET. JUSTIN. l. ix. PAP. Epist. 439, 440.

(B) The cardinal of *Pavia* relates, that *Borgia* had long desired to visit his own country; and having served the pope at his election, he purchased the legation from him by money, with the design of amply repaying himself in his visit to *Castile*, *Arragon*, and *Portugal*: that in his progress through these

kingdoms he left behind him great testimonies of his luxury, ambition, and avarice; and that one of the two galleys, which conducted him and his family to *Italy*, was lost, with great part of the spoils, and he with great difficulty saved himself in the port of *Leghorn* (1).

(1) *Papiens Epist.* 534.

seance, published a bull, declaring the church of *Scotland* independent of the jurisdiction of the archbishop of *York*, and erecting the church of *St. Andrews* into a metropolitan see. As the *Germans* refused to pay the tythe for the *Turkish* war, the pope about the same time likewise denounced an anathema against those who should detain any part of these tythes ^d, and ordered the archbishop of *Canterbury* to excommunicate the bishop of *Bath* and his accomplices, and cite him to appear at *Rome*, because he had imprisoned the apostolic nuncio, who had come into *England* to collect the taxes due to the apostolic chamber ^e.

The church of Scotland declared independent of that of England.

THE following year *Sixtus* was informed that *Matthias* king of *Hungary* had sent ambassadors to *Constantinople* to treat of a peace with *Mohammed*, who was attacked in *Asia* by *Usumcaflan* king of *Persia*, and that he had offered to assist him against *Usumcaflan*, if he would allow him a subsidy in money, and restore *Bosnia* and *Servia*. Upon receiving this news, he immediately wrote to the king to dissuade him from that alliance, and charged the bishop of *Ferrara*, his legate in *Hungary*, to enquire diligently into the truth of the report ^f. As the historians make no mention of this negotiation, it is probable that it was not true, or perhaps *Matthias* desisted upon the admonition of the pope, or *Mohammed*, having about this time gained a signal victory over the *Persians*, slighted the offer of the king of *Hungary*. Soon after the pope created eight cardinals, three of whom were nominated by the emperor, the king of *France*, and the king of *Naples*. *Ferdinand*, not contented with this favour, about a month afterwards desired a new creation to be made in favour of a certain ecclesiastic, who was unworthy of the dignity. Altho' he was very urgent in his request, yet it was opposed by the greatest part of the cardinals, and the new creation was deferred till *Christmas*; before which time the king was prevailed upon to drop his suit. In the mean time *Sixtus* confirmed the order of friars minims, which had been instituted about thirty years before by *St. Francis* of *Paola*, a city of *Calabria* ^g. Being informed that some *Carmelites* at *Bologna* asserted that it was not heretical to consult the devils, he wrote to the vicar of the bishop to make enquiry into the truth of the report, and to give information to the apostolic see. About the same time he published a bull for the reduction of the jubilee to the twenty-five years,

A. D.

1473.

^a P. VIRG. l. 13 & 24. SPOND. Annal. Wand. l. xiii. c. 7.

^c Bzov. hœc an.

516, 517.

^e SPOND. Annal.

^d KRANTZ,

^f Pap. epist.

The pope
creates his
nephew
prince of
Imola and
Forli.

A. D.

1474.

and, that the people might be excited to come to *Italy*, he suspended all indulgencies and pardons granted for visiting of any churches, except those of *Rome*^h. A few months afterwards, cardinal *Riario* dying, *Sixtus* created his brother *Jeronimo* prince of *Imola* and *Forli*; and, appointing him vicar of the ecclesiastical state, concluded a marriage betwixt him and the natural daughter of the duke of *Milan*: on which account he promoted the duke's brother to the dignity of a cardinal. Being informed likewise that the king of *Denmark* had entered *Italy*, attended by the duke of *Lower Saxony*, and a great many nobles, in the habit of pilgrims, he sent some persons to wait on him at the confines of the ecclesiastical state, and to conduct him to *Rome*, where he was received with great honour and magnificence. The king, who was admired for his stature, and on account of his title of king of the *Goths*, behaved with great submission and respect to the pope and the sacred college. He held the basin when the pope washed his hands; and, on *Good Friday*, he refused to kiss the cross till all the cardinals had performed that ceremonyⁱ. Soon after *Frederic*, the second son of the king of *Naples*, arrived at *Rome* in his way to *Burgundy*, where he proposed to marry the duke's only daughter and heiress. As several of the cardinals were his relations, they proposed to receive him in a body; but the pope, by the opinion of others, sent only the cardinal of *St. Peter ad Vincula*, who received him at the *Appian* gate, and conducted him to the *Vatican*.

A jubilee
celebrated
at Rome.

A. D.

1475.

THE following year, according to the pope's bull, the jubilee was celebrated at *Rome*, but not with such a great concourse of pilgrims as was expected; for many who had laid in great stores of provisions were obliged to sell them at an under-price^k. As many persons had entered *Italy*, who were afraid of proceeding to *Rome*, *Sixtus* appointed a jubilee to be held at *Bologna*, from the 1st of *May* to the end of the year; on which account great numbers of pilgrims resorted to that city^l. Among those that went to *Rome* was *Ferdinand* king of *Naples*, who obtained from the pope the remission of the yearly tribute due to the *Roman* see, on condition of sending every year a white horse, with his trappings, to *Rome*^m. *Ferdinand* likewise succeeded in dissolving the alliance which had been concluded betwixt the duke of *Milan*,

^h Extravagan. Commun. l. v. tit. 9. c. 4.

Saxon. l. xii. c. 12. Pap. epist. 556.

Sixt. IV.

ⁱ SIGON. de Episc. Behon. l. iv. hoc anno.

^m ONUPHR. in Sixt. IV.

^k KRANTZ

CIACON. in

the *Venetians*, and *Florentines* ⁿ. The pope in the mean time, being informed that the *Turks* had taken *Croja* in *Albania* from the *Venetians*, and *Caffa*, a strong city in the *Tauric Chersonese*, from the *Genoese*, he wrote to the kings of *Poland* and *Hungary*, exhorting them to conclude a peace, and to unite their arms against the infidels. These two princes began to be both alarmed at the progress of the *Turks*, and accordingly agreed to a peace; by which *Matthias* was left in possession of *Moravia* and *Silesia*, and *Uladislaus* was acknowledged king of *Bohemia*. *Sixtus* soon after was obliged to quit *Rome* on account of the plague, which raged in the city in consequence of a dreadful inundation of the *Tiber*, the waters of which, in the beginning of *January*, had risen to the first step of the high altar in *St. Paul's* church ^o. As a means to remove this calamity, the pope published a bull for celebrating the office of the immaculate conception of the *Virgin Mary*, promising indulgencies to those who should either recite the office in private, or be present when it was publicly celebrated ^p. This bull, however was publicly contradicted by a great many orders of monks, who, both in their sermons and books, asserted, that it was a mortal sin to believe the immaculate conception of the *Blessed Virgin*, and that even to be present at the office was a crime ^q.

The pope is obliged to quit the city on account of the plague. A. D. 1476.

THE pope about this time being apprehensive lest the king of *France* should seize *Avignon*, as he had a great many troops in its neighbourhood, he sent his nephew cardinal *Julian* as legate into that kingdom. His visit was not very agreeable to the king, who obliged him to promise not to violate the rights, privileges, and prerogatives, of the *Gallican* church. *Lewis* likewise published several edicts derogatory to the honour of the apostolic see. By the first he declared, that, as the council of *Constance* had given an authority to kings of demanding every five years the convocation of a general council, he intended, as soon as possible, to use that privilege, and therefore ordered all the prelates to repair to their respective dioceses to expect the citation. By another he prohibited, under pain of banishment, any abbot, prior, or monk, from going out of the kingdom to the general chapter of their orders. In the mean time the *Turks*, after ravaging *Molavia*, having been obliged to retire upon the approach of the king of *Poland* with a numerous army, *Matthias* king of *Hungary* arrogated to himself the

The king of France publishes several edicts derogatory to the authority of the holy see.

ⁿ PALM. in Chron. Commun. l. iii. tit. 12.

Pap. epist. 642.
^q SPOND. Annal.

^p Extravag.

honour of their retreat, and wrote to *Italy*, declaring that he had defeated them; in consideration of which pretended service his name was greatly celebrated at *Rome*, and he obtained a subsidy of 200,000 crowns from the pope and the states of *Italy*: however, soon after, while he was celebrating his marriage with *Beatrice* the daughter of the king of *Naples*, the *Turks* made themselves masters of *Sinderavia*, and ravaged great part of *Carniola*, *Carinthia*, and *Stiria* ^r. The year following *Matthias* lost his subsidy from the pope and the states of *Italy*, as he had neglected the defence of his own kingdom against the *Turks*, to make war upon the emperor, who had remonstrated against his marriage, as a breach of the treaty subsisting betwixt them, by which *Frederick* was declared heir to the kingdom of *Hungary* ^s.

Sixtus enters into a conspiracy to murder the Medici at Florence.

A.D.
1478.

MEAN while, the duke of *Milan* being assassinated in the church of *St. Ambrose*, *Italy* was soon after divided into two factions. The widow of the late duke assuming the administration of the government for her son, who was then a boy, made an alliance with the *Venetians*, and with *Laurence* and *Julian Medici*, who, with their friends and dependents, governed the republic of *Florence*. The pope, who was at enmity with the family of the *Medici*, entered into a conspiracy against them with the family of the *Pazzi*, and made an alliance with *Ferdinand* king of *Naples*. According to *Machiavel*, the pope created one *Salviati*, an enemy of the house of *Medici*, archbishop of *Pisa*, to whom the senate of *Florence* refused to give possession ^t. Other authors relate, that *Laurence Medici*, being offended that the pope had refused to create his brother *Julian* a cardinal, gave assistance in men and money to the lord of *Castello*, who recovered his inheritance from the pope, and likewise disappointed *Sixtus* in purchasing *Imola*, by lending money to the prince, which prevented him from selling his patrimony. In resentment for these affronts, the pope entered into a conspiracy with the *Pazzi*, the rivals of the *Medici*, to murder *Laurence* and *Julian*, and to change the government of *Florence*. But, that such a horrid wickedness might not seem to have entered into the heart of a pope, he trusted the whole management of the plot to his nephew *Jerónimo*. However, he allowed him to use his authority to influence some of the *Pazzi*, who refused to be concerned in the plot, and prevailed with the king of *Naples* to send some troops

^r Pap. epist. 644. 648. MICHOV. l. iv. c. 71. ^s MICHOV. l. iv. c. 72. CROMER. d. xxviii. in fin. BONF. dec. iv. l. 5. p. 437. ^t MACHIAV. Hist. Flor. l. viii.

into *Tuscany*, under pretence of recovering some towns that belonged to the ecclesiastical state; but, in reality, to seize *Florence* upon the death of the *Medici*. The conspirators, having a long time waited for an opportunity to find the two brothers together, at length determined to attack them in the cathedral church during the celebration of mass, while the archbishop of *Pisa* should seize the palace and surprize the senate. However they failed in their attempt; for *Julian* was only slain, and *Laurence* saved himself in the vestry. The senate, likewise being alarmed with the behaviour of the archbishop, seized him and some others, and immediately put them to death; and, the people crowding to the palace in defence of *Laurence*, the greatest part of the conspirators were apprehended and executed.

THE pope, seeing the plot miscarry, immediately deter-
 mined upon an open war, which he commenced with his
 spiritual arms, laying the city of *Florence* under an in-
 terdict, on account of the violence they had committed
 against the ecclesiastics, in putting the archbishop of *Pisa* to
 death, and imprisoning the cardinal of *St. George*, who had
 been sent for from *Pisa* to countenance the plot, and was pre-
 sent in the church when *Julian Medici* was slain. The *Floren-*
tines, in their own justification, wrote to all the states of
Italy, setting forth the wickedness and injustice of the pope,
 from whom they appealed to a general council; and as the
 papal army, with the troops of the king of *Naples*, were
 marching against them, they demanded succours from the
 king of *France*, the duke of *Milan*, the *Venetians*, and other
 states. They procured some assistance from the dukes of *who are*
Milan, *Ferrara*, and *Mantua*, and the king of *France* sent assisted by
 them 300 horse, under the command of *Philip de Commines*, the king of
 the famous historian*; by which they were enabled to op-
 pose the progress of the enemy till winter obliged them to
 quit the field. The king of *France* likewise sent ambassadors
 to the pope, desiring him to take off the interdict from the
Florentines, or to call a general council, declaring, that, if
 he would not consent, he himself, with other princes, would
 convoke a council to redress the grievances of the church.
 He assembled the nobles and prelates of his kingdom in a
 convention at *Orleans*, to consult about restoring the prag-
 matic sanction and abrogating the annates, and recalled all
 those from the *Roman Court* who held benefices in *France*,

ist. IV. BRUT. l. vi. & vii. VOLATER. l. v.

* COMMUN. l. vi. c. 5.

P

under

under pain of forfeiting their revenues. By these proceedings he seems to have designed only to intimidate the pope, for nothing material was transacted at *Orleans*; however, on the 16th of *August*, the king published an edict, wherein, after complaining of the pope's proceedings against the *Florentines*, and of the grievous exactions of money which he squandered in unjust wars, he prohibited all his subjects from carrying or sending money to *Rome*, or from going thither to solicit for benefices^y. The pope, by the advice of the cardinal of *Pavia*^z, endeavoured to soothe the king, by reminding him that *Charlemagne* declared, that, tho' the yoke of the church was grievous, it ought to be borne with submission and humility; he promised to send a nuncio to satisfy him of the justness of his proceedings against the *Florentines*, who had most outrageously violated the ecclesiastical liberty; that, therefore, to convoke a general council would be for the advantage of his cause, but this expedient was not proper, as it required a long time; and as to renewing the pragmatic sanction, he wondered the king should think of that, as he had formerly declared, that he had abolished it for just reasons. This answer of the pope did not satisfy the king of *France*, whose example seems to have been imitated by the *Venetians* and *Milanese*; for it appears from a monitory of *Sixtus* to the emperor^a, that both these recalled their prelates, and withdrew their obedience from the pope.

DURING these transactions the pope being informed that the archbishop of *Cologne* was imprisoned by the landgrave of *Hesse*, he sent two legates into *Germany* to treat with the emperor, the landgrave, and other princes, about procuring his liberty: however his endeavours were fruitless; for, after two years confinement, the archbishop died in prison^b. About the same time he published a bull, revoking all the powers of absolving from crimes, which had been granted to a great many laymen as well as clergy, and, as the authority of the keys was thereby brought into contempt, for the future he reserved that authority for the apostolic see alone^c (C).

In

^y GAGUIN. l. x. MIL. in Ludov. XI. SPOND. Annal.

^z Pap. epist. 677.

^a Bzov. ex cod. Vatic. an. 1479.

^b Idem hoc. an. 1521. KAN. Canon. l. ii. c. 22.

^c Extravag.

Commun. l. v. tit. 9.

(C) The inquisition, which and *Germany*, was this year introduced into the kingdom of *Arragon*, *Italy*, *France*, *Castile*, by means of *Gonzalvo*

In the mean time embassies had arrived at *Rome* from the different provinces of *Europe*, in vain intreating the pope to an accommodation with the *Florentines*. *Sixtus* refused to hearken to any terms of peace, unless *Laurence de Medicis* was delivered up: the war therefore continued, but with small success to either side; the advantage, however, was chiefly on the part of the pope ^d. Towards the end of the campaign the king and the pope, to give some hopes of peace, offered a truce for three months to the *Florentines*, which they accepted of; and during this short respite, having leisure to reflect upon their calamities, they resolved, if possible, to detach *Ferdinand* from the pope's interest: accordingly *Laurence de Medicis* went as ambassador from the *Florentines* to *Naples*, where he was so successful as to conclude an offensive and defensive alliance with *Ferdinand* ^e. *Sixtus* in the mean time was informed, that one *Peter de Osma*, a professor of divinity at *Salamanca*, had published a book, containing a great many propositions contrary to the catholic faith; namely, that the popes were not infallible, and could not remit the pains of purgatory, or dispense with the decrees of the universal church; that the sacrament of penance was only an invention of men, and that mortal sins were only expiated by contrition of heart. These propositions being condemned in a council held by the archbishop of *Toledo*, the pope soon after examined them at *Rome*, and confirmed the sentence of the archbishop, denouncing an anathema against the author if he did not recant ^f (D).

SOON

^d Ap. Pap. epist. 680. OUPHR. in Sixt. IV.
CHIAV. Hist. Flor. l. viii. ^f SPOND. Annal.

^e MAL-

de Mendoza, cardinal of *Spain*, *Thomas Tunecremata*, a *Dominican* friar, and the king's confessor was appointed governor, who upon publishing an edict, offering a pardon to those who confessed their heresy, no less than 17,000 became voluntary penitents. Two thousand, who were convicted of obstinacy, were condemned to the flame, and a greater number saved themselves by flight in the neighbouring provinces. From

this beginning, the inquisition acquired such authority, that nothing, according to *Mariana*, could be a greater terror to wicked men, or of more service to the common-wealth (1).

(D) This same year one *John Ruard*, a doctor of divinity, was condemned at *Mentz* by the inquisition, and ordered to recant some propositions which he had publicly preached at *Worms*. His book was buried before his eyes, and he

(1) *Marian. l. xxiv. c. 17.*

French prelates had been summoned to assemble to proceed against him for his conduct towards the *Florentines*, he invited all the Christian princes and prelates to assemble at *Rome*, and intimated to the *Florentines*, that he was willing to hearken to an accommodation. That republic accordingly sent twelve ambassadors to *Rome*, who were absolved, and admitted into the presence of the pope, after they had submitted to lie down before the door of *St. Peter's* church, and to receive some strokes with a rodⁱ. *Sixtus* behaved to them with great haughtiness, and after the articles of peace were agreed to, and the benediction read, he added, that, if they would enjoy the fruits of the benediction, they must maintain fifteen galleys against the *Turks* while they continued in *Italy*. The *Florentines* remonstrated against this heavy imposition, and sent another ambassador to *Rome*, who ratified the peace, and obtained some alleviation of the subsidy imposed upon them^k. *Sixtus* about the same time sent his nephew cardinal *Julian* as his legate to *France*, to reconcile *Lewis XI.* and *Maximilian* the emperor's son, who had married the heiress of the late duke of *Burgundy*; but *Maximilian*, the year before having gained a victory over the king of *France*, refused to hearken to any accommodation. The legate, finding his endeavours to conclude a peace ineffectual, returned to *Italy*, together with cardinal *Balues*, a *French* bishop, who had been detained eleven years in prison by the king on account of treason^l.

MEAN while, in order to oppose the progress of the *Turks*, *Sollicits Sixtus* published a letter, addressed to all kings and princes, the assistance of those who were at war to conclude a peace, or, at least a truce for three years, and exhorting them to a crusade against the infidels^m. This letter produced but small effect among the Christian princes; however we find that the king of *Scotland*, who had assembled a powerful army to invade *England*, stopped his march upon a prohibition from a certain apostolic legate who was then in *Britain*, altho' the *English* at the same time despised the legate's authority, and attacked *Scotland*ⁿ. Several of the *Italian* states assisted *Ferdinand* with money and ships; his uncle the king of *Castile* sent 3000 men; his son-in-law the king of *Hungary*, in consideration of a large subsidy, sent 2000 horse into *Apulia*; who, according to *Bonfinius*, provoked the attack of the *Turks* the same

Christian
princes.
A. D.
1481.

ⁱ MICH. BRUT. Hist. Flor. l. i. VOLAT. l. v. SPOND. Annal.
^k MACHIAV. Hist. Florent. l. viii. ^l COMMUN.
^m Terc. German. Script. Edit. Frensch. t. ii. p. 161. ⁿ LESLÆ,
l. viii. ^o DYAR. PARMENS. a. j. Murator. t. xxii. p. 363.

Mohammed dies,
and the
Turks
evacuate
Italy.

hour that they arrived in the *Italian* camp^p. But what contributed more than all his auxiliaries to free his kingdom from the ravages of the infidels, was the death of *Mohammed*, which happened on the third of *May*. The *Turks* who had seized *Otranto*, being deprived of succours during the dispute betwixt the sons of *Mohammed* about the succession, *Ferdinand* soon after made himself master of the city, and obliged them to evacuate *Italy*.

Sixtus embroils
Italy in
new wars.

Sixtus, having quite exhausted his treasury in subsidies against the *Turks*, imposed new tythes upon the clergy, and instituted several new offices in the *Roman* court; which were put to sale, without regard to the qualifications of the persons who bought them^q. But, instead of assisting *Ferdinand* to prosecute the war against the *Turks*, he involved *Italy* in new broils, in order to satisfy his own private revenge. In resentment^r for the separate peace which *Ferdinand* had concluded with the *Florentines*, he entered into an alliance against him with the *Venetians*, sending his nephew *Jeronimo* thither with a magnificent retinue, under pretence of receiving the honour of nobility in that city^r; but, in reality, to concert with them a scheme for attacking *Ferdinand's* son-in-law, the duke of *Ferrara*. Accordingly the following year the *Venetians*, who were elated with their great wealth and power, having made a partition of the duchy with *Jeronimo*, took an opportunity to quarrel with the duke, under pretence that their residence at *Ferrara* had been affronted, and that the duke had imposed some customs upon their ships contrary to treaty^s. On the second of *May* they declared war against the duke; and, attacking him by sea and land, quickly made themselves masters of the greatest part of his territories. Mean while his ambassadors, and those of *Ferdinand*, the *Florentines*, and *Milanese*, finding their endeavours to detach *Sixtus* from the party of the *Venetians* ineffectual, left *Rome*, where the pope was making the greatest preparations for war, contrary to the inclination of the *Romans*, who openly condemned his proceedings, and, on the eve of *Whitsuntide*, one father *Tuscanella*, in his sermon, inveighed with the greatest freedom against the pope and the whole court. *Sixtus*, however, filled the city with soldiers, and sent his nephew *Jeronimo*, with an army, to oppose the *Neapolitans* who had taken the command of *Al-*

The Romans
threaten
an insur-
rection.

A. D.
1482.

^p BONFIN. Dec. iv. l. 61. ^q O. R. in Sixt. IV.
^r DIAR. PARM. ut supra. ^r PERR. CYRN. de bello Ferrar. apud
Murator. t. xxi. p. 95. ^s Vite de Duchi di Venezia ap.
Murator. t. xxii. p. 105. ^t PERR. CYRN. ut supra.

Alphonso, the king's eldest son, wanted to force their way to the duchy of *Ferrara*, through the ecclesiastical state. As *The Neapolitans* the pope was obliged to keep a strong garrison in *Rome*, to prevent an insurrection of the people, his army was not able to act offensively; and the *Colonna* and *Savelli* revolting to *Alphonso*, and admitting his troops into two of their towns, the *Neapolitans* ravaged the *Roman* territory to the very gates of *Rome*. At the same time it was reported in the city, that the emperor had assembled a council at *Basil*, to proceed against the pope.

Sixtus in this extremity excommunicated all his enemies, imprisoned the cardinals *Colonna* and *Savelli* in the castle of *St. Angelo*, made an alliance with the *Genoese*, and solicited a reinforcement from the *Venetians*. That republic accordingly sent *Malatesta*, lord of *Rimini*, with a considerable body of troops, who, joining the army under *Jerónimo*, attacked and defeated the *Neapolitans*, with considerable loss, taking a great many prisoners, among whom was the duke of *Melfi*, who was honourably treated by the pope, and sent back to *Naples*. A few weeks after ambassadors arrived at *Rome* from *Ferdinand* to treat of peace, and others arriving also from the king's allies, the pope was prevailed upon to agree to a peace and mutual alliance for twenty years, on these conditions, that all places taken during the war should be restored, the allies should pay a subsidy of 40,000 crowns to *Jerónimo* for three years, and, for their mutual defence, should furnish a certain quota of troops, which should be commanded by the cardinal legate of *Mantua*. The treaty was published on *Christmas-day*, and thirty days were allowed to the *Venetians* and all the allies on both sides to declare their assent. A few days after the duke of *Calabria* arrived at *Rome*, where he was treated with great honour by the pope (E). After some conferences he pro-

A peace concluded betwixt the pope and the king of Naples.

† *DIAR. ROMAN. ap. Murat. t. xxiii. p. 175. 184.* ▯ *Vite de Duchi, ut sup.* ^w *DIAR. ROMAN. p. 181. Vite de Duchi, p. 1220.*

(E) The night of his arrival, upon the door of his lodging the following verse was written

I celer, O Calaber, Vene, &c. p. 120. Is futurus.

Proceed, *Alphonso*, to *Ferrara* to dignify the triumph of the *Venetians*.

The duke complaining of his ambassador, was immediately insult to the pope; the *Vene* ordered to leave *Rome* (1).

(1) *Vite de Duchi, ut sup.*

ceeded,

A. D.
1483.

Sixtus
joins in the
war a-
gainst his
former
ally.

The Ve-
netians
are reduc-
ed to great
distress.

Conclude a
separate
peace with

ceeded to the relief of *Ferrara*; which, notwithstanding the rigour of the season, was besieged by the enemy. The pope, before the publication of the peace, had written to the *Venetians*, desiring them to cease hostilities, and to accede to the general peace; but that republic, elated with their successes, refused to hearken to any accommodation, and finding that the pope had abandoned them, and concluded an alliance with their enemies, they threatened to introduce the *Turks* into *Apulia*, and sent an ambassador to *René*, duke of *Lorraine*, offering him their assistance in making good his pretensions to the kingdom of *Naples* *. *Sixtus*, finding the *Venetians* resolved to continue the war, denounced a sentence of excommunication against them, and his legate, the cardinal of *Mantua*, held a general council of the confederates at *Cremona*, in which they settled the plan of operation for the campaign. In consequence of the deliberations of that assembly, the duke of *Calabria* entered the *Venetian* territories, and ravaged the country in the neighbourhood of *Bergamo*, *Brescia*, and *Verona*, while his brother *Frederic* sailed into the *Adriatic* with a fleet, and seized a great many *Venetian* ships at *Ancona*, and on the coasts of *Dalmatia*.

THE *Venetians*, being reduced to great extremity for want of money, and of sailors to man their fleet, had recourse to supplications and processions, and sent ambassadors to the emperor to prevail with him to renounce his obedience to the pope, and to call a general council †. During these transactions in *Lombardy*, the pope being informed of the death of *Lewis XI.* of *France*, and of *Edward IV.* of *England*, ordered the service of the dead to be celebrated for them both. Soon after he set the cardinals *Colonna* and *Savelli* at liberty, and promoted five others to that dignity. About the same time new disturbances happened at *Rome*, by a second revolt of the family of *Colonna*; but *Jeronimo*, attacking their palace with the pope's guards, after a sharp resistance, forced the house, and took *Laurence Colonna* prisoner, who was immediately carried to the castle of *St. Angelo*, where he was soon after beheaded. *Jeronimo* likewise raised an army, and marched against those towns that adhered to the party of *Colonna*.

MEAN while *Lewis XI.* a governor of the duke of *Milan*, thinking himself neglected by the duke of *Calabria*, was prevailed upon to agree to a separate peace with the *Venetians*, which was concluded on the seventh of *August* ‡.

* *Storia Veneziana* ap. Muratori. xxiii. p. 1
CYRN. ut sup.

† See the History of the Re

‡ *Petr.*
ic of Venice.

This peace, which was greatly to the advantage of the *Venetians*, gave great dissatisfaction to the allies; however, they were obliged to accede, as they were not able to continue the war against that republic, when strengthened by the alliance of the *Milanese*. Their ambassadors immediately proceeded to *Rome*, where the pope had been, for some days greatly afflicted with the gout: altho' he had that day dismissed the cardinals without holding a consistory, yet he ordered the ambassadors to be introduced into his chamber; where, upon hearing of the terms of peace, in which his nephew *Jeronimo* was not considered, he exclaimed with great vehemence against the allies, his voice even failing him during his discourse. The physicians being called in, the ambassadors retired, and the pope, being carried to his bed, languished a few days, and died on the 13th of *August* ^a (F). *Sixtus*, during his pontificate, adorned the city of *Rome* with several new buildings; particularly, by rebuilding the bridge of *Janicula* over the *Tyber*, which is now called *Ponte Sesto*. He likewise built the famous *Vatican* library, which he furnished with books from all parts of *Europe*, and appropriated certain revenues for purchasing of books, and maintaining *Greek*, *Latin*, and *Hebrew* librarians ^b. However, he does not appear to have been very liberal to men of genius and learning. *Theodorus Gaza*, having presented to him a fine edition of *Aristotle's* books on animals, received from him only 200 ducats; which, from disdain, he immediately threw into the *Tyber* ^c: and *Raphael of Volterra* relates, that he saw many eminent men who came to *Rome* in great expectation, who were obliged soon after to depart in great want ^d.

The pope is greatly offended, and dies at Rome.

UPON the death of *Sixtus* all *Rome* was in confusion. *Jeronimo* immediately retired with some of his troops to the castle of *Spoletto*, and sent others to defend his palace in *Rome*; but the college of cardinals would not admit them into the city, and his palace was burned by the party of *Savelli* and *Colonna*, his countess being obliged to save herself in the house of the cardinal of *Milan*. However, the opposite party of the *Ursini* were in possession of the castle of

Great disturbances at Rome.

^a DIAR. VOLAT. ut sup. ^b OROZ. CHR. in Sixt. ^c JOVI in Elog. ^d VOLAT. in Reg. Elog. l. xi.

(F) His dying immediately gave occasion to the following epigram:

*Sistere qui nullo potuit sedere Sixtus
Auxilio tantum nuncine pacis obit.*

. St. Angelo.

Innocent
VIII. A.
elected
pope.

A. D.
1485.

He engages
in a war
against
the king of
Naples;

St. Angelo, and some other places of strength in *Rome*, and threatened to elect a pope by themselves. The cardinals who were in the other interest, to prevent a schism, granted *Jeronimo* 6000 ducats as arrears due to him as general of the church, and gave him a safe conduct to retire into *Imola*; on which account the *Ursini* surrendered the castle of *St. Angelo*, and a truce was made for a month betwixt both parties, that the pope might be legally elected ^e. Accordingly twenty-five cardinals entered the conclave on the 26th of *August*, and next day chose *John Baptist Cylio*, cardinal bishop of *Melfi*, born at *Genoa*, of a noble family, which had formerly come from *Greece* ^f. He had spent the first part of his life in the service of the king of *Naples*, as a layman, and by a wife had several children. After her death he took orders, and was created bishop of *Melfi* and cardinal by *Sixtus IV*. The new pope assumed the name of *Innocent VIII.* and soon after his election sent legates to the different princes of *Europe*, exhorting them to peace, and to a general alliance against the *Turks*. In the beginning of the following year, he absolved the *Venetians* from the excommunication and interdict denounced against them by *Sixtus*, and endeavoured to reconcile the *Colonna* and *Ursini*, who continued hostilities against each other in the neighbourhood of *Rome*, to the great disturbance of the city.

WHILE he exhorted others to peace, he himself engaged in a war against *Ferdinand* king of *Naples*, in behalf of the city of *Aquila*, and several nobles who had revolted, because the king, for some slight suspicions, had ordered the count *Montorio* to be put to death. *Innocent*, upon their complaint, cited *Ferdinand* to appear at *Rome*, and gave the command of the church forces to *Robert Sanseverius*, who had been the general of the *Venetians* in the late war ^h. The *Ursini* family adhered to the party of *Ferdinand*, and several places were taken by the forces on both sides; but no action happened of any great consequence. In *January* following the *Ursini* were reconciled to the pope, and soon after, at the intercession of the ambassador of the king of *Spain*, *Ferdinand* agreed to a peace on these conditions; that he should pardon all the lords and barons who had been concerned in the war against him; that the city of *Aquila* should be left at liberty, either to acknowledge the pope or the king as their superior; that *Ferdinand* should not pretend to any farther

^e Vite de Duchi, ut sup.
SPOND. Annal.

^f ONUPHR. in Innoc. VIII.
^g Vite de Duchi, ut sup.

^h Id. ib.

Istor. Napolit. ap. MURAT. t. XXII. p. 237, 238.

collation of benefices, and should pay all the arrears of his tribute at a convenient time; and that *Virginus Ursino* should ask pardon of the pope on his knees, with a rope about his neck¹. This peace was guarantied by the king of *Spain*, the duke of *Milan*, and *Laurence de Medicis*; but the pope had no sooner disbanded his forces than it was violated by *Ferdinand*, who imprisoned the barons that had put themselves under the protection of *Innocent*, and a few months afterwards put them to death, and confiscated their estates. The pope remonstrated with great vehemence against his proceedings; and in the mean time having received an embassy from the emperor, informing him that the princes of the empire proposed to elect his son *Maximilian* king of the Romans, he gave his consent, upon being assured of the obedience of the archduke, and that he would confirm the privileges of the apostolic see^k.

INNOCENT, being exhausted by the war with the king of *Naples*, imitated his predecessor *Sixtus*, by instituting several new offices, which he put to sale. He likewise imposed a tythe upon the *German* clergy; but they complaining to the emperor of this grievance, he was prevailed upon, at the intercession of *Frederic*, to remit that tax¹. About the same time the pope concluded an alliance betwixt his son and a daughter of *Laurence de Medicis*, and entered into a treaty with the *Venetians*, the marquises of *Montferrat* and *Mantua*, and with several other states. He likewise solicited the *Florentine* ambassador, and those of the king of *Castile* and of the duke of *Milan*, to exhort the king of *Naples* to observe the late peace, otherwise he would draw upon himself the resentment of the apostolic see^m. In the mean time he was alarmed with the revolt of *Boccalino*, governor of *Osimo*, a strong city in the march of *Ancona*. The governor, finding the garrison discontented upon account of the great arrears of their pay, prevailed upon them to revolt, and, by their assistance, expelled those who favoured the pope, and sent his brother with an offer of submission to the grand signior. But, by the persuasion of the *Venetian* governor in *Romagna*, he was prevailed upon to deliver up the city to the pope; and, having obtained security for his person, he retired to *Florence*ⁿ. Soon after being solicited by the *Venetians* to mediate a peace betwixt them and the archduke of

¹ OUPH. & CIAC. in Innoc. Bzov. ann. 1485, 1486.

^k Bzov. hcc an.

¹ Nav. le. Gener. 50.

^m Istor.

Napol. ut sup.

ⁿ Vite Duchi. MACHIAV. Hist. Flor.

l. viii.

Austria, who, upon a dispute about some iron mines, had attacked their territories, he sent the bishop of *Osimo* as his legate to the *Austrian* camp, who was so successful as to conclude a peace°. Mean while he published a bull, condemning a book of *John Picus*, count of *Concordia* and *Mirandola*, prohibiting any one from reading it under pain of excommunication; but he did not censure the author, as he declared that he published the book only as a subject for scholastic disputations, and under the correction of the apostolic see ^P (G).

The brother of the grand signor a prisoner at Rome.
 A. D. 1488.
 In the beginning of the following year, *Innocent* made a promotion of several cardinals, among whom was the son of *Laurence de Medicis*, a boy of fourteen years of age, and *Peter Daubuffon*, grand master of *Rhodes*, who had lately gratified the pope by allowing his prisoner *Zem*, or *Zizim*, brother of the grand signor, to be transported to *Rome*. *Zem* had been first sent to *France*, where he was guarded by the knights of *Rhodes*; but *Charles VIII.* consenting to his removal, he arrived at *Rome* about the middle of *March*, and was pre-

• *Vite de Duchi*, ut sup.

^P SPOND. ANNAL.

(G) *John Picus* was descended of the ancient family of the counts of *Mirandola*, celebrated in *Italy* from the year 1110. He was much more illustrious for his genius than his nobility, and obtained the title of the phoenix of his age, and by *Scaliger* is called *Monstrum sine Vitio*. At the age of ten years he studied the law, and published commentaries on that subject. At eighteen years of age he understood twenty-two languages, and had only entered his twenty-fifth year when he published his book containing 900 theses in logic, divinity, mathematics, magic, physics, and the cabbala, which he undertook to defend. The

vocates of ignorance were greatly alarmed, and prevailed with the pope to condemn his book. However he justified himself in an apology, in which, as a proof of the ignorance of his opposers, he mentions, that a theologian, who had shewn himself very zealous in censuring his book, being asked what was the meaning of the word cabbala, he answered, That he was a wicked man and a heretic, who had written against *Jesus Christ*, and that those who followed his opinion were called *Cabbalists*. *Picus* died at *Florence* in the 32d year of his age, and is interred in the church of *S. Mark*, with the following epitaph upon his tomb:

*Hic fuit Picus Mirandola; cætera norunt—
 Et Tagus & Ganges, forsan, & Antipodes (1).*

(1) *Vite Pic. impr. Basil, an. 1511; & 1601. Tritib. & Bell. de S. Eusebio.*

sent to the pope in a public consistory by the ambassador of France; but, notwithstanding the intreaties and threats of all who were present, he would not kneel before his holiness, or consent to kiss his feet¹. In the mean time, being informed that *Maximilian*, king of the *Romans*, had been imprisoned by the inhabitants of *Bruges*, under suspicion of having attempted to deprive them of their liberties, he wrote to the archbishop of *Cologne*, ordering him to excommunicate the rebels, if they did not set their prince at liberty within a certain time. A remonstrance against this letter of the pope was published in *France*, urging that it must either be a forgery, or had been subscribed by the pope without his perusal of the contents, as the *Flemings* acknowledged no superior but the king of *France*². The censures of the pope were not regarded by the rebels; however, after they had put to death several of the king's party, they set him again at liberty³. During this disturbance in *Flanders*, *Innocent*, at the intreaty of *James III.* king of *Scotland*, had sent a legate into that kingdom, to prevail with the nobles to lay down their arms and submit to his authority; but before his arrival the king, having ventured an engagement with the rebels, was defeated and slain⁴ (H). A few months after *Innocent*, not having been able to obtain satisfaction from *Ferdinand* for his violation of the late treaty, denounced an anathema against Ferdinand if he did not repent within sixty days. *Ferdinand* paying no regard to this threatening, the pope, on the 11th of September, declared him excommunicated. He likewise deposed him from the kingdom of *Naples*, published a crusade against him, and, as the king of *France* pretended to the kingdom of *Sicily*, in right of the late duke of *Anjou*, he invited that prince with an army into *Italy*, and appointed him general of the crusade⁵. *Ferdinand*, however, still despised all these fulminations; and the bishop of *Alexandria*, his am-

Innocent
deposes
nand, and
gives his
kingdom to
the king of
France.
A. D.
1489.

¹ Vite de Duchi, ut sup. ² SPOND. ANNAL. ³ KRANT. SAXON. l. xiii. c. 11. ⁴ LESSLÆ, l. vii. & viii. BUCHAN. l. xii. & xiii. POLYD. l. xxvi. ⁵ VIAL. in vit. INNOC. VIII. BZOV. hoc an.

(H) *Jerónimo*, nephew of the late pope, having rendered himself odious for his cruelty and avarice, was this year murdered at *Forlì*. It was suspected that *Innocent* and *Laurence Medici* designed to put their son *Vibo* in possession of that country; but, by the assistance of the *Milanese*, the widow of the deceased secured to herself the estate of her husband, and revenged his murder with great cruelty (2).

(2) *Machiav. Hist. Flor. l. 3. Vite de Duchi, ut sup.*

MOD. HIST. VOL. XXV.

Q

bassador,

bassador, had the confidence in the consistory to appeal from *Innocent* to a general council.

A. D. 1490. *A convention held at Rome, for the purpose of consulting of an expedition against the Turks.*

THE pope, in the mean time, sent a legate to *Germany*, by whose mediation a peace was concluded betwixt the archduke *Maximilian*, and the king of *France*, with regard to their disputes in *Flanders* and *Brittany*. About the same time he sent nuncios to the different kingdoms and republics of *Europe*, desiring them to send their deputies to *Rome*, to deliberate about a general expedition against the *Turks*, under pretence of assisting *Zem* against his brother *Bajazet*. A numerous convention was accordingly held at *Rome* the year following, in the month of *March*, in which it was agreed, that the pope should have liberty to raise tythes, annates, or daily contributions, for the expences of the war; that each prince should furnish, according to a settled proportion, either money, soldiers, or provisions; that if the king of *France*, *Spain*, or *England*, should go in person against the *Turks*, the pope should likewise accompany him; but if none of those kings engaged personally in the expedition, the forces by sea and land should be commanded by two cardinal legates; and, lastly, that the *Italians*, *French*, *Spaniards*, and *English*, should act by sea, and the *Germans*, *Bohemians*, *Poles*, and *Hungarians*, by land *. All these fine promises vanished, without taking effect; and *Innocent* soon after received an embassy from the Soltan of *Egypt*, who was at war with the *Turks*, desiring *Zem* to be sent to him, in order to distress the enemy. However, an ambassador about the same time arriving from *Bajazet*, intreating the pope to detain his brother, and offering an annual subsidy of 40,000 ducats for his subsistence, *Innocent* accepted of his proposal, and dropp'd all thoughts of the expedition *. Nevertheless it appears, that he did not neglect to raise the tythes in *France*; for he sent a mandate to the cardinal archbishop of *Lyons*, and others, ordering them to impose a tythe upon all ecclesiastics, secular and regular, and to depose and excommunicate those who refused to pay †. At the same time he wrote to the king of *France*, allowing him two thirds of the said tax for his expences in defending the church; on which account the university of *Paris* accused the pope of imposing the tythe only, with the intention of securing one-third of it for his private advantage, and not for employing it in any pious expedition; they therefore appealed from him to the apostolic see when better informed,

* Ibidem ibid.
Annal. hoc an.

† Vite de Duchi, p. 1224.

‡ SPOND.

and likewise to a future general council. In the mean time the pope granted a bull, confirming a society, which a few years before had been instituted at *Rome*, under the name of *the Misericordia*, for comforting those who were under sentence of death, and for taking charge of their funerals ^a. According to *Volaterranus*, he likewise allowed mass to be celebrated in *Norway* without wine; but *Spondanus* alleges, that this author must certainly be mistaken, as it is the opinion of theologians that the pope has no power to alter the divine institution ^a.

As *Ferdinand*, king of *Spain*, at this time was besieging *Granada*, the capital city of the *Moors*, *Innocent* allowed him ^{the pope grants a subsidy to the king of Spain against the Moors.} an annual subsidy of 70,000 crowns during the continuance of the war, which was concluded in the beginning of the following year, the city of *Granada* surrendering after a siege of eight months, and the *Moorish* king retiring, with great part of his subjects, into *Africa* ^b. At the same time, by the intercession of the king of *Spain*, a peace was concluded betwixt *Innocent* and the king of *Naples*, who

seems to have been prevailed upon to submit to the pope, from his apprehensions of the king of *France*, who was making great preparations to enter *Italy*. *Ferdinand* promised to pay the annual tribute according to ancient custom, to leave the collation of benefices to the pope, and to give satisfaction to the sons and heirs of those whom he had put to death; on which account the pope absolved him from all ecclesiastical censures, and gave a new investiture of the kingdom, not only to himself, but to his eldest son *Alphonfus*, duke of *Calabria*. The ambassador of *Renè*, duke of *Lorrain*, protested, in a public consistory, against this new investiture. However, his protestation had no other effect than to procure a pretended disquisition of the duke's right, by some cardinals and auditors of the rota ^c. *Innocent* survived this peace only a few weeks, and died on the 25th of *July*, in the 8th year of his pontificate, leaving *Italy* in great tranquillity, having so ballanced the power of each state, that, in all probability, the public quiet seemed secured for many years. However, this happiness was of very short continuance; for soon after his death, the nation was involved in all the miseries of war, which was chiefly owing to the ambition of his successor, and the untimely death of *Laurence de Medicis*, who had acquired a great authority, and was a check

^a Idem ibid. ^b VOLATER. l. vii. SPOND. Annal. ut supra. ^c CIAC. in Innocent VIII. ^c RESIER. in stem. Duc. Lothar. l. v.

upon the king of *Naples* and the governor of *Milan*, two princes of equal power and ambition^d.

Alexander VI.
is elected
ante.

THE death of *Innocent* was no sooner published, than all *Rome* was in confusion, occasioned by the factions formed by the different pretenders to the pontificate, the chief of whom were the cardinals *Sforza* and *Rovere*. However both these candidates were prevailed upon to resign their pretensions in favour of cardinal *Roderic Borgia*, who by great promises, and a liberal distribution of the great riches which he had amassed, acquired the plurality of the votes of the cardinals; and on the 10th of *August* was declared pope, by the name of *Alexander VI.*^e. He had been created a cardinal when a young man, by his uncle *Calixtus III.* but his life was so infamous, that *Pius II.* after having often reprov'd him, at length drov^e him from his presence^f. As his character was well known, his election alarmed all *Italy*; *Ferdinand* particularly declared, with tears, to his queen, that a pope had been chosen who would be most pernicious to all Christendom. This assertion of the king of *Naples* is confirmed by almost all the *Italian* poets and historians of these times. According to *Guicciardini*, *Alexander* had great natural abilities, and was remarkable for his address and power of persuasion; but was chiefly distinguished by his vices, which he enumerates, namely, debauchery, insincerity, impudence, irreligion, avarice, ambition, barbarous cruelty, and an immoderate desire of promoting his natural children to dignities and honours^g (I).

His

^d GUICCIARDINI, l. i. ^e PETR. MARTYR. Angler. Epist. 118. ONUPHR. in Alex. VI. Vite de Duchi ut supra.
^f Anec. Alexand. VI. p. 4, 5, 6, &c. ^g GUICCIARDINI, l. i.

(I) *Alexander*, when he was cardinal, kept in his house, as his wife, one *Vanocia*, a *Roman*, by whom he had four sons and one daughter. He purchased for his eldest son *John*, the duchy of *Candia* in *Spain*; but he dying soon after, he conferred that duchy on his third son *John*, who married the natural daughter of *Alphonfus*, duke of *Calabria*. The second son, *Cæsar*, was created

a cardinal, and afterwards duke of *Valentino*. The youngest son, *Geoffrey*, obtained a principality in *Naples*, and married another natural daughter of *Alphonfus*. His daughter *Lucretia* had been married, while he was a cardinal, to a *Spanish* nobleman; but after his promotion to the pontificate, he took her from her first husband, and gave her to the prince of *Pesaro*; then divorci^g her from him, he gave

His election being published, the states of *Italy* proposed ^{The states of Italy a- free to con- sulate his as a con- sult body.} to congratulate him by their ambassadors; and, by the advice of *Lewis Sforza*, governor of *Milan*, and uncle to the duke, they had agreed, that all their ambassadors should enter *Rome* on the same day, appear at the same time in the public consistory, and that one of them should address the pope in the name of all the rest, whereby *Italy* might seem one united body, and the pope might have no hopes of disturbing the public tranquillity. This proposal was prevented from being put in execution by *Peter de Medicis*, eldest son of the late *Laurence*, who, from a youthful vanity, desired to display his magnificence at *Rome*, as ambassador from *Florence*. This proceeding of *Peter*, in which he was joined by the king of *Naples*, gave great umbrage to *Lewis Sforza*; he accordingly took the first opportunity of exciting the pope against them both: and *Virginus Ursini*, *Peter's* brother-in-law, having about this time bought some castles in the neighbourhood of *Rome*, from the nephew of the late pope, he persuaded *Alexander* to claim them as fiefs fallen to the apostolic see, since the sale had been made without his knowledge. The pope accordingly insisted that *Virginus* should pay other 40,000 ducats to him, as supreme lord of those castles, which he had purchased from *Cibo*: but this proposal being rejected, he again offered to give the investiture of the castles to *Virginus*, and to conclude an alliance with *Ferdinand*, if the duke of *Calabria* would give one of his natural daughters to one of his sons. *Alphonfus* disdaining this alliance, the pope, in the month of *April*, concluded an offensive and defensive treaty with the republic of *Venice*, and with *Lewis Sforza*, governor of *Milan*, who having usurped the government from his nephew *John Galeazzo*, was afraid of the resentment of *Ferdinand*, who, at the intreaty of his grand daughter, *Galeazzo's* wife, had sent an ambassador to *Milan*, desiring *Lewis* to resign the administration ^h.

A. D.
1493.

LEWIS, far from hearkening to this proposal, sent am- ^{He joins with Sforza in inviting the king of France to} bassadors into *France*, desiring *Charles VIII.* to renew his pretensions to the kingdom of *Naples*, and offering to assist him in that enterprize both with men and money ⁱ. The pope readily agreed to this proposal, in hopes of obtaining

^h Vite de Duchi, Stor. di Ven. ana. DIAP. SANESI. ut supra. GUICCIARD. l. i. Cap. par. 7. ⁱ COMMEN. l. vii. c. 2.

gave her to a natural son of *Al-* the death of that husband, she
phonfus, king of *Naples*, and, after married the duke of *Ferrara* (1).

(1) Marf. l. vi. c. 5. Onuphr. in Alex. VI.

from

take possession of Naples: From Ferdinand through fear, what formerly he could not procure voluntarily; and Charles being prompted by several Neapolitan exiles, and by his favourites, who flattered him not only with the conquest of Naples, but even of the Turkish empire, entered into an alliance with Sforza, and promised to march with an army into Italy. Ferdinand, to avert this storm, proposed to Sforza to confirm him in his government, and endeavoured to conclude an alliance with the king of France, and resolved immediately to accommodate all his differences with the pope, who very readily hearkened to his proposals; and on condition that Virginus should pay to the apostolic see 40,000 ducats for his late purchase, and that Geoffrey, the pope's youngest son, should be contracted to Alphonsus's natural daughter, and be created prince of Squillaci, with a yearly revenue of 10,000 ducats, he promised, by a secret bull, to assist him in defending the kingdom of Naples.

he is reconciled to Ferdinand:

he grants America to the Spaniards.

In the mean time, being informed by the ambassadors of the king of Spain that Christopher Columbus had discovered America, or the West-Indies, he published a bull, granting to Ferdinand and Isabella, and to their heirs, all the islands and continents discovered, or to be discovered, on the west side of a meridian line, which line should be computed 100 leagues to the westward of the isles of Cape Verd, and the Azores: from this grant, however, he excepted all those lands which were already found out by other Christian princes, on the west side of the said line. These he left as the property of the possessors, and besides made it a condition of his grant, that the king should send learned and pious men to instruct the inhabitants of those countries in the Christian faith¹. Soon after, at the desire of Ladislaus, king of Hungary, he ordered a crusade to be preached against the Turks, charging his legate, the bishop of Trani, to negotiate an accommodation betwixt Hungary, Poland, and the emperor Maximilian, who a few months before had succeeded his father Frederic, that those two kingdoms, together with the empire, might unite their forces against the common enemy of Christendom; for which purpose he likewise wrote to the kings of Poland and Hungary, and to the princes of the empire². About the same time he made a promotion of twelve cardinals at Rome, among whom was Caesar Borgia, one of his natural sons, whose elevation was vigorously

¹ GUICCIARD. l. i. ² BULLAR. t. i. Alex. VI. Const. FI. BARROS. ASI. Dec. ii. l. iii. c. 2. ³ CROMER. l. xxx. RAINALD ad an. 1493. BONFIN. Dec. v. l. iii.

opposed

opposed for some time by the whole sacred college ^(K). A. D. 1494. Being still desirous of procuring new dignities to his children, he again threatened to desert the king of *Naples*, if he would not compel the cardinal of *St Peter* to deliver up the castle of *Ofia*, attributing the cardinal's rebellion to the king's instigation. *Ferdinand* in vain protested his innocence; but death prevented him from feeling the resentment of the pope, he being cut off by an apoplexy in the end of *January*.

ALEXANDER, during this second rupture, had again, in appearance, embraced the interest of the king of *France*, having, at his request, created the bishop of *St. Malo* a cardinal; and having, in conjunction with *Lewis Sforza*, taken into his pay *Prospero Colonna*, with a considerable body of horse. However, ambassadors arriving with large offers from *Alphonfus*, the successor of *Ferdinand*, he concluded a treaty of alliance with the new king, and sent his nephew, *John Borgia*, as his legate, who crowned him at *Naples* (L). A few months after four ambassadors arriving from *France*, and claiming the investiture of *Naples* in the name of king *Charles*, *Alexander* refused to grant their request; but declared, that, if the *French* king would cease his warlike preparations, and refer his pretensions to the decision of the apostolic see, he, as supreme lord of the fief, was ready to hear and judge of his claim. About the same time *Alexander*, having recovered the castle of *Ofia*, proposed to *Alphonfus* to unite their forces in *Romagna*, and to fit out several gallies, as the king of *France* had already taken possession of *Genoa*, and was equipping a fleet at *Marseilles*, with the intention of attacking *Naples* by sea. The king agreed to this proposal, and soon after had a personal conference with the pope at *Vicovario*, where they settled the plan of their operations, to prevent the *French* from entering the ecclesiastical state.

• DIAR. SANESI. Vite de Duchi, ut supra.

(K) *Alexander*, to remove the impediment to his son's promotion, suborned false witnesses, who swore that he was the legitimate son of another person (1).

(L) The following were some of the chief articles of the treaty. The pope promised the investiture of *Naples* to *Alphonfus*, with a diminution of the annual

tribute during his life, and created one of his bastard nephews a cardinal. The king on his side promised to pay, immediately, 30,000 ducats to the pope; to allow the duke of *Candia* 12,000 *per annum*, and the first principal vacant office in the kingdom; and to confer some of the chief benefices upon *Cesar Borgia* (2).

(1) *nicciard. l. i.*

(2) *Idem ibid.*

He solicited *Alexander* likewise solicited the assistance of the king of *Spain*, and sent a private embassy for the same purpose to the emperor of the *Turks*, informing him that the king of *France*, after he had conquered *Naples*, intended to attack *Greece*.

The ambassadors brought nothing from *Bajazet* but magnificent promises; but *Ferdinand* of *Castile* promising to send a fleet to the assistance of the king of *Naples*, the pope allowed him to apply all the money raised in his kingdom for the crusade, to the present expedition^o. He likewise published a bull, prohibiting the king of *France* from entering *Italy*, under pain of ecclesiastical censures; and by his nuncio at *Venice*, solicited that republic to enter into an alliance with him and *Alphonfus*, against the *French*^p.

The king of *France* enters *Italy* with an army; CHARLES however, notwithstanding the opposition of all his nobles, and his great want of money, which obliged him to pawn his jewels, at the instigation of the cardinal of *St. Peter's*, resolved to prosecute his expedition, and passing over the *Alps*, in the end of *August*, arrived at *Asti* on the 9th of *September*, where he was joined by *Lewis Sforza*, who accompanied him to *Pavia*, and from thence to *Placentia*. *Lewis* hearing of the death of his nephew the duke, whom he is supposed to have poisoned, returned to *Milan*, and, in prejudice of the infant son of the deceased, caused himself to be proclaimed duke, which title he had purchased from the emperor the year before. Mean while the king of *France*, being in great difficulty for want of money, and seeing no commotion in *Italy* in his favour, began to deliberate about repassing the *Alps*; but, being still urged by the duke of *Milan*, he advanced with his army, and took possession of *Lucca*, *Pisa*, and *Florence*, from which last city, *Peter de Medicis* had been expelled by the people, who declared for the *French*. Before king *Charles* had arrived at *Florence*, the *Colonnefi* had likewise declared for him at *Rome*, and had seized the castle of *Ostia* in his name. The pope then published loud complaints of the injuries he had received from the *French*, asked the assistance of all Christian princes, particularly of the king of *Spain* and the *Venetians*, and recalled his troops from the army in *Romagna*, with the intention of fortifying *Rome*. He likewise sent *Francesco Piccolomini*, cardinal of *Siena*, as his ambassador to *Charles*, but the king refused to admit him to an audience; and having seized the *Turkish* ambassador, who was carrying 40,000 ducats to *Rome*, he ordered his fleet to proceed to

and makes himself master of *Romagna* and *Tuscany*.

^o SPOND. Annal. ^p GUICCIARD. l. i. DIAR. SANES. ut supra. Chron. Venet. ap. Murator. t. xxiv. p. 7, 8, 9.

Ostia, to assist those that had declared for him ¹. Advancing soon after with his army towards *Siena*, the pope again sent three ambassadors to him to treat of an accommodation; but he declaring, that he intended to treat at *Rome*, *Alexander* immediately apprehended the cardinals *Colonna* and *Sforza*, and admitted the duke of *Calabria* with his army into the city, being greatly apprehensive of the designs of *Charles*. As he knew the king was accompanied by the cardinal of *St. Peter*, and was favoured by the greatest part of the sacred college, who were his enemies, he was greatly afraid of a rumour that prevailed, that the king intended to reform the church: he likewise dreaded his resentment, for having joined the king of *Naples*, after he had invited him into *Italy*; but receiving an embassy from him, declaring that he had no intention to interfere with the pontifical authority, and desiring to enter *Rome* in a peaceable manner, he consented to what he could not prevent.

THE king of *France* accordingly entered *Rome* in a triumphant manner, on the last day of *December*, late at night; *Rome* in but the pope, instead of receiving him, retired, in great terror, with two cardinals to the castle of *St. Angelo*. The other cardinals, to the number of eighteen, adhered to the king ², and solicited him earnestly to remove from the holy see a person detestable to all the world for his vices, assuring him, that it would be more glorious for him to free the church of God from the tyranny of a wicked pope, than it was for *Pepin* and *Charlemagne* to have delivered the former popes from their oppressors. *Alexander* however, by his gifts and promises, having got friends among the king's counsellors, *Charles* concluded a treaty with him, by which it was agreed, that, till the conquest of *Naples*, the king should be put in possession of the castles of *Civita Vecchia*, *Terracina*, and *Spoletto*; that the pope should pardon all the cardinals and barons that had adhered to the king; that he should give him the investiture of *Naples*, and deliver up to him the brother of the grand signor (M); and, lastly, that *Cesar Borgia*, and

A.D.
1495.

¹ Idem ibid.

² COMMUN. l. vii. c. 12.

(M) *Zem*, or *Zizim*, died at *Naples*, or, according to different authors, at *Capua*, or *Terracina*, having been poisoned by the connivance of the pope, before he was delivered to the

king of *France* (1). The *Turkish* annals relate, that he was poisoned by one *Mustapha*, sent to *Rome* by *Bajazet* with the annual pension, and that the pope gave his consent (2); which is

(1) *Jovian*, l. ii.

(2) *Leunclav*. l. xvi.

makes an
easy con-
quest of
Naples.

Borgia, cardinal of *Valentia*, should accompany the king three months as apostolical legate. This treaty being concluded, the pope returned to his palace, and afterwards received the king with great pomp in the church of *St. Peter*. The sacred college were highly offended with the king, for agreeing to an accommodation with the pope, and eight of the cardinals immediately left *Rome*. *Charles* likewise, in the end of *January*, marched with his army from the city towards *Naples*; but before his departure, he was informed, that *Alphonfus* had resigned his kingdom to his son *Ferdinand*, and had fled into *Sicily*. *Ferdinand*, however, was unable to make any opposition, and fled himself to the island of *Uchia*, leaving his kingdom to the possession of *Charles*, who entered *Naples* in a triumphant manner on the 22d of *February*.

The pope
concludes
a treaty
against
him with
several
princes.

THE rapid progress of the *French* king greatly alarmed all *Italy*, especially as he had left *French* garrisons in the fortified places of those territories through which he had passed, and still refused to withdraw them. *Cæsar Borgia* having fled from his camp before he had arrived at *Naples*, the pope thought himself no longer bound to observe the treaty which he had lately concluded with him at *Rome*; and in the month of *April* entered into an alliance with the emperor, the king of *Spain*, the *Venetians*, and the duke of *Milan*, under pretence of opposing the *Turks*, but in reality to oblige *Charles* to quit his conquests in *Italy*, by a secret article, the duke of *Milan* engaging to prevent any succours coming from *France*, which kingdom at the same time should be attacked by the emperor and the king of *Spain*. *Charles* being informed of this treaty, immediately resolved to return to *France*, before his enemies had assembled a force sufficient to oppose him; accordingly having left *Gilbert Montpensier* as his viceroy, with about 3000 horse, and a small body of infantry, on the 20th of *May* he left *Naples* with the rest of his army, and marched directly for *Rome*. *Alexander*, having again assembled his troops, and got some auxiliaries from his

* Idem, l. vii. c. 15. GUICCIARD. DIAR. FERRAR. Chron. Venet ut supra. DIAR. SANES ut supra.

in some measure confirmed by some time, and promises him a letter of *Bajazet* to the pope, 300,000 crowns if he would wherewith he advises *Alexander* to send his corpse to any port in hasten the death of his brother, the *Turkish* dominions (3). which at any rate must happen

(3) *Epist. Princip. Italic. Script.* vol. i. *Epist.* vi. edit, 1581.

allies,

allies, proposed to oppose the king; but, his fear prevailing, he abandoned the city and fled to *Orvieto*, and from thence to *Perugia*. *Charles* continued but two days in *Rome*, and ^{He returns} proceeded through *Viterbo*, *Siena*, and *Pisa*, to *Fornovo*, a village situated within eight miles of *Parma*. His camp was ^{and} there attacked on the 6th of *July* by the *Venetians*; but the enemy being repulsed, he advanced towards *Asti* and *Turin*, and, passing the *Alps*, arrived at *Grenoble* on the 27th of *October*.

THE day after the battle at *Fornovo*, *Ferdinand* had re-^{Ferdi-}turned to *Italy*, and being assisted by a great many volun-^{hand re-}dary troops from *Sicily*, and some troops from *Spain*, commanded ^{covers the} by the famous *Gonsalvo Hernandez of Cordova*, he immediately recovered several places in the kingdom of *Naples*; which ^{kingdom} of *Naples*. success had encouraged the pope to send a nuncio to the king of *France*, ordering him, under pain of ecclesiastical censures, to quit *Italy* within ten days, and to withdraw his troops from *Naples* within a limited time. This command was treated with great contempt by *Charles*, who threatened to return to *Rome*: however his affairs obliged him to repass the *Alps*. After his departure the pope sent troops to assist *Ferdinand*, and prohibited the *Genoese*, under pain of excommunication, from allowing the *French* to build any ships in their territories. *Ferdinand*, by the succours sent him by the pope, and the assistance of the *Spanish* and *Venetian* fleets, quickly recovered the greatest part of his kingdom. However, the troubles of *Italy* were not thereby composed; for a great many cities in *Romagna* and *Tuscany* were engaged in particular disputes, and *Aquila* and *Perugia*, with many other cities in the ecclesiastical state, refused obedience to the pope, and adhered to the party of the king of *France*, who had sent to the duke of *Milan*, demanding a passage and pro-^{The king}visions for 30,000 horse, with which he proposed to enter ^{of France} *Italy*. His threatening a second expedition struck a great ter-^{threatens}ror into the *Italian* states; the pope caused the castle of *St. Angelo* to be repaired, and the *Venetians* solicited the king ^{to return} to *Italy*. of *England* to declare war against *France*; but not succeeding at that court, they, with the duke of *Milan*, invited the emperor to enter *Italy*, and to take the command of their army, promising to take 4000 *Swiss* into their pay, and to allow him 20,000 ducats per month ^{u.}.

A. D.
1496.

THE emperor readily agreed to this proposal; and, against ^{The empe-}the inclination of the *Germans*, entered *Italy* in the month ^{ror enters}.

* DIAR. FERRAR. ut supra. p. 319, & 320.
Venet. ut supra.

u Chron.

Lombardy, to the assistance of the Venetians; **August**, with 1000 horse and 500 foot. The pope being informed of his arrival, sent his bastard son, cardinal *Giorgia*, to crown him emperor at *Milan*, as the *Venetians* had refused him a passage to *Rome* through their territories *. Soon after his arrival, the *Venetians* being informed of the death of the dauphin of *France*, which freed them from their apprehensions of a *French* invasion, they therefore resolved to free themselves likewise from the emperor; and for that purpose persuaded him to undertake the siege of *Leghorn*, which still held for the *French*, and was strongly fortified. *Maximilian* accordingly opened the siege; but his forces being inconsiderable, he quickly found the enterprize impracticable, and retired to *Pavia*, from whence he returned dissatisfied to *Germany*, the *Venetians* having neglected to pay their part of the subsidy *.

but returns dissatisfied to Germany. **Ferdinand** died at *Naples*, after he had recovered all his kingdom except *Taranto* and *Gaeta*. As he left no children, he was succeeded by his uncle *Frederic*, who soon recovered *Gaeta* and *Taranto*, and detained *Virginus Ursini*, and his son *Paul*, prisoners in the castle of *Naples*, they having in the late troubles adhered to the party of the king of *France*.

The pope attacks the territories of the Ursini. On this pretence the pope thought proper at this time to declare them rebels, and sent his son, the duke of *Candia*, with some troops, to take possession of their estates, who quickly made himself master of six of their castles. *Alexander* imprisoned several of the cardinals who opposed his proceedings, while others of them, to save themselves, were obliged to fly to different parts of *Italy* *. However he was soon prevailed upon to conclude a peace, his forces having been surprized and defeated by those of the *Ursini*, and the duke of *Urbino*, and many other persons of distinction, taken prisoners, among whom some authors mention the duke of *Candia* *. All the territories taken from the *Ursini* were restored to them, upon their paying 40,000 ducats. The pope then sent *Gonsalvo* with his *Spaniards*, whom he had taken into his pay, against the castle of *Ostia*, which was again seized by the adherents of the cardinal of *St. Peter's*. This fort surrendered after a short resistance to the *Spanish* general, who returned in triumph to *Rome*, where he was honoured with a golden rose by the pope. *Alexander*, at the same time, was greatly solicited by the duke of *Milan* and the *Venetians*, to give

A. D. 1497. He concludes a peace with them. **A. D. 1497.** *He concludes a peace with them.*

* DIAR. FERRAR.

* GUICCIARD. l. iii. STORIA VE-

net. ut supra.

DIAR. FERRAR.

Ibid. GUICCIARD.

l. iii.

assistance, according to the terms of the treaty, against the French, who made great efforts to obtain the possession of Genoa. His compliance with their demands quickly became unnecessary; for the king of Spain having advanced with an army as far as Perpignan, Charles VIII. consented to a truce till the beginning of November, in which the Italian states should be included; and, in the mean time, plenipotentiaries repaired to Montpelier to negotiate a peace.

Soon after the publication of the truce, all Rome was thrown into great confusion, occasioned by the murder of the duke of Candia, who was assassinated in the streets by his brother, the cardinal of Valentia. The cardinal Borgia, according to his brother the cardinal. Guicciardini, was prompted by jealousy and envy to this horrid deed. As he had no inclination to an ecclesiastical life, he was ambitious of possessing that temporal grandeur which his brother enjoyed, and was besides impatient to find that the duke had a greater share in his sister's affections than himself. Both the brothers are said to have been rivalled by their father; who not being satisfied with his daughter's second marriage, hired false witnesses to prove the impotence of her husband. The pope was afflicted beyond measure for the death of his son; and suspecting the cardinal Sforza and the count of Mirandola as guilty of the murder, he caused them both to be apprehended: but a few days after, discovering the real author, he deplored his misery with tears in the consistory, confessed the wickedness of his former life, and nominated several cardinals, by whose advice he solemnly promised to reform the manners of his court. He dropt these good resolutions, however, in a few days, and returned, with more eagerness than ever, to the practice of those vices in which he had spent his life. Soon after he granted the investiture of Naples to Frederic; and being informed that one Savonarola, a Dominican, of great authority at Florence, had prevailed with that city to restore the popular governor, and had written to the emperor, and to the kings of France, England, Spain, and Portugal, exhorting them to assist the church, which was corrupted from the crown of the head to the sole of the foot, and to pluck up, by the authority of a general council, the abomination of desolation which stood in the holy place, he prohibited him from preaching, and cited him to appear at Rome. As council for the monk refused to go to Rome, he threatened to excommunicate the Florentines, and lay their city under an interdict, unless they delivered him up bound, and refrained from hearing his sermons; but this threatening being despised,

Savonarola, a monk of Florence, exhorts the princes of Europe to call a reforming church. A.D. 1498.

spised, he denounced an anathema against *Savonarola* at Rome.
 Lewis XII. suc- ME. while, the truce being continued betwixt the kings of Spain and France, *Charles* again made preparations for an expedition into Italy, with the consent of *Alexander*, who had entered into a private negotiation with him, in hopes of promoting his son cardinal *Borgia*. *Charles* dying of an apoplexy in the month of April, without issue, was succeeded by his cousin *Lewis*, duke of *Orleans*, who, far from dropping his pretensions in Italy, immediately assumed the title of king of France, Jerusalem, and both Sicilies, and duke of Milan, which duchy he claimed in right of his grandmother *Valentina*, daughter and heiress of *John Galeazzo Visconti*. Upon the unexpected death of the king of France, *Alexander* again solicited the friendship of the king of Naples: being desirous of obtaining some secular dignity for his son, he proposed an alliance betwixt him and *Carlotta*, the king's daughter, and that the principality of *Taranto* should be granted to him as her dowry. *Frederic* rejecting this proposal with disdain, the pope immediately applied to the king of France; and as *Carlotta* was then at his court, he asked his assistance in concluding the proposed alliance. *Lewis* being resolved upon an expedition to Italy, and being desirous of obtaining a divorce from his present wife, complied readily with the pope's request; accordingly *Cæsar Borgia* having resigned the cardinalate, set out for France with the pope's bull, authorizing an examination of the king's marriage^b.

Cæsar
 Borgia re-
 signs he
 cardinal-
 ate.

ALL Italy greatly exclaimed against this resignation of the cardinalate, as the late pope had even refused to allow one of the cardinals to resign, who was desirous of assuming the monkish habit. *Savonarola*, who had abstained from preaching for several months, again exclaimed against the pope; but the magistracy of *Florence* being desirous of procuring his favour in a treaty which they were then negotiating, for the recovery of *Pisa*, ordered him to be silent. *Savonarola* obeyed; but several of his companions still continued to reproach the pope in their sermons with great freedom. The *Franciscans* adopted the opposite party with great warmth; and the dispute went so far, that one of the *Franciscans* challenged a *Dominican* to walk in with him into the midst of a fire, in proof of the truth of their doctrines. The challenge being accepted, an immense crowd assembled to

^a SPOND. Annal. Bzov. hoc an.
 c. 1.

^b BELLEFOR. l. vi.

see the experiment, but the *Dominican* being afraid, desired to enter the fire with the consecrated wafer; which being opposed by the *Franciscans*, and insisted upon by *Savonarola*; Savonarola is burnt at Florence. *Savonarola*, however, lost his reputation with the people, and next day was seized, with two of his companions, and being degraded by the general of their order, they were delivered to the civil magistrate, who ordered them to be put to death. *Alexander*, about the same time, degraded and imprisoned a bishop of *Rome*, who was accused of *Mohammedism* and he refsy^d.

DURING these transactions *Cesar Borgia* arrived at *Paris*, *Borgia is* where he was received with great honour by the king, who created a knight, and duke of *Valentino* in *Dauphiny*, created a duke by the king of France; and gave him the command of a body of 100 horse, with an annual pension of 20,000 livres. The following year he married *Carlotta*, a daughter of a peer of *France*, as the daughter of *Frederic* had absolutely refused to marry him. A.D. 1499. *Lewis XII.* in the mean time, having concluded a peace with the kings of *England* and *Spain*, and a truce with the emperor, made great preparations to take possession of the *Milanese*, having likewise secured the friendship of the pope and the *Venetians*. *Lewis Sforza* applied for assistance to the emperor; but being disappointed in *Germany*, he sent an embassy to *Bajazet*, desiring him to declare war against the *Venetians*. *Maximilian* was prevented from assisting *Sforza*, being then engaged in a war against the *Swiss*: but being very desirous of humbling the *Venetians*, he likewise solicited the grand signior to attack them, promising at the same time to make an irruption into the *Trevifane*. The *Turks* accordingly fitted out a formidable fleet, with which they made themselves masters of the sea; and assembling their forces in *Bosnia*, entered *Italy* by *Friuli*, ravaging the country with fire and sword as far as *Lavenza*, and carrying off with them many thousands of captives.

THE *Venetians*, in this extremity, soliciting the king of *France* to hasten his march into *Italy*, *Lewis* arrived at *Lyon* in the month of *August*, and sent a considerable army over the *Alps*, under the command of the duke of *Luxemburgh*, the duke of *Albany*, and one *Trivulzi*, an *Italian*, who taking *Alexandria* by storm, tho' garrisoned by 5,000 men, struck such a terror into the other cities of the *Milanese*, that

• ^c GUICCIARD. l. iii. in fin. Bzov. t. xviii. an. 1492, &c.
 DIAR. FERRAR { ^d SPOND. Annal. ^e Chron. Venet.
 ap. Murator. t. xxiv. }

who conquers the Milanese, and they surrendered without any opposition; *Sforza*, in a disgraceful manner, abandoning *Milan*, and flying with his wife, children, and treasure, into *Germany*. The *French* having in less than twenty days made themselves masters of the *Milanese*, and of *Genoa*, *Lewis XII.* arrived at *Milan* on the 6th of *October*, where he received embassies of congratulation from all the potentates of *Italy*, except *Frederic* king of *Naples* ^f. The different states put themselves under his protection, and made alliances with him agreeable to their interests. The pope likewise laid hold of this opportunity; and soliciting the king to fulfil his engagements to the duke of *Valentinois*, who had come with him from *France*, *Lewis* granted him 300 lances at his own expence, and a body of 4 or 5000 *Swiss*, to be paid by the pope; with which force *Alexander* proposed to reduce the whole territory of *Romagna*, under the subjection of the *Roman* see (N); but in reality intended that country, when conquered, as a settlement for his son *Cesar*. The *Venetians* had for many years been in possession of *Ravenna* and *Cervia*; however the pope at this time made no pretensions to these cities, nor to those lands on the banks of the *Po* which were possessed by the duke of *Ferrara*, whom the king of *France* had taken into his protection.

gives troops to Borgia, to assist him to conquer Romagna. 32.

^f Chron. Venet. ut supra. DIAR. FERRAR. ut supra. GUICCIARD. l. iv. COR. par. vii.

(N) The cities in *Romagna*, which territory was said to be given to the *Roman* church by *Charlemagne*, were usurped by particular lords during the residence of the popes at *Avignon*, and during the great schism which happened upon their return to *Italy*. The popes not being able to reduce those tyrants by force, either granted the territories which had been usurped to the usurpers themselves, as fiefs of the church, or gave the investiture of them to others, with the titles of vicars. Thus the pope gave *Ferrara* to *Azzo* of *Este*, at first with the title of vicar, but afterwards with that of duke.

Many lords likewise in the march of *Ancona*, the patrimony of *St. Peter*, and the duchy of *Spoletto*, obtained the title of vicar, either by the free or extorted compliance of the pope. The cities of *Romagna*, tho' accounted feudatory to the church, had for a long course of years thrown off all subjection to the popes, many of the vicars neglecting entirely to pay their annual tribute, and all of them entering into the service of other princes, without making the exception of not serving against the church, may even stipulating to defend them against the authority and arms of the pope (1).

(1) Guicciard. l. iv.]

BORGIA proposed at first to make himself master of *Imola* and *Forli*, then in the possession of the widow of *Jeronimo Riario*, nephew of the late pope *Sixtus*. This woman, with great spirit, made all possible preparations to oppose him; she repaired the fortifications of her cities, and sent her children to *Florence*, whither she repaired herself to solicit assistance. Her journey being in vain, she sent an embassy to the pope with a poisoned letter, wrapped up in scarlet cloth, to be delivered into his own hands: and having, with great labour, laid all the lands round *Forli* under water, she appeared on the walls, in the dress of a soldier, to encourage her men. Her endeavours, however, to defend herself, were ineffectual; for the design of her embassy was discovered at *Rome*, and the inhabitants of *Imola* and *Forli*, struck with the fate of *Alexandria*, surrendered without any opposition to the duke, who took possession of them about the middle of January ⁶.

As this year was supposed to begin a new century, *Alexander* had published two bulls, appointing the celebration of a jubilee, which began at *Christmas*, but was not frequented by such a great concourse of pilgrims as in former years, on account of the war which then raged in *Lombardy*. To encourage strangers to come to *Rome*, the pope shortened the time for their residence in the city, and extended the jubilee to the epiphany of the following year; after which time, he allowed it to be celebrated till *Whitsuntide* through all *Italy*. He likewise sent nuncios into the different provinces of Christendom, to publish the indulgences of the holy year, and appointed the tythe of the whole money, to be raised on that account, to be given to the *Venetians*, as a subsidy against the *Turks* ^h. Besides, to prevent that republic from giving any assistance to the lords of *Rimini*, *Faenza*, *Pesaro*, and other territories in *Romagna*, against his son, he allowed them to publish a crusade against the *Turks*. The assistance of the pope being very necessary for the *Venetians*, who were engaged in an unsuccessful war with the infidels, they promised not to interest themselves in the affairs of *Romagna*; however, being afraid to see *Borgia* in possession of that country, they privately solicited their ally, the king of *France*, to recall the *Swiss* and *French* from *Romagna*, being sensible that, without them, *Borgia* could not succeed in his enterprize.

⁶ Chron. Venet. DIAR. FERREAR. ut supra. ^h BZOV. hoc an. & seq. POLYD. l. xxvi. CROMER. l. xxx. TRITHEM. in Chron. SPOND. Annal.

Lewis Sforza
recovers
the posses-
sion of the
Milanese;

is deliver-
ed a pri-
soner to the
French.

Borgia
conquers
Pesaro and
Rimini;

takes pos-
session of
Faenza,

TRIVULZI, governor of Milan, accordingly ordered these troops immediately to return, not so much to gratify the Venetians, as to oppose Lewis Sforza, who had suddenly re-passed the Alps with several thousand Swiss and Burgundians, and taken possession of Como. Upon his arrival the whole Milanese revolted from the French, who had rendered themselves detestable to the Italians by their insolence and barbarity; and Trivulzi having but an inconsiderable body of men, was obliged to retire towards Novara. Borgia, in the mean time, having conquered Imola and Forli, at the expence of 130,000 ducats, ceased all hostilities in Romagna, and returned to Rome, but, before his departure, he is said to have poisoned cardinal Borgia, who was a favourite of the pope, and had been sent by him as legate to Cesena, with a yearly revenue of 20,000 ducats¹. Soon after his arrival at Rome, Lewis Sforza was seized by the Swiss in his own service, and by them delivered to the French general, by which means the king of France again became master of the Milanese, in a more absolute manner than before. All Italy was alarmed at this news, except the Venetians and the pope; the last of whom entered into an alliance with the king, promising to assist him with troops in his expedition against Naples, and appointing the cardinal of Rouen legate of France for eighteen months; in consideration of which Lewis again allowed Borgia 300 lances and 2000 foot, and declared that he would look upon those as his enemies who opposed the pope's son. This reinforcement having joined his other troops, which consisted of 600 horse and 6000 foot, Borgia returned to Romagna, and without opposition made himself master of Pesaro and Rimini, the Florentines and the duke of Ferrara not daring to give any assistance to the feudatory lords, the Venetians even deserting their cause, and honouring Borgia with the title of nobility. The city of Faenza, which was next invested, tho' destitute of all auxiliaries, resolved to adhere to the family of Manfredi, and made such desperate sallies on the besiegers, that Borgia in great vexation was obliged, after ten days, to raise the siege, and put his troops into winter quarters².

ALEXANDER in the mean time, to supply the expences of the war, promoted twelve persons to the cardinalate, from whom he received a large sum of money. Borgia likewise, having received new reinforcements of French and Spaniards, again invested Faenza, in the beginning of February. The

¹ Chron. Venet. ut supra. GUICCIARD. l. iv. DIAR. FERRAR.
² GUICCIARD. l. v. DIAR. FERRAR. p. 391.

inhabitants of this city, after a vigorous defence, were obliged to surrender in the end of *April*, *Borgia* promising them security in their personal estates, and to allow their lord 4000 ducats a year: however, having taken possession of the place, he sent the lord, who was then only eighteen years of age, to *Rome*, where he was soon after put to death.¹ After the conquest of *Faenza*, *Borgia* having obtained the title of duke of *Romagna* from his father, with the approbation of the consistory, he marched with his army against *Bologna*, proposing, after he had made himself master of that city, to attack *Florence*. Upon his march he received an order from the king of *France*, prohibiting his enterprize against *Bologna*, as he had taken that city, and its lord *John Bentivoglio*, under his protection. This news was very disagreeable to the duke: however, being desirous to extend his conquests, he came to an accommodation with *Bentivoglio*, who granted him a passage thro' his territories into *Tuscany*, paid him 6000 ducats, and sent his son to join him with 300 horse and 5000 foot.

THIS reinforcement supplied the place of the *French*, who at this time returned to *Lombardy*, the king of *France* having put his forces in motion for the conquest of *Naples*, in consequence of a treaty with the king of *Spain*, by which these two princes had agreed upon a partition of the kingdom of *Naples*. The pope readily confirmed this treaty, to the astonishment of all *Italy*, and gave the investiture of the duchy of *Apulia* and *Calabria* to the king of *Spain*, and of all the rest of the kingdom to the king of *France*, under the title of king of *Naples* and *Jerusalem*. *Frederic* was quite confounded with this news, as the king of *Spain* had sent a great body of troops into his kingdom, under pretence of opposing the *French*, who had now advanced as far as *Rome*. As he had one powerful enemy already in the midst of his dominions, and was threatened with an invasion from another, he left a garrison in *Capua*, and retired in despair to *Naples*. Mean while the *Spanish* general employed his forces in reducing *Calabria* and *Apulia*; and the *French* having taken possession of *Aversa*, *Nola*, and several other places, attacked *Capua*, which they took by storm. *Borgia*, who had entered into a defensive treaty with the *Florentines*, and had left his army in the territory of *Piombino*, accompanied the *French* army with his guards as lieutenant-general, and at the sacking of *Capua*, seized forty of the fairest nuns as his own booty^m. *Frederic* being informed of the loss of *Capua*, immediately

¹ Idem ibid.^m GUICCIARD. l. v. DIAR. FARRER.

abandoned *Naples*, which surrendered to the conquerors; and he himself soon after, from his detestation of the king of *Spain*, resigned his whole kingdom to the *French*, and went with his family to *France*, where he was created duke of *Anjou*, and allowed a yearly pension of 30,000 ducats.

MEAN while the affairs of the pope proceeded with their usual prosperity; he having made himself master of all the possessions of the *Colloneſi* and *Savelli* in the *Terra di Roma*, which he divided betwixt the *Ursini* and his son *Borgia*, who had reduced *Piombino* to great distress. The lord of that city had sent to the *Genoeſe* for assistance, and had even offered to sell his whole estates to that republic; but while they were soliciting the consent of the king of *France*, *Piombino* was obliged to surrender to *Borgia*ⁿ. Tho' the *French* king was dissatisfied with the conquests of *Borgia*, he nevertheless gratified the pope in all his demands, and prevailed with the duke of *Ferrara* to conclude an alliance betwixt his eldest son *Alphonſus* and *Lucretia* the pope's daughter.

The duke
of *Ferrara*'s son
marries
the pope's
daughter.
A. D.
1502.

The duke consented to this match, to secure his possessions from the ambition of *Borgia*; accordingly (the pope allowing his daughter a dowry of 100,000 ducats in gold, and the value of 111,000 ducats in jewels) she arrived at *Ferrara* on the 1st of *February*, where she was received with great magnificence, and, a few days after, the apostolic nuncio gave the investiture of *Ferrara* to *Alphonſus*, and created him a knight of *St. Peter*^o.

The emperor
proposes
a journey
to
Rome.

ABOUT this time *Maximilian*, who had still delayed to give the investiture of *Milan* to the king of *France*, sent an ambassador into *Italy*, to inform the pope, and the other potentates, that he intended a journey to *Rome*, to receive the imperial crown. This news alarmed the king of *France*, who, from the high demands of the *Florentine* ambassador at his court, suspected that the states of *Italy* had entered into an alliance with the emperor: he therefore renewed his treaty with the *Florentines*, in terms very favourable for that republic, and sent a herald to *Borgia*, prohibiting him from attacking their territories. The duke of *Romagna* had then excited the city of *Arezzo* to revolt; and this enterprize succeeding to his wish, he left *Rome*, and surprized *Cagli*, a city of the duke of *Urbino*, whose duchy he quickly made himself master of, although the duke, a few weeks before, had accommodated with the pope all his differences about the tribute. After this conquest he seized some places belonging

ⁿ BARTHOL. SENAREGE de reb. Genuen. ap. Murat. l. xxiv. p. 574. GUICCIARD. • Idem ibid.

to the lord of *Camerino*, whom, with his two sons, he ordered to be strangled. This proceeding alarmed the *Ursini* and other lords that served in his army, who judged that, as his ambition had no bounds, they likewise in the end of France would share the same fate with the rest. Their fears, however were, in some measure abated, by the arrival of the king of France in Italy, who sent some troops towards Florence, to recover some places belonging to that republic, which had been seized by one of Borgia's captains, and declared publicly, that he intended to march in person against Borgia, and oblige him to deliver up all his conquests. The king was excited to this enterprize by the ambassadors of the Italian states, who waited upon him at Asti; but the pope bribing his favourite, the cardinal of Rouen, with a new legation in France for eighteen months, and promising to assist him in his war against Ferdinand in Naples, and to give no countenance to Maximilian, who laid claim to the Milanese as a fief of the empire, he again renewed his alliance with him and his son. This treaty being concluded, Borgia waited upon the king at Milan and Genoa, and, to the mortification of the Italian ambassadors, was received by him with great caresses ^{P.}

Soon after, it being discovered that the king of France had promised to assist the duke in reducing Bologna, and the other feudatory lords, all the states of Italy were under great apprehensions for their own security. The Venetians were very earnest with the king to induce him to renounce the alliance; and the *Ursini*, with the other lords who served in Borgia's army, withdrew their troops, and entered into a league for their mutual defence against him, to which they were encouraged by the revolt of the duchy of Urbino. Borgia was greatly alarmed with this confederacy, as their forces were greatly superior to his: however, with his usual good fortune, he prevailed upon the *Ursini*, even after they had gained some advantages over him, to consent to a separate treaty of peace, to which the other lords were obliged to accede. The duke of Urbino and the lord of Camerino immediately fled, the one to Venice, and the other to Naples; and Borgia soon after made himself master of Fano and Sinigaglia, into which last city he enticed Paul Ursino, and three other chiefs of the late confederacy, two of whom next day he ordered to be strangled.

The pope in the mean time, with the intention, as it was believed, of raising money for his son, proposed a general

A. D. 1503. **crusade against the Turks**; for which purpose he sent nuncios into the different kingdoms of *Europe*, but with little or no success: his character made every proposal from him to be suspected. However, he still succeeded in deceiving the *Italian* princes: upon being informed of the tragedy at *Sinigaglia*, he imprisoned the cardinal *Ursino* in the castle of *St. Angelo*, and sent his youngest son, the prince of *Squillaci*, to take possession of the territories belonging to that family, and the other confederate lords. The cardinal dying (as it was supposed by poison) after twenty days imprisonment, *Borgia* immediately ordered the other two lords to be put to death at *Sinigaglia*, and marching from thence in the end of *January*, made himself master of *Litta di Castello* and *Perugia*; then desiring an opportunity to seize *Siena*, he ordered them to banish their lord *Pandolfo Petrucci* as his enemy, *Pandolfo* was accordingly banished; but the king of *France* interposing, *Borgia* was obliged to desist from that enterprise: however, he took possession of the territories of the *Savelli*, and several of the strong places belonging to the *Ursini*, even against the command of the king of *France*, whose authority was greatly lessened in *Italy*, as he had, by neglect, allowed the *Spaniards* to make themselves masters of almost the whole kingdom of *Naples*.

The Spaniards
conquer
Naples;

Borgia treats with them. *BORGIA*, in hopes of making a conquest of *Tuscany*, immediately began to treat with the *Spanish* general; but the king of *France* sending a powerful army into *Italy*, the pope was in doubt which of the princes he should declare for: therefore, under the pretence of being the common father, he resolved upon a neutrality, allowed the *French* army a passage thro' his territories, and promised, during the *Neapolitan* war, not to attack *Bologna*, *Siena*, or *Florence*. It was supposed that the pope had no design to observe this last article, but rather resolved to attack *Tuscany*, while the *French* were occupied in the kingdom of *Naples*. *Borgia*, to provide money for that expedition, formed a design, according to some authors, with the concurrence of his father, to poison all the rich cardinals, and to seize their revenues and estates; but, by the mistake of a servant, the plot proved fatal to the contrivers¹. Authors differ a little, though not materially, in the circumstances of this fact. According to *Guisciardini*, *Borgia* sent a present of some flasks of poisoned wine to the cardinal of *Corneto*, in whose garden they proposed to sup, but ordered the servant to give none of it to

¹ MARIAN. l. xxvii. c. 2. BZOV. hoc an. ANGLER. Epist.
264

any person. *Alexander* soon after coming into the garden, and calling for some wine before supper, the servant gave him some from the poisoned flasks, thinking the prohibition could not extend to the pope, however valuable and rare the wine might be; and *Borgia* in the mean time appearing, without suspicion drank of the same wine with his father. They both immediately felt the symptoms of the poison, and *Alexander* died the next day, being the 18th of *August*; but *Borgia*, having drank his wine much diluted, by the assistance of antidotes recovered, after a long illness, in which he lost his skin and hair.

THO' the death of *Alexander* gave great joy to the *Romans*, and to all *Italy*, yet *Rome* itself was immediately full of tumult and confusion, the *French* army being in the neighbourhood of the city, and *Borgia* possessing the *Vatican* and the castle of *St. Angelo* with 12,000 men. The party of the *Ursini* likewise took arms; and the cardinals having retired to the convent of *Minerva*, were apprehensive, lest the *Spanish* general should march to the city to over-awe the election. They therefore resolved to delay entering into the conclave, till the cardinals resident in foreign parts, beyond the *Alps*, might be present. *Borgia* in the mean time, though solicited by the *Spaniards*, concluded a new alliance with the *French*, and promised his interest to procure the pontificate for the cardinal of *Rouen*, who a few days after arrived, with the other cardinals, at *Rome*. The *French* troops being prevailed upon not to advance, and *Borgia* likewise agreeing to quit the city with his forces, the cardinals, to the number of thirty-eight, entered the conclave, where their apprehensions from the surrounding armies made them come quickly to a conclusion.

THE cardinal of *Rouen*, finding his own views disappointed by the strength of the *Spanish* faction, consented with them to chuse *Francis Piccolomini*, cardinal of *Siena*, who being old and infirm, would, in all probability, soon occasion another vacancy. *Piccolomini* was elected on the 21st of *September*, and, in memory of his uncle *Pius II.* likewise assumed the name of *Pius*. He immediately granted a safe-conduct to *Borgia*, who returned to *Rome* with a guard of 300 horse and 800 foot; notwithstanding which he was in great danger from the continual assaults of the people, and the faction of the *Ursini*, who attacked his house with great violence. Great numbers of his guards deserting from him, he, with his brother and several *Spanish* cardinals, was

obliged to take refuge in the *Vatican*, from whence he retired to the castle of *St. Angelo*. This disturbance was no sooner quieted, than all *Rome* was again alarmed by the death of *Pius*, which happened on the 26th day after his election. This pope was eminent for his prudence and learning, and was supposed to have had the reformation of the church much at heart, having declared, immediately after his election, that there was no longer any occasion for arms, but that all men ought now to think of religion and piety^s. He had likewise resolved to call a general council; but death, which is said to have been hastened by poison, prevented his design^t.

The cardinal of Ostia is elected pope, and takes the name of Julius II. JULIAN *de la Rovere*, nephew of *Sixtus IV.* and cardinal of *Ostia*, at the death of *Alexander* was a candidate for the pontificate; and reflecting on the infirm health of *Pius*, he still continued to solicit the interest of the cardinals. Tho' he was of a bold impetuous spirit, had spent his life in continual travels, and was at variance and enmity with several great men, yet, as he was accounted liberal, and faithful to his word, and had amassed great wealth, he quickly made many friends, especially by his extravagant promises, and a distribution of the money which, from an opinion of his punctuality, was presented to him by the citizens of *Rome*. He procured the interest of the *Spanish* cardinals, partly by *Borgia's* means, whom he promised to confirm general of the church, and to conclude an alliance betwixt his daughter and his own nephew, prefect of *Rome*; so that the whole sacred college had so unanimously fix'd upon him, that on the 9th of *October*, when they entered the conclave, he was declared pope before the doors were shut^u. He was crowned on the 25th of *November*, and assumed the name of *Julius II.* As he had resolved to endeavour to recover the ecclesiastical state, he behaved with great respect to *Borgia*, to whom a few places in *Romagna* still continued faithful. All the other places that he had conquered, immediately upon the death of *Alexander*, had revolted to their antient lords, or had chosen new ones.

The Venetians aspire to the dominion of Romagna. THE *Venetians* likewise seizing this opportunity of extending their territory, during the short pontificate of *Pius IX.* had taken possession of *Rimini*, and several other places in *Romagna*, and had laid siege to *Faenza*, which city sent to the pope, demanding his assistance. *Julius*, though he was greatly offended with the *Venetians*, yet had not force nor

^s BARTHOL. de reb. Genuen. ut supra.
Annal.

^t GUICCIARD. l. vi. MASS. in Jul. II.

^u SPOND.

authority to compel them to desist; he therefore only sent a nuncio to that republic, exhorting them to cease their hostilities against a city belonging to the church. They answered that *Faenza* could not be reckoned to belong to the church, as *Alexander VI.* had conferred the whole dominion of it upon duke *Valentino*; and continuing their attack, made themselves masters of the place. *Julius* appointed *Borgia* to go into *Romagna*, to prevent the other places that still adhered to him from falling into the hands of the *Venetians*; but before his departure, he desired him to surrender those places to him, that the *Venetians* might have no pretence for attacking them. *Borgia* refusing this demand, *Julius* 1504. ordered him to be apprehended on board his galley at *Ostia*, *Borgia is* and soon after obtained from him a resignation of his rights *imprison-* to the cities in *Romagna*: however, the governors refused *ed*, to deliver them while their lord was a prisoner, and even ordered the messenger of the pope to be hanged. *Julius*, to take off this pretence, delivered *Borgia* into the absolute power of cardinal *Carvajal* at *Ostia*, and entered into a treaty with him, which, for the greater security, was confirmed by a bull, by which he resigned the cities in *Romagna*, and gave security for 15,000 ducats. *Julius* by this means got possession of the cities of *Romagna*, but he had no intention of setting *Borgia* at liberty; however the cardinal, upon being *but escapes* informed that the treaty was executed, allowed his prisoner *to Naples.* to depart, without waiting for the orders of the pope (O).

ABOUT this time, the kings of *France* and *Spain* having concluded a truce, and the *Venetians* not venturing to irritate the pope by renewing hostilities in *Romagna*, all *Italy* enjoyed a profound peace, except *Florence* and *Pisa*; this last city having, with great resolution, defended itself for several years against the *Florentines*, who endeavoured to reduce it again under their dominion. The pope, in the mean time, received a letter from the Soltan of *Ægypt*, who threatened to expel all the *European* Christians from his do-

(O) *Borgia* went to *Naples* to the *Spanish* general, who at first treated him with great honour and respect; but soon after, in consequence of an order from *Ferdinand*, he sent him on board a galley to *Spain*, where he was committed to perpetual imprisonment in the castle of *Medina*. Three years after-

wards, having bribed his guards, he was let down from the wall, and escaped to the king of *Navarre*, whose sister he had married. He was there soon after slain, in a skirmish with the *Cantabrians*, who stript his corpse, which was afterwards interred at *Pampeluna* (1).

(1) *Spond. Annal. Marian. l. xxviii. c. 8.*

A. D.
1505.
The Venetians re-
sign part
of their
conquests
in Ro-
magna.

minions, and to destroy the sepulchre of our Saviour, and all the sacred relics in the *Holy Land*, unless he prevailed with the kings of *Spain* and *Portugal* to cease from molesting the *Moors*; the one of whom persecuted them in *Spain*, and the other disturbed their commerce in the *Indian seas* *. *Julius* sent the *Franciscan*, who brought the Soltan's letter to *Spain*, to receive an answer from *Ferdinand* and *Emanuel*: and being desirous of recovering *Romagna*, he solicited the emperor to use his authority with the *Venetians*, to oblige them to restore the cities which they had seized. The *Venetians*, upon receiving an embassy from *Maximilian*, offered to restore to the pope all that they had conquered since the death of *Alexander*, if he would confirm to them *Faenza* and its territory: but *Julius* replied, that he would not allow them to possess a single tower, and that he hoped, before his death, to recover *Ravenna* and *Cervia*, which they had likewise usurped from the church. However, having no hopes of any assistance from the emperor or the king of *France*, he agreed to leave them *Faenza* and *Rimini*, and admitted their ambassadors to an audience. About the same time he published a bull against simony in the election of a pope, ordaining the election to be null and void if any simony should be committed, either by the electors or the person elected; and that they should likewise be deprived of their cardinalate, and all their ecclesiastical benefices: and that those cardinals who should not consent to the simony, might proceed to the election of another pope, call a general council, and act against the simoniacal pope as a heretic †.

A difference be-
twixt the
pope and
the king of
France.

Soon after *Julius* made a promotion of cardinals; but being offended with the king of *France*, for having, without his consent, disposed of the benefices in the duchy of *Milan*, vacant by the deaths of cardinal *Ascanius* and others, he refused to confer the dignity of cardinal on two bishops, recommended to him by *Lewis*, who, in resentment, sequestered the revenues of the cardinal of *St. Peter*, and other prelates, in the duchy of *Milan*. The king of *France*, however, beginning to be afraid of the grandeur of the house of *Austria*, as *Maximilian* formed pretensions to the kingdom of *Hungary*, and his son *Philip* had now added the kingdom of *Castile* to his possessions in *Flanders*, he therefore resolved to live in terms of friendship with the pope; and having taken off the sequestration, in the beginning of the following year sent the apostolic nuncio, that was at his court, to

They are
reconciled.

* BARRIUS. Dec. i. l. viii. c. 2. & 6.
nal. ex t. i. BULLAR. Jul. II. CONST. 3.

† SPOND. An-

Rome, with various propositions against the *Venetians*. and form
Julius embraced the offers of the king of *France* with great *designs a-*
 eagerness, and immediately sent back the nuncio to conclude *gainst the*
 a strict alliance with *Lewis*, sending with him a brief, by *Venetia*
 which he granted the dignity of cardinal to the two *French*
 bishops, and allowed the king to dispose of the benefices in *ans.*
 the *Milaneſe*. The pope desired immediately to attack *Pe-*
rugia and *Bologna*; but as *Maximilian* was then proposing to
 enter *Italy* with an army to receive the imperial crown, and
 the *Venetians* threatened to assist the *Bologneſe* if he did not
 confirm their right to *Faenza*, the *French* king entreated him
 earnestly to defer his enterprize, lest he should embroil all
Italy. *A. D.*
1506.

JULIUS, who, contrary to his natural disposition, had *The pope*
 been quiet ever since his election to the pontificate, refused *marches*
 now to hearken to any farther delay; and, on the 26th of *with an*
August, marched from *Rome* with 500 men of arms, de- *army from*
 siring the inhabitants of *Bologna* to prepare for his arrival, *Rome*
 and to provide quarters for 500 *French* lances. On his
 march to *Perugia*, where he designed to stop, unless he
 could prevail with the *French* actually to join him, he re-
 ceived the submission of *Baglione*, lord of that city, at *Or-*
viecto. *Baglione* surrendering the fortresses of *Perugia* and
 its territory into his hands, giving his two sons as hostages, *makes*
 and promising to assist him with 150 men of arms, the pope *himself*
 received him into favour, and the king of *France* being pre- *master of*
 vailed upon by the cardinal of *Rouen* to grant him a rein- *Perugia*
 forcement, he proceeded to *Cesena*, where he excommunicated *and Bo-*
Bentivoglio lord of *Bologna*, and all his adherents, or those
 who conversed with him. *Bentivoglio*, in hopes of the pro-
 tection of the *French*, prepared for a resolute defence; but
 being informed that the king of *France* had sent 600 lances
 and 3,000 foot to join the army of the church, he fled, with
 his family and treasure, to the duchy of *Milan*, and, after his
 departure, the pope entered in triumph into *Bologna* on the
 10th of *November*. *Julius* dismissed the *French* general
 with a present of 8000 ducats for himself, and 10,000 for
 his troops. He promised also to create his brother a cardinal.
 To render the dominion of the church agreeable to the
Bologneſe, he indulged them with a great many exemptions,
 and left them some shadow of liberty, by appointing the new
 magistrates after the antient form.

• DURING these transactions, *Philip*, the emperor's son, died of a fever at *Burgos* in *Spain*; and *Ferdinand* king of *Arragon*, who had ceded *Castile* to him, had arrived at *Naples*. Upon the news of his arrival, he immediately received embassies from all the states of *Italy*, not only to congratulate him, but also to negotiate with him concerning their different interests. *Julius* endeavoured to excite him against the *Venetians*, who were in possession of several maritime places in the kingdom of *Naples*. The pope, being greatly exasperated against the republic for attacking *Romagna*, and disposing of ecclesiastical benefices in their territories without his consent, likewise solicited the king of *France* to declare war against the *Venetians*, and invited him to a conference in *Lombardy* (P). As the city of *Genoa* about this time had revolted from the *French*, *Lewis* declined entering into a war against the *Venetians*, but consented to a personal conference with the pope; however, *Julius* understanding that he intended to march with an army into *Italy*, to the assistance of the *Genoese* nobles against the people, as he himself favoured the popular faction, he endeavoured to dissuade him; but, not succeeding, he in a disgust published his return to *Rome*, and, to the astonishment of every one, quitted *Bologna* in the end of *February*. The king of *France* resenting this fickleness in the pope, and suspecting that he privately favoured the rebellious *Genoese*, immediately assembled a powerful army; and, passing the *Alps* in the beginning of the spring, struck the *Genoese* with such a panic by his sudden march, that they surrendered at discretion. Having entered the city on the 29th of *April*, he executed some of the chiefs of the rebels, and fined the inhabitants in 240,000 ducats; after which he disbanded his army, and went to *Milan*. A few weeks after he returned to *Savona*, to have a conference with *Ferdinand* king of *Arragon*, who arrived there on the 27th of *June* in his voyage from *Naples* to *Spain*. The two kings treated each other with great marks of friendship and esteem, and, during the three days which *Ferdinand* staid at *Savona*, they held several private conferences, as it was conjectured,

and excites
the king
of Arra-
gon a-
gainst the
Vene-
tians.

A. D.
1507.

A new
rupture
betwixt
the pope
and the
king of
France.

(P) This year the architect *Bramante*, by order of *Julius*, laid the first stone of the famous church of *St. Peter*, in the *Vatican*, which edifice was finished almost 100 years afterwards, during the pontificate of *Paul*

V. Julius, Leo X. and other popes, published indulgences thro' all the provinces of *Christendom* to defray the expences of the building; which was at length consecrated by *Urban VIII.*

for the reformation of the church by a general council, and for uniting their arms against the *Venetians* ².

THE *French* king had disbanded his forces, to shew the emperor, the pope, and the *Venetians*, that he had no other intention, by marching an army into *Italy*, than to recover *Genoa*. For *Julius*, from his hatred to the king, had written to the emperor and the electors, informing them that *Lewis*, under pretence of reducing *Genoa*, intended to conquer the ecclesiastical state, confer the pontificate on the cardinal of *Rouen*, and assume the imperial title to himself. *Maximilian*, having received the same intelligence from the *Venetians*, held a very numerous diet at *Constance*; which, with great alacrity, promised to raise a very powerful army to assert the rights of the empire in *Italy*. *Maximilian* accordingly wrote to the pope, that he had declared the king of *France* a rebel, and that he intended himself to enter with a powerful army into *Italy* to receive the imperial crown. As the fame of the *German* levies greatly exceeded the truth, the pope now began to be afraid of the emperor, lest he should reduce the provinces in *Italy* that had been dismembered from the empire, restore the antient dominion of the *Germans* on that side the *Alps*, and thereby make himself master of the election of the popes; he therefore sent the cardinal of the holy cross, as his legate, to *Constance*, to inform the emperor, that, as the king of *France* had disbanded his forces and returned to his own kingdom, there was now no need to enter *Italy* with an army; but, if he would come with an ordinary escorte, he would confer upon him greater honours than any emperor had ever received at his coronation. As the *French* king had likewise sent ambassadors to *Constance*, to justify himself from the false accusations of the pope, the ardor of the diet for the *Italian* expedition greatly abated, so that very few troops appeared at the general rendezvous; and, the *Venetians* refusing a passage through their territories for a *German* army, the emperor, after a fruitless attempt, was obliged to delay his march ^a (Q).

A FEW

Id. ibid. BARTHOL. de reb. Gen. ut sup. ^a GUICCIARDI
l. vii. FUGG. c. 12.

(Q) *Julius* about this time, according to a *Scotch* historian (1), sent a legate into that kingdom, to confer upon *James I.* the title of *Protector of the Christian Faith*, on account of his zeal in extirpating heresy. The legate carried with him for the

(1) *Leslæ*, l. viii.

king

The emperor's march into Italy is opposed by the Venetians.

**A. D.
1508.**

A FEW months afterwards, his army being reinforced, he demanded from the *Venetians* a passage thro' their territories; but the republic having fortified their frontier, and received a reinforcement of 6000 *French*, refused his demand. The pope likewise, to prevent his march into *Italy*, ordered his legate to confer upon him the title of emperor; which the popes had always refused to his predecessors, unless they came personally to *Rome*. *Maximilian*, however, having made himself master of some places belonging to the *Venetians*, and, being desirous of extending his conquests, left his forces in *Trent*, and, repairing to *Ulm*, solicited a reinforcement from the circle of *Suabia*. During his absence, the *Venetians* defeated his army in *Trent*, and made an incursion into *Istria* and *Carniola*, while their fleet reduced *Trieste*, *Capo d'Istria*, *Rovigna*, and *Pola*. These losses inclined the emperor to think of an accommodation, which was likewise agreeable to the king of *France*, who was jealous of the power of the *Venetians*; but the republic having agreed to a peace with the emperor, before the demands of the king of *France* were satisfied, and having afterwards granted a triumph to their general, they thereby offended both *Maximilian* and *Lewis*. The pope likewise, having received a fresh insult from the republic, which had refused to grant the bishopric of *Vicenza* to his nephew, and had conferred it upon another person, he sent a nuncio to the king of *France*, to excite him against the *Venetians*. The cardinal of *Rouen*, inclining to satisfy the pope and *Lewis*, being likewise solicited to the same purpose by the emperor, a league against the *Venetians* was concluded on the 9th of *December* at *Cambray*, betwixt these three powers and *Ferdinand of Arragon*, which was confirmed and published the next day in the cathedral church, under the name of a defensive alliance.

The pope enters into an alliance with other princes against the Venetians.

A. D.
1509.

THIS treaty, to which the king of *Hungary* and the dukes of *Savoy*, *Mantua*, and *Ferrara*, acceded, was quickly ratified by the secular princes; but, as it had been concluded without the pope's concurrence, tho' under his name, *Julius* delayed ratifying it, and in the mean time declared to the *Venetians*, that, if they would restore *Rimini* and *Faenza*, he would not join in the alliance; which, without the authority of the apostolic see, would not be of any dangerous

• PETR. MARTYR. Ēpist. 381.

king a purple diadem, interwoven with flowers of gold, and a sword, the handle and scabbard of which was of gold, richly adorned with jewels.

consequence

consequence. The *Venetians* rejecting this offer of the pope, he immediately ratified the treaty, and, the king of *France* having passed the *Alps* with a numerous army, he published a dreadful bull against the republic, under the name of a monitory, ordering them to restore, within twenty-four days, all that they had usurped from the apostolic see, under pain of ecclesiastical censures; and, in case of their disobedience, he allowed the subjects of the republic to be made slaves, and their merchandize every-where to be seized. The *Venetians* prepared with great spirit to oppose this formidable alliance; but their army being entirely defeated by the king of *France* at *Ghiaradadda*, who immediately after took possession of *Bergamo*, *Brescia*, and *Cremona*, while the pope entered *Romagna* with an army of 9000 men, they resolved wholly to abandon the continent: being informed that the emperor had put himself in motion towards their *German* frontier, and that the king of *Arragon* had sent a fleet against the cities which they held in *Naples*, they sent orders to the governors of all their towns to withdraw with their troops, and to leave them free.

THEY likewise, by submissive embassies, implored the clemency of the emperor, the king of *Arragon*, and the pope; particularly intreating his holiness to absolve them from the censures contained in the bull, as they had offered restitution within twenty-four days; but the pope refused to grant their demand, as they offered the restitution under certain limitations, and he required that, besides the usurped territories, they should likewise restore all the revenues that they had intercepted. However, soon after, *Julius*, whose great desire was to free *Italy* from the dominion of foreigners, consented to admit the ambassadors of the republic to an audience; and about the same time, the *German* garrison being surprised in *Padua*, the hopes of the *Venetians* began to revive. The grand design formed by *Julius* was to raise the temporal power of the apostolic see; for this purpose he concluded a new alliance with the king of *France*, who promised to give no protection, for the future, to any vassal of the church; in consequence of which the pope allowed him to confer all the vacant bishoprics in his dominions. The king then returned to *France*; while *Maximilian*, who had hitherto done nothing in consequence of the league of *Cambray*, now arrived with an army in *Lombardy*, and besieged *Padua*; but, winter approaching, he was obliged to raise the

They earnestly solicit him to a reconciliation.

* GUICCIARD. l. viii. BARTHOL. SENAR. de rebus Gen. ut supra.

- siege, and even reduced to ask a truce from the *Venetians*, who refused his demand.

A rupture betwixt the French king and the pope; IN the mean time the pope, contrary to the late treaty, having conferred a bishopric in *Provence*, vacant by the death of the bishop at *Rome*, the king of *France*, in resentment, sequestred all the revenues of the *Milanese* ecclesiastics belonging to the *Roman* court, which occasioned a fresh misunderstanding betwixt these two princes. Tho' *Julius*, at length, complied with the king, and confirmed the bishopric

- to the person nominated by him, yet he, from that time, desired, to see the king deprived of all that he possessed in *Italy*. Thinking it against the interest of the *Roman* see that the *Venetians* should be farther depressed, he resolved to

A. D.
1510.

- absolve them from the ecclesiastical censures, and, to prevent *Lewis* from giving any assistance to the emperor against the republic, he endeavoured to excite *Henry VIII.* of *England* to declare war against *France*, and solicited the *Swiss* to march an army into the *Milanese* to the assistance of the church. *Lewis* spared no pains to regain the favour of the pope, but his endeavours were fruitless; for, on the 24th of February, the peace was concluded betwixt him and the *Venetians*, who were absolved from the excommunication, on condition that they should leave the navigation of the *Adriatic* free to the subjects of the church, give satisfaction for all the damages they had done to the ecclesiastical state, and renounce all claim to any jurisdiction in ecclesiastical affairs. That they should not presume to confer any vacant benefices, but should freely admit those who were nominated by the *Roman* court^d. *Julius* besides, to the surprize of the emperor and the king of *France*, gave permission to the vassals and subjects of the church to enter into the service of the *Venetians*, and by the means of the bishop of *Sion*, who had great interest with the *Swiss*, he prevailed with the cantons not to renew their alliance with *France*, but to declare for the apostolic see.

who is reconciled to the Venetians;

threatens the duke of Ferrara, and

As the duke of *Ferrara* still adhered to the king of *France*, the pope sought an opportunity of a rupture with him, and prohibited him, under severe penalties, from making salt at *Comacchio*, which territory had been surrendered by the *Venetians* to the church. He likewise threatened to attack him with an army, if he did not annul some new duties that he had imposed upon vessels sailing on the *Po*. As the pope's troops marched into *Romagna* and the county of *Bologna*, the *French* and *German* generals united their forces, and took possession of several towns belonging to the *Venetians* on the

continent, to prevent the ecclesiastical army from acting against the duke. However, as the king of France was apprehensive of a revolt, both in the *Milanese* and at *Genoa*, he very willingly hearkened to the proposals of an accommodation with the pope, who, being unprepared to oppose his arms, wanted to draw him into a negotiation. After some conferences, by which the pope gained time, he absolutely refused to agree to an accommodation, unless the French king would abandon the protection of the duke of *Ferrara*; to which article *Lewis* refusing his consent, *Julius* fully resolved upon a war. He refused to accept of the annual tribute from the duke: in order to separate *Ferdinand* of *Arragon* from the interest of the king of France and the emperor, he granted him the investiture of the kingdom of *Naples*, and reduced the annual tribute to 2000 ducats and a white horse.

NOTWITHSTANDING this accommodation, *Ferdinand* did not openly break with the emperor and the king of France. The pope, however, having the promise of the assistance of 12,000 *Swiss*, declared war against the king of France and the duke of *Ferrara*; and, while his army entered the territory of the duke, he sent the *Venetian* fleet, with some galleys of his own, to *Genoa*, to excite that city to revolt; in both which enterprizes he was unsuccessful, by the vigilance of the French general. He nevertheless refused to hearken to an accommodation, tho' *Lewis* even offered to leave the city of *Genoa* free, and to abandon the interests of the duke of *Ferrara*. So far was he from inclining to peace, that he imprisoned and put to the torture a *Savoyard*, who declared that his duke was willing to act as mediator; and, thinking his generals did not behave with vigour, he himself set out from *Rome*, and arrived at *Bologna* about the end of September.

LEWIS, despairing of any accommodation with the pope, made a new alliance with the emperor; and, that he might shew his moderation, called an assembly of the Gallican clergy at *Tours*, to have their opinion concerning his disputes with *Julius*. This assembly confirmed, by their authority, all the propositions that were offered to them by the king; particularly, they affirmed, that the pope had no right to declare war against any prince, unless on account of religion, or in defence of the ecclesiastical state; that the prince unjustly attacked by the pope, might, in his own defence, invade the territories of the church, and might even

* RAINALD. in an. 1510.

withdraw obedience, in some measure, from such pope, and constitute a pragmatic sanction for regulating ecclesiastical affairs within his kingdom, without any regard to the *Roman* see ^f. The emperor greatly approved of the proceedings of the *Gallican* clergy; and, upon the repeated complaints of the princes and prelates of *Germany*, ordered a pragmatic sanction to be drawn up for the empire, which however was never confirmed by any diet ^g. Besides, according to some authors, he formed a design of calling a general council to depose *Julius*, with the intention of succeeding him in his own person ^h.

THE pope in the mean time, notwithstanding the severity of the season, resolved upon the siege of *Ferrara*, and proposing to leave *Bologna*, where he had been in great danger of being surprised by the *French* general, he sent his army towards *Concordia* and *Mirandola*, which two cities he determined to take possession of, altho' he had no complaint against the young duke, whom he had formerly taken into his protection. *Concordia* surrendered the same day that it was attacked; but, at *Mirandola*, the pope's army met with a vigorous opposition from the *French* garrison. *Julius*, rendered quite impatient by the slow progress of the siege, on the 2d of *January* left *Bologna*, and, contrary to the intreaties of the *Venetian* ambassador, and of all the cardinals, went to the camp, and took the command of the army upon himself, as tho' he had even desired to give the *Christian* princes a stronger reason for calling a general council against him. Having obliged the city to capitulate, he marched with his army through the breach, and obliged the inhabitants to pay 6000 crowns to save themselves from being pillaged. He afterwards granted the investiture of the two fiefs to *John Francis Picus* for 20,000 crowns, and resolved to proceed immediately to the siege of *Ferrara*; but the *French* general *Chaumont* having with great diligence reinforced his army, *Julius* abandoned this enterprize, and returned to *Bologna*, from whence he went to *Ravenna*, where he created eight new cardinals. A few weeks afterwards he returned to *Bologna*, to have a conference with the bishop of *Gurck*, the emperor's envoy, who had held a congress at *Mantua* with the ambassadors of the kings of *France* and *Spain*, to negotiate a general peace. The pope very warmly solicited the *German* bishop

A. D.
1511.
The pope
takes pos-
session of
Miran-
dola, and

endea-
vours to

^f SPOND. Annal. GUICCIARD. l. ix. BELCAR. l. xii. RAINALD. ^g GEORG. de gravaminib. nation. German. l. i. c. 7. apud Freher. p. 684. GOLDAST. Constit. Imper. t. ii. p. 122. ^h Monita Politica ad S. I. R. princip. Francofer. an. 1609. See the History of the German Empire.

to prevail with the emperor to desert the interest of the king of *France*, and to conclude a separate peace with the *Venetians*; but without any effect; for *Gurck* insisted, that the *French* king and the duke of *Ferrara* should both be included in the peace to which the pope refusing to consent, he returned to *Modena*. The emperor and king of *France* having granted a suspension of arms during the conferences at *Mantua*, the pope seized that opportunity to attempt the surprising of *Genoa*; but, by the vigilance of the *French* general, the design was frustrated i.

THE king of *France*, being informed of the conference betwixt the bishop of *Gurck* and the pope, was apprehensive lest the emperor should be prevailed upon to agree to a separate peace; he therefore gave orders to his general to act with vigour against the pope. *Trivulzi*, who, upon the death of *Chaumont*, had succeeded to the command, immediately put his troops in motion; and, having taken *Concordia* and several other places, marched directly for *Bologna*, being attended by *Bentivoglio*, the ancient lord of that city. The pope leaving the command of his army to his nephew the duke of *Urbino*, and the cardinal of *Pavia* as legate in the city, retired to *Ravenna*; but a few days after he was informed, that both the cardinal and the duke had fled, that his army was almost wholly dispersed, and that the city had submitted to its ancient lord, and had admitted the *French*, who had seized the greatest part of the baggage and artillery of his army, and of that of the republic. The cardinal and the duke both repaired to *Ravenna*, and mutually accused each other; but the duke, presuming upon his relation to the pope, prevented the cardinal from justifying himself by stabbing him with a poniard. According to *Mariana*, the pope was conscious of this murder; however, he pretended to be greatly afflicted with the cardinal's death, and, being driven almost to distraction by the bad success of his affairs, he set out on his return to *Rome*; but he had scarcely arrived at *Rimini*, when he was informed, that citations for a general council were affixed in *Bologna*, *Modena*, and other cities, and that he was summoned to appear personally.

THE bishop of *Gurck*, after his departure from the pope, had sent three deputies to *Milan* to treat with the cardinals who had deserted from *Julius*, when he first marched against *Bologna*. Three of these cardinals, in their own name, and in the name of six others, whose commission they said they had received, appointed a general council to be held at *Pisa*.

¹ BARTHOL. SENARFG. de rebus Genuen. ut sup. ² MARIAN. L. XXX. C. 2. in fin.

on the 1st of *September*; which convocation was immediately confirmed by the deputies of the emperor and the king of *France*, and a few weeks after ratified by *Maximilian* and *Lewis*. The cardinals affirmed, that as the pope, contrary to his oath at his election, had neglected to call a council, they, without his authority, might lawfully convoke one, on account of the evident necessity of reforming the church both in the head and members, and as they were authorized by the decrees of the council of *Constance*, and countenanced by the emperor and the king of *France*.

The pope publishes a bull for a general council to be held at Rome. THE pope, being greatly apprehensive lest the *French* should take possession of the whole ecclesiastical state, and march to *Rome*, made an indirect offer of peace to *Lewis*, and solicited the cardinals at *Milan* to return to the unity of the church, promising them all the security that they could desire; but they refusing his offer, and the king of *France* ordering his general to return to the *Milanese*, the pope, on the 16th of *July*, published a bull, annulling the proceedings of the cardinals at *Milan*, and appointing a general council to be held at *Rome* the following year, on the 19th of *April*¹. He likewise published a monitory, ordering the three cardinals to return to *Rome* within sixty-five days, under the penalty of being deprived of their cardinalate, and of all their benefices; and, while he was amusing the deputies of the king of *France* at *Rome* with the hopes of peace, he negociated a new alliance against him with *Ferdinand* and the *Venetians*. Mean while all *Italy* was in hopes of peace, by the news of the death of the pope, which was soon after found to be a mistake; for he recovered after continuing some hours in a fainting fit; and remaining in the same disposition, with regard to the king of *France*, he endeavoured to excite the young king of *England* against him, by means of *Ferdinand*, whose daughter *Henry VIII.* had married (R).

¹ SPOND. ANNAL. GUICCIARD. I. x.

(R) During the report of the pope's death, *Pompey Colonna*, bishop of *Rieti*, and *Autimo Savello*, two Roman nobles, assembled the people of *Rome* in the capitol, and exhorted them to resume their ancient liberty.

Guicciardini relates the speech in his history of *Italy*; which, as it boldly censures and condemns the temporal power of priests, has been omitted in some editions of that work (2).

(2) *Guicciard. l. x. See Ames's Account of Printing in England.*

DURING these proceedings, the council was opened at *Pisa*, on the 1st of *September*, by three proxies sent thither by the cardinals from *Milan*. The cardinals themselves did not arrive till the 29th of *October*, when they were accompanied with several of the *French* clergy, who alone composed the council; for the emperor had neglected to send any ambassadors to represent himself, and had called an assembly of the *German* clergy at *Augsburgh*, to have their opinion of the lawfulness of the *Pisan* council. Mean-while the clergy at *Pisa* held their first session on the fifth of *November*, in which they chose the cardinal of *Carvajal* president, and declared null and void all that the pope had done against the cardinals and synod. In the second session, which was held two days after, they regulated the order of sitting; and, an insurrection happening in the city against the *French* guards, they in great confusion held the third session on the 14th of the month, and transferred the council to *Milan*. There they were alarmed by 16,000 *Swiss*, who, at the instigation of the pope, made an incursion into the *Milanese*; on which account they deferred their next session till the 4th of *January*.

THE pope, besides exciting the *Swiss* to enter *Lombardy*, had concluded a treaty with the king of *Arragon*, who promised him auxiliaries against the *French*. He likewise deposed the cardinals who adhered to the council of *Pisa*, and declared them obnoxious to the penalties due to schismatics and heretics, and sent the cardinal of *Medicis*, with some troops, towards *Bologna*, to overawe *Florence* and *Pisa*, which two cities he put under an interdict for favouring the schismatic cardinals. Soon after, the *Spanish* auxiliaries arriving, under the command of *Peter Navarra*, they marched with the other forces of the pope into *Romagna*; upon whose approach all the places belonging to the duke of *Ferrara*, on that side of the *Po*, surrendered, except one castle which the *Spanish* general took by storm on the last day of *December*. The united army then marched under the command of the cardinal of *Medicis*, and besieged *Bologna*; but, after they had made the breach almost practicable for an assault, the garrison was reinforced by *Gaston de Foix*, the *French* general; who, obliging the enemy to raise the siege, marched from thence, through the snow, to the relief of the castle of *Brescia*; which city, during the siege of *Bologna*, had revolted to the *Venetians*. Tho' he had only 4000 men of arms and 6000 foot, he defeated part of the *Venetian* army that opposed his march, and retook *Brescia* by storm, putting almost the whole garrison, which consisted of 9000 men,

men, to the sword, and allowing his soldiers to pillage the city, as a punishment for its rebellion^m.

LEWIS about this time, being informed that the emperor and the kings of *England* and *Arragon* had joined in a league against him with the pope, and that the *Florentines* had likewise gone over to that party, sent orders to his general to march directly in search of the enemy's army, and, without respect, to attack the pope in *Rome*; and, that he might not seem to make war on his own account, a legate from the council of *Milan* attended his army, who was to receive all the places that were conquered in the ecclesiastical state (S).

who gains
a signal
victory
over them
at Raven-
na.

The pope is
in great
consterna-
tion.

The legate having joined the army, *Gaston de Foix* marched, with 18,000 foot and near 2000 men at arms, in search of the enemy; who being inferior in number, and expecting that the kings of *England* and *Arragon* would cause a diversion in *France*, declined coming to an engagement. *Foix* advanced with his troops, and laid siege to *Ravenna*, which obliged the enemy at last to venture a battle; which was fought with obstinacy on the 11th of *April*, when the *French* obtained a complete tho' bloody victory; for they lost their general *Foix*, and, according to some authors, upwards of 10,000 menⁿ; but *Guicciardini* mentions only 3000 slain on the side of the *French*, and about 7000 on that of the enemy^o. *Palice*, who succeeded to the command of the *French* army, immediately after took possession of *Cesena*, *Imola*, *Forli*, and *Ravenna*, which cities were delivered to the cardinal of *San-severino*, legate from the council of *Pisa*; and as the pope's army was almost wholly dispersed, and the cardinal of *Medicis* taken prisoner, if the *French* general had marched directly to *Rome*, he might, with ease, have made himself master of that city, so great was the consternation both of the pope and cardinals. *Julius* was intreated by the cardinals to agree to a peace with the king of *France*; but a few days after being informed of the weakness of the *French* army, and the irresolution of *Palice*, who was at variance with *San-severino*, he resolved to continue the war; and, in case of

^m Id. ibid. BARTHOL. SENAREG. ut supra.

ⁿ Id. ibid.

^o GUICCIARD. ut sup.

(S) At the same time he struck a golden medal, having on one side, LUD. XII. REX FRANC. DUX MEDIOL. and on the the other, PERDAM BABYLONEM, i. e. I will destroy Babylon (3).

(3) *Pist. de magnitud. Reg. Franc.*

necessity, ordered some galleys to be prepared for his flight from Rome. About the same time, being accused of contumacy, he was suspended from the pontificate by the council at Milan, who had celebrated eight sessions without decreeing any thing of consequence, or acquiring any authority in Christendom.

THE pope, tho' in appearance reduced to the greatest extremity, was quickly after more formidable than ever; for Palice, instead of proceeding to Rome, was obliged to return to the Milanese to oppose the Swiss; and the English, and Spaniards having invaded Guienne, Lewis was obliged to draw some of his troops from Italy to defend his own kingdom. The pope, in the mean time, being freed from his apprehensions of the French, on the 3d of May opened the council of the Lateran, and appointed the first session to be held on the 10th of the month, when, he himself presiding, the officials and ministers of the council were named. In the second session, which was held seven days after, the conventicle or schismatic council of Pisa was condemned, and censures were decreed against those who either directly or indirectly adhered to that assembly. The third session was then deferred till the beginning of November. The pope in the mean time, having rejected the terms of peace which he himself had proposed to the king of France, and which had been accepted by that prince, afterwards pronounced a monitory against him, threatening him with excommunication if he did not set the cardinal of Medicis at liberty. This cardinal was then a prisoner at Milan, where, to the great offence of the schismatic council, he was acknowledged by the people as apostolic legate, and gave absolution to those soldiers who promised not to serve any more against the church.

THE French commander in the Milanese, upon the news of the victory at Ravenna, had imprudently discharged a great many Italian soldiers, a circumstance which hastened the ruin of the king's affairs in Italy; for the emperor, having now openly declared for the pope, and recalled 5000 Germans that had hitherto acted in conjunction with the French, and the Swiss having likewise joined the Venetian army, Palice was no longer able to make opposition, and therefore retired with the greatest part of his troops into Pavia, and put the rest of them into one or two other places. About the same time the Venetians and Swiss, taking possession of Cremona and Bergamo, and the inhabitants of the country, in many places of the duchy, rising against the French, Trivulzi, with many other gentlemen, abandoned the city of Milan, and fled towards Piedmont, along with whom went the schismatic

dinals and their adherents. The cardinal of *Medicis* was carried with them as a prisoner, but escaped in passing the *Po*, while the *Venetians* took possession of *Pavia*, *Lodi*, and several other towns, in the name of the *holy league*. *Parma* and *Placenza*, surrendered voluntarily to the pope, who claimed them as belonging to the exarchate of *Ravenna*, and *Janus Fregoso*, having obtained some troops from the *Venetians*, marched towards *Genoa*, which city revolted from the *French*, and created him doge. All those cities likewise, which the *French* had seized in *Romagna*, returned to the obedience of the pope; who also, by the means of the duke of *Urbino*, recovered *Bologna*; which, as a punishment for its rebellion, he laid under a heavy contribution, and had even resolved totally to have destroyed it, if he had lived.

Maximilian Sforza is put in possession of the duchy of Milan.

JULIUS was still intent upon accomplishing his other designs, namely, to take possession of the duchy of *Ferrara*, to expel the *Spaniards* and *Germans* from *Italy*, and to re-establish the houses of *Sforza* and *Medicis* at *Milan* and *Florence*. He was prevailed upon to agree to an accommodation with the duke of *Ferrara*, who, having obtained a safe conduct, went to *Rome* to ask his pardon; and at the congress, which a few weeks after the allies held at *Mantua*, he procured the duchy of *Milan* to be restored to *Maximilian*, the son of the late *Lewis Sforza*, contrary to the inclination of the king of *Arragon* and the emperor, who designed it for one of their grandsons. He then sent his army, with the *Spanish* auxiliaries, against the *Florentines*, who were compelled to surrender the government of their city to *Laurence Medicis II.* nephew of the cardinal.

As the *Swiss*, from their enmity to the king of *France*, had been the chief instruments of the revolution in *Lombardy*, *Julius* sent a standard, a cap, and a sword, to the cantons, and conferred upon them the title of *Defenders of Ecclesiastical Liberty*. Soon after the bishop of *Gurck*, the emperor's plenipotentiary at *Mantua*, arrived at *Rome*, where *Julius* received him with the greatest respect, and concluded an alliance with *Maximilian* against the *Venetians*, who obstinately refused to deliver up *Vicenza* to the emperor. After the conclusion of this treaty, the *German* bishop was present at the third session of the council of the *Lateran*, which had been deferred till the 3d of *December*. In this session the emperor approved of the *Lateran* council, and the pope denounced a sentence of interdict against the kingdom of *France*, espe-

^B BARTHOL. SENAREG. ut sup.
an. FUGGER. l. vi. c. 16.

¹ GUICCIARD. l. x. in

ly the city of *Lyons*, where the schismatic cardinals still pretended to hold their council. In the fourth session, held on the 11th of the month, the letter of *Lewis XI.* of *France* was read, abrogating the pragmatic sanction; and a monitory was then pronounced, citing the *French* king, and all the prelates, chapters, and parliaments, in that kingdom, to appear within sixty days before the council, to justify the repealing of the said abrogation (T).

THO' all *Italy* now enjoyed a profound tranquillity, and *The pope Julius* was in possession of almost the whole territories to which, as pope, he could form any pretensions, yet his restless spirit still formed new designs to disturb the public peace. He resolved in the spring to attack the duke of *Ferrara*, and, as the cardinal of *Medicis* seemed to adhere more to the king of *Arragon* than to him, he determined to alter the state of *Florence*. He likewise recalled the cardinal of *Sion* from his legation in the *Milanese*, because the new duke had conferred upon him a revenue of more than 30,000 ducats; and to encourage the king of *England* in the war against *France*, he resolved, by a decree of the *Lateran* council, to transfer to him the title of *Most Christian King*; for which purpose a bull was expedited, whereby likewise the kingdom of *France* was granted to whoever should take possession of it. But he was prevented from executing these and other designs by death, which happened to him on the 21st of *February*, having a few days before caused the council, in their fifth session, to confirm the bull formerly published by him against simony. Being sensible of his approaching end, he declared that the election of his successor belonged to the sacred college, and not to the council, and intreated the cardinals to give the vicariate of the city of *Pesaro* to his nephew the duke of *Urbino*. *Julius*, a few days before his death, according to some authors, expressed great penitence for his proceedings against the king of *France*, and wished, with great earnestness, that he had never enjoyed the pontificate.

FERRON. in Lud. XII. BUDÆ Comment. de Affe. l. iv.

(T) The bishop of *Gurck*, his coadjutor; which *Julius* during his residence at *Rome*, would by no means consent to proposed to the pope, that he should accept of the emperor as

(4) See the History of the German Empire.

Leo X. *ele&ed.*

UPON the news of the death of the pope, *Parma* and the duke of *Ferrara* recovered all his territories *in Romagna*. The state of the church suffered no other alteration, and all was quiet at *Rome*; where, after the usual time for the obsequies of the pope, twenty-four cardinals entered the conclave, and, having agreed to several articles for moderating the authority of the future pope, on the 10th of *March* they unanimously chose the cardinal of *Medicis*, who assumed the name of *Leo X.* He was then only thirty-seven years of age; however his election gave universal satisfaction, as he had rendered himself famous by his liberality and humanity, and was besides of unblemished manners, and a great lover of learning and men of genius (U). Four days after his election, the schismatic cardinals, who, upon the news of the death of *Julius*, had set out for *Italy*, voluntarily submitted themselves to the new pope; who sent the bishop of *Orvieto* to them at *Florence*, to give them hopes of a reconciliation, but desired them to lay aside the habit of cardinals, as they had been deprived by the *Lateran* council, and to remain in that city till they should be recalled to *Rome* *. On the 11th of *April*, the same day that he had been taken prisoner the year before, he was crowned with the greatest magnificence in the *Lateran* church; in that solemnity, which cost him 100,000 ducats, the duke of *Ferrara*, who had obtained a suspension of the censures denounced against him, carried the banner of the church.

THE change of the pope and other circumstances were not sufficient to procure tranquillity to *Italy*; for the emperor refusing to deliver up *Verona* to the *Venetians*, that republic would not hearken to a peace; and the king of *France*, having concluded a truce with the king of *Spain* for twelve months, again made preparations for recovering the *Milanesse*, having for that purpose concluded an alliance with the *Venetians*, who preferred his friendship to that of the emperor.

* GUICCIARD. ut sup. SPOND. ANNAL.

(U) *Leo X.* was the son of *Demetrius Chalcondyles*, and the famous *Laurence Medicis* of *Florence*, and *Clarissa Urfini*. He was created a cardinal in the 14th year of his age. His preceptors were *Angelus Politianus*, and several other learned men, were his intimate friends (5).

(5) *Jovius in vit. Leon. Spond. Annal. Onuphr. & Victorel. in Leon.*

the pope seemed inclined to peace, and had published a brief exhorting the *Venetians* to conclude the war, yet he still excited the king of *England* to make war upon *France*, and negotiated with the *Swiss* to enter *Lombardy* for the defence of the *Milanese*. In the mean time the *French* army, *Th* under the command of *Tremouille* and *Trivulzi*, passed the *French Alps*, and, with great rapidity, recovered the whole duchy *recover* of *Milan*, except *Como* and *Novara*, while the *Venetians* took *the duchy* possession of *Brescia*, *Peschiera*, *Lodi*, and *Cremona*. This *of Milan*, prosperity, however, was of very short continuance; for the *French* being surprised and defeated by the *Swiss* in a *which is* *sally* *quickly* *lost*, from *Novara*, the *Milanese* quickly revolted to *Sforza*, and the *Spaniards*, declaring for the emperor, attacked the *Venetian* territories, took several places, and entirely defeated the army of the republic.

DURING these transactions in the field, *Leo* held the sixth session of the *Lateran* council on the 27th of *April*, when he published a bull, approving of all their past proceedings, and declaring his intention of continuing the assembly till peace should be concluded among the Christian princes. In the seventh session, which was held on the 16th of *June*, the deputies of the king of *Poland*, and of the dukes of *Mazovia*, *Russia*, *Milan*, and *Mantua*, were admitted; and, the king of *France* having sent the bishop of *Marseilles* to treat of his re-union to the church, the pope, by a decree of the council, gave a liberty to the *French* bishops, till the 1st of *September*, to clear themselves from their contumacy. A writing was then read, signed by the deposed cardinals *The schis-* *Carvajal* and *Sanseverino*, wherein they approved of the *matic car-* *Lateran* council, and confessed themselves justly deprived of *dinals are* their dignities. Notwithstanding the great opposition of the *restored to* cardinals of *York* and *Sion*, and the ambassadors of the em- *their dig-* peror and the king of *Spain*, yet *Leo* consented to their restoration, judging that the schismatic council of *Pisa* would be more easily extinguished by lenity than rigour. Tho' the pope, by this proceeding, gratified the *French* king, he nevertheless did his utmost to detach the *Venetians* from their alliance with *France*, and to mediate a peace betwixt them and the emperor. After the defeat of their troops by the *Spaniards*, the *Venetians* consented to, accept of *Leo* as mediator, and sent deputies to *Rome*; whither likewise *Maximilian* sent the bishop of *Gurck*, whom the pope promoted to the dignity of cardinal. The conferences continued three

* BEMB. l. iii. ep. 19. l. iv. ep. 1. MARJAN. l. xxx. n. 92. Hist. de la ligue de Camb. t. ii. l. iv. p. 316. BELCAR. l. xiv.

months, during which time the pope published a cessation of hostilities; however he had not influence sufficient with the two parties to prevail with them to abate of their mutual demands, so that the time for the arbitration elapsed without any thing being determined^a.

The king of France acknowledges the Lateran council.

FRANCE in the mean time being invaded in *Picardy* by the king of *England*, and in *Burgundy* by the *Swiss*, *Lewis XII.* found it absolutely necessary to be reconciled to the apostolic see; he accordingly sent deputies to *Rome*, who, in the eighth session of the *Lateran* council, which was held on the 17th of *December*, renounced in his name the *Pisan* conventicle, and declared his adherence to the council of the *Lateran*, promising that six *French* prelates should come to *Rome* to do the same in the name of the whole *Gallican* church. In the same session a penal monitory was decreed against the parliament of *Provence*, which assumed to itself an authority over the clergy; and would not allow of appeals to the apostolic see, nor suffer the pope's letters to be put in execution without their leave. A decree of the pope was then read against certain philosophers, who affirmed, that the rational soul was mortal, and identically the same in all men. A bull was likewise read for sending cardinals to exhort the Christian princes to peace and concord, and for inviting the *Bohemian* heretics, with a safe conduct, to the council; another was issued for reforming the officers of the *Roman* court, and for putting a stop to their rapaciousness^w.

A.D. 1514. Leo endeavours to reconcile the French and Swiss,

THE kingdom of *France* being now re-united to the see of *Rome*, *Leo* no longer desired to see it depressed; and tho' he still continued in his resolution of preventing *Lewis* from possessing the *Milanese*, he had no desire to see his kingdom attacked by the *English* and *Germans*, and was besides afraid lest *Lewis* should be persuaded to enter into an alliance with the emperor and the king of *Spain*, and assist them in conquering the *Milanese* for their grandson *Charles*, by which the liberty of *Italy* would be more endangered than if the duchy were in his own possession. He therefore exhorted the *Swiss* to an accommodation with the king; but they refusing the offers made to them by *Lewis*, the pope again endeavoured to mediate a peace betwixt the *Venetians* and the emperor, to prevent him from having any pretence to enter *Italy*, and proposed a cessation of arms in *Lombardy* on certain conditions; which being rejected by the *Venetians*, as greatly prejudicial to their interest, the pope sent a con-

^a GUICCIARD. l. xi. in fin. ROO. l. xii. p. 593. ^w SPOND. Annal. hoc an.

considerable body of troops to take possession of *Crema*, to oblige the republic to agree to the preliminaries which he had proposed. His troops, however, were defeated, and obliged to retire with considerable loss. *Leo* in the mean time being informed, that a peace was negotiating betwixt the kings of *France* and *England*, he offered his mediation; which was accepted by both the princes, and a treaty of peace was concluded on the 7th of *August*. Tho' the pope had exhorted the king of *England* to this peace, yet, in reality, it was concluded against his inclination; but *Henry VIII.* after having made great preparations for the campaign, being disappointed by the emperor and his father-in-law, who had both agreed to a truce with the *French* king, resolved no longer to be their tool, and, in his turn, disappointed them by entering into a defensive alliance with *Lewis* *. Soon after the conclusion of this treaty, the pope sent some preliminaries into *France* for an alliance with *Lewis* against the catholic king, having an intention of expelling the *Spaniards* from *Italy*, and conferring the kingdom of *Naples* upon his brother *Julian*; but, *Lewis* neglecting to return an immediate answer to his proposals, *Leo* in the mean time renewed his alliance with the emperor and the catholic king for one year: and, despairing of conquering *Naples*, he procured the investiture of *Modena* and *Reggio* from the emperor for 40,000 ducats, which he intended as a settlement for his brother, together with *Parma*, *Placenza*, and the duchy of *Ferrara*; which last he still formed pretensions to, notwithstanding his promises to the duke.

DURING these transactions, the king of *France* was making great preparations for recovering the *Milanese*, and *Leo* had celebrated the ninth session of the *Lateran* council on the 2d of *May*, when the ambassadors of the king of *Portugal* were admitted, and the deputies from the *Gallican* church, tho' they had not appeared, were absolved from all censures, as by a letter to the pope, and a public instrument taken in a monastery in *Savoy*, it was proved they could not obtain a safe conduct from the *Genoese* or the duke of *Milan*. A decree was then read, enjoining prayers thro' all Christendom for obtaining peace among Christian princes, and union against the *Turks*. Indulgences were likewise published, and the divine wrath denounced against those who should interrupt the legates or apostolic nuncios, either directly or indirectly, in disposing of the indulgences, and in collecting the revenue arising from their sale. Another decree was also

* BEBCAR. l. xiv. GUICCIARD. l. xii.

expences of a war against the Turks. published for the reformation of the Roman court; first, as to the supplying the vacancies of churches, monasteries, parishes, and prohibiting for the future all grants of benefices; likewise, for the right administration of all benefices, for the correction of the vices of all ecclesiastics and laics, and for regulating the manners of the cardinals. The ancient canons were also renewed against all violators of the ecclesiastical liberty.

ITALY was at this time alarmed with the rumour of an invasion from soltan *Selim*; who, having poisoned his father *Bajazet* II. formed pretensions to the western empire as successor of the emperors of *Constantinople*, and was making immense preparations at *Adrianople* for some warlike expedition. *Leo*, to avert the storm from *Italy*, had ordered a crusade to be preached in *Hungary*; but *Selim*, having no intention to attack that kingdom, concluded a peace with *Ladislav* (W), and transported his army into *Asia* against the sophi of *Persia*, whose general he defeated with considerable loss. Tho' *Selim* himself a few months afterwards was defeated by the sophi, yet, upon the news of his first victory, *Leo* wrote to all the Christian princes, exhorting them to unite their forces against the infidels², who professed publicly their intention of attacking *Italy*; which kingdom was not only threatened with a war from the *Turks*, but also from *Francis* I. who upon the death of *Lewis* XII. which happened on the 1st of *January*, succeeded to the crown of *France*.

Francis I. FRANCIS solicited the friendship of the pope by means of his brother *Julian*, who had married his aunt, the sister of the duke of *Savoy*, and likewise sent ambassadors for that purpose to *Rome*, among whom was the famous *Budeus*; but his endeavours were in vain, for *Leo* had privately acceded to the alliance of the emperor, the king of *Spain*, and the *Swiss*, against him, and, while he amused his ambassadors,

A.D.
1515.

¹ SPOND. Annal. ² BEMB. l. x. ep. 5. SAMB. Append. ad Bonfin. p. 537, 538.

(W) The army of crusaders which was raised in *Hungary*, being prevented by the peace from acting against the *Turks*, turned their arms against the nobility by whom they were wont to be oppressed, and for some months committed the greatest outrages thro' the kingdom; but, as the *Turks* being seized, they were at last dispersed, tho' not without great bloodshed (6).

(6) *Istuan. rer. Hung. l. v.*

he

celebrated the tenth session of the *Lateran* council on the 15th of *May*, in which the deputies of the duke of *Savoy* admitted. Several decrees were then read for punishing delinquent canons and secular clerks; concerning the jurisdiction of the ordinary; concerning the celebration of diocesan and provincial synods; and prohibiting the printing of any book or manuscript without the approbation of the ordinaries and inquisitors. After the reading of these decrees, the proctor of the council produced a writing, containing the submission of the parliament of *Provence*; which being ingrossed in the acts, the pope absolved them from the censures contained in the former monitory. During these proceedings at *Rome*, the king of *France*, having renewed the alliance with the *Venetians*, marched towards the *Alps* with an army of upwards of 55,000 men. *Leo*, tho' he had not openly declared against him, yet sent some troops into *Lombardy*, under pretence of guarding *Placenza* and *Parma*; but *Prospero Colonna* being surpris'd by the *French* in *Piedmont*, the pope hesitated greatly whether he should not agree to an accommodation with *Francis*; who, in the mean time arriving at *Vercelli*, there first heard that he was his enemy. The king, having continued a few days at *Vercelli*, advanced with his army to *Marignan*; where being attacked by the *Swiss*, after a furious engagement of two days, he gained a signal victory, in consequence of which he got possession of the whole *Milanese*, except the castles of *Milan* and *Cremona* *.

THIS victory of the *French* obliged *Leo* to think seriously of an accommodation with *Francis*. A treaty was accordingly concluded by the mediation of the duke of *Savoy*, by which the pope ceded *Parma* and *Placenza* to the king of *France*, and promised to restore *Modena* and *Reggio* to the duke of *Ferrara*; *Francis*, on his part, engaging to defend the ecclesiastical state, and to support the authority of the house of *Medicis* in *Florence*. The king afterwards had a conference with the pope at *Bologna* about the middle of *December*, to consult about invading the kingdom of *Naples*. At the same time he agreed upon certain articles instead of the pragmatic sanction, in consideration of which *Leo* granted him the tythe of all ecclesiastical revenues in his kingdom for one year, and allowed him to nominate to all bishoprics and abbacies, on condition, however, that the annates should be paid to the court of *Rome*, not according to the ancient regulation, but according to the real value. The king like-

* * GUICCIARD. l. xii. P. 135. l. xiii. MARIAN. l. xxx. PETR. JUST. l. i.

wife interceded for the duke of *Urbino*, the nephew of the late pope, with whom *Leo* was offended, because, from a disgust of *Laurence de Medicis*, he had recalled his troops from the ecclesiastical army; but the pope having been informed, that the duke had endeavoured to excite *Francis* against him, and being besides desirous of annexing his territories to his own family, refused the king's request. *Francis*, after the conference, returned to *Milan*, and, having concluded an alliance with the *Swiss*, disbanded his army, and repassed the *Alps* in the beginning of *January*.

The emperor enters Lombardy with a formidable army; A.D. 1516. THE pope about the same time went to *Florence*, and during his residence in that city assisted the bishop of *Petrucchi*, his ancient friend, to take possession of the city of *Siena*; and, notwithstanding his late treaty with the king of *France*, upon hearing that the emperor had entered *Italy* to recover the *Milanese*, he appointed the cardinal *Bibiena* to attend him as his legate, and gave permission to *Marc Antonio Colonna* to join him with 200 men at arms. However, he did not openly break with the *French*; for, at the request of the king, he ordered his nephew *Laurence* to send from *Florence* a subsidy sufficient to pay 3,000 *Swiss* for one month, and he desired the legate to stop on his journey under pretence of sickness. *Leo* by this proceeding, in some measure, saved his honour; for *Maximilian*, being in great want of money, was obliged to leave his army upon a feigned excuse, and return to *Germany*, while great part of his troops enlisted in the service of the *French* and *Venetians*, and the rest returned to *Germany* and *Switzerland*. While the emperor was in *Italy*, the pope, hearing of the death of the king of *Hungary* and *Bohemia*, wrote to the cardinal of *Strigonia* to take care of the education of his son *Lewis*, then a boy of ten years of age, and dissuaded him from hearkening to the proposals of the *Turks*, who had sent an embassy, desiring a peace or a truce with the *Hungarians*.

but is obliged to return to Germany.

The pope seizes upon the duchy of Urbino. 20. ABOUT the same time, being desirous of possessing the duchy of *Urbino*, *Leo* published a monitory against the duke, in which he accused him of disloyalty as a vassal of the church, and, in a few weeks, having conquered the territories of *Urbino*, *Pesara*, and *Sinigaglia*, he gave the investiture of them to his nephew *Laurence*, obliging all the cardinals to sign with their own hand the bull expedited for that purpose. After this conquest he endeavoured to dissuade the

^b Ap. BENEDICT Epist. l. xiii. & xiii.
CHIMAREL. Hist. d' Urbino.

^c GUICCIARD. l. xii.

duke Charles, who had succeeded his grandfather Ferdinand of Arragon, from engaging in an alliance with France, and he secretly solicited the emperor, the king of England, and the Swiss to attack the Milanese. Francis, being informed of these designs of the pope, laid aside the thoughts of an expedition against Naples, and concluded an alliance with the young catholic king at Noyon. The emperor had a liberty for two months to accede to this treaty, on condition of accommodating all his differences with the Venetians. Maximilian accordingly embraced this opportunity of supplying his empty coffers, and promised to deliver up Verona to the Venetians, on consideration of receiving from them 200,000 ducats; which article was actually put in execution in the beginning of the following year.

THE news of this accommodation betwixt the king of France, the emperor, and his grandson Charles, was very disagreeable to the pope; who in the mean time celebrated the eleventh session of the Lateran council on the 19th of December, in which three deputies were admitted from the patriarch of the Maronites, who desired to be instructed in the faith and rites of the Roman church. A decree was then read against vain preachers, who were ordered, under severe censures, not to publish false miracles and prophecies, but to explain the scripture according to the interpretation of the fathers. The council after this confirmed the Concordata concluded betwixt the pope and the king of France at Bologna; and in the twelfth and last session, which was held on the 16th of March, a letter from the emperor was read, in answer to one from the pope, who had exhorted him to declare war against the grand signor, then more formidable than ever by his late conquest of Syria. Maximilian, in his turn, exhorted the pope and the cardinals to the sacred expedition, and promised to attend them, and assist them with his forces. After the reading of his letter, a bull was published, imposing a tythe upon all ecclesiastical revenues for three years for the Turkish war; and, all the acts of the fathers being confirmed, the council was solemnly dissolved, as the schism occasioned by the council of Pisa was at an end, and a peace concluded among the Christian princes (X).

A.D.
1517.

THE

BELLFOR: l. vi. c. 27. HECTER: l. vii. c. 12. * SPOND.
Annal.

(X) The dissolution of the council was condemned by several of the fathers, who affirmed that they ought to have proceeded.

The duke
of Ur-
bino
makes war
upon the
pope

THO' this general peace procured tranquillity to the
tians and the *Milanese*, yet the pope was thereby engaged in
a new war; for upon the delivery of *Verona* to the *Vene-*
tians, 6000 foreign soldiers entered into the service of the
duke of *Urbino*, by whose assistance he quickly recovered his
former duchy.* The pope was greatly afraid, that the duke
was supported by the king of *France*, who he believed was
greatly dissatisfied with him, as he had not only neglected to
fulfil his part of the treaty concluded at *Bologna*, but upon
his return to *Rome* had even published a bull contrary to the
convention. However, the kings of *France* and *Spain*, from
their mutual jealousy of each other, gave assistance to *Leo*
against the duke of *Urbino*, and *Francis* renewed with him
the treaty of *Bologna*. Notwithstanding the *French* and
Spanish reinforcements, the pope's army was not powerful
enough to venture an engagement; and soon after, some
thousands of *Spaniards* and *Germans* deserting to the duke of
Urbino, his army became more formidable than in the begin-
ning of the campaign.

against
whom a
conspiracy
is formed
by the
cardinals.

In the mean time the pope himself was threatened with a
conspiracy at *Rome*, which was headed by the cardinal of
Siena, who, with his brother *Borghese*, had been expelled
from that place, altho' it was chiefly by his means that the
family of the *Medicis* had recovered *Florence*, and *Leo* him-
self had obtained the pontificate. The plot being discovered,
the cardinal of *Siena*, with several others of lesser note,
were put to death, and two other cardinals were degraded.
By these severities, *Leo* being sensible that he had rendered
himself odious to the sacred college, he therefore resolved up-
on a promotion of new cardinals, and on the 26th of *June*
nominated thirty-one persons to that dignity, without regard
to their merit, many of them having bought their prefer-
ment with money, and others owing their elevation to their

proceeded further in the refor-
mation of the church, and that
the tythe ought not to be ex-
acted till the commencement of
the expedition against the *Turks*
(7). The levying of the tythe
was likewise objected to by the
clergy of *Spain*, who, in a
council held at *Madrid* in the
month of *September*, declared

that they would not consent to
that tax (8). There is also a
speech extant, in the name of
Francis Picus of *Mirandola*, said
to have been spoken by him in
the last session; by which, in the
most earnest manner, he re-
commended to the pope and the
council to think of a reforma-
tion of manners (9).

(7) *Spond. Annal.* loc. cit. (8) *Angl. Epist.* 596.
op. Pic. Mirand. & *op. Orb. in Falsic. rer. caputend.*

(9) *Ibid.* in fin.

his services in his family^c. Having by this new provision provided for his safety at Rome, Leo prosecuted the war against *Urbino*, who being unable to support his troops, soon after consented to a peace on these conditions, namely, that the pope should pay to the *Spanish* troops 45,000 ducats, and 60,000 to the *Gastons* and *Germans*, who should thereupon, within thirty days, evacuate the territories of the church, and of *Florence*; that the duke of *Urbino* should resign his duchy; that the pope should absolve him from all censures, and should allow him to retire to *Mantua* with all his effects, particularly with his artillery, and the famous library that had been collected by his grand-father by the mother's side^e. By this submission of the duke of *Urbino*, all hostilities ceased in *Italy*, which for many years had been the seat of ruinous wars; the temporal power of the pope was raised higher than ever it had been before, and his spiritual authority was quietly submitted to by all *Europe*: however, this same year the papal usurpations met with such an opposition in *Germany*, as not only put a stop to their further progress, but gave them such a blow, that they have been declining ever since.

The duke of Urbino consents to surrender his duchy to the pope.

THE apostolic see, by its insatiable avarice, was itself instrumental, tho' not designedly, in promoting this great revolution; for besides the indulgences which had been granted by the *Lateran* council for an expedition against the *Turks*, *Leo*, who was in great want of money, this year, by the advice of cardinal *Pucci*, published other indulgences thro' all Christendom, to be sold indiscriminately to all purchasers (Y). These he farmed out to the highest bidders; and his sister *Magdalen*, who had received from him the revenue of those that were disposed of in several parts of *Germany*, appointed *Arcimboldus*, archbishop of *Upsal*, her commissary, who exercised his office with great avarice and extortion^b.

The beginning of the reformation in Germany.

^c GUCCIARDINI, l. xiii.

^e Idem ibid. ^b Idem ibid.

(Y) Indulgences were originally exemptions from taxes, granted by the emperors and governors to provinces that had been harassed by enemies, earthquakes, unfruitful seasons, &c. the popes applied them to spiritual matters, and granted them to those who went to recover the *Holy Land* from the *Saracens*. They dispensed them

likewise to those who, instead of marching personally against the infidels, contributed to the expence of the expedition. Afterwards the indulgences and pardons became more common; but *Leo*, at this time, prostituted them to a greater degree than they had ever been before.

The *Dominicans*, who had received the commission from archbishop of *Mentz* to publish the indulgences, acted great indiscretion; they printed several books, extolling the power of their absolutions, to which they gave the name of the *Grand Pardons*; and for certain rates, set down in a tariff which had been given them, they not only absolved the living from all their sins, but delivered the souls of the dead from the pretended pains of purgatory. They likewise sold the liberty of eating flesh, eggs, milk, and cheese, upon prohibited days, and publickly squandered a great part of the money, arising from the sale of the indulgences, in taverns, where they frequently staked their absolutions at a game of tables ⁱ.

Martin Luther publishes theses against the indulgences of the pope.

THESE proceedings occasioned great murmurings over all Germany; and *John Stanpitz*, vicar-general of the *Augustines*, offended, as it is said, that his order had not been employed, in disposing of the indulgences, preached against them with great warmth at *Wittenberg*, where he was likewise assisted by *Martin Luther*, a monk of his order, and professor in that university, who not only exerted himself in his discourses against the indulgences, but likewise wrote to the archbishop of *Mentz*, complaining of the proceedings of the *Dominicans*; and, on the last day of *October*, published ninety-five propositions or theses against indulgences, penance, purgatory, and the authority of the pope (Z). The archbishop

ⁱ SLEIDAN. l. i. COCHLÆ. de Act. & Script. Luther. ULM. BERG in vit. Luther.

(Z) *Martin Luther* was born in 1483, at *Issebe*, in the county of *Mansfeld*, in *Upper Saxony*. His father, whose name was *Lottor*, or *Lautner*, intended that he should follow the profession of the law; but *Luther*, after he had finished his course of philosophy, having, while he was walking in the fields, been terrified with a clap of thunder, which killed his companion, he made a vow of becoming monk, which he accordingly performed, two years afterwards at *Erford*, in the 22^d year of his age. He was soon after appointed professor in the university,

which *Frederic the Wise*, duke of *Saxony*, a few years before had established at *Wittenberg*, where he distinguished himself by his active genius, his great memory, and natural eloquence. In 1516 he began to study the Greek and Hebrew, and published several theses concerning free will, the merit of good works, and human traditions, contrary to the opinions of the scholastic divines, for whom he had long testified a great contempt, as corrupters of the gospel by their sophistical philosophy. By this proceeding it would appear, that the dispute

shop took no notice of his letter, but soon after John Tetzel, a Dominican, and director of the sales of indulgences in *Saxony*, published 106 propositions in defence of the pope's authority, and, as inquisitor of the faith, ordered those of *Luther* to be burnt. The students at *Wittenberg* treated the propositions of Tetzel in the same manner; and the dispute, which at first was looked upon only as a scholastic controversy, quickly began to be regarded in a more serious manner. The theses of *Luther* were greatly read and approved; however, one *Eckius*, a professor of divinity at *Ingolstadt*, wrote against them; and at *Rome* they were impugned by one *Prieras* a Dominican, and master of the sacred palace, who, in his book, treated *Luther* with contempt and ridicule, not knowing that he was attacking his adversary with his own weapons; for soon after *Luther* published an answer to *Prieras*, in which he retorted the ridicule upon his opponent. He used the same arms against one *Holstraten*, another Dominican, who had written with great bitterness against him, and exhorted the pope to condemn him as a heretic^k. *Luther* judging likewise that his adversaries were endeavouring to defame him, in the month of June he wrote in a submissive manner to the pope, in his own justification, promising all obedience to the apostolic see, and declaring that he had published his theses only with the intention of disputing in a scholastic manner^l.

LEO gave but very little attention to these commotions in a remote part of *Germany*, being much more alarmed by the progress of the grand signor *Selim*, who the year before had conquered *Egypt*, and put an end to the government of the *Mamelukes*. As he was a prince of great ambition, and had now no enemy in *Asia*, *Leo* was apprehensive lest he should turn his victorious arms against *Italy*; he therefore caused devout processions to be made at *Rome*,

^k SLEIDAN. l. i.^l COCHLÆ. ULEMBERG ut supra.

pointment of publishing the indulgences, was not the only motive of his preaching against them. In 1514 he quitted the habit of a monk, and the year after married a wife, by whom he had three sons. He died on the 18th of February 1546. According to *Basnage*,

he had many faults, as all great men have; but he always preserved that devotion which appeared in his early youth. He had an ardent zeal for the glory of God, and the re-establishment of the church, and a firmness of mind that was unshaken by the greatest dangers (1).

(1) Spond. Annal. Sleidan. l. xvi. in fin. Ulemberg in vita Lutheri. Basnage Hist. de Gareliz. des Eglis. reform. t. iii. p. 66.

and walked himself barefoot, with all his court, from the Vatican to the church of *Minerva* ^{m.} He then wrote to all the Christian princes, exhorting them to a mutual truce for five years; and having settled the plan of the expedition, he sent legates into the different kingdoms of *Europe*, to excite the princes to grant their contingents. But *Selim* remaining inactive, the danger seemed to vanish; so that the secular princes, upon various pretences, refused to act, and the Spanish clergy absolutely refused to pay the tythe, as they gave no credit to the reasons urged by the pope. Cardinal *Cajetan*, a *Dominican*, went as legate to *Germany*, and was present at the diet of *Augsburg*, held in the beginning of *August*, where the emperor, the electors, and many other German princes, assembled, to consult of the Turkish expedition. *Cajetan*, in the presence of the diet, conferred a cardinal's hat on the archbishop of *Mentz*, a brother of the elector of *Brandenburg*, by which proceeding he disgusted the German princes, who were offended that one of their members should take a particular oath of obedience to the holy see. The elector of *Saxony*, and many other princes, made great complaints of the violation of the *Germanic Concordata*, and proposed to suppress the mandates and grants of reservation still usurped by the popes; but as the diet was not unanimous, nothing was effected.

Leo cites Luther to appear at Rome. THE emperor, in the beginning of the diet, had written to the pope, desiring him to proceed against *Luther*; but before his letter arrived at *Rome*, *Leo* having received repeated complaints against *Luther* from *Germany*, had cited him to appear at *Rome* within sixty days, and had written to the duke of *Saxony* to deliver him to *Cajetan*. However, at the intercession of the elector of the university of *Wittenberg*, he consented that his cause should be tried at *Augsburg*. *Luther*, having obtained a safe-conduct from the emperor, appeared before *Cajetan* about the middle of *October*, and had several conferences with him; but the legate insisting absolutely upon his recantation, and refusing to enter into any dispute, excepting slightly urging the authority of a decree of *Clement VI.* *Luther* declared, that he would not retract the doctrines that he had preached and written, unless he was convicted of their error; but, as he was a man, and therefore fallible, he submitted his opinion to the deci-

Luther has a conference with the cardinal Cajetan at Augsburg.

= VICTORIUS addit. ad Cicon. a Ap. GOLDAST. Conf. imper. t. ii. esp. Bemb. Epist. l. xiv. & xv. ° FUGGER. l. vi. c. xix. p. 1359. STRUV. period. x. p. 971. GEORGI. l. v. §. 7. n. 17.

Gen of the church, and to the universities of *Germany*, and particularly to that of *Paris*. As he was then threatened by the legate, he privately left *Augsburg*; but before his departure he entered an appeal to the pope to be fixed up in the public places of the city ^P. *Cajetan* immediately wrote to *Rome*, complaining of *Luther's* obstinacy, and sent a letter to the duke of *Saxony* to banish him from his dominions. At the same time *Luther* wrote a submissive letter to the pope, complaining against *Cajetan*; and, a few weeks after, being informed that his appeal was rejected, he again appealed from the pope, who, like other men, was fallible, to a future general council.

LEO, to put a stop to the disputes in *Germany* concern-
ing the supremacy of the pope, on the 9th of *November* pub-
lished a new bull, confirming his indulgences; in which he
affirmed, that all ought to believe that the bishop of *Rome*
had a power of forgiving sins. Soon after he sent a golden
rose to the duke of *Saxony*, and solicited his counsellors to
persuade him to withdraw his protection from *Luther*. How-
ever, his endeavours were in vain; for the elector, upon
the death of the emperor, which happened on the 12th of
January, assuming, as vicar, the government of great part
of the empire during the interregnum, *Luther's* authority
increased, and he began to be looked upon as a man sent
from God, to remedy the disorders and abuses of the *Roman*
church. The elector refused to accept of the rose; however
the nuncio, who was a *German*, prevailed upon *Luther* to
write in a submissive manner to *Rome*, and to submit his
cause to the judgment of a *German* bishop. *Luther* accord-
ingly wrote in very respectful terms to the pope, but he
added, that he would not retract his opinions, unless they
were proved to him to be erroneous. He afterwards refused
to submit to the decision of the archbishop of *Triers*, as he
heard that cardinal *Cajetan* was to be present at the confer-
ences, and the pope had not authorized the archbishop to
give a final determination. However, he consented to a pub-
lic dispute with *Eckius* at *Leipsic*, a city under the dominion
of *George*, duke of *Saxony*, cousin of the elector *Frederic*,
whom he repaired with *Carlostadt* and *Philip Melancthon*,
who the year before had been appointed *Greek* professor at
Wittenberg. The dispute continued for several days, each
party claiming the victory; but the universities of *Cologn*,

Leo re-
news his
bull for
indulgen-
ces.
A.D.
1519.

^P COCHLÆ. ut supra. A&L. LUTHER. ap. CAJETAN. t. i. SLEIDAN.

Louvain, and *Paris*, which last had been chosen as judges of the disputation, decided in favour of *Eckius* ¹.

Luther's
doctrines
meet with
great re-
ception.

DURING these proceedings, *Charles of Austria*, king of *Spain*, was elected emperor on the 28th of *June*, cardinal *Gajetan* having, by the pope's authority, dispensed with the impediment of his being king of *Naples*. *Leo* soon after, to prevent a war in *Italy*, granted him the investiture of that kingdom, and wrote to him in *Spain*, exhorting him to war against the *Turks*. In the mean time, notwithstanding his nephew *Lorenzo* had died without issue, he still kept possession of the duchy of *Florence*, and endeavoured to surprize the city of *Ferrara*; but his design being discovered, it proved ineffectual. Mean while the favourers of *Luther* not only increased in the empire, but, according to *Guicciardini*, his doctrines began to be attended to in *Italy* ². The king of *Denmark* publicly approved of his proceedings ³; and *Laurence* and *Olaus Petri*, two brothers that had studied at *Wittemberg*, published his doctrines in *Sweden*, where they met with a favourable reception ⁴. It appears likewise from the letters of *Erasmus* to him and the duke of *Saxony*, that his opinions were well received in *England* and *Flanders* ⁵ (A).

While

¹ *Iidem* *ibid.*

² *GUICCIARD.* l. xiii.

³ *Idem* *ibid.*

⁴ *HUITFELD.* *Hist. Dan.* t. viii.

⁵ *JORENSEN.* *Hist. Gus-*

tava I. ⁶ *Epist. ERASM.* l. vi.

(A) *Erasmus* was at this time about fifty years of age, and had rendered himself famous by his writings over all *Europe*. As he had written very freely against the monks, the scholastic divines, and several superstitions of the *Roman* church, *Luther* expected that he would declare for him, and both he and the elector of *Saxony* wrote to him to know his sentiments. *Erasmus*, in his answer, declared, that he had not read *Luther's* books; that he greatly disapproved of the bad usage he had received from the monks, who had likewise expressed great enmity against himself; that he could neither

proceedings; and that what had not yet been examined, ought not to be condemned; but for the future he counselled him to proceed with more moderation, and rather attack those who abused the pope's authority, than the popes themselves. Altho' he all his life refused to declare for the party of *Luther*, yet, on account of the notes which he published on several parts of scripture, contrary to the received opinions of the school divines, and the liberty he took in ridiculing the ignorant clergy, he was looked upon by many as *Luther's* forerunner and instructor, and was accused by the monks of heresy, error, and impiety. His opinions, which

While his writings and doctrines engaged the attention of Zuinglius great part of Europe, *Ulric Zuinglius*, born in the canton of *preaches Glaritz*, preached against the abuses and errors of the *against the Roman church in Switzerland*, without having any correspondence with him, from whom he differed in some points of his new doctrine. Notwithstanding the remonstrances of the *church of Rome in Switzerland*, bishop of *Constance*, the magistrates of *Zurich* approved of the proceedings of *Zuinglius*, and that whole canton, with those of *Bern*, *Basil*, and *Schaffhausen*, embraced his opinions.

LUTHER, in the mean time, being assured of the protection of the duke of *Saxony*, and other princes of the empire, published a treatise on Christian liberty, which he sent to *Rome*, with a letter addressed to the pope, in which he declared, that he had no other design than the glory of God, and the discovery of truth, the profession of which he would never forsake. He then affirmed, that the court of *Rome* was more corrupt than ever *Babylon* or *Sodom* had been, and that it were better for *Leo* to be a simple priest, than to be surrounded by so many flatterers, like a lamb in the midst of wolves. About the same time he published several other treatises concerning confession, vows, the celibacy of the clergy, and the communicating under both kinds, some of which were soon after censured by the universities of *Cologne* and *Louvain*. *Luther* quickly wrote an answer in his own justification, and in his preface treated the universities with great freedom, affirming, that *Aristotle* was their chief God, and that it was their practice to persecute great men, such as *Picus of Mirandola*, *Laurence Valla*, and *Reuchlin*. To protect himself from the malice of his enemies, he wrote at this time to the emperor, intreating him to defend him from all violence, till his cause should be tried. *Charles V.* about the same time, was solicited by cardinal *Adrian*, the pope's nuncio in *Spain*, to order *Luther* to be apprehended; but he declaring that he could not satisfy the pope till after his coronation at *Aix la Chapelle*, *Leo* assembled the cardinals and divines at *Rome*, and, on the 15th of *June*, drew up a bull,

A. D.
1520.

Luther publishes several treatises against the doctrines of the church of Rome.

* SLEIDAN. l. i. MELCHIOR. ADAM. in vit. Theol. Germ. RAINALD, ad an. 1520.

which after his death were condemned by the council of *Trent*, *Lutherus Erasmus* *Lutherisat*; *Luther* has appeared so dubious, that they either turned *Erasmian*, or *Erasmus* turned *Lutheran* (1).

(1) Spens. Annal, Epist. Erasmi.

by

*He is ex-
communic-
ated.*

by which he condemned forty-one of the propositions of *Luther*, and ordered them, and all his writings, to be burnt, commanding likewise the author, and all his followers, to recant within sixty days, under pain of being excommunicated and reckoned heretics ⁷.

*He exhorts
the Ger-
mans to
shake off
the autho-
rity of the
church of
Rome.*

A. D.
1521.

By this bull, which was read for several days in the churches in *Germany*, *Luther* saw himself cut off from all hopes of an accommodation, unless he would recant, for otherwise it was impossible for the pope, without contradicting his claim to infallibility, to retract his decree. Resolving, at all hazards, to defend the propositions which he had advanced, he immediately published a book against the church of *Rome*, exhorting the *German* nation to shake off its authority, and to oblige the pope and bishops to submit to the emperor. He likewise renewed his appeal to a future council; and as his books had been burnt at *Rome*, *Louvain*, and *Cologne*, he, in return, erected a pile of wood without the walls of *Wittenberg*, where, in the presence of almost the whole city, and a great many doctors, he set fire to the wood, and threw the canon law and the pope's bull into the flames ². A few weeks after the pope celebrated a diet at *Worms*, which was opened on the 6th of *January*. Among other matters, this assembly proposed to take cognizance of the cause of *Luther*, notwithstanding the objections of *Alexandre*, one of the pope's nuncios, who asserted, that they ought not to intermeddle in an affair that had been already determined by the pope. The emperor having granted his safe-conduct to *Luther*, he arrived at *Worms* on the 16th of *April*, where he again absolutely refused to retract his opinions, unless he was convinced, by reason or scripture, that they were erroneous. The elector of *Treves*, a few days after he had appeared before the diet, advised him, at a private conference, to think of some remedy for the present disorders: but he still continuing in his former sentiments, the emperor ordered him to leave *Worms*, and granted him a safe-conduct for twenty-one days ³. After his departure he put him to the ban of the empire, by an edict which was published on the 8th of *May*, by which, after accusing him of heresy, he confirmed the pope's bull against him and his followers, prohibited all from affording him any protection, and ordered him to be seized and imprisoned after the ex-

*and is put
to the ban
of the em-
pire.*

⁷ SLEIDAN. l. i. SPOND, Annal. PALLAV. Hist. Conc. Trid. l. i. c. 21. t. xiv. Conc. collect. Lab. p. 394. * SLEIDAN. l. ii. * Idem, l. iii. COCHLÆ. ut supra. PALLAV. l. i. c. 26, 28, SECKEND. l. i. sect. 44. n. 98.

piration of the time prescribed in his safe-conduct. All his books were likewise prohibited, and ordered to be burnt.^b

MEAN while the pope, who now began to be alarmed by the commotions in Germany, held frequent consistories at Rome, to consult of means to oppose Luther^c. On the 2d of January he not only excommunicated him, but denounced the same sentence against all who favoured or protected him^d. This bull he again repeated on the Thursday before Easter^e; and having received a book from Henry VIII. king of England, in defence of the doctrines of the Roman church impugned by Luther, he conferred on that prince the title of *Defender of the Faith*. About the same time he, with great imprudence, fomented the jealousies betwixt the emperor and the king of France, who had been rivals for the empire. In the vain expectation of expelling the French and Spaniards from Italy, and enlarging the possession of the church by the acquisition of Ferrara, Parma, and Placentia, instead of using his authority as a mediator, he, with great earnestness, promoted a war^f. At first he adhered to the king of France; but being informed of his unsuccessful expedition against Navarre, he entered into an alliance with the emperor and the king of England against him: and soon after sending troops to the Milanese, which were reinforced with others from Germany, he quickly made himself master of Milan, Pavia, Lodi, Parma, and Placentia. In the midst of these conquests, and while he was soliciting the Venetians to declare against the French, he was cut off by a sudden death, which happened to him on the 2d of December, and which was believed to be the effect of poison, administered to him by Barnabas Malaspina, gentleman of his bedchamber, who on that suspicion was imprisoned, but afterwards set at liberty by the cardinal of Medicis, who suppressed all examination on that affair^g. According to Guicciardini, Leo was possessed of a great many good qualities, which were blemished with a great number of bad ones; and he discovered, during his pontificate, more prudence, and much less probity, than was expected^h. He had a great love for the fine arts and sciences, and was very liberal to learned men; but he is accused of having been a voluptuary, ambitious, and extremely revengeful. Paul Jovius charges

^a Ap. GODDAST. Const. imper. t. ii. Bzov. hoc an.
^b GUICCIARD. l. xiii. ^c SPOND. Annal. ^d SLEIDAN.
^e GUICCIARD. l. xiv. ^f Idem ibid. ^g OUPH. in vit. Leon.
^h GUICCIARD. l. xiv.

him with the crime of sodomy, and *Picus* of *Mirandola* affirms that he was an atheist.

UPON the death of *Leo*, the college of cardinals were a loss whether to espouse the party of the king of *France* or the emperor; and giving no orders to the army in the *Milanese*, the duke of *Urbino*, while they were deliberating at *Rome*, recovered his former duchy, and the duke of *Ferrara* again got possession of some of his antient territories *Romagna*; but the *French* still continued too weak to face the imperialists. The cardinal of *Ivrea*, who favoured the *French*, being seized in *Lombardy* on his journey to *Rome*, the college made a decree not to proceed to the election of a pope till he was set at liberty. He soon after arriving at the city, thirty-nine cardinals entered the conclave on the 27th of *December*, and, after a long contest, on the 9th of *January* unanimously chose *Adrian* cardinal of *Tortosa*.

THE contest was occasioned by the great number of competitors, the chief of whom at first was the cardinal of *Medicis*; but he was opposed by the others, in the interest of the emperor and of cardinal *Wolsey*, who relying on the emperor's promise in his favour, and the influence of his money, was in great hopes of succeeding. Tho' *Charles* had indeed made great promises to *Wolsey*, in order to secure the friendship of *Henry VIII.* yet he had no intention at that time of fulfilling them, but desired to have a pope, who he knew would be entirely in his interests. He therefore, not to offend *Wolsey*, with great secrecy intrigued with the conclave; and, after having secured the majority of votes, one of the cardinals, on the last day of the election, proposed *Adrian* as it were by chance; and being seconded by another, who made a long speech in his favour, all that faction declared for him, and were followed by the whole conclave^k (B).

Adrian
VI. is
elected.
A. D.
1522.

ⁱ PAUL JOV. ONUPHR. VICTOREL. in vit. LEON. BASNAGE ut supra. ^k GUICCIARD. PAUL JOV. Acta literar. Fascic. vi. p. 65. BURMAN ANELED. Hist. de Adrian VI. p. 141.

(B) *Adrian* was born at *Utrecht* in *Holland*; his father, according to some authors, being a weaver of tapestry, and, according to others, a brewer. Having made great progress in learning, he was promoted to the vice-chancellorship of the university of *Louvain*, and afterwards appointed preceptor to *Charles V.* who created him one of his chief councillors of state; and by the interest of his grand-father *Maximilian*, procured for him a cardinal's hat from *Leo X.* in 1529 (1).

Adrian was utterly unknown to the cardinals; had never been in *Italy*, and was entirely unacquainted with the customs of the court of *Rome*, the *Romans* were greatly offended at his election; and when the conclave broke up, insulted and derided the cardinals, who, in their own defence, alleged, that they had been directed by the holy spirit.^a

THE new pope received the news of his election in *Spain*, where he was governor during the absence of the emperor; retaining, contrary to the usual custom, his own name; embarked at *Terragona*, and arrived at *Rome* on the 29th of *August*, where two days after he was solemnly crowned in the portico of *St. Peter's* church. *He arrives at Rome.*

French had entirely lost all their possessions in *Lombardy*, except the castles of *Milan*, *Cremona*, and *Novara*; and the sultan *Soliman*, who had lately succeeded *Selim*, besieged the city of *Rhodes* with an immense army. In *Germany*, *Luther* likewise *Luther* persevered with great zeal in promoting the reformation. Upon his return from *Worms*; the elector of *Saxony*, to protect him from the consequence of the ban, had ordered a troop of masked horse-men to meet him on the road, and to conduct him to the castle of *Wartburg*; in which solitude he continued near ten months, neither his friends nor enemies at first knowing what was become of him. There he published several books, establishing his new doctrines; but being informed that *Carlostadt* was making himself a chief of a party at *Wittemberg*, and had excited the young people to destroy the altars, and pull down the images and crucifixes, he left *Wartburg* in the beginning of *March*, without leave of the elector, and again appeared in public. He blamed the proceeding of *Carlostadt*, who in resentment quitted *Wittemberg*, and went to a different part of *Saxony*, in the neighbourhood of the river *Sala*, where he associated with others who had thrown off the authority of the church of *Rome*; but began to pretend to have revelations from God, by whom they said they were commanded to kill all the wicked.^m *Luther*, in the mean time, published a translation of the bible, which, not being conformable to the vulgate, and wanting several canonical books, was prohibited by several princes.

DURING these transactions, *Adrian* having arrived at *Rome*, employed his whole attention to understand the affairs of his court; but putting little confidence in the cardinals, his chief favourites were *John Rufus*, bishop of *Consenza*, and *William Eikenwort* and *Theodorick Hertius*; both *Dutchmen*,

^a GUICCIARD. l. xiv.

^m SLEIDAN. l. iii.

Adrian
sends a le-
gate to the
diet of Nus-
semberg;

A. D.
1523.

which re-
monstrates
against the
oppressions
of the
church of
Rome.

the first of whom he created a cardinal, and bishop of *Tortosa*. The emperor *Charles*, about the same time, having gone into *Spain*, and his brother, whom he had appointed his vicar, soon after convoking a diet at *Nuremberg*, *Adrian* sent *Francis Cheregat* as his legate into *Germany*, who was commissioned to demand of the diet, that they would put in execution the bull of his predecessor against *Luther*, and grant assistance to the knights of *Rhodes* against the *Turks*. Neither the pope nor the Christian princes having exerted themselves in earnest in defence of that city, it was obliged to surrender to the *Soliman*, after a siege of seven months: and on the 1st of *January* the grand master, with all the knights, quitted the island, and sailed for *Crete*^a. *Adrian* was more intent on recovering *Rimini*, which had revolted during the vacancy of the see; for that purpose having sent forces into *Romagna*, he obliged *Sigismond Malatesta* to quit the city, and soon after was reconciled to the dukes of *Ferrara* and *Urbino*, having annulled all the bulls that had been published against them by his predecessors, *Julius II.* and *Leo X.*

MEAN while *Luther*, having procured a copy of the pope's letter to the diet, translated it into the *German* language; and *Adrian* having confessed that there was great need of a reformation, but that they ought to proceed step by step, *Luther*, in his notes, added, that the popes had hitherto taken 100 years betwixt each step to reform any grievances. The diet likewise declared to the nuncio, that it was impossible to put the edict of the emperor against the *Lutherans* in execution, without hazarding a civil war, as the people, by the books that were lately published, were now well instructed in the oppressions of the court of *Rome*; and that the best means to quiet the disturbances would be to assemble a general council, with the condition that the members should swear to declare their sentiments freely, and without disguise. Notwithstanding the opposition of the legate, they also drew up a memorial, which they intitled *Centum Gravamina*, or the *Hundred Grievances*; and on the 6th of *March* they published an edict, prohibiting the preachers to discourse of any subject tending to disturb the public peace, which, with the memorial, the pope's brief, and their answer to the legate, they sent over all *Germany*, and even to *Rome*, where the ingenuous confession of the pope, that his

^a SPONGE. Annal. FONTANE Hist. bell. Rhod. GUI-
CIARD. l. xv. BELCAR. l. xvii.

court and the clergy were the original source of the evil, gave great offence to the prelates ^P.

DURING these proceedings in Germany, the king of France was making great preparations for an expedition into Italy, especially as he heard the Venetians were strongly solicited to enter into an alliance with the emperor. Adrian at the same time earnestly exhorted the Christian princes to agree to a truce, and to turn their arms against the Turks; but Francis I. not agreeing to this proposal, which would deprive him of the opportunity of recovering the Milanese, the pope, at the persuasion of the emperor and the king of England, on the last day of April published a bull, ordering all the Christian princes to observe a truce for three years, under pain of excommunication and interdict. Francis still continuing his preparations for his intended expedition, the pope, at the instigation of the viceroy of Naples, acceded on the 3d of August to the treaty that had been formed against France by the emperor, the king of England, the archduke of Austria, the duke of Milan, the Florentines, the Genoese, Venetians, Lucchese, and Siennese. Notwithstanding this formidable alliance, Francis soon after sent an army into the Milanese, where he quickly recovered several towns, as Prospero Colonna, the general of the confederate army, had neglected to repair the fortifications. Mean while Adrian, having granted to the emperor Charles the right of presenting to all bishoprics in Spain, died at Rome on the 14th of September, in the 65th year of his age, and the 2d of his pontificate. His death, which was suspected to be the effect of poison, gave great joy to the Romans, who were offended with his sobriety and regular manners, having been debauched by the luxury introduced by his predecessor Leo ¹ (C).

Adrian
dies at
Rome.

AFTER the funeral obsequies of Adrian, the cardinals entered the conclave, where they spent thirty days in disputes before they were determined in their choice of a successor to the papal dignity. According to some authors, Nicolas

^P SPOND. Annal. SLEIDAN. l. iv. STRUV. per. x. sect. iv. COCHLÆ. de act. Luther, p. 85. SECKEND. l. i. p. 255. PALLAV. l. ii. GOLDAST. in Const. imper. t. ii. ¹ MARIAN. in Summar. BULL. t. i. Hadrian VI. Const. I. ² ONUPHR. SPOND. Annal. GUICCIARD. l. xv.

(C) He was buried in the church of St. ^P *fitus est,—qui nihil sibi infelicius in vita,—quam quod imperaret—* epitaph: Adrianus papa VI. hic duxit (1).

Clement
VII. is e-
lected.

Scomberg, a German, and archbishop of *Capua*, was proposed as a candidate^a; but the chief contest was occasioned by the cardinals *Colonna* and *Medicis*, the first of whom was supported by the interest of the king of *France*, and the last by that of the emperor. After long disputes, the cardinal of *Medicis*, having increased his party by promising the vice-chancellorship of the church, the cardinal *Ursino*, was at length unanimously elected on the 18th of November, and assuming the name of *Clement VII.* was solemnly crowned on the 25th of the same month^c (D). As *Clement* was in the possession of the state of *Florence*, had been long practised in the administration of the affairs of the *Roman* church, and was distinguished for his gravity, constancy, and application to business, great expectations were raised among the Christian princes upon the news of his election. The duke of *Ferrara* immediately laid aside his design upon *Modena*, and *John de Sassetello* ceased all hostilities in *Romagna*, into which province, during the vacancy of the see, he had marched with a considerable body of troops^u (E).

He refuses
to become
a party in
the war
betwixt
the empe-
ror and the
king of
France.

CLEMENT, soon after his election, received an embassy from the emperor and the king of *France*, each of whom endeavoured to draw him into their alliance; but he refused at first to engage in their disputes, otherwise than as mediator; and in the beginning of the year sent legates to them, and to the king of *England*, to exhort them to a peace or truce, which proposition was rejected by all the princes. About the same time he sent the cardinal *Campegio*, as his legate, to

^a Addit. ad CIACON. ^b GUICCIARD. ONUPHR. MASSON in vit. Clement VII. JOV. in vit. Pomp. Colon. ^c GUICCIARD. ut supra.

(D) *Clement VII.* was the natural son of *Julian de Medicis*, who was murdered in the church of *Florence*, by *Pazzi* and other conspirators. He was educated with great care by his uncle *Laurence*; after whose death, when his family was banished from *Florence*, he was created knight of *Rhodes*, and grand prior of *Capua*, *Leo X.* his kinsman, conferred upon him

the archbishopric of *Florence*, and dignity of cardinal, and likewise created him chancellor of the *Roman* church, which is the highest office in the pope's court (1).

(E) This year some of *Luther's* followers were persecuted in *France*; and at *Brussels*, two *Augustine* monks were burnt, for denying the supremacy of the pope (2).

(1) Spond. Annal.
Erajm. Epist.

(2) Idem. ibid. Skelman, li. iv. Elijam. lxxviii.

the diet of *Nuremberg*, who, at the desire of the princes, entered the city without any pomp, not to give any offence to the *Lutheran* party, which was there very powerful. He complained to the diet, that the ban published against the *Lutherans* was not put in execution; but the princes replying, that the most proper means to restore the public peace, was to redress immediately the grievances they complained of, he declared that he had seen a copy of the *Centum Gravamina* at *Rome*, which neither the pope nor cardinals believed to have been published by order of the *Germanic* body, as it contained many things derogatory to the authority of the apostolic see, on which articles he had no commission to treat; but that he was willing to regulate, with their concurrence, other matters tending to reform the abuses in *Germany* ^w. He accordingly drew up a form of reformation, which was rejected by the princes, as it regarded only the inferior clergy, and tended in the main to enlarge the pope's authority, and that of the ecclesiastic princes of the empire, to the prejudice of the lay princes ^x. The diet therefore, on the 18th of *April*, published a decree for observing the edict of *Worms* as far as possible, and for soliciting the emperor and pope to convoke a free council in *Germany* ^y. The legate objected to several articles in this new edict, as derogatory to the authority of the pope; but the diet breaking up, he went with the archduke *Ferdinand*, the two dukes of *Bavaria*, the archbishop of *Saltzburg*, the bishops of *Trent* and *Ratisbon*, with the deputies of nine other bishops, to the city of *Ratisbon*, where, on the 6th of *July*, they entered into a mutual alliance, and published a decree, ordering the edict of *Worms* to be fully executed within their respective dominions. On the other hand, the deputies of the states, that had embraced *Luther's* doctrines, assembled in the same month at *Spire*, where they ordered all the controverted articles of religion to be collected by their own divines, with the intention of presenting them at the following diet, which was to be held in the same city in the month of *November*.

THIS diet, however, never assembled; for the pope having written to the emperor, complaining of the proceedings of the diet of *Nuremberg*, *Charles*, who had great need of *Clement's* assistance against the *French* in *Italy*, wrote from *Burgos* in *Spain* to the *German* princes, annulling the edict

The German princes insist upon a redress of their grievances.

A league formed for the support of the religion of the church of Rome.

* SLEIDAN. COCHLÆ. ut supra.

* PALLAVICIN, l.

ii. c. 10.

^y STRUV. period. x. p. 992. SLEIDAN. ut supra.

supra.

The
French
are expelled
from
Italy.

Francis I.
repasses the
Alps with
an army,
and concludes a
treaty
with the
pope.

A. D.
1525.

A jubilee
celebrated
at Rome.

of Nuremberg, and prohibiting the assembling of the diet at Spire². Notwithstanding this declaration of the emperor in favour of the papal authority, *Clement* still refused to join in the alliance against *France*: however, he secretly granted 70,000 ducats to the duke of *Bouillon*, the commander of the imperialists; who receiving a reinforcement of 6000 *German*s, obliged the *French* army to evacuate *Italy*, and entering *Provence* took *Aix*, and several other places, and laid siege to *Marfeilles*; but *Francis I.* marching to the relief of that city, with an army of 40,000 men, he was obliged to raise the siege; after forty days open trenches, and retreat with precipitation into *Lombardy*. *Francis* pursued him, retook *Milan*, and several other towns, and invested the city of *Pavia*, which he soon reduced to great extremity. The pope, by this unexpected success, was prevailed upon to conclude a treaty with him, and, according to some authors, advised him to attack the kingdom of *Naples*³, tho' *Guicciardini* expressly affirms, that he dissuaded him from that expedition, and that the king intended chiefly by that diversion, to oblige the *Spaniards* to surrender *Pavia*. However it was, it proved very fatal both to the king of *France* and the pope; for the imperialists having received several reinforcements from *Germany*, on the 24th of *February* attacked the *French* army, weakened by the detachment to *Naples*, and harrassed with a siege that had continued four months, and after a fierce engagement of some hours entirely defeated them, and took the *French* king, with many nobles and chief officers, prisoners.

DURING these hostilities, the pope, on the 21st of *December*, had published a bull, for the celebration of a jubilee, to commence at *Christmas*. He accordingly on that day opened the *Holy Gate* of *St. Peter's* with great solemnity; but by the spreading of *Luther's* doctrines, indulgences had greatly sunk in their value, so that very few persons appeared at *Rome*, especially as their pilgrimage was rendered dangerous by the great number of troops in *Lombardy*⁴. Upon the news of the victory at *Pavia*, all *Italy* was struck with consternation, but the pope especially was filled with great terror, as he had a few weeks before published his alliance with the *French* king, which had greatly irritated the emperor. The *Venetians* likewise were very apprehensive of the emperor's resentment; but being informed that the king of *Eng-*

² HENTER. l. ix. c. 1. RAINALD. ad an. 1524. SLEIDAN. ut supra. ³ MEM. DE BELLAI. l. ii. D. ANTON. DE VERA. Hist. Carol. V. ⁴ SPOND. Annal.

land, from a jealousy of the emperor's over-grown power, inclined to favour *France*, they immediately solicited the pope to enter into a league for the defence of *Italy*, and proposed to hire 10,000 *Swiss*, which, with the *Italian* troops, would be sufficient to oppose the imperialists, who, since the victory at *Pavia*, had even mutinied for want of pay. But *Clement*, by the arrival of his secretary, the archbishop of *Capua*, from *Lombardy*, having received some hopes of an accommodation, The pope seeks an accommodation preferred his particular interest to the general welfare, and concluded a treaty with the viceroy of *Naples*, who stipulated that the emperor *Charles* should oblige the duke of *Ferrara* to restore *Reggio*, should allow the pope to dispose of all benefices in the kingdom of *Naples*, and should grant the investiture of *Milan* to *Francis I.* on which account the pope ordered the *Florentines*, who were included in the treaty, to pay 100,000 ducats to the viceroy, and promised to pay another 100,000 upon being put in possession of *Reggio*.

THE *Venetians* had twenty days allowed them for acceding to this treaty, which was concluded on the first of *April*, but they refused to strengthen their enemy by furnishing them with money, which might be employed to better purpose against them: however, many other *Italian* states followed the example of the pope, and purchased their peace with money. *Clement* being disappointed by the emperor, who refused to ratify the treaty concluded with the viceroy, his offers being rejected, he enters into a confederacy against him. he entered into a confederacy against him, a few months afterwards, with the marquis of *Pescara* his general, the *Venetians*, and the duke of *Milan*, whose chancellor, offended at the extravagant conditions on which the emperor offered the investiture of the *Milanese*, formed the design of expelling the *Spaniards* and *Germans* from *Italy*. The pope promised to give the investiture of *Naples* to the marquis, who on that account engaged to disperse the imperial army in such a manner, that it should not be able to make any resistance against the confederates; but instead of fulfilling his engagements, he discovered the whole treaty to the emperor, who on that pretence seized the duchy of *Milan*.

THE great commotions in *Italy* prevented the pope from attending to the affairs of *Germany*, where the enemies of the *Roman* church were divided into several sects. *Muncer* and *Plüffer*, and several other anabaptist preachers, had excited the peasants to take arms against the nobles and magistrates, Great commotions in Germany occasioned by anabaptists.

* BRANTÔME Vic du Marq. de Pesc. ANTON. DE VERA hist. Carol. V. p. 124. GUICCIARD. l. xvi.

gistrates, but they were at last reduced, with the loss of 100,000 men. The emperor, upon the news of this general insurrection, wrote to the *German* princes, appointing a diet to be held at *Augsburg*, which was deferred till the following year by the archduke *Ferdinand*^d; and, in the mean time, a controversy about the eucharist was carried on, with great warmth, betwixt *Luther* and *Zuinglius*, whose opinion was embraced by *Oecolampadius* minister at *Basil*. Though *Clement* did not interfere in the affairs of *Germany*, yet being informed by the queen regent of *France*, that the doctrines of *Luther* began to be attended to in that kingdom, he wrote to the parliament of *Paris* exhorting them to be vigilant in opposing the *German* heresy and defending the ancient religion^e.

Clement concludes an alliance with the king of France and the Venetians
A. D.
1526.

BEING recovered from his consternation, occasioned by the victory of *Pavia*, the pope wrote to the emperor with great earnestness in behalf of the duke of *Milan*: but *Charles* delaying, upon various pretences, to declare expressly in what manner he intended to dispose of the *Milanese*, *Clement* soon after concluded an alliance with the *Venetians* and the king of *France*, who, in consequence of a treaty with *Charles* at *Madrid*, had returned to his own kingdom. Immediately after the papal and *Venetian* troops took the field, under the command of the duke of *Urbino*; and all *Lombardy*, especially the city of *Milan*, being ready to revolt from the *Spaniards*, the imperial ambassador at *Rome* was very earnest with the pope to abandon *Sforza*. *Clement* rejected all his offers; however, the negligence and bad conduct of the duke of *Urbino* gave leisure to the imperialists to fortify themselves; and they having received some reinforcements, not only quieted the disorders in *Milan*, but obliged *Sforza* to surrender the castle, while the duke of *Urbino*^a continued inactive, waiting for succours from *Switzerland*.

Is surprized by the Neapolitans at Rome.

THE imperialists were not only successful in *Lombardy*, but by the assistance of the family of *Colonna*, who were wholly addicted to the emperor's interest, surprized the pope in *Rome*, and obliged him to agree to a truce with the emperor for four months, to forgive the outrage, and recall his troops from the *Milanese*^f. The *Neapolitan* troops, however, had no sooner retired from *Rome*, than *Clement*, refusing to fulfil the articles which he had been compelled to promise, deposed the cardinal of *Colonna*, declared all his family rebels, and sending a considerable body of troops into

^d SLEIDAN. l. 5.
l. xvii. SPOND. Annal.

^e Idem ibid.

^f GUICCIARD.

their territories, plundered and burnt a great number of their towns. The cardinal of *Colonna*, in the mean time residing at *Naples*, appealed to a future general council; and knowing that the name of a council was a great terror to the pope, he caused writings to be fixed to the church doors in *Rome*, citing him, in the name of the emperor, to appear at *Spire* before a council &c. A general diet of the empire had been held in that city in the months of *July* and *August*, in which the party of the *Lutherans* appeared more powerful than ever. The princes proposed to petition the emperor to assemble a general council, or at least a national one, to settle the disputes about religion; and it was resolved, that, till the celebration of the council, each prince should so govern his subjects, as he should be able to give an account to God and the emperor ^h. *Charles* likewise being greatly exasperated against the pope, for absolving the king of *France* from his obligations to observe the treaty of *Madrid*, and for entering into an alliance with him and the *Venetians*, he wrote a long letter to him, complaining of his proceedings, and appealing from him to a general council, which he insisted upon being immediately convoked ⁱ. In the mean time continual succours arrived in *Lombardy* from *Spain* and *Germany*, and the viceroy of *Naples* returned to that kingdom from *Spain* with a strong reinforcement. The pope likewise, having received a subsidy of 30,000 crowns from the king of *England*, paid no regard to the remonstrance of the emperor, but sent his troops against the kingdom of *Naples*, which was likewise at the same time attacked by his galleys, in conjunction with those of *France* and *Venice*. The land forces made themselves masters of *Aquila*, while those at sea took *Salerno*, *Sorrento*, and several other maritime places ^k. However, the pope not being able to bear the expence of the war, as he received very little assistance from the king of *France*, and as the imperialists were daily growing more powerful both in *Naples* and *Lombardy*, he agreed to a truce for eight months with the viceroy of *Naples*, in consequence of which the conquered places on both sides were immediately restored.

THE chief motive which induced the pope to conclude a truce, was the fear of an invasion of the ecclesiastical state from the imperialists in *Lombardy*; for the duke of *Bourbon* having left 7 or 8000 men at *Milan*, had marched with about

*Liberty of
conscience
allowed to
the Lu-
therans in
Germa-*

A.D.
1527.

*The pope
agrees to a
truce with
the vice-
roy of
Naples.*

^h GUICCIARDINI, ut supra. JOVI. in Vite Pomp. Card.

^b SLEIDAN. l. vi.

ⁱ AP. GOLDAST. Const. imper. tit. i.

^k GUICCIARD. l. xviii.

The imperial general in Lombardy refuses his consent to the truce and marches to Rome,

which is taken by storm, and sacked,

30,000 men towards *Bologna*, the greatest part of whom were *Germans*, and some *Lutherans*¹, who for five months that they had been in *Italy*, had received almost no pay. During their residence in the *Milanese* they had lived at free quarters, and subsisted on their march by levying heavy contributions; and tho' *Bourbon* published that his intention was to march to *Naples*, yet it was generally believed that he proposed only to ravage *Tuscany*. The pope therefore, by the truce concluded with the viceroy, promised to pay *Bourbon* 60,000 ducats, on condition that he withdrew his army from the ecclesiastical state and the territories of *Florence*; and as he had restored the towns in the kingdom of *Naples*, he, in full assurance of a peace, immediately dismissed the greatest part of his army. The duke of *Bourbon*, who had already advanced to the *Bolognese*, refused his consent to the truce, notwithstanding the viceroy had come to his camp, and had offered to cause 140,000 ducats to be paid to him within two months. As his troops had already mutinied twice, and allowed him only the shadow of command, he was constrained to submit to their impetuosity, they calling out, in a tumultuous manner, *to Rome, to Rome*. He accordingly, partly by inclination and partly by constraint, continued his march; and, as there was no army to interrupt him, and as he was not encumbered with baggage or artillery, he arrived before *Rome* on the 5th of *May*, and demanded a passage through the city to *Naples*. His demand being refused, next morning he assaulted the city; and tho' he was killed himself in the beginning of the attack, yet his troops about sun-set gained the place by storm, and while the pope and the cardinals retired to the castle of *St. Angelo*, they were employed in committing all manner of violences and barbarities. The sacking continued for several days: the *Lutherans* discharged their fury against the church of *St. Peter*, and the tombs of the popes, and dragging the bodies of the saints from their shrines, trampled them under their feet, while the *Spaniards* and *Italians*, more rapacious and cruel than the *Germans*, tortured the nobles, prelates, and magistrates, to oblige them to pay excessive ransoms. As the duke of *Urbino*, tho' at the head of a numerous army, delayed advancing to the relief of *Rome*, the pope was obliged to capitulate with the prince of *Orange*, who, upon the death of *Bourbon*, succeeded to the chief command. It was agreed that the pope should immediately pay 100,000 ducats, and 300,000 more within two months; that he should put into

the hands of the emperor the castle of *St. Angelo*, *Civita Vecchia*, *Citta Castellana*, *Parma*, *Placenza*, and *Modena*; detained and that upon paying the first 150,000, he should be conducted with the cardinals to *Gaeta* or *Naples*, but until that payment he should remain prisoner. Upon these and some other conditions, provisions were carried into the castle, where he continued six months longer a prisoner, not having money to complete the first payment. Mean while the plague raged with great violence in *Rome*, by which great numbers of the imperialists daily perished. The *Florentines*, upon the news of the pope's calamity, expelled *Hipolito* and *Alexander de Medicis* from their city, and creating a *Gonfalonier*, restored the ancient republican government. They likewise broke the statues of *Leo X.* and of *Clement*, and persecuted all those that favoured that family. About the same time the emperor, being informed of the great success of his arms in *Italy*, dissembled his joy, and even put on mourning, and ordered processions and public prayers, to implore the assistance of heaven for the distressed church. However, his actions did not correspond with these professions; for, to draw all the advantage that he could from the pope's distress, he delayed giving any orders to set him at liberty, tho' the plague was then very mortal, not only in *Rome*, but even in *St. Angelo*.

NOTWITHSTANDING this prosperous appearance of the emperor's affairs in *Italy*, by his too great security he soon found them in a worse situation than in the beginning of the campaign; for while he neglected to reinforce his army, two thirds of which were cut off with the plague, the king of *France* prevailed with *Henry VIII.* of *England* to enter into the league with the *Venetians*, and other *Italian* states, against him. In the beginning of *August*, he sent an army into *Italy*, under the command of *Lautrec*, who took *Alexandria*, and some other places: and *Genoa* likewise submitting to the *French*, he passed the *Po* about the middle of *October*, with the intention of marching to *Naples*. *Charles* being informed of the conquests of *Lautrec*, immediately sent deputies to *Rome* to negotiate with the pope, with whom they concluded a treaty much to the advantage of the emperor; but the conditions being such, that it was impossible for the pope to fulfil them, by the assistance of cardinal *Colonna*, to whom he

He escapes,

■ GUICCIARD. l. xviii. SPOND. Annal. JOV. in Vite Pomp. Colon. REINER, l. vi. p. 114. MYCON. Hist. Reform. c. 14. Mem. de DU BELLAI, l. iii. CÆSAR GLORIER. Hist. expugn. Urb.

was reconciled, he escaped, on the 9th of *December*, from the castle, and was conducted to *Orvieto* ⁿ.

and is solicited by the king of England to grant him a divorce from his queen.

A. D.
1528.

Soon after he received an ambassador from the king of *England*, who desired him to renew his alliance with the confederates, and to declare his marriage with the queen *Katherine* null, which the divines and lawyers of *England* had already affirmed to be unlawful, as she had been first married to his elder brother prince *Arthur* (F). *Clement* was likewise solicited by the king of *France* to declare for the league; but as he had suffered severely for interfering in the emperor's disputes with *France*, and by the first article of the late treaty in *St. Angelo* had promised not to act against him, he excused himself to the *French* and *English* ambassadors, and declared for a neutrality. He seemed inclined to satisfy the king of *England* in his demand of a divorce, but started several difficulties as to the manner of proceeding, which only heightened the king's hopes, and increased his importunity ^o. At length, however, he appointed several cardinals and divines to examine the validity of the marriage, who unanimously declared, that it was agreeable to the law of God ^p. This examination of the cardinals, was perhaps only proposed by the pope as a means of delay, as he afterwards protracted the time for the decision of the affair upon various pretences. The *English* ambassadors again urging, that they could prove the dispensation of *Julius* II. in favour of the marriage not canonical, he appointed a second examination; and, at the desire of the cardinals, two judges were

ⁿ Bzov. hoc. an. Jov. in. Vite Pomp. Colon. & Histor. 1, xxv. ^o GUICCIARD. ut supra. ^p SPOND. Annal.

(F) *Henry* VIII, had then lived with his queen many years, and is said to have requested this divorce from various motives. He himself pretended a scruple of conscience, on account of his queen's former marriage with his brother, and was besides very desirous of having male issue, which he could not then expect from *Katherine*. His love for *Ann* Bullen, is assigned by some as his chief motive for objecting to his first marriage; and others

affirm, that cardinal *Wolsey* chiefly excited him to think of a divorce, and intended for his second wife *Margaret Alençon*, the sister of the king of *France*, thereby to gratify his own resentment against the emperor, who was nephew of queen *Katherine*; and had not only balked him twice in his expectations of the pontificate, but had lately refused him the archbishopric of *Toledo*, the richest benefice in *Christendom* (1).

named to decide the affair in *England*, namely, the cardinals *Wolsey* and *Campegio*, to which last he gave a bull, annulling the marriage, with leave to shew it to the king and *Wolsey*, but with express orders not to give sentence till he should receive a second mandate from *Rome*.

THIS dilatory proceeding of the pope was owing to the unexpected success of the emperor's affairs in *Italy*; on which account *Clement* began to think of abandoning the neutrality, and attaching himself to *Charles*, by whose assistance he might recover the dominion of *Florence*. *Lautrec*, the general of the league against the emperor, had, about the middle of *January*, marched from *Bologna* to invade *Naples*, great part of which kingdom he quickly reduced. The remains of the imperial army, which for nine or ten months had committed all manner of violences in *Rome*, upon the motion of *Lautrec*'s army, left that city, and proceeded to the defence of *Naples*; but before their departure, not content to have stript the city of all its ornaments and riches, they insisted upon receiving two months pay. Their joining the *Neapolitan* troops did not interrupt the progress of *Lautrec*, who having reduced a great many cities, about the end of *April* sat down before *Naples*; but here he experienced a reverse of fortune, for during the siege, which continued four months, the plague carried off almost his whole army, and at last proved mortal to himself. The remains of the army retired to *Aversa*, where, in their turn, they were besieged by the garrisons of *Naples*, and some other towns, and obliged to capitulate on very disadvantageous terms, while *Doria*, the *Genoese* admiral, deserted their alliance, and prevailed with that city to declare for the emperor.

DURING these transactions the pope, who had fixed his court at *Viterba*, and recovered some places that had been seized during his confinement, seemed inclined, in the beginning of the campaign, to declare for the league; but observing the success of the imperialists, he entered into a private negotiation with *Charles*, before the departure of *Campegio* from *Rome*, who was ordered on that account to delay giving judgment on the divorce as long as possible. To prevent giving suspicion to the allies, he pretended to be wholly occupied in reforming the church, and published his resolution of going into *Germany* to oppose the progress of *Lutheranism*. The princes of that persuasion having entered into a league for their own defence, to which they invited the sacramen-

¶ GUICCIARD. l. xix. BELCAR. l. xix. GODWIN. SANDER. de schism. l. i.

rians, or followers of *Zuinglius*, whose doctrines had been received this year in *Berne*, *Constance*, and *Geneva*, in consequence of which the magistrates of *Straßburg* published an order, prohibiting the celebration of the mass¹ in their jurisdiction (G).

A.D. 1529. THE pope had no real intention of going to *Germany*, but was chiefly attentive to the affairs of *Italy*; and as the king of *France* was still in possession of several places in *Naples*,

he promised to adhere to the league, if he would oblige the *Venetians* to restore *Cervia* and *Ravenna*, which they had seized during his imprisonment². At the same time he continued his negotiations with the emperor; and as he had greater expectations from him, and as he and his brother *Ferdinand*, king of *Hungary*, had both protested against judging of the affair of the divorce in *England*, he sent a nuncio to *Campegio*, with orders to burn the bull, and to delay the trial. Soon after, having concluded a treaty with *Charles* at *Barcelona*, and queen *Katherine* having appealed from *Campegio* and *Wolfsey* as partial judges, he wrote to his legates, declaring his intention to judge the cause of the divorce at *Rome*, with which proceeding the king of *England* was greatly offended³. By the treaty with the emperor, which was published in the end of *June*, the pope promised to grant the investiture of *Naples* to *Charles*, for the yearly tribute of one white horse; but the concessions made by the emperor were very advantageous to *Clement*, *Charles* engaging to establish *Alexander de Medicis*, grand nephew of the pope, as prince and sovereign of the city and territory of *Florence*, and to give him his natural daughter *Margaret* in marriage, with a dowry of 20,000 ducats yearly revenue; to put the pope in possession of *Cervia*, *Ravenna*, *Modena*, *Reggio*, and *Rubiera*, to assist him in reducing the duke of *Ferrara*, and to reduce the *Lutherans* by force to the obedience of the church⁴.

THO' the affairs of the king of *France* were quite ruined in *Italy*, yet *Charles* a few weeks after concluded a treaty of

¹ SLEIDAN. l. vi. COCHLÆ. ut supra. ² GUICCIARD. l. 19. ³ Idem ibid. SANDR. ut supra. ⁴ GUICCIARD. l. xix. DUMONT. Corps Diplom. t. iv. par. ii.

(G) *Clement* this year confirmed the order of capuchins, years before, by one *Matthew Bafio*, a monk, born in the territory of *Romagna* (1).

(1) Spind. Annal.

peace with him at *Cambray*, as the grand signor, who had invaded *Hungary* with an immense army, threatened an irruption into *Austria*, and the tranquility of *Germany* was in great danger of being disturbed by the disputes about religion. In consequence of his mandate, the states of *Germany* had assembled at *Spire* on the 15th of *March*, and, after long debates, published a decree, revoking the former edict, which allowed liberty of conscience, as they alleged it had been productive of great mischiefs. Several princes, and the deputies of fourteen imperial cities, protested against this edict, and appealed to the emperor and a free council, from whence the name of *Protestants* was given to all those sects in *Germany* that opposed the doctrines of the *Romish* church *. After the dismissing of the diet, the protestants sent ambassadors to the emperor to justify their proceedings; but *Charles*, who had then arrived in *Italy* from *Spain*, would not admit of their excuse, and ordered them to obey the edict, under pain of his displeasure. The ambassadors informing the protestants of this determination of the emperor, they assembled in the end of *November* at *Smalcald*, where they proposed to enter into an alliance for their mutual defence.

IN the beginning of the same month *Charles* and *Clement* both arrived at *Bologna*, where they had several conferences concerning the suppressing the reformation in *Germany*, and the reducing of the *Florentines*, who still refused to submit to the family of the *Medicis*. Besides, at the solicitation of the pope, the emperor restored the duchy of *Milan* to *Francis Sforza*, and concluded a peace and an alliance with the *Venetians*, who, among other articles, restored to the emperor the towns they possessed in *Apulia*, and to the pope all that they had seized in *Romagna* *. By this last treaty tranquility was restored to *Italy*, after a long and destructive war of eight years continuance; however, the city of *Florence* must still be excepted, which, refusing to submit to the pope, was at this time invested by the imperialists. Mean while *Charles* being earnestly solicited by his brother *Ferdinand*, and the other electors, to return to *Germany*, would not proceed to *Rome*, but received the imperial crown at *Bologna*, on the 24th of *February*, being the day of his birth, and that on which he had gained the signal victory of *Pavia*. A few weeks after, having obtained a promise from the pope to consent to a general council, if it should be found

The pope and Charles V. have a conference at Bologna;

A.D. 1530.

where the latter is crowned emperor.

* SLEIDAN. l. vi. PALLAV. l. ii. c. 18. RAINALD, ad hunc an. * GUICCIARD. l. xix. in fin.

necessary, for the extirpation of the *Lutheran* heresy, he set out for *Germany*, attended by cardinal *Campegio*.

The pope's
nephew
declared
sovereign
of Flo-
rence.

The pro-
testants
present
their con-
fession of
faith to
the diet
at Augs-
burg.

THE pope, after his departure, returned to *Rome*; and, in the mean time, the imperial and papal troops continuing the siege of *Florence*, that city, after being reduced to the greatest extremity, was at length obliged to capitulate on the 9th of *August*, submitting their form of government entirely to the pleasure of the emperor, on condition that their liberties should not be violated, and promising to pay 80,000 ducats within a few days to the besieging army, provided a full pardon should be granted to all those who had injured the pope or his friends. In consequence of this capitulation, the articles of which were afterwards observed with very little fidelity, *Alexander de Medicis* was acknowledged prince and sovereign of *Florence*, with power to receive and send ambassadors, to coin money, to conclude alliances, and to make peace and war as he should think proper.

DURING these proceedings in *Italy*, the emperor had assembled a diet at *Augsburg*, to consult of the affairs of religion and of a war against the *Turks*. A few days after the opening of the diet, the *Lutherans* presented their confession of faith, which, after several objections, was publicly read in the emperor's palace on the 25th of *June*, and being examined by the popish doctors, a refutation of it was read in the same place on the 3d of *August*. The emperor and the catholic princes approved of this refutation, and desired that it might be received by the protestant princes: but they still adhered to their former confession, and demanded that a free general council might be called, to whose determination they would submit. Several private conferences were afterwards held for an accommodation of both parties, and the emperor privately solicited the elector of *Saxony*, the landgrave of *Hesse*, and the marquis of *Brandenburg*, by temporal motives, to be re-united to the church of *Rome*; but his endeavours proving ineffectual, he, on the 22d of *September*, published a decree, declaring, that tho' the protestant confession had been refuted by scripture, yet he allowed them till the 15th of *April* to consider of returning to the bosom of the church; in the mean time prohibiting them from publishing any thing concerning religion, and promising to use his endeavours with the pope and Christian princes, that a general council should be convoked within eighteen months. Next day the protestants protested against this decree, affirming, that their confession had not

been refuted by scripture; and, after their departure, their deputies, who remained at the diet, requested the emperor to grant a general peace through the empire, and liberty of conscience in affairs of religion. The emperor, instead of granting their demand, entered into a league, for the defence of the old religion, with the catholic princes and deputies that still remained at the diet; and on the 19th of *November* published an edict, prohibiting any other religion than that of the church of *Rome* ².

ALTHOUGH the emperor had acted with great zeal in defence of the popish cause, *Clement* nevertheless was greatly dissatisfied with the proceedings of the diet. He blamed the emperor for allowing the protestant confession to be read, and for consenting to abolish some ceremonies; but what chiefly offended him, was his promise for procuring a general council, the thoughts of which struck him with great apprehensions: he therefore asked the advice of the cardinals, who declared, that the convocation of a general council at that time, when the *Turks* were threatening to invade *Germany*, was very improper ¹. The pope likewise thought himself greatly aggrieved, by the sentence which *Charles* soon after gave in favour of the duke of *Ferrara*, by which *Reggio* and *Modena* were declared to belong to the duke, who was ordered to pay the pope 100,000 ducats, for a new investiture of his duchy. *Clement* protested against this sentence, and refused to accept of the money which was offered him by the duke, who, to excite the emperor against him, wrote to *Charles* that he had intercepted two letters of the pope to the kings of *France* and *England*, by which he promised to grant them whatever they should desire, provided they would, by any means, prevent the assembling of a general council. The pope challenged the duke to produce the letters, assured the emperor of his innocence, and soon after sent his nephew, the cardinal of *Medicis*, to *Germany*, to attend him as legate in his expedition against the *Turks*, promising him likewise a subsidy of 40,000 ducats a month during that war ^b.

CHARLES, about that time, held an imperial diet at *Ratisbon*, to consult of the means to quiet the disturbances in *Germany*, with regard to religion, and to provide against the invasion of the grand signor, who was making immense preparations to invade *Austria*. As he had offended the protes-

² *SLEIDAN*. l. vii. *CELESTIN* de confes. August. *MULLER*. l. iii. c. 39. *MYCON*. Hist. Reform. c. 15. ^a *GUICCIARD*. l. xx. ^b *Idem* ibid.

A. D.
1531.

Reggio and Modena declared to belong to the duke of Ferrara

A. D.
1532.

Liberty of
conscience
again
granted to
the protes-
tants.

The empe-
ror returns
to Italy,

and re-
news his
alliance
with the
pope ;

tant princes the year before, by causing his brother *Ferdinand* to be elected king of the *Romans*, and by his rigorous proceedings against the *Lutherans*, they refused to appear at the diet, and assembled by themselves at *Schweinfurt*, where they composed thirteen articles, for securing the liberty of their religion, and the rights of the empire, which were rejected by the emperor. However, the protestants soon after assembling at *Nuremberg*, the elector palatine and the archbishop of *Mentz*, who acted as mediators, agreed to an accommodation with them on the 23d of *June*, which a few weeks after was ratified by the emperor, who ordered all prosecutions of the protestants to be suspended, and a general peace to be observed through all *Germany*; and that all persons should enjoy a liberty of conscience till the assembling of a general council, which he would endeavour to prevail with the pope to convoke within six months, to be assembled a year after. In consequence of this peace, the protestants, with great ardour, raised the supplies for the *Turkish* expedition, and *Charles* soon found himself at the head of an army of near 200,000 men; however, the grand signor not daring to advance, and retiring to *Constantinople*, *Charles* likewise retreated to *Germany*, disbanded the greatest part of his army, and marched with the *Italian* auxiliaries towards that kingdom. The *Italians* on their march, notwithstanding the presence of the emperor, plundered and burnt several towns and villages in *Germany*; and the cardinal legate, and one *Piermaria Rosso*, being accused as the authors of the sedition, the emperor ordered them to be apprehended, but quickly after set the cardinal at liberty, and excused himself to the pope.

Tho' *Clement* was greatly offended that the emperor had presumed to grant liberty of conscience to the protestants, yet he received him with great appearance of affection at *Bologna*; however, he still refused to consent to a general council, or to give his niece *Katherine* in marriage to *Francis Sforza*. A few weeks after he renewed the alliance with the emperor and the *Italian* states, for securing the peace of *Italy*, and to oppose the designs of the king of *France*, who still formed pretensions to the *Milanese*. *Clement* consented very willingly to renew his alliance with the emperor, that he might thereby awe the kings of *France* and *England*, who, at a conference in the neighbourhood of *Boulogne*, had resolved to compel the pope to grant their demands, by threatening to

^c Ap. GOLDAST. Const. imper. t. i. & iii. SLIDAN. l. viii.

withdraw their kingdoms from the obedience of the apostolic see, as they supposed the *Turks* would find employment for the emperor in *Hungary*. By the unexpected retreat of the *Turks*, and the emperor's journey to *Italy*, their design was frustrated: however, *Henry VIII.* on his return to *England*, prohibited his subjects from all intercourse with the court of *Rome*, prejudicial to the jurisdiction or prerogative of his kingdom; and *Cranmer*, archbishop of *Canterbury*, soon after pronouncing a sentence of divorce betwixt him and queen *Katherine*, in the beginning of *April* he publickly married *Anne Bulleyn*, although the pope had prohibited, under severe censures, any proceedings in *England* with regard to the divorce. *Clement* being informed of the king's second marriage, immediately laid him under an interdict, and threatened to excite all Christendom against him.

A.D.
1533.

ABOUT the same time also he sent nuncios to *Scotland*, who sends to exhort *James V.* not to follow the example of the king of *England*, and to punish the favourers of *Luther's* doctrines, *Scotland* who began to be pretty numerous in that kingdom. His nuncios were very successful; for the king assembling his parliament at *Edinburgh*, it was decreed, to pay the accustomed and ancient obedience and honour to the church of *Rome*, and to punish all heretics according to the severity of the law^d. To oppose the progress of *Lutheranism* in *Sweden*, *Clement* likewise created *John Magnus*, the historian, archbishop of *Upsal*; and having given him the pall, sent him to that kingdom with the authority of legate à latere. The pope soon after embarked at *Pisa* with his cardinals, and in a few days landed at *Marseilles*, where he had a conference with the king of *France*. The reasons he pretended for this journey were, a desire to promote an expedition against the *Turks*, to obtain the consent of the king of *France* to a general council, and to use his mediation in reconciling the king of *England* to the church of *Rome*; but his chief purpose was to conclude a marriage betwixt *Francis*, second son of the duke of *Orleans*, and his own niece. The marriage was accordingly solemnized with great pomp; and though there was no treaty concluded betwixt the pope and the king, *Clement* consented to the seizing of the *Milanese* for his sister's husband; and *Francis* declared, that he would not oppose the judicial proceedings of the pope against the king of *England*, whose ambassadors at *Marseilles* appealed from the decision of the pope to a general council.

^d LESLÆ, l. ix. COCHLÆ. & ULEMBERG in vit. Luther.
• GUICCIARD. in fin. SANDER, de schism. Ang. l. i.

He ex-
communi-
cates the
king of
England,
A.D.
1534.

and dies
at Rome.

Paul III.
is elected
pope.

CLEMENT, having continued some weeks in *France*, returned to *Rome* in the end of *December*, and soon after, at the instigation of the emperor's ambassadors, he excommunicated the king of *England* and all his subjects, because he had rejected his lawful wife, and married another. *Henry VIII.* was no sooner informed of this sentence, which was published on the 24th of *March*, than he withdrew his obedience from the church of *Rome*, and by an act of parliament abolished the pope's authority in *England*, and even made it capital to name the word pope. He declared the king head of the church under Christ in *England*, ordered the archbishop of *Canterbury* to lay aside his title of apostolic legate, and prohibited the payment of the annual tribute to *Rome*, commonly called *St. Peter's pence*. *Clement* survived this sentence but a few months, and died at *Rome* on the 25th of *September*, in the 57th year of his age. Although he had a great capacity, was very grave and moderate, yet, according to *Guicciardini*, he died hated by his whole court, as he was reckoned avaricious and deceitful, and seldom shewed any inclination to oblige^f.

THE funeral rites of *Clement* being performed with the usual ceremonies, thirty-five cardinals entered the conclave on the 10th of *October*, and the same day, according to *Guicciardini*, or two days after according to others, unanimously elected cardinal *Farnese* bishop of *Ostia*, then in the 67th year of his age, who, by artfully seeming more infirm than he really was, thereby more easily acquired all the votes. The new pope assumed the name of *Paul III.* and was solemnly crowned on the 2d of *November*, to the great joy of the *Romans*, who had again got a pope of their own nation, after an interruption of 103 years (H). *Paul*, immediately after his promotion, created two of his relations cardinals, though they were both bastards; and being desirous to know the state of *Germany*, he recalled his nuncio *Vengerius* from that country: however, he quickly sent him back to feed the

^f Idem ibid. *Jov. Hist.* l. xxxii. *ONUPHR.* in vit. & *Chron.*

(H) The ancestors of cardinal *Farnese* had formerly come from *Germany*, and settled in *Italy*. He himself was born at *Canino* in *Tuscany*, his paternal seat, and, after enjoying some of the inferior dignities in the

Roman court, he was created a cardinal deacon by *Alexander VI.* and being afterwards made a bishop, he was nominated for the pontificate at the death of *Leo X.* and *Adrian VI.* (1).

(1) *Onuphr. in vit. Paul III.*

Germans with the hopes of a council ⁸, and to excite them against the king of *England* (1). He likewise sent nuncios to the emperor, the king of *France*, and other princes, to declare that he had determined upon celebrating a council, though he had not yet fixed a time or place. As he was naturally inclined to peace, he endeavoured to effect an accommodation betwixt the emperor and the king of *France*; and observing a strict neutrality with regard to their disputes, he refused to renew the treaty of *Bologna*. Peter Paul Verger, the nuncio in *Germany*, endeavoured to prevail with the protestants to agree to the celebration of the council at *Mintua*; but the princes of that profession assembling in the beginning of *December* at *Smalcald*, to renew their league, declared, that they desired a free council, unawed by the pope, and insisted that it should be held in *Germany*, according to the emperor's promise. They likewise concluded an alliance with *Henry VIII.* of *England*, but they rejected the offers of a treaty made by the king of *France*, as he desired them to enter into an alliance with him against the emperor ^h.

A. D.

1535.

He declares his intention of calling a general council;

DURING these proceedings in *Germany*, the pope granted the tythe of the *Gallican* church to the king of *France*, on condition that he should maintain thirty galleys for the defence of the *Italian* coasts. He also granted the tythe of the ecclesiastical revenues in *Spain* to the emperor, to assist him in his expedition against *Barbarossa*, the pirate, who had expelled the prince of *Algiers*, and seized his government; and as a reinforcement to the emperor's fleet, he fitted out thirty

assists the emperor in his expedition against

⁸ SLEIDAN, l. ix.

^h Idem ibid.

(1) This year *Ignatius Loyola*, a gentleman of *Biscay*, instituted the order of jesuits at *Mount Martre*, in the neighbourhood of *Paris*. He at first had followed the profession of arms; but being dangerously wounded at the siege of *Pampeluna*, during his sickness he made a vow to embrace an ecclesiastical life, and, after his recovery, he applied himself to study in *Spain* and *France*; and having undergone many dan-

gers and difficulties, he, with six others, took the vows of his society in the church of the virgin *Mary*. The chief of these vows are to renounce all temporal pomp and grandeur, to preserve an inviolate chastity, to receive nothing for celebrating mass, to go preach at *Jerusalem*, but if prevented from undertaking that pilgrimage, to offer their service to the pope without any reserve (1).

(1) *Spond. Annal.*

Barba-
rossa the
pirate ;

teen galleys, and went to *Civita Vecchia*, where he gave his benediction to the whole armament. A few months after, the emperor having restored the banished prince and returned to *Naples*, Paul sent two legates, to him to congratulate him upon his victory.

and pro-
nounces a
sentence of
excommu-
nication
and depo-
sition a-
gainst the
king of
England.
A. D.
1556.

AT the same time, being informed that *Henry VIII.* of *England* had seized the revenues of 376 monasteries, had obliged upwards of 10,000 monks and nuns to resume the lay habit, and had executed *Thomas More* his late chancellor, and *Fisher* bishop of *Rocheſter*, lately created a cardinal, because they had refused to acknowledge the king as supreme head of the church, he published a bull against him, ordering him to repent, under pain of excommunication and deposition; allowing him ninety days to appear by proxy at *Rome*; and, in case of his disobedience, declaring him immediately excommunicated and deposed, absolving his subjects from their obedience, and prohibiting all catholics from holding any commerce with the *English*. He likewise ordered all the clergy to quit his dominions, the nobles to take up arms against him, and absolved foreign princes who were in alliance with him from the obligation of their treaties. This bull, which was published on the 28th of *November*, he ordered to be fixed up in several places on the opposite shore of *Holland*; but his attention was soon after called off in some manner from the affairs of *England*, by new commotions in *Italy*.

FRANCIS SFORZA, duke of *Milan*, dying in *October* without heirs, the *Milanese* again became the subject of dispute between the king of *France* and the emperor. *Francis I.* renewed his pretensions in right of his great-grandmother *Valentina Visconti*, and, having commenced a war against his uncle the duke of *Savoy*, threatened to enter *Lombardy* with a formidable army. *Charles*, who claimed the *Milanese* as a fief devolved to the empire, immediately ordered forces into *Italy* from *Spain* and *Germany*, and, leaving *Naples*, arrived in a triumphant manner at *Rome* on the 5th of *April*, where he continued thirteen days. The day before his departure, in a full consistory, and in the presence of the foreign ambassadors, he made a long harangue in *Spanish* against the king of *France*, for disturbing the peace of *Italy* by his ambition, and concluded with requesting the pope's mediation for an accommodation, or his assistance in case the king of *France* should obstinately continue the war. The pope declared his willingness to act as mediator, and, as the em-

a bull
published

peror was very importunate for the convocation of a general council, he ordered six cardinals and three bishops to draw up the bull^k; which was accordingly published a few weeks afterwar^d, appointing a general council to be held at *Mantua*, to begin the following year on the 22d of *May*.

PAUL likewise, refusing to engage as a party in the war betwixt the king of *France* and the emperor, in the month of *September* published another bull for reforming the corrupt manners of the city of *Rome*, and ordering all persons, under severe penalties, to obey those cardinals to whom he had given the direction of that affair. Soon after he sent cardinal *Poole*, a relation of *Henry VIII.* as his legate to the king of *France*, to excite him, and *James V.* of *Scotland*, who was then at *Paris*, against the king of *England*. But *Henry*, being informed that the cardinal intended to raise an army in *France* to invade his kingdom^l, desired of the *French* king to deliver him up as his subject, and set a price of 50,000 crowns upon his head; which obliged the pope to recall him to *Rome*, and to appoint him a guard of soldiers for his protection^m. Paul about the same time appointed four cardinals, and three other learned men, to draw up a form of reformation of the church, with regard to manners and discipline (K); and; as the duke of *Mantua* made several

^k BEZL. l. v. & vi. SLEID. l. x.

^l CALV. ep. xiii.

^m SLEID. l. x. SPOND. Annal.

(K) This plan of reformation was presented to the pope in the beginning of the following year; however, it was then kept secret, and no alteration or amendment ensued. Tho' it proposed a very superficial and partial reformation, and was therefore ridiculed by *Luther* and *Sturmius* at *Straßburgh*, who procured a copy of it from *Rome*, yet it contains several particulars which scarcely could have been expected from the composers. They complained of the pride and ignorance of the bishops, and proposed that none should receive orders but learned and pious men, and therefore care should be taken

to have proper masters to instruct the youth. They condemned transportations from one benefice to another, grants of reservation, non-residence, and pluralities; and declared it intolerable, that bishoprics should be conferred on cardinals, or that an *Italian* should enjoy a benefice in *Spain* or *England*, and a *Spaniard* or *Englishman* in *Italy*. They proposed that some convents should be abolished, that printers should be prohibited from publishing some kinds of books, and that the colloquies of *Erasmus* should not be taught in the schools; that the questors of *St. Antony*, and of many other saints, should

nd had been solemnly crowned by *Bugenhagius*, a *Lutheran* minister, sent thither at his desire by *Luther* °.

PAUL in the mean time concluded an alliance with the emperor and the *Venetians* at *Rome* against the *Turks*, with such assurance of success, that he even made a partition of the *Turkish* empire with his allies. By the treaty, which was concluded in *February*, the war was to be carried on every year with 200 galleys, 100 armed ships, 50,000 foot from *Italy*, *Germany*, and *Spain*, and 4,500 horse. The pope was to bear one sixth-part of the expences of the war, and to furnish 36 galleys; and *Andrew Doria*, who some years before had been created prince of *Melippi* by the emperor, was to have the chief command of the confederate fleet. In consequence of this alliance a numerous fleet assembled at *Corcyra*; but, instead of making conquests on the *Turks*, *Doria*, who commanded, twice declined an engagement, tho' his fleet was superior to that of the enemy; which behaviour gave confidence to *Barbarossa*, who pursued him, and took and sunk several ships ^p.

IMMEDIATELY after the conclusion of the alliance, and before the confederate fleet had assembled, the pope earnestly solicited the king of *France* and the emperor to agree to a peace or truce, and was so successful as to prevail with them to consent to a personal conference with him at *Nice*, a maritime city belonging to the duke of *Savoy*. The pope accordingly arrived there in the end of *May*, and *Charles* and *Francis* arriving a few days after, he prevailed with them to agree to a truce for ten years. At the same time he concluded a treaty of marriage betwixt his grandson *Ottavian* and *Margarite* the emperor's natural daughter, and widow of the duke of *Florence*, who died a few years before. He could not, however, prevail with the emperor and the king of *France* to see each other, which *Jovius* and *Onuphrius* say was owing to their resentment against the pope, who, they found, was chiefly intent upon his own private interest ^q. But others affirm, that *Paul* endeavoured from policy to prevent their conference, which he thought would interrupt his private schemes ^r. He pressed them both earnestly to repair to the council at *Vicenza*, and to order the prelates of their dominions thither; but, each excusing himself, he returned to *Genoa* by sea, accompanied by the emperor; where, being informed that only a very few prelates had arrived at *Vicenza*, he prorogued the council till the following year at *Easter*.

° Idem ib. CHYTR. SAXON. I. xv. SPOND. ANNAL. MAURIC. I. v. JUSTIN. I. x. JOV. I. xxxvii. ONUPHR. in Paul. III. MEYER. t. iii. p. 914.

The protestants are falsely supposed to desire a re-union with the church of Rome.

A. D.

1539.

HE likewise soon after sent cardinal *Alexandre* into *Germany* at the request of *Ferdinand* king of the *Romans*, who had declared, that there were some hopes of reconciling the *Lutherans* to the church of *Rome*. This declaration, however, was false; for the protestants absolutely refused to acknowledge the authority of the pope, and only continued to express their desire of living in friendship and peace with the catholics: but *Ferdinand*, who had come to an accommodation with his competitor, the vayvode of *Transilvania*, and had received certain intimation from him and the king of *Poland*, that the *Turks* were making great preparations to invade *Germany*, resolved, if possible, to conclude a peace with the protestants, that he might have their assistance against the infidels. Accordingly a diet was held at *Frankfort* of the catholics and protestants, where, after long debates, an accommodation was agreed to on the 19th of *April*; by which a truce was granted to the protestants for fifteen months, excluding however the *Anabaptists* and *sacramentarians*. It was decreed likewise, that during the time of the truce, a conference should be held betwixt learned and moderate men of both parties, to settle the contested points of religion; that, if they could not come to an agreement in that affair, nevertheless the peace should continue till the first general diet of the empire; and lastly, that the present treaty should have no effect, unless it was ratified by the emperor within six months.

The pope blames the emperor for granting a truce to the protestants.

A. D.

1540.

THE pope, upon the news of this accommodation, was greatly offended with the catholic princes for daring to treat of religion to the prejudice of the council which he had convoked, and immediately sent a nuncio to *Spain*, who dissuaded the emperor from ratifying the treaty. About the same time, as no prelates repaired to *Vienza*, he suspended the celebration of the general council for an unlimited time; and soon after, being informed that the emperor intended to pass thro' *France* to quell a revolt of the city of *Ghent* in *Flanders*, he sent cardinal *Alexander Farnese* as his legate to him, who accompanied him from *Paris* to *Ghent*, where *Charles* immediately received an embassy from the protestants, to desire the continuation of the peace. The protestants a few weeks after received a very ambiguous answer from the emperor, which was laid before their deputies, who were then assembled at *Smalcald*. As *Charles*, by the persuasions of his counsellor *Granvelle*, was inclined to prevent a rupture, and had sent two ambassadors to that assembly, the protestants,

on the 11th of *April*, presented a long memorial to them, in justification of their proceedings.

The pope's legate exerted himself with great earnestness to prevent an accommodation, and declared that it could not be done without the authority of the apostolic see; however the emperor, being persuaded of the necessity of a peace, appointed a diet to be held at *Haguenau* for that purpose, at which the legate, who had not been consulted, was greatly offended, and immediately left *Flanders*. *Paul* in the mean time was engaged in reducing *Perugia*, which had revolted on account of the imposition of a new tax. Having quieted that insurrection, he soon after confirmed the order of the *Jesuits*; but as the great multitude of monks began now to be even a nuisance at *Rome*, he restricted the number of the professed in the new order to sixty. Finding likewise, that the emperor and his brother *Ferdinand* inclined greatly to an accommodation, and that, tho' nothing had been effected at the diet of *Haguenau*, yet a conference was appointed at *Worms*, to put an end, if possible, to all disputes.

He con-
firms the
order of
the *Jesuits*.
firmly the
order of
the *Jesuits*.
be present at
the assembly as his legate, being afraid that something should be transacted to the prejudice of the church of *Rome*. Both parties started a great many difficulties about the manner of disputing, and the papists particularly, being apprehensive lest the majority of the votes of the assembly would be against them, proposed very extravagant conditions.

A. D.
1541.

It was at last agreed, that *Eckius* for the papists, and *Melancthon* for the protestants, should begin the dispute; but three days after the assembly was transferred by the emperor's order to *Ratisbon*, where cardinal *Contareni*, famous for his learning and abilities, soon after arriving as legate from the pope, the diet was opened on the fifth of *April*. A few days after the emperor nominated three doctors of party, and ordered them to resume the dispute which had been begun at *Worms*. They accordingly debated for more than two months, but were as far from an accommodation as at first. At length the protestants presented a memorial to the emperor, containing several articles for a general reformation, which *Charles* immediately communicated to the legate *Contareni*, who insisted that the whole should be referred to the determination of the pope, or a general council, who alone had authority to decide in matters of faith. The emperor, after considering the remonstrances of both parties,

A public
disputa-
tion be-
twixt the
catholics
and pro-
testants.

The legate
wants the
contended
articles to

† Idem, l. xiii. Jov. l. xxix. SPOND. Annal. OR-
LAND. Annal. Societ. Jci. li. & iii.

be referred finally determined to continue the truce, and to postpone farther disputes till the assembling of a general or national council; which last abuse greatly offended the legate, who wrote to all the princes, desiring it to be annulled, as a German council could not decide affairs that concerned the universal church.

HOWEVER *Contareni* might seem to the protestants to have defended the popish cause, yet he was accused by the catholics, both in *Germany* and at *Rome*, of having betrayed their religion to the heretics. Cardinal *Caraffa* accused him in the consistory, and *Eckius* condemned him in an apology which he soon after published for the catholics; however, he was defended by his friend cardinal *Fregesu*, and the emperor, arriving in *Italy*, justified him to the pope at *Lucca*, where he had a conference with his holiness, and, contrary to his advice, embarked for *Africa* with an army of 23,000 men, which was almost entirely destroyed by the cold and tempestuous weather, it being then about the beginning of winter.

A. D.
1542,

A bull
published
for cele-
brating a
council at
Trent.

THE emperor having returned to *Spain* with the remains of his army, soon after, at his desire, a diet was held at *Spire* by his brother *Ferdinand*, who had lately been defeated by the *Turks* in *Hungary*. The pope sent the bishop of *Modena* as his nuncio to this assembly, who exhorted the princes to arm against the infidels, promising, in the name of the pope, a body of 5000 foot, if the emperor should command in person. He likewise declared, that the pope had absolutely determined to celebrate a council in the city of *Trent*, on the confines of *Germany*, as the protestants had objected to a city in *Italy*, and as he himself, being loaded with years and infirmities, could not be able to bear the fatigue of a journey into *Germany*. The protestants still refused to acknowledge the pope's authority to call a council, and declared they would not appear at *Trent*; but, as the catholic princes gave their assent, the pope, on the 20th of *May*, published a bull for the assembling of the council on the 1st of *November* of the same year, and about the same time sent *Alexander Vitellius* with 3000 foot, as a reinforcement to the allied army in *Hungary*; which, acting without unanimity and vigour, spent the campaign without gaining any advantages over the infidels.

IN the mean time the pope endeavoured by his legates to reconcile the emperor and the king of *France*, which last had

* SLEID. l. xii. GOLDAST. Conf. Imp. t. ii. * SPOND.
Annal. JOV. l. xiv. BELCAR. l. vii. y SLEID. l. xiv.
Hist. Hung. l. xv.

renewed the war, and attacked the dominions of *Charles* in five different places, but without any considerable advantage. As the time for the opening the council approached, he likewise sent three cardinals to *Trent* to preside as his legates *à latere*; and, being informed that the doctrines of *Luther* began to meet with a favourable reception in many places of *Italy*, he appointed a congregation of six cardinals, who should act with full power as inquisitors of the faith^a. Soon after hearing that the emperor, who lately had concluded an alliance with *Henry VIII.* of *England* against *France*, intended to pass into *Flanders* by the way of *Italy*, he resolved to have a conference with him on his journey, and for that purpose left *Rome* on the 26th of *February*, and soon after arrived at *Bologna*, where he continued till the middle of summer, when *Charles* landed at *Genoa*. The emperor consented, with great difficulty, to an interview; but, upon repeated intreaties, he agreed to meet the pope at *Busetto*, a castle betwixt *Parma* and *Placentia*. The pope intimated the emperor to restore these cities to the Holy See, and, according to *Sleidan*, made an offer to purchase the duchy of *Milan* for his grandson *Ottavio Farnese*^a; but, the emperor, rejecting both these proposals, he then began to treat of public affairs, and exhorted him to a reconciliation with the king of *France*, that the Christians might be at leisure to turn their arms against the infidels. *Charles*, who was greatly exasperated against *Francis*, refused likewise to hearken to this exhortation, so that the pope, having spent three days at *Busetto*, returned disappointed to *Bologna*; where, on the 4th of *July*, he suspended the celebration of the council of *Trent*, as scarce any prelates had arrived at that city. From *Bologna* likewise he wrote to the chapter of *Cologn*, commending them for their zeal in opposing the innovations introduced by their archbishop, who was eminent for his piety and charity; but, having employed *Bucer*, *Melancthon*, *Pistorius*, and other reformers, to preach in the cities of his jurisdiction, and to reform abuses, was now stiled a wicked captain of heretics^b.

Soon after the pope ordered public processions and supplications to be observed through all Christendom, and granted the same indulgences to those who prayed for the peace and tranquillity of the church, as the pilgrims enjoyed who visited *Rome* in the year of jubilee. And, being informed that the emperor had convoked a diet, at *Spire*, he

^a SPOND. Annal.^a LEIP. l. xv.^b Idem ibid.

SPOND. Annal,

A.D. sent the bishop of *Amalphi* as his nuncio to *Germany*. This
1544. diet, which was very numerous, opened in the month of

The
French
and Turk-
ish fleet
attack the
city of
Nice.

The pope is
offended
with the
emperor's
indulgence
to the pro-
testants.

January, and, with great unanimity, subsid^{ed} were de-
creed against the king of *France* and the *Turks* his allies. As
their united fleet a few months before had made an unsuc-
cessful attempt on the city of *Nice*, on the *Genoese* coast, some
of the princes, at the desire of the emperor, wrote to the
pope, thanking him for the assistance that he had given to
the duke of *Savoy*, and intreating him to continue his suc-
cours to that prince, as they were informed that the *Turks*
were refitting their fleet at *Toulon*, and intended a second de-
scent in *Savoy*. *Paul*, in his answer, related the great pains
he had taken to oppose the *Turks*, and, in his turn, recom-
mended to the diet the care of the Christian common-wealth,
and exhorted the princes to a reconciliation with *France*,
that the council might assemble for the reformation of the
church. Not long after being informed that the emperor
had prolonged the truce to the protestants, had ordered a
suspension of all proceedings against them, and had even pro-
mised to cause a general reformation to be drawn
up, he wrote a long letter to him, reproving him for inter-
meddling with sacred affairs, which only belonged to the
apostolic see; and declaring, that, by treating of religious
matters in the diet, he had endangered his soul. He there-
fore enjoined him, under pain of his displeasure, to revoke
the concessions he had made to the rebels of the holy see.

CHARLES paid no regard to this letter; but, having en-
tered *France* with a powerful army, advanced in the month
of *September* within two days journey of *Paris*, which
obliged the king of *France* to make proposals of peace; in
consequence of which a treaty was concluded betwixt them
at *Crepy*. The pope expressed great satisfaction upon the
news of this peace, congratulated both princes by his nuncios,
and ordered supplications for three days through all *Chris-*
tendom; however, he is said to have been a little piqued, that
he had not been desired to act as mediator. A few weeks
after, having published another bull for the assembling of the
council of *Trent* in the month of *March*, he thereby irritated
the emperor, who expected to have been first consulted;
and therefore soon after *Charles* prohibited three *Spaniards*,
whom, among others, the pope had promoted to the dignity
of cardinal, from assuming the title or wearing the habit.

A. D.
1545.

As it had been an article of the peace concluded at *Crepy*,
that both the princes should use their utmost endeavours to

restored the old religion, the king of *France* ordered the *Parisian* divines to assemble at *Melun* to compose some fundamental articles of religion proper to be established at the council. They accordingly assembled at *Melun*, and confirmed twenty-five articles, which had been drawn up two years before at *Paris*. About the same time the emperor, by an imperial edict, confirmed thirty-two fundamental articles that had been drawn up by the divines of *Louvain*, and ordered them to be taught and received thro' all the provinces of *Lower Germany* (L). He likewise gave several orders to the prelates of *Spain* and *Flanders*, and that he might seem the principal promoter of the council, he sent ambassadors to different princes to intreat them to send their deputies to *Trent*. Paul in the mean time, being informed that the emperor intended to be present at the diet of *Worms*, which was opened in the end of *March*, sent his nephew cardinal *Farneze* to attend him as his legate. The cardinal arrived at *Worms* about the middle of *May*, but he did not concern himself with the diet, or any business in public; however, it was firmly believed that the intent of his journey was to excite the emperor to declare war against the protestants, as news soon after arrived from *Rome*, that the pope had promised 12,000 foot and 500 men at arms to act against the heretics. *He excites him to declare war against them.*

WHAT probably provoked the pope was the firmness of the protestants, who insisted that the peace should be continued and maintained without any respect to the determinations and conclusions of the council of *Trent*, the authority of which they absolutely refused to acknowledge: nor would they grant any succours against the *Turks*, till their religion was secured; on which account the emperor, who replied, that he could not exempt them from obedience to the council, sent his secretary to *Solyman* to demand a truce, and on the 4th of *August* broke up the diet, when he renewed the former edicts for the peace, appointed another diet to be held in *January* at *Ratisbon* to determine the affair of religion, and in *They refuse to acknowledge the council of Trent.*

(L) As these articles of *Louvain*, as well as those of *Paris*, were published in a magisterial stile, without any proofs of scripture, *Bucer* published a comment upon them at *Strasburgh*, and *Luther*, in opposition to them, wrote seventy-five theses in *Latin* and *German*; in which he accused the popish divines of heresy, idolatry, and impiety, for compelling people by fire and sword to give their assent to propositions, which they either would not, or could not, defend by scripture (1).

(1) *Sleid. l. xvi. Spond. Annal.*

The first
session of
the council.

the mean time nominated four doctors of each party to settle the disputed points by a conference^d. This condescension of the emperor gave great offence to the bishops assembled at *Trent*, who thought it very injurious to the council that points of religion should be debated in a diet; and therefore, notwithstanding the intreaties of the legates, many of them, upon various pretences, returned home. About the middle of *March*, the pope had sent three cardinals to preside at the council as his legates *à latere*. The emperor, the king of the *Romans*, and the king of *France*, had likewise sent their ambassadors to *Trent*; however, as the diet about the same time opened at *Worms*, the legates deferred opening the council till they received an immediate answer from the pope^e. A decree for that purpose at length arriving from *Rome*, the council was opened with great solemnity on the 15th of *December*, and the second session appointed to be held on the 7th of *January*.

A. D.
1546.

PAUL in the mean time cited the archbishop of *Cologne* to appear within sixty days at *Rome*, to justify himself with regard to the emperor's pursuing heretics. He likewise, without any regard to the general murmur of the public, and the opposition of several cardinals, gave the investiture of *Parma* and *Placentia* to his son^f. Being also greatly offended with the protestants for still refusing to acknowledge the council of *Trent*, he solicited the emperor, with great earnestness, to declare war against them. By the great warlike preparations in *Germany*, it soon appeared that the solicitations of his holiness were not without effect; for the emperor, without publishing his design, gave orders for raising troops with all expedition; which alarming the protestants, they began with great vigour to prepare for their defence. *Charles*, that he might the better deceive his adversaries, pretended a great desire of peace, and tho' the pope, on the 16th of *April*, had excommunicated and deposed the archbishop of *Cologne*, and ordered all to yield obedience to his coadjutor count *de Scharwemburg*, the emperor nevertheless still acknowledged the archbishop, that he might not seem to regard the difference of religion, as he intended to declare war against the protestants only as seditious persons and disturbers of the public peace.

The arch-
bishop of
Cologne is
excommu-
nicated
and de-
posed.

MEAN time, besides his levies in *Germany*, he ordered *Spanish* and *Neapolitan* troops to march from *Italy*, and sent the cardinal of *Trent* to the pope to demand the succours which he had formerly promised. As *Paul* was greatly ter-

^d Idem, l. xvi.
ALD, ad an. 1546.

^e SPOND. ANNAI PALLAV.

^f RAIN-

with the news of the strength of the protestants, who were reported to have a design of marching directly to Rome with an army of 80,000 foot and 40,000 horse, he immediately concluded a treaty with the emperor on the following conditions: that he should deposit 200,000 crowns for the expences of the war, should furnish 12,000 foot and 500 horse, should grant the emperor one half of the ecclesiastical revenues of Spain for one year, and allow him to mortgage 500,000 crowns of the income of the monasteries in that kingdom, provided he gave security for repayment of that sum out of his royal domains; that the emperor should not make any peace with the protestants for six months without the pope's consent, who should likewise be intitled to a certain proportion of the conquests. Soon after the conclusion of this treaty, which was signed on the 26th of June, the pope's troops began their march for Germany, under the command of his grandson Octavius, and his elder brother cardinal Farnese; which last, upon his departure from Italy, was reported to have said, *That there would be such a fine butchery in Germany, that his horse would swim in the blood of the Lutherans*. Besides these troops, the duke of Florence sent 2000 bardeaers, and the duke of Ferrara 100 men at arms.

DURING these transactions, the fathers of Trent held their second session on the 7th of January; in which a decree was read, ordering prayers for the unity of the church, the celebration of mass every Sunday, the observation of a fast each Friday, and the bestowing of alms; after the reading of which, the following session was appointed to be held on the 4th of February. They accordingly assembled on that day, when a decree was read concerning the creed used by the Roman church, which was accounted a shield against all heresies. They afterwards appointed the fourth session to be held on the 20th of April, to give time to several prelates to arrive at the council, as there were then only present five cardinals, six archbishops (M), thirty bishops, three abbots,

^E PALLAV. l. viii. c. i. ^H BELCAR. l. xxiv. n. 21. SLEID. l. xvii. RAINALD, ad an. 1546. ^I SLEID. *ibid*.

(M) Among the archbishops were two nominal ones; namely, Olaus Magnus, titular archbishop of Upsal in Sweden, and Robert Venice, by some called Robert Wachop, a Scotchman, who had obtained from the pope the title of archbishop of Armagh in Ireland. There were besides in the beginning only two French bishops, five Spanish, and one Illyrian, all the rest being Italian, so that, with great justice, the protestants might refuse to submit their cause to the decision of such interested judges (1).

(1) Sleid. l. xvii.

and

and five generals of monkish orders. Mean time general congregations were held twice a week on *Mondays* and *Fridays*, in which the points to be treated of in the sessions were examined and discussed. Besides several extraordinary congregations were held, after which the fourth session was celebrated according to appointment; in which a decree was published, whereby the fathers professed, that, according to the example of the orthodox fathers, they received all the books of the Old and New Testament, together with the traditions regarding faith and manners, as dictated verbally by Christ or by the Holy Spirit, and preserved by a continual succession in the catholic church. An anathema was then denounced against those who did not receive the sacred books as canonical, as they were published in the old vulgate *Latin*, or who wilfully despised the aforesaid traditions. The scripture was ordered to be received according to the sense of the church, which alone has a right to interpret the sacred writings; and all were prohibited from printing books on sacred subjects without adding the name of the author, or from keeping or selling them without the leave of the ordinaries^k.

As the emperor had not yet proceeded to an open rupture, the proceedings of the council gave him great offence. He was afraid lest the decision of controverted points of faith would alarm and irritate the protestants, who, perceiving their doctrines so publicly condemned, would unite more firmly in their own defence; whereas he intended to detach the imperial cities from the princes of the *Smalcaldic* league, and had even succeeded so far, that he had received several reinforcements of protestant troops. He therefore intreated the pope and the fathers at *Trent* to defer deciding points of faith for a few months, till he had finished the war, and in the mean time to treat only of a reformation. However his request was refused both by the council and his ally the pope, who, notwithstanding the pretences of the emperor, declared the war to be undertaken on a religious account, and pressed *Charles* to allow his legate to publish a crusade^l. The fathers at *Trent* likewise, in their fifth session, which was held on the 17th of *June*, published a decree concerning the doctrine of original sin; in the end of which they declared, that they had no intention to comprehend, under original sin, the blessed and immaculate virgin *Mary*. They also added some rules for regulating the manner of instructing the people and preaching the gospel, and appointed the next session

^k SPOND. ANNAL. v. TABERN. l. v. & vi. PALLAVICIN. l. viii. SLEID. l. xvii.

to be held on the 19th of *July*; which, however, was afterwards prorogued till the 13th of *January* in the following year, the fathers in the mean time assembling in general congregations, and discussing other points of faith ^m.

A FEW weeks after this prorogation, the pope's troops, *Several* with 5000 *Spaniards* and *Neapolitans*, having joined the emperor's camp, he marched against the elector of *Saxony* and *princes* the landgrave of *Hesse*, whom he had put to the ban of the empire. Tho' the protestant army at first was more numerous than the imperialists, and gained some small advantages, yet, upon account of divisions among their chiefs, the emperor, before the end of campaign, was greatly superior, and obliged the elector palatine, the duke of *Wirtemberg*, and some imperial cities, to submit and ask pardon ^{the emperor}. The pope being offended, that, in the accommodation which he made with those who had submitted, he had tolerated heresy, recalled his troops from the emperor's service, and refused to continue the grant of the subsidy from the church revenues of *Spain*, as *Charles* would not allow his legate to preside in the army, and had not, according to the treaty, shared with him the contributions which he had raised from the protestant towns.

As the emperor likewise would not agree to a suspension of the council, *Paul* wrote to his legates at *Trent* to proceed to determine the points of faith. They accordingly, on the 13th of *January*, held the sixth session of the council; in which, notwithstanding the opposition of the imperial prelates, a decree was read and approved concerning justification, containing the doctrine of the *Roman* church on that point, and thirty anathemas were added against those who should corrupt that doctrine in any article. Another decree was likewise read concerning reformation; namely, regarding the residence of prelates, and the punishment of those who should be absent from their dioceses above six months at a time, and for compelling the inferior clergy to residence; concerning the visitation of the chapters of cathedral churches, and for prohibiting any from officiating as priests out of their own dioceses, without the leave of the ordinaries ^o. Before the following session, which was appointed to be held on the 3d of *March*, the fathers held several congregations, in which they debated with great warmth concerning the sacraments, and the compatibility or incompatibility of holding more benefices than one. At length, after many conferences and

^m SPOND. Annal. DE L'ÉCCLÉ. J. xviii. Annal. DUVAL de Discip. Eccles. p. 3. q. 7.

^o SPOND. disputes.

The council is transferred to Bologna.

disputes, the decrees were published; first, concerning the seven sacraments in general, in thirteen canons, with as many anathemas; then particularly of baptism; and lastly of confirmation. A decree was afterwards added concerning reformation, and the eighth session appointed to be held on the 21st of April; however, it was celebrated on the 11th of the same month, when a decree was published for transferring the council for a time to *Bologna*, on account of a dangerous distemper that prevailed in *Trent* and its neighbourhood, owing, as it was supposed, to continual rains that had altered the temperament of the air, and, according to the opinion of the physicians of the council, rendered it dangerous for the prelates to remain in that city. Of the sixty fathers who at that time composed the council, cardinal *Paciscus*, and fifteen other bishops of the imperial party, dissented from this decree, affirming that the danger of the distemper was magnified beyond the truth, and that the consent of the pope, the emperor, and other princes, was necessary to the transferring of the council^p; they therefore remained at *Trent*, and their conduct was approved by the emperor.

The emperor entirely defeats the protestants at Muhlberg.

Tho' the pope two years before had given his legates a power to transfer the council, yet it is probable the last decree was published in consequence of an immediate order from himself; for he was greatly dissatisfied with the emperor for granting liberty of conscience to the protestants that had submitted, and he even began to be afraid of his power. The emperor had likewise disoblged him, by refusing to confirm the investiture of *Parma* and *Placentia* to his son *Peter Lewis*, and the prelates of the imperial faction had advanced some things in the council derogatory to the authority of the apostolic see. Soon after his joyfulty of the emperor's power was greatly increased; for *Charles*, on the 24th of April, having entirely defeated the protestants near the city of *Muhlberg*, took the duke of *Saxony* prisoner, and deprived him of his electorate, obliged the landgrave to surrender himself, and, besides the immense sums of money which he raised from the protestant cities, stripped them of 500 pieces of cannon which he sent to *Milan*, *Naples*, *Spain*, and the *Low Countries*^r. The pope expressed great joy upon the news of this victory, and immediately sent cardinal *Sfondrato* to *Germany* with a letter of congratulation to the

^p SLEID. l. xix. SPOND. Annal. ex A. Couc. edit. Archiep. Aquens. ^r ONUPH. in vit. Paul. III. ^r SLEID. l. xix.

emperor ;

emperor; however, he would not agree to his request, for the return of the council to *Trent*^a; but solicited *Charles* to order the *Spanish* bishops to repair to *Bologna*, where, on the 21st of *April*, the council had held the ninth session, in which they had only read a decree appointing the next session to be celebrated on the second of *June*, when they again prorogued the session to the 15th of *September*. As there were very few prelates at *Bologna*, the council was afterwards prorogued to a limited time^c.

PAUL in the mean time sent a legate to *France*, to congratulate *Henry II.* who had succeeded his father *Francis* on the 31st of *March*, and soon after he granted a bull for establishing the tribunal of the inquisition in the kingdom of *Naples*, to which he had been solicited by the *Spanish* viceroy; but, upon the publication of the edict for the establishment of the holy office, so violent an insurrection followed, that the emperor was apprehensive of a general revolt, and a few months after consented to repeal his decree^d. During these disturbances at *Naples*, the pope was alarmed with the news of the murder of his son *Peter-Lewis*; who, having rendered himself odious by his infamous vices, was assassinated in his palace at *Placentia*. This city was immediately after seized by *Ferdinand Gonzaga*, the emperor's lieutenant in *Lombardy*; which raised a great suspicion that *Charles* himself was conscious of the murder. About the same time he likewise received a letter from the princes and prelates of *Germany*, assembled at the diet of *Augsburg*, intreating him to restore the council of *Trent*, and a few weeks after an ambassador arrived at *Rome* from the emperor, to inform him that the protestant princes and cities had agreed to submit to the council (N) of *Trent*, and to urge him to order the fathers to return to that city^e.

And unsuccessful attempt to establish the inquisition at Naples.

^a *PALLAVICIN.* Hist. l. x. c. 3. *ADRIAN.* l. vi. p. 412.
^b *SPOND.* Annal. ^c *SLEID.* l. xix. *THUAN.* l. iii. Natal. Comes, l. ii. & iii. ^d *SLEID.* ut supra.

(N) The elector palatine, of the emperor's power, presented *Maurice* the new elector of *Saxony* to satisfy the emperor, expressed the conditions under which they likewise would acknowledge the council; which *Charles* pretended to accept of as an entire submission (1).

(1) *Sleidan.* l. xix.

The pope
proposes an
alliance
with the
king of
France.

A. D.
1549.

The em-
peror pro-
tests a-
gainst the
translation
of the
council.

A new
form of
reformati-
on drawn
up by his
order ;

THE pope seemed inclined to grant the request of the imperial ambassador, but desired first to have the opinion of the fathers at *Bologna*, who declared that they could not return to *Trent* without violating the dignity of the council. He himself had no real inclination to gratify the emperor, and had even several months before proposed an alliance with *Henry II. of France* against him, which he solicited with greater earnestness since the murder of his son and the seizing of *Placentia*. *Henry II.* having sent the cardinal *Guise* to *Rome*, to declare his obedience to the apostolic see, and having likewise given his secret orders to offer assistance to the pope, *Paul*, in the beginning of *January*, wrote an answer to the letter from the *German* bishops, wherein he blamed them severely for declaring, that, unless the council returned to *Trent*, they should be obliged to take other measures, and assured them he was indifferent in what city the council was celebrated ; but at the same time affirmed, that there was no place more proper than the city of *Bologna* *. The emperor, finding the pope unmoved by all his solicitations, sent ambassadors to *Bologna*, who, on the 16th of the same month, protested against the translation of the council as frivolous and illegal, while *Diego Mendoza*, his ambassador at *Rome*, read the same protestation, with a few alterations, to the pope and cardinals, in the presence of all the foreign ambassadors †. The pope in his answer, which he made to *Mendoza* on the first of *February*, accused him of having exceeded his instructions, and affirmed that the emperor had not ordered him to protest against him and the sacred college, but to protest before them against the fathers at *Bologna* ; he therefore, as lawful judge of the dispute concerning the legality of the translation of the council, cited the fathers at *Trent* and *Bologna* to justify their proceedings ‡ within a month before the cardinals *Paris*, *Burges*, *Crescentius*, and *Pool*.

NOTWITHSTANDING this answer, *Mendoza*, in a second declaration, affirmed, that he had received express orders from the emperor to protest in the manner he had done § ; and *Charles*, resolving to accommodate the differences with regard to religion independently of the council, about this time appointed several doctors to draw up a form of ecclesiastical reformation ¶. *Paul* in the mean time cited the fathers at *Trent* and *Bologna*, the first of whom excused themselves from appearing ; but the others immediately sent their

* BELCAR, l. XXV. sect. 4. SPOND. Arnal.

† SLEID.

‡ PALLAVICIN. l. X. c. 13. RAINALD. ad an. 1548.

§ SLEID. l. XX.

proxies to *Rome*; yet the judges, being apprehensive of a schism, delayed giving sentence during the whole pontificate of *Paul*, so that the prelates at *Bologna* dispersed, excepting a few pensionaries of the holy see ^b.

THE pope, in compliance with the emperor, suspended the council, and would not proceed against those prelates that remained at *Trent*, yet he expressed great dissatisfaction upon receiving a copy of the new form of reformation drawn up by the doctors in *Germany*, which was called the *Interim*, denoting, by that title, that its articles were to remain in force till others should be composed by the pope and a universal council. He ordered his legate *Sfondrato*, who had continued with the emperor since the victory at *Mullberg*, to censure it in general, but particularly the two articles allowing the marriage of priests, and the communicating under both kinds; the first of which had never been known, and the other could not be permitted by any authority but that of the apostolic see. *Charles* paid no regard to this remonstrance; but, on the 15th of *May*, presented his *Interim* to the diet, for which the archbishop of *Mentz* thanked him in the name of all the princes, without having previously demanded their consent. The emperor, interpreting this speech as a general *which is* approbation of his book, immediately ordered it to be *condemned* printed in *Latin* and *German*, and peremptorily com- *both by the* manded it to be received both by the catholics and pro- *papists and* testants. By this proceeding, instead of putting an end to *protest-* the divisions, he greatly inflamed both parties against himself; for the protestants objected to the book as containing the doctrines of popery, artfully disguised, and the catholics rejected it for not having the sanction of ecclesiastic authority; however, he would receive no excuse from the *Lutherans*, many of whom were compelled by his *Spanish* and *Neapolitan* troops to give their assent to his book, while many doctors of that persuasion, to avoid persecution, were obliged to quit *Germany* ^c.

CHARLES likewise intreated the pope to send legates into *Three nun-* *Germany*, to assist in putting his edicts into execution. *Paul* *cio: sent to* refused this request, as derogatory from the apostolic autho- *Germany* rity; however he sent three nuncios into *Germany*, with full *with a* power to restore all persons, even kings and princes, to their *power of* dignities, to grant the privilege of communicating under both *reforming* kinds upon certain conditions, and to absolve the usurpers of *abuses*.

^b SPOND. Annal. ^c SLEID. l. xx. & xxi. RAINALD, ut sup. Conflit. Imper. GOLDAST. t. i. p. 518. PALLAVICIN. l. x.

ecclesiastical possessions, after restitution made by them of the lands, and a reasonable composition for the revenues already consumed. They had likewise authority to absolve the catholics from their oaths given to heretics, and to unite ecclesiastical benefices to universities, schools, and hospitals ; but, tho' the Bull was expedited on the last of *August*, they did not lay their mandates before the emperor till the 25th of *May* in the following year^d. *Charles*, being dissatisfied with their powers, prohibited the nuncios from putting them in execution, till they should be altered in some articles by the pope ; and even after they received some alteration, the nuncios were still prevented from acting, by new difficulties that were started ; so that they were at last obliged to delegate their powers to the *German* bishops, to each within his own diocese, and to the other prelates within the extent of their jurisdiction^e.

The pope
solicits
the resto-
ration of
Placentia.

He dies at
Rome.

DURING these transactions, the pope earnestly solicited the emperor to restore *Placentia*, which city he affirmed belonged to the dominions of the church ; but finding his solicitations had no effect upon the emperor, he began to think of restoring *Parma* to the church, and to give his grandson *Octavius* another territory. He accordingly appointed *Camillo Ursini* governor of *Parma* ; but his grandson refused to accept of any other territory, and privately left *Rome*, with the intention of taking possession of that city. Being frustrated in his attempt to surprise the place, he wrote to his brother cardinal *Farnese*, declaring, that, if his grandfather would not restore the city, he would treat with the emperor's lieutenant *Gonzaga*. This letter, being read to the pope, had such an effect upon him, that he immediately fainted, and, reviving with much difficulty, about four hours after was seized with a violent fever, of which he died on the third day, being the 10th of *November*^f. He is commended for his prudence and moderation, but he was greatly addicted to judicial astrology, and had made but small proficiency in the learning of those times (O). The expence of his funeral

^d SPOND. ANNAL. SLEID. l. 21. * RAINALD. ad an 1549.
ADRIAN. l. vii. PALLAVICIN. l. xi. c. 2. ^f SLEID. l. xxi.

(O) *Sleidan* relates, that, a little before his death, a book was published in *Italian*, under the name of *Ochinus*, and dedicated to *Africanus Colonna* ; in which he was accused of the most infamous vices, such as murder, incest, adultery, and parricide (1).

(1) *Sleidan*. l. xxi.

solemnity, which continued nine days, was supposed to amount to 50,000 crowns.

AFTER the death of *Paul III.* the cardinals delayed entering the conclave till the 28th of *November*; during which time the imperial and *French* ministers warmly solicited the favour of cardinal *Farnese*, who was at the head of a party of the sacred college. Upon shutting the conclave, cardinal *Poole* was proposed by a great many voices, and, upon the first scrutiny, wanted only two votes to be legally elected; but the old cardinals, being jealous of his promotion, did their utmost to thwart his election, and at the next scrutiny cardinal *Caraffa* even accused him of heresy. Several new *French* cardinals arriving, their faction appeared the most numerous; but cardinal *Farnese* and his party joining the imperialists, cardinal *de Monte* was elected on the 9th of *February*, tho' one of the cardinals some days before had objected to him on account of his wicked life &c. Cardinal *Farnese*, before he consented to give him his vote, obliged him to swear, that he would grant the possession of *Parma* to his brother *Ottavio*.

A. D.
1550.
Julius III.
is elected.

THE new pope, assuming the name of *Julius III.* (P), was crowned with the usual solemnity on the 22d of the same month; and two days after he published a bull, declaring that the year of jubilee had commenced at *Christmas*. The same day, according to the usual ceremony, he opened the holy gate of *St. Peter's* with a golden hammer, and gave access to an infinite number of pilgrims, who waited to have remission of their sins. Soon after he restored *Ascanio Colonna*, who had been deprived of his possessions by *Paul III.* and, according to his agreement with cardinal *Farnese*, conferred the government of *Parma* upon his brother *Ottavio*, with a monthly revenue of 2000 crowns^b. He likewise confirmed the election of patriarch of *Greater Armenia*, who had been persuaded by the *Dominican* missionaries to submit to the church of *Rome*, on promises of preferment which were never afterwards fulfilled. About the same time he made a pro-

A jubilee
celebrated
at Rome.

^a ONUPHR. de Rom. Pontif. ADRIAN. l. vii. ^b SPOND. Annal. SÆID. l. xxi.

(P) *John Maria de Monte* was chamber, was created a cardinal born at *Rome* in the year 1487, by *Paul III.* and appointed and when archbishop of *Siponto*, by him first president of the and auditor of the apostolic council of *Trent* (1).

(1) Spond. Annal.

Y 3

motion

motion of twenty cardinals, and bestowed his own hat on a boy of thirteen years of age, born of mean parentage at *Placentia*, whom he likewise adopted into his family; which gave occasion to many severe palquinades at *Rome* ¹.

The pope publishes two bulls for the suppression of heresy.

To manifest his desire of suppressing heresy, on the 28th of *April* he published two bulls; by one of which he prohibited all persons, except the inquisitors of the faith, from possessing or reading the books of the *Lutherans* or other heretics; and by the other he allowed all those, who should repent of their heresies within three months, to be received into the church by the inquisitors, upon performing private penance; but from this indulgence were excepted all those who were under the general inquisition of *Spain* and *Portugal* ^k. The emperor in the mean time urging him to re-establish the council of *Trent*, he assembled a congregation of cardinals and other prelates, by whose advice he consented to the emperor's request, on these conditions; that the council should be approved by the king of *France*, and the decrees already published be received by the protestants. Accordingly, having received the approbation of the king of *France*, on the 14th of *November* he published a bull for restoring the council to *Trent*, ordering all prelates and persons concerned to repair to that city on the 1st of *May*, when he intended to resume the council, and to preside at it either personally or by his legates. He sent a copy of this bull before it was published to the emperor, who then held a diet at *Augsburg*, and, upon consulting with his ministers, intreated *Julius* to soften some expressions, but without any effect; for, on the 27th of *December*, he expedited a brief, ordering his bull to be read and affixed to the doors of the churches of *St. Peter* and *St. John*, and printed copies of it to be sent to all the bishops of Christendom ^l.

Another for restoring the council of Trent.

A. D.
1551.

THE emperor objected to the bull, because he was afraid it would irritate the protestants, some of whom in the diet had agreed to the continuation of the council without any conditions; but others had insisted that the protestant divines should not only be heard in the sessions, but even have a power of deciding; that the pope should not preside, but submit to the council; and that the decrees already published should be of no force ^m. His apprehensions proved to be just; for when the bull was read in the diet on the 5th of *January*, the protestants expressed great dissatisfaction:

¹ SLEID. *ibid.* ^k SPOND. *Annal.* ^l HARÆUS, p. 656.
PALLAVICIN. l. xi. c. 8. 10. & 11. RAINALD. ^m SLEID.
l. xxii.

Charles, however, appeased them in some measure, by declaring that he would take such methods, that nothing should pass in the council prejudicial to the liberties of the German nation. The emperor then dissolved the diet on the 23d of February, and soon after sent three ambassadors to Trent, who were present on the first of May, when the pope's legates celebrated the eleventh session, in which a decree was read for resuming the council, and the next session appointed to be held on the first of September, because very few prelates were then arrived, and on account of some disturbances in Lombardy, which threatened to interrupt the tranquillity of Italy*. These were occasioned by Octavius Farnese, who, being afraid of the designs of Gonzaga, the emperor's lieutenant, and deprived of his monthly subsidy from the pope, had introduced a French garrison into Parma. Tho' the pope had allowed Octavius to provide for his own security as king of France, he thought proper, yet he never imagined he would have recourse to the French; therefore, to clear himself from any suspicions of the emperor, he cited Octavius to appear at Rome within thirty days. As he neglected the citation, he applied to Gonzaga for assistance, and about the middle of May the pope's troops and imperialists invested Parma and Mirandola. The king of France ordered his ambassador at Rome to justify his proceeding to the pope, and to declare, that, unless he ceased hostilities, he would prohibit his bishops from going to Trent; but Julius, being assured of the emperor's assistance, ordered the king to withdraw his troops, and even threatened him with excommunication. Mean-while the French troops, being reinforced in Italy, made several incursions into the Bolognese, and attacked the Milanese on the side of Piedmont; hostilities likewise commencing betwixt France and the emperor in Lorraine and Flanders.

Tho' the emperor, by besieging Parma, had given Henry II. a pretence for a rupture, and had thereby involved himself in a new war with France, yet he did not neglect the affairs of religion, and wrote to the protestant states, desiring them to send ambassadors to Trent; and, as they insisted upon a safe conduct from the council, he promised to apply to the fathers for that purpose. In the mean time the electors of Mentz and Triers, with several other German bishops, repaired to Trent, and were present at the twelfth session; when a decree was read, appointing the following session on

A new war in Italy betwixt the emperor and the king of France.

Several German bishops repaired to Trent.

* SPOND. Annal. • BELLEFOR. l. vi. c. 71. PARADIN.
ad an. 1551. SLEID. l. xxii.

the 11th of *October*, and declaring that a canon would then be published concerning the sacrament of the eucharist. A letter and protestation from the king of *France* were then read, wherein he declared, that unless the pope would cease his hostilities against *Parma*, he would not acknowledge the council. The fathers declared that they would answer the king's deputy at the next sessions, but being then called he did not appear: they, however, drew up an answer to the protestation, and published a decree concerning the eucharist, adding eleven anathemas against those who should deny or alter the doctrine they had established. At the persuasion of the imperial ambassador, they delayed disputing concerning the use of the cup to laymen, till the arrival of the protestants; but they published another decree for reformation, particularly concerning the residence of bishops^p. They likewise complied with the emperor's request, and granted a safe-conduct to the protestants; in consequence of which the elector of *Brandenburg*, and the duke of *Wurtemberg*, sent their ambassadors to *Trent*, who were soon followed by *Sleidan* the historian, as deputy from the city of *Straßburg*, who relating his own and his colleagues negotiations, says, that they would not confer with the pope's legates, lest they should thereby seem to allow them a right of judging; but addressed themselves to the emperor's ambassadors, and to the cardinal of *Trent* and the electoral archbishops, desiring their confession of faith to be presented to the council. A few days before they proposed to present their confession, the fourteenth session was celebrated, on the 25th of *November*, when a decree was read concerning the sacrament of penance and extreme unction, and thirteen articles concerning reformation^q.

The pope agrees to a neutrality with the emperor and the king of France.

A.D. 1552.

THE pope in the mean time, being tired of the expences of a war, sent a legate to the emperor, and another to the king of *France*, with proposals for a neutrality or truce for two years. *Henry II.* very readily embraced this offer, and in the beginning of the following year concluded a treaty with the pope, which gave great offence to the emperor, who was, however, afterwards obliged to consent to it. *Charles* resided then at *Innsbruck*, within three days journey of *Trent*, and was chiefly attentive to the proceedings of the council. About the beginning of *January* the *Saxon* ambassadors arrived at *Trent*, and demanded that a safe-conduct should be given to the divines whom prince *Maurice* intend-

^p SPOND. Annal. SLEIDAN, l. xxii & xxiii.
^q Ibid.

^r Ibidem

ed to send to the council, like that which was formerly granted by the council of *Basil* to the *Bohemians*; that the pope should not preside; and that the prelates who composed the council should be absolved from their oath of obedience to him. A few days after, the ambassadors of the duke of *Wurtemberg* presented their confession of faith, in a general congregation which was held at the legate's lodgings, and demanded that proper judges should be appointed to decide the disputes betwixt their divines and those of the catholics, and that all the past acts of the council should be revoked. The same demands were likewise made by the *Saxon* ambassadors, who were admitted in the evening; but they did not deliver their confession of faith, composed by *Melancthon*, as they had no instructions for that purpose. The fifteenth session was held the next day, which was the 25th of *January*, when a decree was read, declaring, that, at the demand of the protestants, all points which should have been decided that day were deferred till the 19th of *March*, and a new safe-conduct was granted to them, which the council affirmed was more ample than the former. A few days after the protestants received copies of the safe-conduct; but perceiving that the articles which they insisted upon being inserted were wholly omitted, they complained of this proceeding to the imperial ambassadors, without receiving any satisfactory answer (Q). News in the mean time arriving that prince *Maurice* had declared war against the emperor, the electors of *Mentz* and *Cologne* immediately left *Trent*; and the *Saxon* ambassadors having declared that they were intirely ignorant of their master's designs, retired to *Brescia*, from whence they returned home by different routes. A few days after their departure, six divines arrived at *Trent* from *Wurtemberg* and *Straßburg*; and the fathers of the council still refusing

The protestants deliver their confession of faith to the pope's legates at Trent.

Their complaints are disregarded.

* RAINALD, SPOND. ad an. 1552. PALLAVICIN, l. xii. c. xv.

(Q) These articles, which had formerly been granted to the *Bohemians*, and were now omitted, were, 1. That the protestants should have the right of voting in the council. 2. That the holy scripture, the practice of the primitive church, the ancient councils, and the fathers, whose writings agreed

with the scriptures, should be the judges of all controversies. 3. That all ambassadors, during the continuance of the council, should be allowed the free exercise of their religion in their own lodgings. 4. That nothing should be said or acted in contempt or ridicule of their religion (1).

(1) *Sleidan*, l. xxiii. *Belcor*, l. xxv.

to allow their confession to be publicly read, they caused it to be printed and dispersed, which gave great offence to the catholics. The next session, which was appointed to be held on the 19th of *March*, was deferred till the 1st of *May*; and, in the mean time, the protestant ambassadors declared to those of the emperor, that although the council had not granted their first demand, their divines offered themselves to dispute on the points of religion, on condition that their right should not thereby be prejudiced; but as the catholics had disputed on the first fundamental articles, it was reasonable that the protestants should be allowed to do the same. The legates paying no regard to this declaration, the protestant divines a few days after wrote to the imperial ambassadors, desiring that their adversaries would publish their objections to their doctrine in writing, which they were ready to answer^{*}.

Many prelates leave Trent on account of the disturbances in Germany.

The council is suspended for two years.

THE legates, instead of complying with this request, began to be afraid that the emperor was acting in concert with the protestants, and intended, by means of the prelates in his interest, to depress and reform the court of *Rome*. They therefore readily embraced all pretences for delays; and news arriving that the elector *Maurice* had made himself master of *Augsburg*, and that the confederate army was marching to seize the passes of the *Alps*, the greatest part of the *Italian* bishops fled to *Verona*, and the protestants, after giving in a writing in justification of their past proceedings, likewise left *Trent*. The legates immediately dispatched an express to the pope, who having sent a bull for suspending the council in case of necessity, they held the sixteenth session on the 28th of *April*, in which the council was formally suspended for two years, notwithstanding a protestation given in by twelve *Spanish* bishops, who alleged, that the war in *Germany* was not a sufficient reason for the suspension of the council, which, by being continued, would rather be a means of procuring peace[†].

By this suspension of the council the emperor lost all hopes of inducing the protestants to return to the old religion, especially as he was soon after obliged to consent to a peace with the elector *Maurice* and the confederates, which was concluded at *Passau*. Among other matters it was agreed, that a diet should assemble within six months, to consult of the means of terminating all differences on account of religion; that, in the mean time, none should be molested on account of their religious opinions; and that, although no

^{*} SLEIDAN, l. xxiii.

[†] Idem ibid. BELCAR. l. xxiii.

ADRIAN. l. viii. PALLAV. l. xiii. SPOND. Annal.

means should be found in the diet for accommodating the religious difference, the present peace and concord should, nevertheless, continue for ever firm and unviolated *. *Julius*, in the mean time, appointed several cardinals to consult of means, to reform the abuses of the church, and the corrupt and dissolute manners of the clergy; But, after several meetings and adjournments, nothing was determined of any consequence. His attention began to be engaged by the new commotions raised in *Italy*, on account of the revolt of *Siena*, which city had expelled the *Spanish* garrison, and admitted *French* troops. As *Don Pedro de Toledo*, the viceroy of *Naples*, in the month of *January* began his march for *Tuscany* with a formidable army, in order to reduce the rebels, *Julius*, remembering the fate of *Clement VII.* immediately levied 8000 men for the defence of the ecclesiastical territories, the command of whom he gave to *Camillo Ursini*. About the same time he sent legates to the emperor and the king of *France*, offering them his mediation for a general peace.

A.D.
1553.

Soon after, at the desire of *Mary* queen of *England*, who intended to restore the authority of the pope in that kingdom, he ordered cardinal *Poole* to repair thither as his legate *a latere*, and in his journey through *Germany* to exhort the emperor to peace. The cardinal left *Rome* about the end of *October*; but as he had not yet taken priest's orders, the emperor was apprehensive lest *Mary* should chuse him for her husband, in preference to his son *Philip*: he therefore found a pretence to stop him at *Augsburg*, and represented to the queen, that the cardinal's forward zeal for the interests of the holy see would certainly inflame the people of *England*; and, at the same time, he urged the alliance with his son so successfully, that the queen gave her consent to the match, which was likewise approved by the parliament *. During these proceedings, *Julius* confirmed *Simon Sulaka* the patriarch of the Christians on the east side of the *Euphrates*; and having ordered him to be ordained a bishop, he invested him with the patriarchal pall with his own hands, in the consistory, conferred upon him several rich presents, and sent with him to his own country several religious men, skilled in the *Syriac* language, and the rites of the *Roman* church *. At the same time he sent some troops to assist the imperialists and *Florentines* in the siege of *Siena*, and soon

* CHYTRÆ. Saxon. l. xvii. p. 458. GOLDAST. Const. imper.

* BURNET'S Hist. Reform. vol. ii. SEIDAN. l. xxv. PALLAV. l. xiii. RAIN.

* ONUPHR. in vit. Jul. III.

after

A. D. after he received an embassy from the emperor's son *Philip*,
 1554. informing him of his marriage with the queen of *England*,
 and offering homage for the kingdoms of *Naples* and *Sicily*,
 which, before the celebration of the nuptials, his father had
 resigned to him.

Heinrich endeavours to reconcile the emperor and the king of France. MEAN while, upon the complaints of cardinal *Poole*, the emperor had allowed him to proceed to *Brussels*, where he himself then resided; but that he might delay his journey to *England* till the marriage should be concluded, he pretended an inclination to a peace with *France*, and desired the cardinal to act as mediator. *Poole* accordingly had a conference with *Henry II.* but quickly found that neither he nor the emperor had any real inclination to peace.

Soon after an embassy arriving from king *Philip* and queen *Mary*, inviting him to *England*, he took leave of the emperor, and set out for *London*, where, on the 23d of *November*, he was received with great demonstrations of joy; and a few days after, being reinstated in his former possessions and dignity, he solemnly absolved the nation from the censures they had incurred on account of the schism and heresy. Ambassadors were then ordered to proceed to *Rome*, to declare the obedience of that nation to the apostolic see; the news of which proceedings being brought by an express to the pope, he immediately ordered public supplications over all *Italy*, and published general indulgences as in the year of jubilee². About the same time, being informed that the emperor had appointed a diet to be held at *Augsburg* in the beginning of *February*, he sent

1555. the cardinal *Moron* to *Germany* as his legate, to exhort the protestants to follow the example of *England*, and to acknowledge the authority of the see of *Rome*, charging him, however, to avoid all conferences on the disputed points of religion³. *Moron* had hardly arrived at the diet, when being informed of the death of pope *Julius*, he immediately set out

Julius died at Rome. for *Rome*, together with the cardinal of *Augsburg*. *Julius* died on the 23d of *March*, of a lethargy, according to some authors; but others affirm, that his death was occasioned by a change of diet, which his physician advised him to on account of the gout, while many alleged, that he altered his diet at first under a pretence of sickness, that he might avoid calling a consistory, which he knew would oppose the demands of his brother *Baldwin*, who desired earnestly to be put in possession of *Camerino*⁴.

² SPOND. Annal. ad an. 1554.

³ BURNET, ut supra.

SLEIDAN, l. xxv.

⁴ SLEIDAN, l. xxvi. PALLAVICIN, l.

xiii. ADRIAN. l. xii.

⁵ SPOND. Annal. PANVIN. in vit.

Jul. III.

JULIUS III. was succeeded in the pontificate by *Marcellus* *Marcellus Cervinus*, a native of *Montfano*, and cardinal of the holy *II. is elect-* cross at *Jerusalem*, who being elected on the 9th of *April* *ed pope,* retained his own name, and was next day consecrated bishop, *and dies* and then solemnly crowned. Upon his promotion he prohibited all his relations from coming to *Rome*, and communicated to the cardinal of *Mantua* his design of assembling a general council for a thorough reformation of the church, *within* which, he said, would rather establish than depress the authority of the *Roman* see. However, he was prevented by death from putting his design in execution; for having greatly fatigued himself with the many superfluous and troublesome ceremonies, which he performed in the holy week before *Easter*, he died of an apoplexy, or, according to some authors of poison, on the last day of *April*, on the 22d day after his election, and in the 54th year of his age^c. *two days* *after his* *election.*

A FEW days after the death of *Marcellus*, forty-five cardinals, who were then at *Rome*, entered the conclave, where the cardinal of *Augsburg*, seconded by *Moron*, proposed that, among other the articles which the sacred college usually swore to at an election, the two following should be added, by which the new pope should be obliged, within two years, to assemble a general council, for completing the reformation already begun, and to induce the protestants to receive the decrees of the council of *Trent*; and that he should likewise bind himself by oath, not to create above four cardinals in the first two years of his pontificate^d. This motion, however, was opposed, and on the 22d of *May* cardinal *Caraffa* was *Paul IV.* elected pope, notwithstanding the great opposition of the *is elected;* imperial party. As he seemed to have a great aversion to the *Spaniards*, and had received some bad offices from the emperor, it was generally concluded that he would favour the king of *France*. He assumed the name of *Paul IV.* and was crowned on the 3d day after his election (R). As he was of a morose disposition, and had been the author and contriver of the inquisition, his election struck a great terror in-

^c PANYIN. in vit. *Marcellus II.* GENEVR. Chron. l. iv.

^d RAENÆLD, ad an. 1555. PALLAV. l. xiii.

(R) *Paul IV.* was born of a noble *Napoleitan* family in the year 1476, and had obtained a great reputation for integrity and purity of manners. He was skilled in *Latin, Greek, and Hebrew*; and having been cre-

ated archbishop of *Chiati* by *Julius II.* he instituted the order of regular clerks called *Theatins*, in 1524. He was elevated to the dignity of cardinal by *Paul III.* and *Julius III.* created him archbishop of *Naples*.

to the *Romans*, who expected that he would proceed with great severity in the reformation of abuses. However, he began his pontificate with great magnificence, exceeded all his predecessors in pomp and ceremony at his coronation, and told the steward of his household, that he would be served as became a prince. Soon after he began to follow his natural temper, and published some very severe edicts for correcting the dissolute manners of the city. He reformed the offices of the datary, the penitentiary, and the rota, and ordered the priests to be more moderate both in their diets and in their tables. He likewise conferred several new privileges on the *Romans*, who, as a testimony of their gratitude, erected a marble statue to him in the capitol, and chose more than 100 of their nobles, who were appointed to serve without any pay, as a life-guard to the popes, and were by him created knights of the faith.

he receives the submission of the English ambassadors : In the beginning of his pontificate, the *English* ambassadors, who had been sent to *Julius*, arriving at *Rome*, he gave audience to them, with great state and pomp, in his first consistory; and, after they had continued for some time prostrate at his feet, begging that the nation might again be received into the bosom of the church, he raised them and embraced them, and, in reward for the piety of the king and queen, he gave the title of a kingdom to *Ireland*. Afterwards, at a private conference, he insisted that all the ecclesiastical possessions which had been seized by *Henry VIII.* should be restored, and that the *Peter-pence* should immediately be collected for the use of the *Roman see*.^f Soon after, being informed of the decree which was published by the diet of *Augsburg* on the 25th of *September*; confirming the peace of *Passau*, which the elector *Maurice* and the protestant confederates, three years before, had obtained from the emperor, he was greatly offended with *Ferdinand*, king of the *Romans*, who presided at the diet, and even declared, that he would make the emperor and his brother repent the injury they had done to the holy see; that he would excommunicate the protestants, and all those who protected them; but if *Charles* and *Ferdinand* would retract what they had granted them, he offered to second them with his authority, and to oblige all Christian princes, under pain of censures, to assist them with their forces &c.

he condemns the toleration granted to the protestants of Germany. His resentment against the emperor was owing to another cause than the peace granted to the protestants; for having

* PANVIN. in vit. Paul IV. f SPOND. Annal. PAL-
LAVICIN. l. xiii. RAINALD.

formerly received a personal injury from the *Neapolitan* viceroy, who had refused to allow him to take possession of the archbishopric of *Naples*, on pretence that he favoured the *French* party, he had then endeavoured, with great earnestness, to excite *Paul III.* to declare war against the emperor. His hopes of revenge, however, being at that time frustrated, he now thought it a proper time to discover his enmity to the *Spaniards*; and having formed a design to deprive them of the kingdom of *Naples*, on the 16th of *September* he privately concluded a treaty with *Henry II.* for seizing that kingdom, by which means he hoped to aggrandize the princes of his family^h. About the same time, by their instigation, he began to persecute the family of *Colonna*, and others, who were known to have an attachment to the emperor. Under pretence of a plot, which he alleged had been formed by the imperialists against him, he increased his troops and guards by new levies, thrust the cardinal *Sforza*, *Camilla*, *Colonna*, and the abbot of *Brisegna* into prison, and confiscating all the territories belonging to the *Colonna* family within the dominions of the church, bestowed them on his nephew *John*, count of *Montorio*, whom he created duke of *Paliano*, and general of the forces of the churchⁱ. He likewise confiscated the marquise of *Montebello*, which he conferred on *Anthony Caraffa*, another of his nephews; and being fully resolved on a war, he fortified *Paliano*, which was conveniently situated on the frontiers of *Naples*.

Resolves to deprive the emperor of the kingdom of Naples, and

MEAN while he was greatly alarmed with the news of a *persuades* truce, which his ally the king of *France* and the emperor had agreed to for five years. Tho' he was not a little offended *the king of France* with *Henry II.* yet he dissembled his resentment, and sent the cardinal of *Pisa* to the emperor and *Philip*, and his nephew cardinal *Caraffa* to the *French* king, to congratulate them upon the truce, and to exhort them to a general peace, *to violate his truce with the emperor, and* that the council might be re-assumed. *Caraffa*, however, pressed *Henry* very much to engage in a *Neapolitan* war; and being seconded by the cardinal of *Lorrain*, and his brother the duke of *Guise*, he at length succeeded, and absolved the king from the oath he had taken to observe the truce. In the mean time the imperialists, having marched to the assistance of the family of *Colonna*, under the command of the viceroy, the duke of *Alva*, quickly made themselves masters of all the *Campania* of *Rome*, while the duke of *Guise* was preparing to march into *Italy* with an army of 12,000

A. D. 1556.

^h BELCAR. l. xxvi. in fin. in vit. Paul IV.

ⁱ ADRIAN, l. xiii. PANVIN.

to send an
army into
Italy.

A. D.

1557.

French, to the assistance of *Paul*. This unexpected success of the *Neapolitans* greatly distressed the pope, who, to support the war, miserably harrassed his subjects. He exacted half a year's revenue from all offices, doubled the tythes upon all benefices, converted many of the churches into magazines and storehouses, seized all the horses in *Rome* to serve in the war, and compelled all the monks, of what order soever, to labour at the works, and to carry earth to the fortifications. He likewise ordered all private debts to be paid into his treasury, promising to satisfy the creditors afterwards, and raised all the customs and taxes to an excessive degree. However, the miseries and groans of his subjects were not able to incline his fierce and implacable spirit to a peace; but the duke of *Guise* having, in the beginning of the year, entered *Lombardy*, he pressed him earnestly to advance with his army, and invade *Naples*, contrary to the opinion of the most prudent *French* generals, who thought it would be more advantageous to carry on the war in the *Milanese*, which was then in a very defenceless state ^k.

He is obliged to
conclude a
peace with
the viceroy
of Naples: tember.

PAUL, in the mean time, having been informed that *Charles V.* had abdicated the empire in favour of his brother *Ferdinand*, he wrote to the ecclesiastical electors to prohibit them from receiving his resignation; which, however, was approved of by the electors at a diet held at *Frankfort*, where *Ferdinand* consented to receive the imperial ensigns, on condition that he should be allowed to send an embassy to the pope, to ask his confirmation. While *Paul* thus manifested his enmity against the emperor, the arms of his son *Philip*, to whom he had resigned his hereditary dominions, were very successful in *Italy*. The duke of *Alva* had obliged the *French* to raise the siege of some places on the frontiers of *Naples*; and towards the end of *August*, approached with his army towards *Rome*, in hopes of surprizing the city. At the same time the duke of *Guise* being recalled with his forces to oppose the *Spaniards* in *Flanders*, who in the beginning of the month had gained a signal victory over the *French* at *St. Quintin*, *Paul*, with great regret, was obliged to consent to a peace, which was concluded on the 13th of *September*.

THE war being finished, *Paul* immediately sent legates to the kings of *France* and *Spain*, offering himself as mediator of their differences, but without any success. In the mean time, applying himself to the reformation of abuses, he ordered the inquisitors to compose an index of books, proper

* ONUPHR. in vit. Paul IV. BELCAR. l. xxvii.

to be condemned and prohibited as impious and heretical (S). He likewise ordered the tribunal of the inquisition to take cognizance of several crimes, which before had been under the jurisdiction of the other courts; and was so active and diligent in his enquiry after criminals, that he quickly filled all the prisons of the inquisition. Suspecting that cardinal *imprisons* *cardinal* *Moron* had some secret correspondence with the protestants in *Moron on* *Germany*, he imprisoned him, together with the bishop of *suspicion of* *Cava*, in the castle of *St. Angelo*, where they underwent a severe inquisition; and tho' they both proved their innocence, and were afterwards set at liberty, yet, on their account, he detained the bishop of *Modena* a long while in prison¹. About the same time, to the general surprize of his court, he deprived cardinal *Poole* of his legation in *England*, and recalled him to *Rome*, thereby, as it was supposed, gratifying his own private resentment against that prelate, whom he had formerly accused of heresy in the conclave^m (T). *land, and* He likewise, soon after, published a severe bull against those who should receive benefices under the name of others, or should offer annual pensions for them, or should resign their their own for an annuity, or, lastly, should for a reward procure any benefices for anotherⁿ. To put a stop to the cabals and intrigues of the cardinals of the imperial faction, he renewed all the former laws and canons against those who should hold conventicles or secret meetings, to solicit the votes of the sacred college for the pontificate during the life of the pope, declaring them guilty of treason and simony, of whatever rank and degree, whether ecclesiastical or secular.

¹ ONUPHR. PANVIN. ut supra.-

^m SPOND. Annal.

ⁿ Idem ibid.

(S) This *index expurgatorius* was published two years afterwards; and all were prohibited, under pain of excommunication, incapacity of enjoying any offices, or benefices, perpetual infamy, and other arbitrary punishments, from possessing or reading any of the books mentioned in that catalogue (1).

(T) Some allege that he was offended with the cardinal for being the author of the truce betwixt the emperor *Charles* and *Henry II.* others say, for not preventing queen *Mary* from declaring war against *France*, while the duke of *Guise* was in *Italy*. But whatever was the motive of proceeding, he thereby greatly lessened his own reputation; without injuring in the least that of the cardinal, who died in the end of the following year in *England*, in the 59th year of his age (2).

(1) Spoud. Annal.

(2) Goduin, de Presul. Angl. Cambden.

*refuses to
acknow-
lege Fer-
dinand as
emperor.*

A. D.

1558.

THE following year an ambassador arrived at *Rome* from the emperor *Ferdinand*, who, upon the resignation of his brother, had accepted the imperial dignity. *Paul*, however, would not admit him to an audience, but affirmed, that the resignation of *Charles*, and the substitution of *Ferdinand*, were both null, as done without the authority of the pope, into whose hands the resignation ought to have been made. He therefore insisted that *Ferdinand* should send a proxy to *Rome*, to renounce all the proceedings of the diet at *Frankfort*, and to resign the whole affair to his arbitration, declaring, that he would then confirm *Ferdinand* in the imperial dignity. The emperor hearing of the pope's determination, wrote to his ambassador to enter a protestation, and to leave *Rome*, if he was not admitted to an audience within three days after the receiving of his letter. Notwithstanding this peremptory command, *Paul* still remained inflexible. He only admitted the ambassador to a private interview, in the presence of some cardinals; desired him to enter his protestation, and to return to *Ferdinand*; and declared, that he would forthwith send a legate to the emperor *Charles*, to treat of the affair of the resignation. *Charles* died a few months after at a monastery in *Spain*, whither he had retired from worldly grandeur. *Paul*, however, during his whole pontificate, would never consent to acknowledge *Ferdinand* as emperor.

*The pope's
nephews
punished,
and ban-
ished.*

1559.

THO' the pope, by his arrogance and severity, had rendered himself odious to the *Romans*, yet he gave general satisfaction in punishing the crimes of his nephews, who had greatly abused the trusts committed to their charge. On the 26th of *January*, in a full consistory, he removed the cardinal *Caraffa* from all administration of affairs, deprived him of his legation of *Bologna*, and banished him to *Patrisia*: he dismissed the duke of *Paliano* from being admiral of the galleys, and general of the army of the church; and ordered the marquis of *Montebello* to resign the office of captain of his guards, and to retire to his own castle: he refused to hearken to any intercessions made by the cardinals in their behalf; and suppressing some new taxes, which he pretended had been raised without his knowledge, he removed all those who had received any places from his nephews, and even put several of them in prison^p (U). Applying his mind then

^o GODELEV. de abdicat. Carol. in tit. ii. OPER. HISTOR.
^p ONUPHR. in vit. Paul IV. Natal. Comes. l. xii.

(U) After the banishment of some time with more than usual his nephews, he behaved for serenity, and is reported to have said,

then wholly to the office of the inquisition, he ordered a box to be fixed in a public place of his palace, into which all persons were at liberty to put accusations and informations; and he commanded all causes belonging to the holy office to be tried before himself once a week. About the same time he published a bull, by which he renewed all the punishments and censures against heretics, which had ever been decreed by any popes, councils, and fathers, declaring all prelates, emperors, kings, and princes, convicted of heresy, to be thereby, without any farther declaration, deprived of their benefices, empires, kingdoms, and principalities¹. He likewise ordered all bishops to proceed to their own dioceses, and all those who had embraced a monastic life to return to their monasteries, admitting of no excuse in these last, but denouncing an anathema against those who should disobey; and executing his mandate in his own territories with such rigour, that many of the vagrant monks were imprisoned, and several of them sent to the galleys² (W).

At this time he also erected thirteen cities in the *Low Countries* into bishoprics, where there were only two before, *new* namely *Cambray* and *Utrecht*, which, with the city *Mecklin*, *bishoprics* he raised to the dignity of metropolitan sees, with jurisdiction over the new-erected bishoprics; by which proceeding *Flanders*. he greatly irritated the minds of the inhabitants, many of whom had embraced the doctrines of *Luther*, *Calvin*, and other reformers; and being apprehensive that these alterations were only a prelude to the introduction of the inquisition, began to consult about freeing themselves from the oppression of the *Spaniards*³. A few days before the bull for these alterations was published, he received the news of a peace, concluded on the 2d of *April*, between the kings of *France* and *Spain*, at which he expressed great joy.

He was greatly dissatisfied, however, with the elevation of queen *Elizabeth* to the throne of *England*, which about this time was signified to him by the *English* ambassadors. He alleged, that as *England* was a fief of the apostolic see,

¹ SPOND. Annal. ² ONUPHR. ut supra. ³ VAN-
DERBAER. de init. tumult. Belg. l. i.

said, that from that period he sent orders, who could not be ought to begin to count the years of his pontificate (1). received into monasteries, took refuge in the state of *Venice*,

(W) In consequence of this where the authority of the pope edict 30,000 monks of different is greatly limited (2).⁴

(1) *Epist. Princip. t. iii. Vistori. in Paul IV.*

(2) *Spond. Annal.*

Paul refuses to acknowledge the right of queen Elizabeth to the throne of England.

she could not assume the administration of the kingdom without the leave of the pope, especially considering the defect of her right by birth; nevertheless, if she would submit to his arbitration, he would act towards her with paternal tenderness. This ridiculous and absurd declaration was of great service to the queen, in weaning her subjects from any attachment to the *Roman* see. The pope, however, is supposed to have been only the dupe of the *French* ambassador, and to have objected to her succession from his insinuations of her secret attachment to *Lutheranism*, Henry II. being afraid that she would conclude a marriage with his rival in power the king of *Spain*; and besides, being desirous to promote the interests of his daughter-in-law, *Mary* queen of *Scotland*, who formed pretensions to the *English* crown, on the supposition that *Elizabeth* was an adulterous bastard^t.

He dies at Rome, greatly hated by the Romans.

PAUL did not long survive the news of the revolution of religion in *England*; but having been for some time afflicted with a dropsy, died on the 16th of *August*, in the 84th year of his age, and the 5th of his pontificate, after exhorting the cardinals, whom he called into his chamber, to unite in choosing a worthy successor, and recommending to them the continuance of the inquisition^u. Scarce any pope had ever acted with more arrogance and despotism. His intentions were good and sincere, but there was so much savage ferocity in his behaviour, that he rendered himself universally hated; so that, even before his death, while he lay expiring, the *Romans* assembled in a tumultuous manner, cursed his name and family, and, after having given liberty to the prisoners, set fire to the new building of the inquisition, and were with great difficulty prevented from doing the same to the convent of the *Dominicans* at *Minerva*. He was no sooner dead than they ran to the capitol, broke off the head and right hand of his statue, which they tossed about the streets for three days, and at length threw into the *Tyber*; and an edict being published, in the name of the *Roman* people, for abolishing the arms of the *Caraffa* family, it was executed with such dispatch, that the same day there was no memorial of that name left in the city^v.

UPON the death of *Paul IV.* the *Roman* see was vacant: more than four months, occasioned by the dissensions among the cardinals, who, to the number of forty-four, entered the conclave on the 5th of *September*, where, after long con-

^t BELLEF. l. vi. c. 86. CAMDEN in vit. Eliz. THUAN. l. xx.

^u OLYMPIA. ut supra.

^v Idem ibid.

tests and repeated scrutinies, they at length, on *Christmas* evening, unanimously chose *John Angelo Medicini*, cardinal of *Sancta Prisca*, who assuming the name of *Pius IV.* was crowned on the 6th of *January* (X). *Pius* began his pontificate with pardoning the riotous proceedings of the Romans upon the death of his predecessor, on condition that they repaired all the damages done to the holy office of the inquisition. He received without any scruple the ambassadors of the emperor *Ferdinand*, whose election he confirmed; and examining the several innovations of his predecessor, he revoked the trials of common causes to the usual forms of law. A few months after his promotion, he ordered the nephews of the late pope, with several others of their kindred and servants, to be apprehended and imprisoned in the castle of *St. Angelo*, where, after long confinement, they were condemned and executed, on account of their enormous crimes, though the legal form of proceeding was not strictly observed at their trial. Cardinal *Alfonso*, the grand nephew of the late pope, was only fined; but several other cardinals were likewise thrown into prison, and deprived of rich bishoprics.

WHILE he acted with this severity towards the nephews of *Paul* and their dependents, he called his own nephews to his court, on whom he conferred several dignities and rich benefices. The most distinguished of these was *Charles Borromeo*, then in the 22d year of his age, whom he created a cardinal, and, on account of his eminent virtues and abilities, appointed supreme administrator of all ecclesiastical affairs. Having likewise set cardinal *Moron* at liberty, he communicated his most secret councils with him and his nephew *Borromeo* *. Mean while he was solicited by the duke of *Savoy* to allow a conference to be held in his dominions, to settle the disputes concerning religion, as many of the inhabitants of the vallies in the *Alps* had renounced the faith and obedience of the *Roman* church, and still persisted in their opinions, notwithstanding the punishments of the inquisition. *Pius* refused his demand; and persuading the duke that heretics were more easily refuted by the sword than by con-

He excites the duke of Savoy to make war on the protestants.

* ONUPHR. ut supra.

(X) *John Angelo Medicini*, or, the marquis of *Marignano*, distinguished himself as a general according to some, *de Medicis*, in the service of the emperor was born at *Milan* in 1499. His father was a farmer of the public revenue; and his brother,

Charles V. (1).

rences, a war was begun in the vallies, which continued for a long time.

Greatcom-
motions in
France on
account of
religion.

THE intention of the pope was chiefly engrossed at this time by the disturbances in *France*, where the protestants, together with several popish malecontents, had formed a design for depriving the duke of *Guise*, and his brother the cardinal, of the administration of the kingdom, and obliging the young king, *Francis II.* to allow the free exercise of their religion. Tho' the plot was discovered before it could be put in execution, and was thereby frustrated, yet the power of the protestants or *Hugonots* appeared so formidable, that an edict was published, prohibiting all punishments on account of religion, provided that the doctrine and ceremonies of the *Romish* church should be observed for the future. By another edict, that was soon after published, the trial of heresy was taken from the secular courts and committed to the bishops, thereby depriving the ecclesiastics of any pretence for introducing the inquisition, which it was apprehended would have occasioned a general insurrection in the kingdom. Besides, a general convention of estates, in the end of *August*, was held at *Fontainebleau*, in which some bishops of *Dauphiny*, after exclaiming against the vices and ignorance of the popish clergy, and extolling the modesty, learning, and piety of the *Calvinist* ministers, had proposed to call a national council, as the most proper means to put an end to the disturbances of the kingdom. The pope was greatly alarmed with the news of the proceedings of this convention, and was even apprehensive that *France* intended to follow the example of *England*, and to form a church independent of the see of *Rome*, as the *French* prelates expressed a great desire that the pragmatic sanction should be again renewed. He therefore sent the bishop of *Viterbo* immediately to *France*, to represent to the king, that a national council would be a great diminution of his royal authority, and would have the appearance of a schism from the universal church. He likewise wrote to the king of *Spain*, desiring him to dissuade the *French* king from assembling the *Gallican* clergy: but *Francis* still insisting on the expediency of a national council, and desiring the pope to send a legate into *France*, to assemble the bishops of that kingdom, *Pius*, to cut off all pretences for assembling the *French* clergy by themselves, resolved to call a general council; and after long consultations, at length determined to renew that of *Trent*, which had only been suspended.

The pope
determines
to renew
the council
of Trent.

THE emperor and the king of *France* both objected to this proposal, alleging, that the very name of *Trent* was odious both

both to the protestants and *Hugonots*; and that they expected a new council, where all articles of faith might be canvassed with freedom. Notwithstanding their objections, *Pius*, thinking it most for the honour of the *Roman* see to renew the old council, after long disputes with the imperial and *French* ambassadors, on the 28th of *November* published a bull, taking off the suspension of the council of *Trent*, which he appointed to be again opened on the following *Easter*. Immediately after he dispatched nuncios to all the Christian princes, desiring them not to be offended with the word *continuation*, which he had put into his bull, as it would be no impediment to the revival of any former proceedings, and would not prevent the council from altering what had been decreed during the pontificate of *Paul* and *Julius III.* *Pius* began to be very anxious for the assembling of the general council, as *Francis II.* had died in the second year of his reign, a few days before the publishing of his bull, and the states of that kingdom, who about the middle of *December* had assembled at *Orleans*, had by a decree ordered all those who were imprisoned on account of religion, to be set at liberty, and that none should be reproached or punished for their opinions, or religious profession; from whence he concluded, that *France*, as well as *Germany*, intended to revolt from the obedience of the holy see.

ABOUT this time two of his nuncios arriving with the ambassadors of the emperor at *Naumberg*, where the protestants were assembled, invited them to send their deputies to the council of *Trent*. The protestant princes declared to the imperial ambassadors, that they did not reject a council, provided their divines were allowed to sit and vote, and the ultimate decision should be left to the word of God, and not to the pope; but they replied to the nuncios, that as they did not acknowledge any authority or jurisdiction of the pope, they did not desire to know his intention in calling a council, and returned the letters unopened, which the pope had addressed to each of them singly. One of the nuncios retiring from this diet, proceeded to *Lubec* in the north of *Germany*, from whence he sent to the king of *Denmark*, desiring leave to enter his kingdom: but *Frederic*, who two years before had succeeded to the throne, replied, that as neither he nor his father had ever any concern with the pope, he knew

¹ BELLEFOR. l. xvi. c. 91. 92. BELCAR. l. xxix. THUAN. l. xxvii. ² ONUPHR. in vit. Pii IV. CAYTRÆ SAXON.

no business his nuncios could have with him. The nuncio to the queen of *Scotland* was obliged to enter that kingdom in disguise, and obtained a promise from the queen, that she would adhere to the decrees of the council ^a. But queen *Elizabeth* of *England*, notwithstanding the intreaties of the emperor and the king of *Spain*, absolutely refused to allow the nuncio to enter her kingdom ^b. In *Poland* the nuncio was received in an honourable manner; but the duke of *Muscovy* replied to his solicitations, that as he was an ally of the protestants, he would not consent to the council ^c. The nuncios likewise did not meet with great encouragement from the emperor nor the king of *France*, who both objected to the word *continuation*, and declared, that unless there was an alteration made in the bull, they could not approve of the council, which, instead of doing any good, would only occasion new schisms ^d. *Charles IX.* of *France*, who was then a minor, and in some measure under the direction of the admiral *de Coligni*, declared, that if the pope did not grant his demand, he should be obliged to have recourse to a national council, as the most proper means to quiet the disturbances of his kingdom.

Pius ordered the king of *Spain* also formed objections to the council, from his resentment against the pope, who had granted a public audience to the ambassador of the king of *Navarre*. This *Philip II.* interpreted as a condemnation of his right to that kingdom, which had been unjustly seized by his grand-father *Ferdinand* of *Aragon*. Pius, to appease the king, sent a legate into *Spain* to excuse his proceeding; and as the time for the opening of the council approached, he sent two legates to *Trent*, who arriving at that city on the 9th of *April*, three days after *Easter*, found only nine bishops, who had come thither a few days before. The pope likewise, to encourage the bishops and prelates to repair to the council, published a bull, granting several privileges to those who undertook that journey.

MEAN while the authority of the *Roman* see appeared to be daily sinking in *France*, where, by a royal edict, the *Hugonots*, who were in the prisons, were ordered to be set at liberty, and those who were banished in the reign of *Francis I.* were permitted to return. In an assembly of the states, which was held in the month of *August* at *St. Germain*, the admiral *de Coligni*, who was the chief of the *Hugonots*, having by his interest procured a confirmation of the administration

^a SPOND. Annal. ^b SANDER. de Schism. l. iii. ^c SPOND. Annal. ^d Idem ibid. POLAN. Hist. Trident.

to the queen mother, she promised to allow the free exercise of his religion. A conference was likewise granted to the *Hugonot* divines, which the pope used great pains to prevent; but not succeeding, he sent the cardinal of *Ferrara* thither as his legate, to prevent any thing being determined concerning the controverted points. The conference opened at *Poissy* on the 2d of *September*, in which *Augustine Marloratus*, *Theodore Beza*, *Peter Martyr*, and ten other *Hugonot* divines, defended their doctrines in the presence of the king, the queen mother, the king of *Navarre*, a great many peers, six cardinals, and about ten bishops; but after long disputes the conference broke up on the 25th of *November*, without any thing being determined. However the *Hugonots*, having obtained this public disputation, grew more confident; and the queen regent, at the persuasion of some of their chiefs, and with the consent of some of the catholic clergy, asked of the pope, in the name of the *French* prelates, to allow the communion under both kinds in *France*, and divine service to be celebrated in the vulgar tongue, which demands the pope absolutely refused to grant.

A conference between the Hugonots and the papists.

As the reformation was spreading into all parts of *Europe*, *The council Pius* determined to delay the opening of the council no longer; and having sent other three legates to *Trent*, deferred the first session to be opened in the month of *December*. It was however deferred, on account of the emperor's ambassador, till the 18th of *January*, some preliminaries having been settled three days before in a general congregation. Upon reading the decree for the renewal of the council, a debate ensued; for it being therein proposed that no question should be debated in the council, but what was first moved by the legates (*proponentibus legatis*), four *Spanish* prelates refused their assent to that article, and urged, that it was an innovation, had never been used at former councils, and seemed to deprive all others of the liberty of proposing any question. Their opposition, however, was over-ruled, and the next session appointed to be held on the 26th of *February*. The king of *Spain*, upon the representation of his prelates, objected to the above article in the decree by his ambassador at *Rome*; but he received nothing but evasive answers from the pope, who in his turn complained, that the *Spanish* bishops plainly discovered their alienation from the holy see, as they had granted their king a free gift of 400,000 crowns annually for ten years, by which great injury was done to the *Spanish* church.

A. D. 1562.

The Hugonots obtain the free exercise of their religion.

MEAN while the queen regent of *France*, at the persuasion of the prince of *Conde*, the admiral *de Cologni*, and the chancellor, published an edict, allowing the *Hugonots* the free exercise of their religion, without the walls of the cities, on condition that they taught nothing contrary to the old and new testament, and to the council of *Nice*, and abstained from railing against the mass and other rites of the *Roman* church. The pope was greatly offended with this edict; nevertheless the queen, being afraid of an insurrection, soon after published another, confirming the former, and even allowing them to hold their assemblies in all the cities of the kingdom except *Paris*. This second edict, however, had not the desired effect; for the *Hugonots* resolving to secure to themselves liberty of conscience by arms, seized the cities of *Orleans*, *Rouen*, *Lyons*, *Poitiers*, *Anjou*, *Berry*, and *Tours*, which occasioned a civil war, that continued for some time with great animosity.

Proceedings of the council.

BEFORE the commencement of hostilities in *France*, the council celebrated the second session, which was held on the 26th of *February*, in which a decree was read concerning an *index expurgatorius* of books; the bishops of five churches, the emperor's ambassador for *Hungary*, the patriarch of *Venice*, four archbishops, nine bishops, one *Benedictine* abbot, two generals of the orders of *Franciscans* and *Augustines*, having been appointed at a general congregation to compose the index, which was ordered not to be published till the conclusion of the council, for fear of exasperating the protestants. The 14th of *March* being appointed for the next session, the fathers, in the mean time, assembled in general congregations; in one of which they granted a very ample safe-conduct to all those, of whatever nation, who differed from the synod in points of faith. They then disputed about those points which were afterwards to be decided in the sessions, particularly about the residence of prelates and priests in their dioceses and parishes. The greatest part of the divines and fathers asserted, with great warmth, that residence was *de jure divino*, or appointed by divine revelation; but the party for the pope maintained, that such a doctrine would be the ruin of the hierarchy, as every bishop would then conclude that he himself was supreme in his own diocese; nay, every priest would allege, that he had the sole jurisdiction in his own parish. This dispute continued for several days; but though the majority of the fathers proposed to form a decree for confirming the divine right of residence, yet the legates found means to drop the affair, and leave it unde-

undetermined †. The *Spanish* ambassador likewise proposed, that the present council should be declared a continuation of the former, held in the same city; but his motion being opposed by the imperial ambassadors, and the legates being also divided, nothing was decided on that head: and as the *French* ambassadors were upon their journey to *Trent*, the third session was formally celebrated without any business being proposed, and next session was appointed to be held on the 4th of *June*.

IN the mean time the *French* ambassadors arriving, were admitted to an audience in a general congregation on the 26th of *May*, when one of them made an elegant oration, wherein he exhorted the fathers to use freedom of debate, and to take such measures as would free the flock of Christ from usurpation and oppression, as there was then no hazard of having the safe-conduct violated, or of disputing with flames in that city. They then desired the legates to declare the council a new one, as the *Hugonots* would not otherwise acknowledge it; but they replying, that they were only commissioned by the pope to preside at the sessions, the ambassadors consulted with those of the emperor, and agreed not to insist upon their former demand, provided no mention should be made of the continuation of the council in the public acts. They afterwards desired that the discussing of the articles of faith might be delayed, till the arrival of the deputies from the protestants and *Calvinists*; and added, the *English* ambassador in *France* had declared, that queen *Elizabeth* intended to send deputies to the council. In consequence of their representations all business was likewise deferred at the following session, only the prolocutor of the council made an harangue in answer to that of the *French* ambassador, wherein he endeavoured to prove that the council was free, notwithstanding the pope's legates presided, and it had been called by his authority. The next session was then appointed on the 16th of *July*, the pope in the mean time expressing great dissatisfaction at the proceedings of the fathers. He blamed his legate, the cardinal of *Mantua*, because he had opposed the motion of the *Spanish* ambassador, who wanted the present council to be declared a continuation of the former; and he accused the *French* ambassadors as favourers of the *Hugonots* and protestants, alleging, that one of them had said that he would bring as many bishops to the council from *France* and *Germany*, as would be able to destroy the idol of *Rome*.

The imperial ambassadors present the grievances of the Germanic body.

GREAT part of the council appeared no less dissatisfied with *Pius*, and intended to moderate and limit his authority. The imperial ambassadors presented the grievances of the Germanic body in a memorial, and demanded, that the pope should submit to a reformation both in his person and court; that the number of cardinals should be reduced to twelve, as at the first institution, or at least to twenty-four; that all exemptions, contrary to law, should be revoked; that dispensations should not be granted, unless for urgent reasons; that plurality of benefices should be abolished, and ecclesiastical offices should not be set to sale; that all superfluous canons should be repealed, and the rest not accounted of the same obligation with divine laws; that divine service should be so celebrated, that it might be understood by the people; that the distinction of meats, and the rigour of fasts, should be moderated; that ecclesiastics should be allowed to marry, and the communion be granted to the laity under both kinds. The legates, to whom the memorial was presented, answered, that, before the next session, they could only have time to determine the dispute concerning the communion, and then proposed some articles on that head to be discussed. A great many of the fathers were of opinion that the cup ought to be granted to those of the laity who demanded it, very many catholics, as well as the protestants, expressing a great desire to communicate under both kinds. *Gonzaga*, cardinal of *Mantua*, seemed inclined to this opinion; however, the papal party prevailed, and in the session they established four articles with regard to the communion; but, on account of the absence of the *German* and *French* bishops, they delayed determining whether the cup ought to be granted to the laity, and under what conditions it should be allowed. They then read nine articles concerning reformation, by the last of which they entirely abolished the name and office of questors (Y).

§ RAINALD. ad an. 1562. n. 60 & 61. GOLDAST. Const. imper. t. ii.

(Y) These questors were a kind of spiritual tax gatherers, who dressed themselves in strange habits; and assembling the people with little hand bells, extorted money from them, under pretence of alms and contributions for pious works, thundering out curses and ana-

themas against those who refused to buy their indulgences. They appropriated the money they raised to their own use, after having given part of it to the officers at *Rome*, who had procured the authority for raising the contributions.

THE legates, to prevent any farther disputes about the cup in the eucharist, remitted that article to the pope, out of regard (as they pretended) to the emperor, who would more easily obtain his demands from his holiness, than from the fathers at *Trent*; whereas in reality these last, who consisted almost wholly of *Portuguese*, *Spaniards*, and *Italians*, were only the tools of the former ^h. Having likewise appointed the next session to be held on the 17th of *September*, they proposed the articles concerning the institution and efficacy of the mass, of the ceremonies to be observed in that office, and of mixing of water with wine, to be discussed in the general congregations. The imperial and *French* ambassadors, with many others, insisted, that the session should be delayed till the arrival of the *French* and *Polish* bishops, and till the conclusion of the *German* diet, which was to be held at *Frankfort* in the month of *November*; but as the pope had desired the legates to hasten the conclusion of the council, it was carried against them; and the articles above-mentioned were debated in the congregations, in which a question was started, Whether Jesus Christ, when he first instituted the sacrament of the eucharist, did then offer and sacrifice himself? If he did not at that time offer himself a sacrifice, then the mass which is founded on the institution, *Do this in remembrance of me*, is no sacrifice; and if he did sacrifice himself, it must have been propitiatory, as it is said, *he offered himself but once*, and then the sacrifice on the cross had been unprofitable and unnecessary, as the sins of mankind had been expiated by the sacrifice of the eucharist.

THIS question occasioned so much doubt and debate, that many proposed to leave the article concerning the mass unde- ^{Decrees concerning the mass} termined by any particular canon: however, the majority were of a different opinion, and in the following session nine articles were read, containing the doctrine of the mass; the sum of which were, that it had been instituted by Christ in the last supper; that it was propitiatory for the living and the dead; that it was offered only to God, though it might sometimes be celebrated in honour of the saints; that the canon of the mass, and the rites and ceremonies appointed by the church for its celebration, were all free from error; that the masses in which the priest alone communicated, were common to all the hearers; that in the chalice, water ought to be mixed with the wine; that the mass ought not to be celebrated in the vulgar tongue, but that its mysteries ought frequently to be explained to the people; to all which

^h PALLAVICINI, l. ii. c. 9.

articles anathemas were added against the adversaries of that doctrine: however, twenty-two or twenty-three prelates refused their assent to this canon. In the same session a decree was also read, concerning reformation, under eleven articles; by which, among other things, full power was given to bishops to inspect the nature of dispensations, whether they were fairly or surreptitiously obtained. And by another decree, the article about the cup in the eucharist was remitted to the decision of the pope; at which the emperor was greatly offended, being sensible that the greatest part of the *Germans* would refuse to accept of any concession from the pope. Several other determinations of this session were likewise universally blamed, as giving too ample power and jurisdiction to the bishops.

Great disputes, concerning the divine right of episcopacy.

THE fathers in the mean time continued their general congregations, and debated with great acrimony concerning the sacraments of ordination and marriage. Very many, especially of the *Spaniards*, asserted the divine right of episcopacy, and that the bishops held their power and authority immediately from Jesus Christ, and not from the pope. This declaration alarmed the legates, who at first allowed the debate to proceed freely, while the fathers were disputing concerning the superiority of the order of bishops to that of priests; but now they prohibited them from treating farther on that subject. However, they soon after appointed four divines to answer the arguments of the *Spanish* bishops; the chief of these defenders being *Lainez*, general of the *Jesuits*, who declaimed for two hours in a general congregation, and asserted, that episcopacy was no otherwise of divine right, than as the whole order of the hierarchy was inherent in the pope. Both parties defending their opinions with great heat and passion, the legates, in order to cool their ardor, deferred the general congregations, and even the approaching sessions, till the arrival of the cardinal of *Lorraine* with the *French* prelates, who had already entered *Italy*. The cardinal soon after entered *Trent*, where he was received with great honour, and on the 23d of *November* admitted to an audience in a general congregation, in which he delivered his credentials. Before his arrival, while the congregations were interrupted, the *Spanish* prelates associated themselves together, and demanded, in a positive manner, that episcopacy should be declared of divine right. The legates, as the only means to excuse themselves, procured twenty prelates of their own party to come to their lodgings, and to demand that no determination might be made of that controversy; so that, to satisfy both parties, the question was still left

left in suspense. At the same time they used many arts to defeat the intentions of the cardinal of *Lorrain* and the *French* prelates, who had published on their journey to *Trent*, that they intended to destroy the greatness and pride of the pope, and to free the people from the oppressions and tyrannies of the court of *Rome*.

UPON their arrival the number of prelates amounted to 218; the majority of whom being suspected to be enemies to the papal authority, *Pius* immediately dispatched as many cardinals and bishops from *Italy*, as he could to the council, to reinforce his party. The apprehensions of the legates, with regard to the *French* prelates, soon appeared to be just, for they espoused, with great warmth, the doctrine of the divine right of episcopacy. The cardinal of *Lorrain*, after exclaiming against the corruptions of the clergy, and describing the miseries of *France*, said, *We, the ecclesiastics, are the cause of all these storms; we that have departed and fled from the face of God, cast us into the sea, and the tempest will cease.* Another declared, that if the cause of the civil disturbances in *France* were required, he might answer as *Jehu* did to *Joram*, when he asked, *Is it peace Jehu? How can it be peace, so long as the whoredoms of thy mother Jezebel and her witchcrafts are so many?* As several others asserted that the authority of the pope differed not from that of any other bishop, but that the church, the spouse of Christ, was enslaved and prostituted to the arbitrary pleasure of a single person, the papal party endeavoured to prove, that the government of the church was monarchical, and that the authority of the keys was only committed to *Peter* and his successors¹.

DURING these transactions in the council, the pope published several bulls, ordaining reformatations in some of his offices, and subjecting sacred places and confraternities to the authority of the ordinaries and parish priests, and ordering that all indulgences should for the future be given gratis². He likewise received a letter from the emperor, who, after the diet at *Frankfort*, where his eldest son *Maximilian* was elected king of the *Romans*, had retired to *Innsbruck*, to attend the deliberations of the council. *Ferdinand* declared, that he intended to go personally to *Trent*, to promote the reformation of the clergy and people, which was very necessary; and he exhorted the pope likewise to repair thither, and to favour the liberty of the prelates, who were principally offended with three things, namely, that all affairs were

¹ Hist. Concil. Trident. POLAN. ² SPOND. ANNAL.

A. D. 1563. first deliberated at *Rome*; that the legates alone had the liberty of proposing what was to be debated in the general congregations; and that much time was spent in intrigues, for promoting the grandeur of the court of *Rome*. *Pius* wrote

The pope proposes to transfer the council to Bologna. to the emperor, justifying himself from any sinister views with regard to the council, and soon after sent the cardinal *Moron* to him as his legate, to dissuade him from proceeding to *Trent*, and to propose the translation of the council to *Bologna*, where, at the same time, he would confer upon him the imperial crown. *Ferdinand*, however, would not hear-
 ken to this proposal, but demanded the redress of the complaints he had mentioned in his letter, and besides required, that the council should treat first of those matters presented by his deputies, and those of *France*.

MEAN while the tumults and confusions at *Trent* still increased. The session, which should have been held in *November*, was prorogued till the 3d of *February*; and, in the beginning of the year, the *French* ambassadors had presented a memorial in the general congregation, proposing a reformation in thirty-four articles, which greatly alarmed the legates and the papal party, as they tended to retrench the revenue, and alter the rites of the *Roman* church (Z). The king of *France* about the same period, to gain a favourable reception to the articles proposed by his ambassadors, repealed the decree of the convention of *Orleans*, which had prohibited the payment of annates to the court of *Rome*¹. The pope, however, expressed great dissatisfaction upon reading the *French* memorial, and ordered his nuncios in *France* to solicit the king to alter several of the articles, which he said were greatly prejudicial to the apostolic see, and tended to pull his authority to pieces. As their remonstrances were ineffectual, *Pius* ordered his legates at *Trent* not to allow the memorial to be treated of in the congregations, where violent altercation and disorder still prevailed.

NOTWITHSTANDING the opposition of a great many fathers, the session was again prorogued to the 22d of *April*; and, in the mean time, the disputes concerning the sacra-

¹ THUAN. l. xxxv.

(Z) These articles were immediately printed in *Latin* and *French*, and are inserted by *Thuanus* and *Natalis Comes* in their histories. *Polanus* has likewise transcribed them; and *Goldast* has also given them a place among his imperial constitutions or edicts (1). “

(1) *Thuan.* l. xxxv. *Natal.* l. xiv. *Polan.* l. vii. *Goldast.* t. iii.

ments of ordination and marriage still continued, while the cardinal of *Lorraine* went to *Innsbruck* to have a conference with the emperor, whom he found greatly solicitous about the affairs of the council; which, on account of many prorogations, it was believed the pope had an intention of dissolving. At the same time *Pius* recalled his nephew *Altaempsus*, one of the legates, that he might assist him in raising some troops, as he was informed, that the dukes of *Saxony* and *Wirtemberg*, and the landgrave of *Hesse*, were making new levies, and that the *Germans* expressed a great desire again attacking *Rome*. Hearing likewise of the death of the cardinal of *Mantua* at *Trent*, he sent the cardinals *Moron* and *Navagerius* thither, to supply his place and that of his nephew. He is apprehensive of an irruption of the Germans into Italy.

SOON after being informed that the king of *France* had consented to a peace with the *Calvinists*, by which he had granted them the free exercise of their religion, blaming the cardinal *Coligny*, brother to the admiral, who had renounced his ecclesiastical titles, and assumed that of count of *Beauvais*, he published a special mandate on the 8th of *April*, ordering the cardinals inquisitors general to cite all prelates, of what dignity soever, who were suspected of heresy, to appear at *Rome*; and, in case of their not appearing personally, to proceed against them according to the sentence which he should pronounce in a secret consistory. In consequence of this mandate, the inquisitors general summoned cardinal *Coligny*, and nine or ten *French* bishops, to appear within a certain time at *Rome*; but the *French* prelates despising the summons, and suffering the time to elapse, on the 22d of *October* three of them were deposed, and the others suspended, till they should clear themselves from the suspicion of heresy.^m (A). He deposes several bishops on suspicion of heresy.

BEFORE the publication of this sentence at *Rome*, the session being again suspended at *Trent*, the cardinal of *Lorraine*, in a general congregation, on the 10th of *May*, presented a letter from his niece *Mary* queen of *Scotland*, by

^m Idem ibid. SPOND. ANNAL.

(A) The sentence against the cardinal was denounced in a private consistory some months before, of which he was so soon informed, but, in contempt of the pope, he resumed his cardinal's habit, and in that

dress married a wife, and afterwards appeared at the convention of *Reuen*; where, on the 16th of *August*, *Charles IX.* was declared of age, he then entered into the 14th (1).

(1) *Belcar. Tbuon. Spond. Annal.*

*Disputes
about pre-
cedency be-
twixt the
French
and Span-
ish ambaf-
sadors.*

which she declared, that she would submit to the council, and promised that, if she should ever succeed to the crown of *England*, she would subject both kingdoms to the authority of the *Roman* see. Four days after he made a long discourse concerning bishops, and the means of preventing abuses in their election, inveighing severely against pluralities, tho' he himself then possessed church revenues to the amount of 1,000,000 of livres a year. As in the conclusion he exclaimed against the see of *Rome*, which he termed the source and original of all the corruptions in the church, the cardinal *Moron* made a reply, treating him with great severity; on which account the animosities, instead of abating, were inflamed more than before. In the following congregation, which was held on the 21st of *May*, great disputes arose about precedency betwixt the count *de Luna*, the *Spanish* ambassador, and those of *France*. These last at length consented, that he might sit in a place apart by himself; but the dispute was again renewed at the celebration of mass on the feast of *St. Peter*; when the *French* ambassadors, having been informed that the pope had ordered the incense and the peace to be given to them and the count *de Luna* at the same time, they interrupted the service by their remonstrances, so that the mass was that day celebrated without giving either the incense or the peace. As the legates justified themselves by the orders of the pope, the cardinal of *Lorrain* next day sent his secretary to *Rome* to complain of the injury; and one of the *French* ambassadors declared, that, unless their just precedency was allowed, they would protest against *Pius*, who, they could prove, had obtained the pontificate by simony, and would appeal to a future pope and a future council, and in the mean time would call a national council in *France*. As both the *French* and *Poles* threatened to withdraw their obedience from the apostolic see, several of the prelates prevailed with the count *de Luna* to insist no farther on precedency, till he should receive new instructions from *Spain*.

THIS dispute betwixt the ambassadors being in some measure calmed, the legates began to think of means to moderate the debates betwixt the divines concerning the articles of religion and reformation. The *French*, by orders from their court, began to abate in their zeal against the corruptions of *Rome*, the queen being desirous to prevail with the pope to confirm the royal edict for the perpetual alienation of some revenue of the *Gallican* church, to the amount of 300,000 livres, under pretence of discharging a debt contracted in defence of the catholic religion. The cardinal of *Lorrain* likewise

likewise wanted to ingratiate himself with the papal party, as he was recalled to *France*, and knew that he was detested by the *Calvinists* in that kingdom. About the same time the emperor, finding that his residence at *Innsbruck* rather retarded than forwarded the proceedings of the council, left that city; after having ordered his ambassadors to prevent, as much as possible, all disputes about the authority of the pope, and that nothing might be decreed which would render an accommodation with the protestants more difficult. He likewise wrote to *Pius*, and to the legates of *Trent*, desiring them to stop all proceedings against the queen of *England*, as it would only be a means of uniting the protestants more firmly in their own defence. The debates still continuing in the congregations, the cardinal of *Lorrain* moderated, to the utmost of his power, the animosities of both parties, and proposed that they should only treat of the power of the order of bishops, and that, in the article of residence, all expressions might be kept out that would give offence, either to those who reckoned it of human institution or of divine. This proposal was relished by the legates, who, considering that a great part of the fathers were tired with the continual debates, and would agree to canons that were not absolutely decisive, they resolved to draw them up in such terms as would admit of a dubious interpretation.

ALL matters being at last settled, the seventh session under *Pius*, and the twenty-third since the first commencement of the council under *Paul III.* was celebrated on the 15th of *July*; in which a *Spanish* bishop declared in his sermon, that tho' the faith of the catholics was the best, yet their morals were much inferior to those of the heretics. After the celebration of mass, and the usual ceremonies, a decree was read concerning the sacrament of ordination, consisting of four heads, by which they declared, that Christ had given the apostles, and their successors in the priesthood, a power of consecrating and offering the visible sacrifice, and of remitting of sins; that the order of the priesthood is divided into seven degrees; that as scripture and apostolic tradition affirm, that ordination confers grace, it is therefore a sacrament; that as by this sacrament an indelible character is conferred, their opinion ought to be condemned who assert that priests have only a temporary power, and, if they neglect their office, differ not from laymen; that all Christians are not priests, but those only who are ordained by the pope, or by authority derived from him. To these articles eight anathemas were added, condemning all those who maintained any other doctrine; and then eighteen articles were read

concerning reformation ; the first of which ordained all prelates and curates to reside with their flocks, prohibiting, under severe penalties, an absence of above three months at a time ; however, a proviso was added, unless the benefit and service of the church and state should require it. The other articles regarded the collation and regulation of orders, which ought not to be conferred on debauched persons, or such as were unworthy of them ; and directed the form of the government of seminaries where priests should be educated, with several other matters of no great importance.

The decrees of the council are ridiculed by the protestants.

THE decrees of this session, which had been debated for near ten months, disappointed the expectations of all *Europe*. The contradictions that appeared in the canons, and the weak preambles and absurd conclusions, were every-where the subject of ridicule, especially to the protestants, who, in their sermons, took all opportunities of exposing the proceedings of the council. The legates likewise, being sensible that the conclusion of the council was greatly desired by the catholics, resolved to hasten the decision of all the remaining points. They therefore altered the method of disputing in the congregations, and proposed the doctrines of indulgences, invocation of saints, images, and purgatory, to be examined at once. Having likewise obtained the consent of the imperial, *French*, and *Spanish* ambassadors, to treat of the reformation of princes, they proposed the article concerning marriage ; and in the mean time drew up the heads of the reformation of princes, which they communicated to their ambassadors, who sent them to their respective courts. This plan of a secular reformation was comprehended in thirteen articles in favour of the ecclesiastical liberty, which, as they were very extravagant, and tended greatly to the diminution of the prerogative of princes, the emperor declared that he would never suffer to be debated. The *French* ambassadors also affirmed, that they would protest against any decisions of the fathers on these points, and would immediately withdraw from *Trent* with all the *French* prelates. The fathers of the council, upon hearing of these remonstrances, entered into an association to compel the legates to propose the articles concerning reformation of princes ; on account of which disturbances the pope ordered the session to be prorogued till the 11th of *November*, and in the mean time sent for the cardinal of *Lorraine to Rome*, to consult with him about dissolving the council. During the absence of the cardinal, one of the bishops, in a general congregation, held on the 22d of *September*, having desired the articles concerning the reformation to be proposed, one of the *French* ambassadors immediately

diately rose up, and, after declaiming a long while against the corruptions of the *Roman* court, protested against the proceedings of the fathers, and a few days after retired to *Venice*.

THE prelates at *Trent*, however, continued their congregations, and drew up several articles of reformation; and the pope being greatly offended with the behaviour of the *French* ambassadors, who he believed were privately prompted by the queen of *Navarre* and her party, he cited her to appear within sixty days at *Rome*, to clear herself from the suspicion of heresy, and other crimes, of which she was accused. The cardinal of *Lorrain*, who had entered into a great intimacy with the pope, remonstrated but faintly against this summons; but, the *French* ambassador at *Rome* exerting himself in behalf of the queen, a stop was put to all judicial proceedings against her, only the pope refused to absolve her from the sentence of excommunication, which gave her no manner of uneasiness. Mean-while the cardinal of *Lorrain* having returned to *Trent*, the eighth session was celebrated on the 11th of *November*, at which one of the legates refused to be present, as he could not give his consent to the nullity of clandestine marriages, and affirmed that the church had no authority to dissolve them. The decree declaring marriage a divine institution, indissoluble, and one of the sacraments of the gospel, was unanimously confirmed; but the cardinals *Moron* and *Simoneta*, and fifty-six fathers, dissented from that article, by which the church was declared to have a power of dissolving clandestine marriages. Twenty-one heads of a general reformation were then read, tending chiefly to establish the pope's authority over the clergy; plurality of benefices was condemned, grants of reservation were abolished, and the right to benefices acquired by simony was declared null and void.

ALL nations now, except the *Spaniards*, earnestly desired a conclusion of the council. They, however, at length consented, on condition that the pope should regulate the matters which should be left undecided by the council, and that, in the decree concerning indulgences, they should not be ordered to be given *gratis*, which would injure the crusade in *Spain*. As news arrived at *Trent* that the pope was dangerously ill, the points concerning purgatory, the invocation and relics of saints, images, and indulgences, were hurried over superficially, and published in the ninth session on the 3d and 4th of *December*; in which likewise twenty-two heads of reformation were read concerning regulars and nuns; after which twenty-one articles were published concerning a

The council of Trent is dissolved.

general reformation. The fathers also concluded the decree for the reformation of princes, under a general exhortation to them to protect the ecclesiastical liberty, and declared that the pope had full authority to dispense with any of the canons made by the council. On the second day of the session a decree was read concerning indulgences and fasts; but as the index of books, the catechism, the breviary, and the missal, were not yet finished, it was determined to submit what was already written to the judgment and authority of the pope. All the decrees of the sessions under *Paul* and *Julius* being then read, the council was solemnly dissolved, the fathers desiring the legates to ask the confirmation of the pope to their proceedings; three prelates, however, declaring that there was no need for that confirmation. The day after the fathers subscribed the decrees; namely, four legates, two other cardinals, three patriarchs, twenty-five archbishops, one hundred and sixty eight bishops, seven abbots, thirty-nine proxies, and seven generals of orders, in all two hundred and fifty-five, very few of whom were from *Hungary* and *Poland*, none from *Sweden*, *Denmark*, *Scotland*, *England*, or the *Low Countries*, not one from *Germany* in the last session, and not above forty from *Spain* and *France*; but there were more than one hundred and fifty from *Italy*, on which account the council was called the assembly of the pope and his *Italians*.

Maximilian, king of the Romans, refuses to yield obedience to the apostolic see.

A. D.
1564.

A FEW months before the conclusion of the council, the pope received an embassy from *Maximilian*, king of the *Romans*, informing him of his election, and offering, not obedience, but devotion and reverence, to the pope and the apostolic see. *Pius* refused for a long time to give the ambassador an audience; but, after several messages betwixt *Rome* and *Germany*, finding *Maximilian* inflexible, he admitted his ambassador to a public consistory; in which, tho' he still adhered to his instructions, the cardinals nevertheless gave the usual answer, that his holiness received the obedience of the king, and confirmed his election. Soon after he had given audience to this ambassador, he was informed of the dissolution of the council, at which he expressed great joy, promoting nineteen of those who had served him at *Trent* to the dignity of cardinals; and tho' he received several petitions from the ministers of his court, complaining that their offices were abolished by the decrees of the council, and asking an equivalent for the money with which they had purchased them, he nevertheless, without regarding these

petitions, published a bull on the 24th of *January*, confirming all the decrees of the council, and ordering them to be observed by all the faithful. By several other bulls, he ordered the bishops to reside in their dioceses, under pain of forfeiting their revenues to the apostolic chamber; he prohibited any from reading the books contained in the *Index Expurgatoriu*; and enjoined all those, who possessed any ecclesiastical dignity or benefice, and those who studied any of the liberal arts, to swear to a form of the confession of the catholic faith.

THO' the council of *Trent* was received without much *Objections* difficulty at *Rome* and in *Italy*, yet many objections were *are made* raised against its decrees in *Germany*, *France*, *Spain*, and *to the pro-* *Poland*. Several treatises were published against it by the protestants; and about the middle of *February* the emperor *1st council* wrote to the pope, desiring, in his own name, and in the name of his son-in-law the duke of *Bavaria*, that the communion might be granted to the catholics in their dominions under both kinds, and that the clergy might be allowed to marry P (B). *Philip II.* king of *Spain* published the decrees of the council in his dominions, without regarding the authority of the pope; but in *France* its decrees concerning reformation were generally condemned, as derogatory to the liberties of the *Gallican* church; on which account the pope, being greatly apprehensive lest the young king *Charles* intended to renounce the communion of the *Roman* church, prevailed with the emperor, the king of the *Romans*, the king of *Spain*, and the duke of *Savoy*, to solicit him conjunctly to acknowledge the council, to revoke the privileges and pardon granted to the *Hugonots*; and to abstain from any alienation of the ecclesiastical revenues. In the mean time he decided the dispute betwixt the *French* and *Spaniards* concerning precedency in favour of the *French*; and being informed that the great numbers of *Greek* refugees in *Naples* and *Sicily*, who for many years had enjoyed the free exercise of their own religion, began to deviate from their ancient

SPOND. Annal.

P GOLDAST. Const. Imper. t. ii.

(B) The catholics in *Germany* and *Poland* at this time expressed so great a desire of communicating under both kinds, that they published a great many satirical verses against their priests, whom they called *the thieves of the cup*; and they wrote those words of our Saviour, *Drink ye all of it*, in gold letters, upon their books, doots, and cups (2).

(2) *Rescius Polon. de Sect. Evangel. verb. Calix.*

A. B.
1565.

faith, and to infect those of the *Latin* church with heretical opinions, he revoked all their privileges, and subjected them to the ordinances of the *Roman* church⁹. About the same time he was alarmed with the discovery of a conspiracy against himself; several enthusiasts, under pretence of a revelation from heaven, having formed a design to murder him, in order to facilitate a general reformation, which they said would be accomplished by his successor, who was to convert the whole world to Christianity. The conspirators, being apprehended, were all put to death by torture^r. Soon after the discovery of this plot, *Pius* received a letter from the emperor *Maximilian*, who in the month of *July* had succeeded his father *Ferdinand*, intreating him to allow the marriage of priests: tho' the emperor likewise sent a memorial, justifying the necessity of his request, he could nevertheless obtain nothing from the pope, who thought he condescended sufficiently in permitting the laity to communicate under both kinds. While the cardinals were considering the memorial of the emperor, *Pius*, being informed that the *Turks* had invaded the island of *Malta* with a fleet and army consisting of 80,000 men, published a jubilee for imploring the mercy of God, ordered money, gun-powder, and troops, to be sent to the assistance of the besieged; who likewise receiving some succours from *Sicily* and *Spain*, obliged the infidels to raise the siege, which had lasted four months. *Pius* did not long survive the news of the defeat of the *Turks*; but, on the 10th of *December*, died of a surfeit, in the sixty-seventh year of his age, and the sixth of his pontificate, having adorned the city of *Rome* with several magnificent buildings, and repaired some ancient monuments and aqueducts; to supply the expences of which works he oppressed his subjects with severe taxes^s.

Pius dies
at RomePius V. is
elect. pope.
1566.

UPON the death of *Pius*, the cardinal of *Alexandria* was unanimously elected pope on the 8th of *January*, by the interest of the two leading cardinals *Farnese* and *Borromeo*, which last advised him to assume the name of *Pius* V (C). As he had

⁹ SPOND. ANNAL.
THUAN. l. xxxvi.

^r ONUPH. ut sup. NATAL. l. xiv.
^s ONUPH. ut sup.

(C) *Pius* V. who, before his promotion, was called *Anthony*, or *Michael*, *Ghisler*, was born of mean parents at *Boschi*, a town near *Alessandria della Puglia*. He was received into the order

of *Dominicans* or *Jacobins* at fourteen years of age; and having distinguished himself by his regular life and eloquent preaching, he was recommended by cardinal *Caraffa* to *Julius* III.

had been a great favourite with *Paul IV.* He had acted with severity as inquisitor, his election was not very agreeable to the *Romans*; however, as his severity was not mixed with pride, ambition, and worldly considerations, their apprehensions of his tyranny soon abated. Upon his promotion he ordered his relations to retire from *Rome*; but, at the intreaties of his friends, he created *Michael Bonello*, one of his nephews, a cardinal. Being earnest to promote a reformation, he published several regulations concerning the clergy and the officers of his court, he abolished some public diversions, and banished the greatest part of the whores from *Rome*, prohibiting the rest from appearing abroad except in a certain corner of the city. In remembrance of the favours conferred on him by *Paul IV.* he again examined the cause of his nephews, whom he restored to their honours and estates; he prohibited any physicians from attending the sick after the third day, unless their patients should confess their sins to the priests; and he ordered search to be made after all those who were suspected of heresy in *Italy*, that they might be brought to *Rome* and punished.^t

He published several decrees for promoting a reformation.

HEARING that the emperor had convoked a diet at *Augsburg*, he ordered cardinal *Commendon*, who was returning from his legation in *Poland*, to act as his legate at that assembly; and as *Maximilian* had appeared to favour the *Lutherans*, by being present at their sermons, he charged *Commendon* to threaten him with deposition if he allowed any point of religion to be treated of in the diet. The legate, however, having more prudence than the pope, concealed these instructions, which indeed he had no occasion to produce; for the grand signior making great preparations to invade *Hungary*, and besiege *Vienna*, the attention of the diet was chiefly engaged in providing for the defence of the empire against the infidels. *Commendon* was so successful as to prevail with the catholics to accept of the decrees of the council of *Trent*, and at the conclusion of the diet presented the emperor with 50,000 crowns as a subsidy from the pope.

^t ADRIAN. I. xix.

Iulius III. who appointed him commissary of the inquisition. Upon the promotion of *Caraffa* to the papal chair, he was created at first bishop of *Nepi* and *Sutri*, and afterwards car-

dinal and supreme inquisitor; which last office no other cardinal ever enjoyed, the pope reserving it ever afterwards to themselves (3).

(3) *Pepyr. Masson. in vit. Pii V. Spond. Annal.*

He gives
a subsidy to
the queen
of Scot-
land.

against the *Turks*. *Pius* about the same time hearing of the violent proceedings of the *Calvinists* in *Scotland*, some of whom had murdered *David Rizio* in the queen's presence, he wrote to the popish princes to send her assistance, ordered a nuncio to repair to *Scotland* to reside in that kingdom, and besides granted her a subsidy of 20,000 crowns *. He likewise granted his benediction to certain small images, which were then begun to be worn by the catholics in the *Low Countries*, to distinguish them from the protestants, bestowing indulgences upon those who wore them and recited certain prayers † (D).

A.D.
1568.

He sends
troops to
France
against the
Hugonots, and

As the king of *Spain* the following year sent the duke of *Alva* into *Flanders* with an army of 30,000 men, who imprisoned several chiefs of the late tumults, and the year after put the counts of *Egmont* and *Horn*, with many other nobles, to death at *Brussels*, executed and banished great numbers of the people, and obliged the prince of *Orange* to withdraw with his army into *Germany*, the pope ordered supplications to be performed at *Rome*, on account of his success against the heretics, and soon after sent him a consecrated cap and sword; which present was received by the duke with the greatest ceremony and respect †. The pope likewise sent an army of 4500 foot and 900 horse into *France*, to assist king *Charles* against the *Hugonots*, giving him leave at the same time to alienate the church lands to the amount of 50,000, or, according to some, 150,000 crowns of yearly value. In the mean time, being informed that the emperor intended to grant the free exercise of the protestant religion to the nobles and people in *Austria*, *Pius* again sent cardinal *Commendon* as his legate to him, to prevent any such concession, and to threaten the emperor with deposition, if he should do so great an injury to the catholic religion. Before the arrival of *Commendon*, the permission had been granted by the em-

* STRUV. Period.
in vit. Pii, l. vi. c. 2.

† SPOND. Annal.
‡ SPON. Annal.

x GABUT.

(D) The papists hung these little medals about their necks. They contained on one side the image of our Saviour, and on the other that of the virgin *Mary*, with her son in her lap, and were supposed to defend those who wore them from

danger and harm. This superstition was quickly embraced by the papists all over *Christendom*, and grew to such a height that *Clement VIII.* was obliged, by a bull, to revoke the indulgences granted to them by his predecessors (4).

peror, who justified his conduct to the legate; but soon after, upon the remonstrances of the *Spanish* ambassador, he promised to revoke his grant, being desirous to live in good terms with *Spain*, the succession of which kingdom he hoped would fall to him or his children, as his cousin *Philip* had no issue ^a.

ABOUT the same time the pope had some disputes with the king of *Spain* and the republic of *Venice*, in consequence of a bull which he had published at *Easter*, prohibiting all ecclesiastics to pay any taxes to temporal princes, threatening those sovereigns with excommunication who should compel the clergy to pay any subsidies. The *Venetians* made great complaints against this bull, and *Philip* prohibited it from being published in his dominions. After several months disputes, pretending to have received satisfaction from the pope, he gave general orders that the rights of the church should be preserved in his dominions; but his officers, however, neglecting to put his orders in execution, *Pius*, with great difficulty, was restrained from excommunicating them.

As he was then proposing to form a league against the *Turks*, he was persuaded not to exasperate the king of *Spain*, whose assistance he likewise desired against *Elizabeth* queen of *England*, who at this time had a rupture with *Philip*. *Pius* seized that opportunity of endeavouring to dethrone *Elizabeth*, and to restore the catholic religion in *England*. For that purpose he sent over several emissaries to that kingdom, who formed a pious conspiracy against the queen, according to *Gabutijs* ^a, and excited the papists to raise a rebellion; which, however, was quickly quelled. In the mean time the *French* ambassador informed him of a considerable victory gained over the *Hugonots*, and presented him with twelve of their standards which had been taken in the action, which the pope received with great ceremony, and placed over the gate of *St. Peter's* ^b. He was no less severe against the *Jews* than the protestants, and ordered them to depart within three months from all the territories of the ecclesiastical state, excepting *Rome* and *Ancona*. He likewise published a severe bull against those who should offend or injure the office of the inquisition, or any persons belonging to that court ^c. At the same time a difference happening betwixt him and the duke of *Ferrara* about the freedom of navigation upon the *Po*, and the duties on salt, he favoured his rival the duke of *England*.

A.D. 1569.
excites a rebellion against queen Elizabeth of England.

He confers the title of grand duke

^a Vit. Commend. l. iii. LONDORP. SLEIDAN. Contin. ad an. 1568. ^b GABUT. l. iii. c. 9. ^c Idem, l. ii. c. 8.

CATEN. in vit. Pii V.

^c SPOND. Annal.

of Tuscany on Cosmo de Medicis,
A. D.
1570.

Florence, who at his desire had sent 1000 foot and 200 horse into *France*, and at his request he created him and his successors *Great Dukes of Tuscany*, notwithstanding the opposition of the imperial and *Spanish* ambassadors, who protested that such a title was derogatory to the rights of their masters in that province. The following year the pope, finding that his plots against the queen of *England* had been unsuccessful, he resolved to throw off the mask, and in the end of *February* published a bull against her, in which he declared her excommunicated and deposed from her throne, threatening likewise all those who obeyed her laws and orders with excommunication. He had the mortification, however, to find his anathema despised, not only by *Elizabeth*, but even by the catholic princes, who still acknowledged her as queen, and allowed their subjects to continue their commerce in her kingdom (E).

and proposes a league against the Turks.

As the *Turks* at this time had fitted out a formidable fleet to seize the island of *Cyprus*, then in possession of the *Venetians*, this armament engaged his attention, and prevented him from pursuing his designs against *Elizabeth*. He promised the *Venetians* all the assistance in his power, and by his legates and nuncios not only pressed the emperor, and the kings of *Spain*, *Portugal*, *Poland*, and *France*, but also the sophi of *Persia*, to engage in a league against the *Turks*. The kings of *France*, *Poland*, and *Portugal*, excused themselves from engaging in the war, as did also the sophi of *Persia* and the emperor, which last pleaded in his excuse, that he had lately concluded a truce with the grand signor. The king of *Spain* did not seem averse to the league, and, at the intreaty of the nuncio, sent 50 gallies to join the *Venetian* fleet, while the treaty was negotiating. *Pius* at the same time fitted out twelve gallies at *Ancona*, the command of which he gave to *Antonio Colonna*, who, about the month of *August*, joined *Zanius* and *Doria*, the *Venetian* and *Spanish* admirals, at *Crete*. The *Turks*, however, before

† Idem ibid.

(E) An enthusiast in *England*, named *John Weston*, having got a copy of the bull, affixed it to the gate of the bishop of *London*'s house, next *St. Paul*'s church, on the eve of the feast of *Corpus Christi*; and tho' he

was urged by his friend to make his escape he refused. Being soon after apprehended, he confessed the fact; and, refusing to acknowledge the queen's supremacy, was executed as a traitor (5).

the junction of the allied fleet, had landed their forces on *Cyprus*, and besieged the capital city of the island, *Nicosia*, which they took by storm after a siege of forty-five days. Upon the news of the taking of *Nicosia*, *Don John* returned to *Spain*, *Zanius* to *Corcyra*, and *Colonna*, bringing back only three galleys to *Ancona*, went from thence on foot to *Rome*, where he was received with great honours by the pope, who, during this unsuccessful expedition, had sent a commander with some forces to *Avignon*, to defend that city against the French Hugonots.

The French Hugonots threaten to seize Avignon. A. D. 1571.

THE success of the *Turks* in *Cyprus* rendered the pope more urgent to conclude the league; accordingly, at his pressing intreaties, the king of *Spain* at length sent deputies to *Rome*; where, on the 16th of *May*, an alliance was concluded betwixt *Philip*, the pope, and the *Venetians*, by which they engaged to fit out yearly against the *Turks* a fleet of 200 galleys and 100 ships of burden, on board of which should be an army of 50,000 foot and 4,500 horse, to assemble every year in *March* or *April* at *Otranto*: the pope should bear one-sixth of the whole expence, and should furnish twelve galleys, 3000 foot, and 270 horse. The chief command was conferred on *Don John* of *Austria*, the king of *Spain*'s natural brother, and *Mark Antonio Colonna* was appointed his lieutenant; and an honourable place was reserved in the treaty for the emperor, and the kings of *France* and *Portugal*, who were all three again solicited by the pope, but nevertheless still declined engaging in the alliance. To enable the king of *Spain* and the *Venetians* to bear their part of the expences, *Pius* confirmed the grant of his predecessor to *Philip*, for raising such a tax upon the ecclesiastical revenues as should support 100 galleys for the defence of the *Spanish* coast against the infidels, and he allowed the *Venetians* to raise 100,000 crowns within five years from the ecclesiastics within their dominions.

DURING these transactions, the *Venetian* republic had made private overtures of peace to the grand vizir at *Constantinople*, against whose advice the war had been commenced. However, their preliminaries were rejected, and the *Turks*, having prepared a new armament against *Cyprus*, in the month of *April* landed a great many troops and military stores at *Famagusta*, the only city of any consequence in

* NAT. COMES. THUAN. COUTAR. Comment. de bell. Cypr. CATEN. & GABUT. in vit. Pii V. † Ext. integr. ap. CATEN. & GABUT. in vit. Pii V. NAT. l. xxii. AUROC. l. x.

Their
fleet is in-
tensely de-
feated by
that of the
Christians.

the island, which had been invested the year before. After a most vigorous defence, the city was at length obliged to surrender, the allied fleet, upon account of the delay of the *Spaniards*, not being able to give it any assistance. Don *John* at last arriving with the *Spanish* fleet at *Maffina* on the 21st of *August*, it was resolved to engage the infidels; and the whole fleet having received plenary indulgences from the pope, and each ship being provided with priests, who animated the men to engage, they sailed in quest of the enemy with 209 galleys, twelve of which belonged to the pope, eighty-one to the king of *Spain*, one hundred and eight to the *Venetians*, two to the duke of *Savoy*, three to the *Genoese*, and three to the knights of *Malta*. There were besides six large galleasses, twenty-four ships of burden, and about seventy smaller vessels, which armament altogether was considerably superior to that of the *Turks*. On the 5th of *October* the two fleets came to a general engagement in the gulph of *Lepanto*, when, after a fight of four hours, the *Turks* were totally defeated, 150 of their galleys being taken, and many others being burnt and sunk; besides 25,000, or, according to some, 30,000 of their men, with several of their generals, were killed, 3,500 were taken prisoners, and 15,000 *Christians*, who were slaves on board the *Turkish* fleet, recovered their liberty, the allies having lost only 7,600 men, the greatest part of whom were *Venetians*.

UPON the news of this memorable victory, the pope immediately ordered public thanksgivings to be celebrated, and appointed the day of action to be commemorated annually by a divine service in honour of the virgin *Mary*, and mass to be said on the octave of that feast for the souls of those *Christians* who were killed in the engagement*. *Antonio Colonna*, upon his return, entered *Rome* in triumph, where he was received with great pomp and ceremony by the pope, who again solicited the emperor, and the kings of *France* and *Portugal*, to enter into the alliance, and wrote to the kings of *Ethiopia* and *Persia*, exhorting them to attack the *Turks*. His intreaties, however, had no effect on the *Christian* princes, neither did the king of *Persia* think it safe to venture a rupture with the *Turks*; alleging, that it was of no consequence to have taken a few skiffs, while the woods were left, from whence the enemy might make others. The pope, not discouraged by the backwardness of others, made great preparations against the infidels, and, in the beginning of the following year, settled some disputes with his allies,

A. D.
1572.

* *Iidem* *ibid*.

and made some alterations in the league ; but in the month of *March*, being seized with a suppression of urine, he languished for some weeks, and died on the 1st of *May*, in the 68th year of his age. He was greatly lamented by the *Romans* ; but his death gave great joy to the *Turks*, who, upon receiving the news, had public rejoicings for three days ^b. He founded several public schools and colleges, built some churches and religious houses, was careful to promote only learned and virtuous men to dignities, and distinguished himself by his bounty to the poor, and by the great strictness and purity of his life ; on which account he was afterwards canonized by *Urban VIII* ¹.

Pius, before his death, having recommended to the cardinals to chuse a successor as soon as possible, they entered the conclave on the 11th of *May*, to the number of fifty-two, and next day unanimously chose *Hugh Buoncompagno*, cardinal of *St. Sixtus*, who assumed the name of *Gregory XIII.* and was crowned a few days after on the feast of *Whitsuntide* (F). Being desirous to prosecute the war against the *Turks*, *Gregory*, immediately after his election, had several conferences with the *Spanish* and *Venetian* ambassadors about continuing the league, and sent several nuncios to the different Christian princes, to exhort them to enter into a general alliance against the infidels. He likewise sent a nuncio to *John of Austria* at *Messina*, urging him to proceed with the united fleet to the island of *Corcyra* ; but the *Spanish* admiral, in consequence of orders from *Philip*, refusing to quit *Sicily*, the papal and *Venetian* admirals failed to *Corcyra* about the middle of *July* to oppose the *Turks*, who again appeared at sea with a fleet of 200 sail, great and small vessels included, and attacked several of the maritime places belonging to the Christians. The king of *Spain* pretended to be apprehen-

Pius dies at Rome.

Gregory XIII. is elected.

He prosecutes the war against the Turks.

^b CATEN. & GABUT. in vit. Pii V.

¹ SPOND. Annal.

(F) *Gregory XIII.* was born at *Bologna* in 1502, of reputable parents. Having spent several years in the study of the civil law, he received the degree of doctor at twenty-eight years of age, after which he taught that science in his native city eight years ; and then, repairing to *Rome*, he quickly obtain-

ed some preferments in that capital. On account of his skill in the law *Paul III.* sent him to the council of *Trent* ; *Paul IV.* created him bishop of *Veste* ; and having, under *Pius IV.* assisted at the general council of *Trent* a second time, he was by that pope created a cardinal and legate in *Spain* (C).

(1) SPOND. Annal.

sive of an invasion from *France*; but, his apprehensions being soon after removed, he sent orders to Don *John* to act in concert with the allies; but, before his arrival, much time was spent, and, after he joined their fleet, no plan of conduct was unanimously agreed to; so that the whole season passed off without any remarkable action, and the fleets separated in the beginning of *October*, having omitted to take the advantage of several favourable opportunities of distressing the enemy.

He expresses his joy for the massacre of the protestants in Paris. DURING these transactions at sea, the pope, having been informed of the massacre of the protestants at *Paris*, gave public thanks at *Rome* for the preservation of the king from their conspiracy, as *Charles IX.* in excuse for his barbarity, alleged, that the admiral *Coligni*, with several other *Hugonots*, had formed a design of murdering him, and all the catholic princes of the royal family. Tho' the truth of this excuse was universally questioned, yet the pope published a jubilee over all Christendom, in consideration of the great blow given to the heretics, and likewise on account of the success of the duke of *Alva* in the *Netherlands*, and the signal victory gained the year before over the *Turks*; and he walked in procession on foot to the church of *St. Lewis* at *Rome*, where divine service was performed with great pomp by the cardinal of *Lorrain*. He likewise made great preparations against the infidels for the ensuing season; but, in the beginning of the following year, he was greatly alarmed with the news, that the *Venetians*, by the mediation of the *French* ambassador at *Constantinople*, had concluded a separate peace with the *Turks*.

A. D. 1573. The Venetians conclude a separate peace with the *Turks*. He refused audience to the *Venetian* envoy, who came to *Rome* to excuse the conduct of the republic; however, soon afterwards, being convinced by one of the senators who arrived at *Rome*, that the *Venetians* had been compelled by necessity to sue for peace, he declared himself satisfied with their proceeding, which was approved of by the king of *Spain* without any difficulty.

1574. In the mean time *Henry de Valois*, brother to the king of *France*, having been elected king of *Poland*, he sent a nuncio to *Paris*, to congratulate him upon his election, and to present him with a golden rose. He sent also another nuncio to *Poland*; who, upon the king's arrival there the following year, prevented him from confirming to the protestants what had been promised to them in his name. The protestants in that kingdom, however, were soon after freed from their apprehensions from *Henry*; who, succeeding to the crown of *France* by the death of his brother, left *Poland* in a few months. *Gregory* in the mean time published a bull on ascension-

cension-day, and another on the fourth *Sunday of Advent*, appointing a jubilee to be celebrated the following year at *Rome*; which festival accordingly commenced on *Christmas* eve, when the pope, with his golden mallet, opened the holy gate of the *Vatican* church, where there were said to be no less than 300,000 pilgrims waiting for the ceremony ^k. *A jubilee* During the whole holy year there were always upwards of celebrated 100,000 foreigners at *Rome*; which, by the care of the pope, abounded with all sorts of provisions. *Gregory*, as ^{A.D.} an indulgence to the *English* catholics, on the 30th of *March*, 1575, published a bull, allowing them all the benefits of the jubilee in their own kingdom; in the mean while he visited the churches in *Rome* several times with great devotion, and, according to custom, ascended the holy ladder on his knees.

DURING the celebration of this festival at *Rome*, the pope interested himself for the safety of *Genoa*, which state was threatened with ruin, both from a foreign enemy, and from its own intestine divisions. As the ancient nobility in that republic had, for several years, opposed the election of the new nobles and the commons to the offices of the state, these two last parties, after long disputes, had recourse to arms, to deliver themselves from oppression, and to assert their privileges; which contention encouraged *Don John* of *Austria* to form a design of invading the republic. *Gregory* ordered ^{He com-} *Don John* to lay aside his enterprize; and prevailing on the ^{posts the} *Genoise* to accept of his mediation, together with that of the ⁱⁿ *dissensions* emperor and the king of *Spain*, after several months negotiations the differences were composed in an amicable manner, ^{A. D.} and all the three parties were declared to have an equal right 1576. to enjoy any office in the administration of the republic ^l.

WHILE the arbitrators were negotiating this accommodation, which was concluded in the month of *March*, a great plague desolated the northern parts of *Italy*; particularly the cities of *Trent*, *Verona*, *Venice*, and *Milan*; in which last city cardinal *Borromeo* distinguished himself by his humanity and charity, as he continually spent his time in visiting the infected, and disposed of all the furniture of his palace, even to his own bed, to support the wants of the poor ^m. His example was imitated by the bishop of *Verona*; and, as an alleviation of the affliction, the pope sent his indulgences to the infected cities, granting the same pardon to those who died with a sorrow of their sins, as if they had confessed, and

^k Idem ibid. ex VICT. de Jubileis. ^l NATAL. COM. l. xxv, xxvi, xxvii. UBERT. FOLIET. Comment. ^m NATAL. l. xxvii. MAURO. l. xii.

received the communion and extreme unction: Soon after, at the request of the *French* king, and to defray the expences of the wars against the *Hugonots*, he granted a bull for the alienation of the church lands in *France*, to the amount of 50,000 crowns of yearly revenue; and as the emperor *Maximilian*, who had been elected king of *Poland* by a party in that kingdom, died in the month of *October*, he received the obedience, and confirmed the election, of *Stephen Batori*, the other competitor for that crown.

THE following year he erected a college at *Rome* for the education of the children of *Greeks* in the sciences, and in divinity; and likewise founded another for the new converts from *Judaism*. He confirmed an archbishop and bishop, sent by the patriarch of the *Maronites* to *Rome*; and, upon their return, sent with them two *Jesuits* to *Mount Libanus*, to instruct the Christians in those parts in the doctrines of the *Roman* church. Not long after, being intreated by the states of *Flanders* to act as mediator betwixt them and the king of *Spain*, he immediately sent a nuncio to be present at the congress, which was held the following year at *Cologne*. At the same time he likewise ordered his nuncio in *Portugal* to accompany king *Sebastian* in his expedition to *Africa*, where that unfortunate prince, with the nuncio, and a great part of his army, were cut off by the *Moors*. The year following *Gregory* confirmed the new order of knights of the Holy Ghost, established by the king of *France*; but refused to allow any of the church lands to be alienated for their support. He ordered a treatise of *Scholarius*, against the errors of the *Greeks*, to be printed, and sent into *Greece*; he restored the order of the monks of *St. Basil*; sent several *Franciscan* missionaries to the *East Indies*; and granted assistance to the king of *Ceylon*, who had been expelled his kingdom for having embraced the Christian religion^a. Mean while his nuncio, with the deputies from the emperor, the king of *Spain*, and the States of *Flanders*, assembled at *Cologne*, to consult of the means to quiet the disturbances in the *Low Countries*. After long disputes, the imperial deputies proposed a plan of pacification; but it was almost universally rejected by the deputies of the States, who began to think of imploring the protection of some neighbouring prince. *Gregory* at the same time, at the solicitation of the *English* refugees, founded an *English* college at *Rome*; and, as he had formerly erected one at *Rheims* in *France* for the instruction of the exiles from *England*, who resided in that

His mediation is desired betwixt the king of Spain and the Flemings.

A. D.

1578.

He founds an English college at Rome;

^a SECOND ANNAL.

kingdom, he published a writing, by which he exhorted all the faithful to assist the *English* refugees to the utmost of their power. He likewise prevailed upon *Philip*, king of *Spain*, to send assistance to the popish rebels in *Ireland*, they having deceived him by giving him a false account of their forces, which they represented as very formidable; whereas they, with the *Spanish* auxiliaries, were easily defeated by the *English* troops.

MEAN while cardinal *Henry*, who had succeeded his nephew *Sebastian* on the throne of *Portugal*, dying, and the royal line becoming extinct in that kingdom, many competitors appeared, who claimed the succession, among whom was *Philip* king of *Spain*, who, in order to make good his pretensions, fitted out a formidable fleet, and sent the duke of *Alva* into *Portugal*, with an army of 30,000 men. Tho' *Philip's* claim was acknowledged to be just, yet the greatest part of the *Portuguese*, from their hatred of the *Castilians*, refused to submit to him; and, having sent to *Rome* to implore the protection of the pope, *Gregory* immediately sent cardinal *Riario*, as his nuncio, to *Portugal*, to act as mediator between the two parties, and to persuade *Philip* to lay down his arms. The king of *Spain*, however, rejected the mediation of the nuncio; and having defeated his rival *Don Antonio*, who had been crowned by the opposite faction, took possession of *Lisbon*, where he was acknowledged as king of *Portugal*, and received the homage of the nobles. During these transactions in *Portugal*, the pope had a dispute with the republic of *Venice*, which refused to admit those who had been nominated by his holiness to visit the churches in their territories. After several months disputes, the difference was at last accommodated, the pope consenting to nominate only one *Venetian* prelate for the visitation, and prohibiting him to examine the nunneries, and those benefices which were under the protection of laymen.

THE following year, having received an embassy from the great duke of *Muscovy*, desiring his mediation betwixt him and the king of *Poland*, he sent *Antonio Posservini*, a *Jesuit*, as his nuncio, to *Russia*, who concluded a peace betwixt the two princes in the month of *December*; after which he solicited the *Russian* duke to acknowledge the authority of the *Roman* see, and in three public disputes impugned the rites and ceremonies of the *Greek* church. Tho' his arguments in behalf of the church of *Rome* had no influence on the *Russians*, yet the duke, at his request, sent a second ambas-

sador to *Rome* to return thanks to the pope, who in the mean time had received a complaint and appeal from the grand master of *Malta*, who had been deposed and imprisoned by the knights of that order. *Gregory* greatly resented this insolence of the knights, and immediately sent a legate to *Malta*, who took the grand master out of prison, and sent him, with those who had been chiefly concerned in the outrage, to *Rome*; where he was received with great honours, while his accusers were treated with scorn and contempt. Tho' he was again restored to his dignity, and his rival obliged to ask his pardon, yet both he and his rival died a few weeks after; by which means an end was put at that time to the factions among the Knights P.

and orders

ar. forma
tion of the
calendar;

A. D.

1582.

which is
rejected by
the Greeks
and pro-
testants.

GREGORY about the same time having received a treatise from one *Antonio Lilly*, for the reformation of the calendar, which was then very erroneous, sent copies of the book to be examined by the celebrated universities of *Europe*; and having received their approbation of the plan, he sent for the most eminent mathematicians from all parts to *Rome*, by whose advice he composed a new cycle of epochs for the perpetual regulation of *Easter*. By this reformation of the calendar, he threw out ten days from the common reckoning of time, and brought down the vernal equinox to the same day of the month on which it was at the time of the council of *Nice*, and appointed the usual bissextiles to be observed, excepting only in the first year of a century; of which years he ordered every fourth only to be accounted bissextile. This regulation, which was confirmed in the month of *February* by a bull, was allowed almost universally to be very proper; however, it was not universally received in *Europe*. The *Greeks*, and the protestants in *Germany*, *Britain*, *Sweden*, and *Denmark*, rejected it, that they might not seem in any thing to acknowledge the authority of the pope; however, it was admitted without opposition in *Italy*, *Spain*, *France*, and *Poland*; but tho' some protestants in *Germany* wrote in its defence, yet the princes and deputies of that profession, in the diet of *Augsburgh*, opposed its reception, so that the emperor was obliged to defer the further consideration of that affair, and to order the imperial chamber to observe the old calendar.

THE pope was not surprised at the opposition of the protestants to the new regulation of the year; but he was greatly alarmed to hear, that the electoral archbishop of *Cologne* had

P SPON. Annal. 9 Idem ibid. THUAN. l. lxxix. MERC. Gallo Belg. t. iii. l. i. p. 201. LEHMAN. l. ii. c. 44.

embraced the protestant religion, and married a wife. As the chapter had wrote to *Rome* against him, complaining that he had not only renounced the catholic religion, but proposed likewise to retain his dignity as elector, and endeavoured to introduce the protestant religion into his dominions, the pope wrote to him, exhorting him to renounce his error before it was too late. But the archbishop paying no regard to this exhortation, and endeavouring to retain the possession of his electorate by arms, *Gregory*, on the 1st of *April*, published a sentence of excommunication and deposition against him; and, ordering the chapter of *Collegn* to proceed to the election of a successor, the canons accordingly, on the 23d of *May*, chose *Ernest*, duke of *Bavaria*, at that time bishop of *Frisingen*, *Hildesheim*, and *Liege*.

A. D.
1583.

DURING these transactions in *Germany*, one *Parr*, an *He is self-English* catholic, then in *France*, having informed the pope, *per-acted of* that he intended to go over to *England* to do some signal service to the *Roman* church, *Gregory* granted him his benediction, and wrote to him by the cardinal of *Cemo*, exhorting him to persevere in his design. As *Parr* the following year was detected in a conspiracy against the queen's life, by the papers that were then discovered, the pope was accused of having encouraged him in his design of assassination, tho' all the writings from *Rome* were only expressed in general terms. *Italy* was at this time distressed with a severe famine, which, having continued a long time, prevailed to such a degree at *Rome*, that, at last, a man could hardly support himself with bread for a crown a day. The grievousness of this calamity was owing chiefly to the avarice and rapacity of the pope's relations, who, instead of distributing the corn in the magazines to the people, sold it in the country at an extravagant price. They likewise bought up all that was in private hands; and prohibiting any others to sell corn besides themselves, they harassed the poor people by the most violent extortion.

encouraged
the assas-
sination of
queen
Eliza-
beth.
1584.

THIS general distress greatly increased the number of the banditti, who were before very numerous, all over the ecclesiastical state, and some of them even had the confidence to enter *Rome*, presuming upon the lenity, or rather the weakness, of the pope. As they had rendered themselves very formidable, *Gregory* at last resolved to exert himself against them, and gave orders to the provost marshal of *Rome*, to make diligent search after those who were lurking in the city. This officer being informed, that one of the chiefs of the

robbers had taken sanctuary in the palace of *Orfini*, went with the archers, and brought him from thence; but, in his return, meeting with *Orfini*, *Savello*, and *Rusticucci*, three nobles, who had been riding in the country, he was desired by them, in an imperious manner, to dismiss his prisoner, and reproved for violating the sanctuary of the palace. As he refused to comply with their demands, one of the nobles struck him with his whip; which blow he resented, by ordering the archers to fire at the nobles, one of whom was instantly killed, and the other two mortally wounded. This scuffle occasioned a general tumult through the city, all the nobles espousing the cause of *Orfini*; and many of the people, who were their dependents, assembling in a riotous manner, and murdering all the *Sbirri*, or archers, whom they could find. *Gregory*, not being able to suppress their violence, disssembled his resentment for some days; but, having apprehended some of the chiefs of the sedition, he ordered them to be executed; and to calm and appease the people, he caused the provost marshal to be put to death^a.

He endeavours to form an alliance against the Turks.

A. D.
1585.

To take off the attention of the city from the late disorder, he soon after made a promotion of nineteen cardinals, the greatest part of whom were distinguished for their virtues and abilities. About the same time he founded a college at Rome for the Maronites of Mount Libanus (G); and, being desirous to form a new alliance against the Turks, he sent a legate to the king of Persia, and another to the king of Ethiopia, to exhort them to declare war against the grand signior^c. He likewise published a bull, ordaining a sermon to be preached weekly to the Jews, in all places where they had a synagogue; and ordered at least the third part of them, above twelve years of age, to attend, if no lawful impediment prevented them^d. Soon after he was earnestly solicited by the duke of Guise, and those catholics in France who had formed the holy league, to excommunicate the king of Navarre and the prince of Conde; but he refused to grant their request, being persuaded, that the league was chiefly formed, not to defend the catholic religion, but to advance the duke of Guise to the succession of the throne.

^a THUAN. l. lxxxii.

^c Annal. Greg. apud VICTOR.

^d SPOND. Annal.

(G) He is said to have erected different provinces of Christendom (1).
ed, during his pontificate, three-and-twenty at Rome, and in the

(*) Cabrer. & Ugret. in Addit. ad Ciacon. in Greg. XIII.

MEAN while he received an embassy from three kings ^{He re-} in *Japan*, who some years before had been converted to the Christian religion by *Francis Xavier* and other *Jesuits*. ^{ceives an} The two ambassadors, with their retinue, and other two ^{embassy} nobles that accompanied them, after a voyage of two years, ^{from} arrived in *Spain*; where they were received with great respect by *Philip*, who conducted them to *Leghorn*, from whence they went to *Florence*, where they were entertained with great magnificence by the grand duke. Upon their arrival at *Rome*, *Gregory* desired all the cardinals and foreign ambassadors to wait upon him in form, and granted them an audience, and received their obedience, in a public consistory, when he could not refrain from expressing his joy by his tears ^w. After the audience he admitted them to the honour of lifting up the hem of his garment, appointed the *Jesuits* convent for their residence, ordered them to be clothed after the *Italian* manner, and granted them a large allowance for their expences (H). A few days after, being seized with a ^{He dies at} quinzey, he died on the 10th of *April*, on the second day of *Rome*. his illness, and the 84th year of his age. He had enjoyed a very strong constitution, which he had improved by temperance and exercise; his countenance was chearful and pleasing, and he was greatly beloved by the *Romans* on account of the lenity of his government, not considering that the weakness of his administration gave encouragement to all manner of vices and irregularities. The greatest crimes were committed during his pontificate with impunity, and a general corruption of manners overspread the whole ecclesiastical state; however, upon his death, the disorders increased

^w Apud VICTOR. in Addit. ad Ciacon.

(H) The names of these ambassadors were *Mancio*, *Isus*, and *Michael Gingiva*, and they were said to be nearly related to the kings of *Bungo*, *Arima*, and *Omura*, whom they represented. However, many people affirmed, that the embassy was an imposition of the *Jesuits*, to advance the credit of their order; and that the pretended ambassadors were only mean persons, hired and instructed to personate that character, by

those fathers, who likewise forged their credentials; and, being their interpreters, made them speak whatever best suited their purposes. Their honourable reception gave occasion to some pasquinades, and several *Spanish* merchants then at *Rome*, who had lately been at *Japan*, affirmed, that, when they were in that kingdom, they had heard no mention of any embassy, or the conversion of any king (2).

(2) *Greg. Alt. vij. di Sixt. V.*

B b 4

during

during the vacancy of the see, at which time the *Romans* generally commit great tumults and riots, as the laws are then silent through all the papal territories, and the new pope always begins his government with a general pardon to all criminals. At this vacancy all manner of restraint was thrown off: the whole ecclesiastical state was one scene of debauchery and barbarity; and, at *Rome*, assassinations, murders, and rapes, were committed by all degrees of people, clergy as well as laity. The palaces of five cardinals were robbed; and that of *Farnese*, where there were above thirty servants and guards, was plundered, not secretly, or in a private manner, but publicly, and in the middle of the day.

DURING the ten days that the funeral ceremonies of the deceased pope lasted, the cardinals, who had any pretensions to the papacy, were carrying on their schemes and intrigues, running about to solicit the suffrages and interest of their friends. On the 21st of *April* they entered the conclave, to the number of forty-two, being divided into six particular factions, who more or less favoured different candidates. As the interest of some of the chiefs was very near equally balanced, they were a mutual check to each others promotion, and were, in their turns, rejected at several scrutinies. At length the cardinals *Alexandrino*, *Medicis*, and *D'Este*, resolved to join their interest in favour of cardinal *Montalto*, an old decrepid mortified prelate; who declined that dignity with great appearance of humility, and told them, that they must not think of making him pope, unless they resolved to take the burden of the administration on their own shoulders. They readily agreed to this exception; and having by their interest brought over several other cardinals, they produced a legal majority for *Montalto*, who was chosen on the 24th of *April*, and assumed the name of *Sixtus V.*

Sixtus V.
is elected
pope.

An account
of his
birth.

HE was born of poor and mean parents, in the march of *Ancona*, at a village called *Le Grotte*, in the lordship of *Montalto*. His father, *Francis Peretti*, who was a common plowman, could not afford to give him any education, and, when he was nine years old, hired him out to one of his neighbours, to look after his sheep and hogs. He did not long continue in this mean occupation; for being desired by a *Franciscan* friar, who had lost his way, to shew him the road to *Ascoli*, he deserted his hogs, and ran before him to the town. The friar, after he had found his road again, desired him several times to return; but the boy refusing to leave him, he at length asked him if he would take upon him the habit of his order, which he described as very austere;

austere; to which the boy replied, "That he would willingly suffer the pains of purgatory, if he would make him a scholar." He was accordingly received, with the consent of his parents, into the convent of *Franciscans at Ascoli*, where he quickly made a surprizing progress in learning. In his 13th year he assumed the habit of that order, but he retained his own name *Felix*, or *Felice*. He soon after distinguished himself at several public disputations, and acquired a considerable reputation as an elegant preacher; but at the same time he raised himself a great many enemies by his fiery impetuous disposition, as he resented the least injury with great animosity and vehemence, which he frequently provoked by his own insolence and disdainful behaviour. He early discovered a great ambition; and though he was envied and hated by his brother monks, yet, by his abilities, he acquired the favour and esteem of cardinal *Carpi*, whose protection was of great service to him against his numerous enemies. By the interest of this cardinal he obtained several small promotions; and having likewise ingratiated himself with father *Ghislieri*, afterwards *Pius V.* and with the *Colonna* family at *Rome*, he obtained the office of inquisitor-general at *Venice*, where, by his insolent and over-bearing behaviour, he so greatly offended the senate, that, upon the death of *Paul IV.* he was obliged to consult his safety by flight. However, upon the election of *Pius II.* he returned to that city, and again sacrificed his own repose to trouble, and disturb that of others: but at last, being apprehensive of the resentment of the senate, he provided a gondola, by which he made his escape in the middle of the night, after he had ordered an insolent monitory to be hung upon the door of *St. Mark's church*. Upon his return to *Rome* he was made consultor of the inquisition, and soon after went with the legate *a latere*, *Buron Campagnon*, as his chaplain, to *Spain*. While he was in that kingdom, his friend *Ghislieri* being chosen pope, he created him general of his order, afterwards bishop of *St. Agatha*, and at last a cardinal; and, to enable him to support his dignity, he assigned him a pension, and besides made him a present of a considerable sum of money.

He is created a cardinal, and

UPON his promotion to the sacred college, which happened in the 49th year of his age, he quite altered his former manner of life; and to conceal his aspiring views, he affected a total disregard of all wordly pursuits, and became humble, meek, patient, and affable; which mask of hypocrisy he wore with great perseverance for fifteen years. He led a very retired and private life, exercised himself in works of piety, spent much of his time in the confessional chairs, seldom

artfully disguises his natural disposition.

seldom appeared at the consistories, and, during the three last years of the pontificate of *Gregory*, affected to be very infirm and sickly; so that he was often saluted in a manner that would not have been very agreeable to any body else, "God help you, poor old man; you have almost run your race."

His behaviour upon his election to the pontificate. THE cardinals, out of contempt, used to call him *The Ass of la Marca*; so that their astonishment was inexpressible when he threw off the disguise. While they were crowding towards him in the conclave, to congratulate him, he sat coughing and weeping, as if some great misfortune had befallen him; but he no sooner perceived, upon the scrutiny, that there was a sufficient number of votes to secure his election, than he threw his staff, with which he used to support himself, into the middle of the chapel, stretched himself up, and appeared taller, by almost a foot, than he had done for several years before. This behaviour alarming the cardinal *Dean*, he called out, "Stay a little, softly, there is a mistake in the scrutiny:" but *Montalto*, with a stern look, boldly answered, "There is no mistake;" and immediately begun himself the *Te Deum laudamus*, in such a strong and audible voice, that the whole conclave was at first struck dumb; but at length accompanied him in a tame and spiritless manner. After the hymn, the master of the ceremonies asked him, according to the form, "Whether he was pleased to accept of the papacy?" To which he replied, somewhat sharply, "It is trifling and impertinent to ask whether I will accept of what I have already accepted. However, to satisfy any scruple that may arise, I tell you that I accept it with great pleasure, and would accept another, if I could get it; for I find myself strong enough, by the divine assistance, to manage two papacies." While the cardinals were putting on his pontifical robes, he stretched out his arms with great vigour and activity; upon which one of them said to him, in a familiar way, "I perceive, holy father, the pontificate is a sovereign medicine, since it can restore youth and health to old sick cardinals:" To which he replied, in a grave and majestic manner, "So I find it." After cardinal *Farnese* had performed the ceremony of the adoration, he said to him, "Your holiness seems a quite different sort of a man from what you was a few hours ago." "Yes (said he), I was then looking for the keys of paradise, which obliged me to stoop a little; but now I have found them, it is time to look upwards, as I am arrived at the summit of all human glory, and can climb no higher in this world." In his passage from the conclave

conclave to *St. Peters*, the people, who at first would not believe that he was the same person with the old decrepid cardinal *Montalto*, cried out, *Long live the pope*; and added, according to custom, *Plenty, holy father, plenty and justice!* To which he replied, "Pray to God for plenty, and I will give you justice."

HAVING now attained to the height of his ambition, he *His rigid* laid aside that appearance of humility he had so long worn, *adminis-* and behaved with great state and reserve. He received the *tration of* foreign ambassadors in a complaisant manner, and was particularly kind to those from *Japan*, to whom he gave several rich presents; and having created them knights of *St. Peter* and *St. Paul*, dismissed them a few months afterwards with his benediction. Upon the news of his election, many criminals and banditti voluntarily surrendered themselves, not making the least doubt of a pardon from the general character of *Montalto's* lenity. But never were any more fatally disappointed; for having haughtily rejected the intercession of the ambassadors, cardinals, and nobles, in their behalf, he gave orders to the governor of *Rome* to confine them more strictly, and to execute four of them on the day of his coronation. He likewise published regulations to be observed on that day: and having ordered the governor to provide twelve executioners of different nations, he commanded them some days before to parade through the streets, with an ax in one hand and a halter in the other; which appearance struck such a terror into the *Romans*, that during the procession of the coronation there was not the least disturbance or riot; whereas formerly, during that ceremony, rapes, murders, and a thousand enormities, were usually committed.

Soon after the coronation he sent for his only sister *Ca-* *He pro-* *milla*, with her daughter and two grandsons, and a niece, *mote his* the daughter of his deceased brother, who, upon their ap- *relations* *pro-* *approach to Rome*, were met by three cardinals, who dressed them in magnificent habits, and conducted them to the *Vatican*. But *Sixtus* disdainingly, in such a trifling matter, to be obliged to the cardinals, pretended not to know his sister, till she had refused her former dress; then he received her kindly, and declared, that nobody should make a princess of her but himself. He assigned her a considerable revenue, and gave her one of his palaces for her residence; at the same time advising her to content herself with that sober modesty which became the meanness of her birth, and the gravity of those who were related to the papal chair: he likewise conferred the dignity of a cardinal on the eldest of her grandsons, *Alex-* *ander*

ander Peretti, who was then about eighteen years of age, and afterwards distinguished himself by his learning and abilities. The king of *Spain* and the grand duke of *Tuscany* offered to confer titles of honour on his sister, which he refused; however, he expressed his satisfaction with the behaviour of the *Venetians*, who ordered public rejoicings upon his exaltation, and admitted the family of *Peretti* to the honour of nobility in their state, being afraid of his resentment for their treatment of him when he was inquisitor at *Venice*.

compels the
poor to
work, and
the nobles
to pay their
debts.

BEING shocked with the great numbers of poor at *Rome*, who were perishing for want, he gave an authority to four persons, of great prudence and experience, to summon before them all those who had no visible way of getting a livelihood, and to compel them to work, or to banish them from the city. He likewise prohibited foreigners from settling at *Rome*, unless they brought a certificate that they were able, by some trade or profession, to maintain a family; and none were allowed to marry without a previous examination of their circumstances. He gave great encouragement to trade and manufactures; and, to check the insolence of the nobility, he commanded all the merchants and tradesmen to bring him in a list of their debts, with the names of the people that owed them, which he paid off, and became general creditor himself. This order occasioned such a general alarm, that many paid their debts the same day it was published, and begged of their merchants to give them such receipts as though they had been paid long before. At the same time he deprived the cardinals and nobles of those privileges and immunities, by which they sheltered debtors and criminals from the law, and continually urged the governor of *Rome* to make examples of justice, chiding him for his remissness, and declaring, that he would rather have the gibbets and gallies full than prisons.

He extir-
pates the
banditti,
and

IN order intirely to extirpate the banditti, who still continued in great bodies in the ecclesiastical state, their numbers having been increased by many, who, from the rigorous proceedings of *Sixtus*, despaired of pardon, and fled from justice, he published an edict against them, offering all those a free pardon who should surrender within three months, and excluding them from mercy after that term, promising a pardon, and a reward of 500 crowns, to any of them who should betray his fellow; and prohibiting all persons whatever, not excepting nobles and ecclesiastics, from corresponding with them, or concealing them, under the penalty of death upon the wheel or gallows. Having appointed three severe judges, with a body of 500 soldiers, to put this order

in execution, in less than six months all the banditti were either taken or disappeared.

He likewise ordered the syndics, or mayors, of every town and lordship, as well those that were actually in office, as those who had enjoyed that dignity for the last ten years, to send him a list of all the vagrants, common debauchees, loose and disorderly people, in their districts, threatening them with the strapado if they omitted or concealed any one; which punishment the syndic of *Albano* actually underwent, for omitting the name of his nephew. And in order to suppress all manner of vice, he not only punished several people, upon the information which he had received from themselves at their confessions, when he was cardinal, but likewise obliged other confessors to acquaint him with any thing extraordinary that was communicated to them; and, to inspect the conduct of the magistrates, he dispersed a great many spies through the city and the ecclesiastical state, to whom he allowed considerable pensions, which were punctually paid.

He employed also a great many others at all foreign courts, by which means he had intelligence of the secret designs of other states, particularly of the king of *Spain* having formed a design to seize *Naples*, one of the dependencies of that crown, which was suspected by his behaviour to the *Spanish* ambassador, a few weeks after his promotion: for when the horse, with 7000 crowns, was presented to him on the feast of *St. Peter*, as a tribute for *Naples*, he ridiculed his predecessors, who had exchanged a kingdom for a beast, and added, that he would soon put an end to that simple custom; which words being transmitted to *Philip*, he gave orders to the duke of *Ossuna*, viceroy of *Naples*, to strengthen the garrisons upon the frontiers, and to do his utmost to penetrate into the designs of the pope. About the same time *Sixtus* had a rupture with the king of *France*, who had sent orders to the new nuncio, who was then on his journey to *France*, to stop at *Lyons*, as he had wrote to *Rome*, desiring that the old nuncio might not be recalled. This proceeding of the king greatly inflamed the pope, who immediately ordered the *French* ambassador to leave *Rome* within three days. However, soon after, by the intercession of several cardinals, the difference was compromised, the king agreeing to accept of the new nuncio, and his ambassador returning to his residence at the court of *Rome*.

WHETHER this rupture had alienated him from the king of *France* is uncertain; but about two months after, he declared his approbation of the catholic league made by the *Guise*

Guise faction, who, under pretence of defending the old religion, had formed an association against the king and *Henry of Navarre*, the presumptive heir of the crown. He wrote with his own hand to the duke of *Guise*, and, comparing him to *Judas Maccabeus*, promised him all the assistance in his power: and, in the end of *September*, he published a bull of excommunication against *Henry* king of *Navarre*, and the prince of *Conde*, and all their adherents, pronouncing them heretics, and, as such, declaring their estates and possessions forfeited, and both them and their dependents incapable of succeeding to any sovereignty, especially to the crown of *France*. The pope, upon the publication of this bull, wrote to the emperor *Adolphus*, desiring him to prevent any assistance going from *Germany* to the *French Hugonots*, and to prohibit all foreign levies, under the pain of the ban of the empire.

who ap-
peals to a
general
council.

THE king of *Navarre* in the mean time, being roused by the pope's proceedings from a life of pleasure, answered the manifesto of the league, and by means of his friends at *Rome* stuck up his protest, with that of the prince of *Conde*, in every street, upon all the cardinals doors, and even upon the gates of the *Vatican*, accusing *Sixtus* of being a false and malicious liar, and appealing from him to a free council, where they would prove that he himself was a heretic; and that, if he did not appear, they would account him antichrist, and declare perpetual war against him. *Sixtus* was greatly enraged at this appeal, and at several pasquinades that were then published; but could not, by all his spies, discover those who had fixed them up. After his fury was somewhat subsided, he spoke of 'the king of *Navarre* in terms of respect, and admired his courage and greatness of mind, who, at that distance, had taken so proper and bold a method to shew his resentment. From that time he refused to contribute any money to the war that was carrying on against him; and he was afterwards frequently heard to say, that there were but two princes in the world, meaning *Henry* of *Navarre* and *Elizabeth* of *England*, whose friendship and correspondence he would court and desire, if they were not both infected with the guilt of heresy*. According to *Gregorio Leti*, he, about this time, gave some secret encouragement to queen *Elizabeth* to take the states of *Holland* under her protection, from his desire of repressing the overgrown power of the *Spaniards*.

* THUAN. l. lxxxii. & xci. SPOND. ANNAL. GREG. LET. vit. di Sixt. §V.

HAVING now rendered himself respected abroad, and terrible to his own subjects, who trembled at the mention of his name, he began to open his bowels, and yield to the dictates of gratitude and generosity. Before his promotion to the pontificate, he had noted down in a diary the most remarkable transactions of his life, and the names of his benefactors and enemies; and as he now had an opportunity of shewing his gratitude to those who formerly obliged him, he with great humour and kindness rewarded his former benefactors, many of whom had entirely forgot the services they had done him (I). Towards the end of the year likewise,

(I) Of the many stories that are related of this pope, with regard to the behaviour to his former benefactors, we shall add the following. When in his youth he resided at *Macerata*, he went one day to a shoemaker's shop to buy a pair of shoes. After some dispute about the price, the shoemaker told him, he would take no less than seven *julios*, or three shillings and sixpence. *Montalto* offered him six *julios*, which was all the money he had, and said, "Perhaps I shall be able to give you the seventh some time or other." "Some time or other" (replied the shoemaker); but when will that be? when you come to be pope? Yes (said *Montalto*), that I will, with all my heart, and pay you interest for your money too. Well then (answered the shoemaker) since I see you are not without hopes of being pope, you shall even have them upon those terms."

Montalto having asked him his name, and noted the transaction in his diary, after his promotion sent to *Macerata*, to know if the shoemaker was still alive; and being informed that he was, ordered the governor of that place to send him up

directly to *Rome*, guarded by one of his officers. The poor shoemaker was surprised and affrighted with the news that the pope desired to see him; and having entirely forgot the transaction with the young friar, which had happened forty years before, he recalled to his mind all the sins that he had committed in his life, considering for which of them he could be cited to appear before his holiness. Upon his arrival at *Rome*, *Sixtus* asked him, if he had ever seen him at *Macerata*. The shoemaker trembling, told him, No. *Sixtus* again asked him, if he ever remembered to have sold a pair of shoes to a young friar, and to have given him credit for a *julio*; but he protesting that he knew nothing at all of the matter, *Sixtus* related to him the agreement they had formerly made, and ordered his steward to pay him the *julio*, with the interest for forty years, which amounted to two *julios* more. The shoemaker went away very much dissatisfied, loudly complaining to every one he met, that the pope had put him to the expence of forty crowns, to come from *Macerata* to *Rome* to receive three *julios*. *Sixtus* being informed of his

wife, he made a promotion of eight cardinals, all men of extraordinary merit, and most of them persons of high birth: but though the *Jesuits* used great art to insinuate themselves into his favour, he always refused patronizing them as his predecessor had done, but used them upon many occasions as his spies.

*He adorns
Rome
with many
new struc-
tures.*

A. D.
1586.

ROME, and the whole ecclesiastical state, being now rendered secure and peaceable by the extirpation of the banditti, and strict administration of justice, *Sixtus* applied his mind to the embellishing of the city with magnificent buildings, by which means he gave employment to great numbers of the poor. By the assistance of the celebrated architect *Dominic Fontana*, born at *Como*; he erected a famous obelisk, that had been brought from *Thebais* in *Egypt* to *Rome*, and dedicated to the emperor *Augustus*, and *Tiberius* his adopted son. This obelisk was overturned by *Totila*, king of the *Goths*, and had long lain neglected behind the vestry of *St. Peter's* church. It consists of one piece of marble of seventy-two feet in length, and the difficulty of removing it had been hitherto accounted so great, that several popes, who had designed to have erected it, desisted, after some weak efforts, from that undertaking: but *Sixtus* resolved to surmount every obstacle; and at length accomplished the arduous enterprize by the ingenuity of *Fontana*, who invented an amazing machine for that purpose, and employed a great number of people more than twelve months. Besides the elevating of this obelisk, which was dedicated to the holy cross, *Sixtus*, during his whole pontificate, employed several thousands of people in great and magnificent works. He erected several other obelisks; built a chapel, which he dedicated to the holy manger, and adorned with the finest marble; brought water to his palace on *Monte Cavallo*, by an aqueduct twenty-two miles in length; founded a large hospital, capable of containing 2000 people; repaired, or rather rebuilt, the bridge of *Sixtus IV.* over the *Tyber*, and erected a fine palace, for the use of the popes, near the *Lateran* church. He also built several new streets, one of which was two miles long, and called after his own name,

his behaviour by his spies, ordered him to return, and demanded of him if he had a son. The shoemaker answering yes, and that he was an honest good priest of the order of *Servi*, the

pope sent for him to *Rome*, and before the departure of his father conferred upon him a bishopric in the kingdom of *Naples* (1).

(1) *Greg. I. et. ut supra.*

Strada Felice: he enlarged the *Vatican* palace; from whence he made a grand stair-case to *St. Peter's* church, the dome or cupola of which he completed: he founded a college in the convent of the holy apostles, and another at *Bologna*: he likewise intended to have built a city at the village of *le Grotte*, where he was born; but the situation of the place being inconvenient, he was not able to accomplish this design; however, he granted several privileges to the *Borgo di Montalto* in the neighbourhood of *le Grotte*, and afterwards erected that new city into a bishop's see. Besides, he regulated his militia, enrolling all his subjects that were able to bear arms, and appointing officers in every city to discipline and exercise them. In order to favour his designs against the kingdom of *Naples*, he fortified several towns on his frontier towards that kingdom, and laid a tax upon all the ecclesiastical state, to defray the expence of building a fleet.

DURING these transactions, *Sixtus*, at the request of the *He restores* popish cantons of *Switzerland*, sent a nuncio into that country, *the autho-* who restored the authority of the holy see, which was almost *ity of the* extinguished among them. He likewise published a bull, *apostolic* condemning the practice of judicial astrology; and some *five in* months afterwards, by another, he ascertained the qualifica- *Switzer-* tions necessary for those that should be received into the sacred college, and limited the number of cardinals to seventy. However, the regulations of this bull were too strict to be observed, and were almost all annulled by his successors. At the repeated solicitations of the *French* king, he granted him a bull for the alienation of the church revenues in *France*, to the amount of 50,000 crowns a year. As he was very intent upon aggrandizing the holy see, and thought it below the dignity of apostolic nuncios to live in hired houses, he intended about this time to purchase a palace for their residence, suitable to their rank, at each different court of *Europe*. The senate of *Venice*, upon hearing of his intention, immediately made a present of a palace to his nuncio in their city; which act of generosity was so agreeable to the pope, that he returned thanks in person to their ambassador at *Rome*, and presented the senate with a noble palace in the city, for the perpetual residence of their ambassador. However, he refused the same offer from other states, as he foresaw that it would be attended with very great inconveniences: and being informed of the death of the king of *Poland*, he sent a nuncio into that kingdom, to take care that

no prejudice should be done to the catholic religion at the future election.

The Romans MEAN while the *Romans*, out of gratitude to the pope, who had restored tranquillity and plenty to the ecclesiastical state, ordered a statue to be erected to him in the capitol.

him.

A. D. However, his patriot schemes did not prevent several pa-
1587. quins and satires from appearing against him, the authors of which he sometimes punished in a severe manner, and at other times desisted. This year he ordered a general chapter of the *Franciscan* order to be held at *Rome*, the whole expence of which he defrayed himself. He condescended to honour one of their meetings with his presence, and after the chapter broke up, he desired them all to attend at the *Vatican*, as he intended to grant every one of them some favour. This declaration occasioned great discontent and murmurings among the other orders; but, in the end, turned out to the mortification and confusion of the *Franciscans*. After *Sixtus* had heard all their requests, some of which were ridiculous and extravagant, he dismissed them all with an absolute refusal, alleging, that their desires had all been selfish, and inconsistent with their vows. However, he granted the petition of a poor lay-brother, which was of a public nature; and, at his request, ordered an elegant fountain to be erected in the convent of the holy apostles, which was in great want of water.

He erected
several
congrega-
tions of
cardinals:

FOR facilitating the administration of affairs, *Sixtus*, about this time, established fifteen congregations of cardinals, some of which had been instituted by other popes, but were now altered and new modelled by him (K). In the mean time, being

(K) The first of these is the congregation of the holy office established by *Pius IV.* and reformed by *Pius V.* It consists of at least twelve cardinals, with several other prelates and divines of different orders, who were called consultors of the holy office. The 2d, for expediting grants of reservation. The 3d, for erecting of new churches. The 4th, for providing the ecclesiastical state with corn. The 5th, for sacred rites and ceremonies. The 6th, for the defence of the ecclesiastical state, and the sup-

port of the fleet. The 7th, the congregation *delle indice*, to censure what books they think censurable. The 8th, for expounding the canons of the council of *Trent*. The 9th, the congregation *delli signori*, or *de bono regimine*, for redressing all grievances, oppressions, and vexations, of the subject. The 10th, for supporting universities. The 11th, for the consultations of the regulars of every order. The 12th, for the consultations of bishops, and the visitation of churches. The 13th, for the roads, bridges, and waters.

in

being informed that *Ernest*, the new elector of *Cologne*, on account of the opposition of the protestants, was thinking of resigning his archbishopric, and retiring to *Bavaria*, he sent the bishop of *Vercell* to dissuade him from that design, and wrote to those princes, who had formerly engaged as his auxiliaries, still to continue their assistance. He likewise wrote to the duke of *Parma* to assist the elector, and sent the abbot *Grimani*, his chamberlain, with the present of a consecrated hat and sword for the duke, who received them in the midst of his camp with great ceremony, after he had taken the cities of *Grave*, *Venlo*, and *Nuits* ² (L). About the same time also he sent a consecrated sword to the duke of *Guise*, the head of the league in *France*; and as the grand duke of *Tuscany* died at *Florence* without heirs, he allowed cardinal *di Medicis*, who succeeded him, to resign his hat, obliging him, for that indulgence, to make rich presents to the church of *St. John de Lateran* ^a. His nuncio in *Poland* informing him, that the archduke *Maximilian* had been elected king, by a party in that kingdom, he immediately sent him 22,000 ducats, to assist him against his competitor the prince of *Sweden*, who was chosen by another faction. At the earnest solicitation of the *Spaniards*, he excommunicated queen *Elizabeth* of *England*, who, in the beginning of the year, had put to death the queen of *Scotland*; which inhuman proceeding was looked upon with horror and detestation, both by protestants and papists. The queen in return excommunicated the pope, and all his adherents, and made great preparations to oppose the intended invasion of the *Spaniards* ^b.

He excommunicates Elizabeth queen of England, and

A.D. 1588.

As *Sixtus* was very earnest to see the formidable power of the *Spaniards* weakened by a war with *England*, he wrote to *Philip* with his own hands, exciting him to that enterprise, promising to bear part of the expence, and to advance a million of crowns as soon as he should be certainly in-
Philip of Spain.

^a STRADA de bell. Belg. Dec. ii. t. ii. xcii.

^b Idem, l. xciv.

^a THUAN. l.

in the ecclesiastical state. The 14th, for the printing-office in the *Vatican*. And the 15th, the congregation of state for the well government of the pope's dominions (1).

(L) The hilt and scabbard of the sword were set with jewels of great value. There were many also upon the hat, which was made of black velvet, fringed with gold (2).

(1) *Spond. Annal. ex t. ii. Bullar. Sixt. V. Sixt. V.*

(2) *Greg. Let. * vit. di*

formed that his forces had landed in England. At the recommendation of *Philip*, to whom he gave the investiture of England, he made *William Allen* a cardinal; and to encourage the *Spaniards*, he sent, for the use of the *Armada*, several large chests full of *agnis Dei*, medals, crucifixes, relicks, pardons, and indulgences, with which the men, especially the officers, were so loaded and incumbered, that they looked more like pilgrims than soldiers. The *Spaniards* pressed him earnestly to grant 500,000 crowns before the sailing of the fleet, but he absolutely refused their request; and upon being informed of the loss of the *Armada*, to prevent the king from making any demands upon him, he wrote a consolatory letter to him, in which he found great fault with the conduct of all his officers, attributing the unsuccessful issue of the expedition entirely to them. *Philip*, upon receiving his letter, discovered no emotion, and two days after returned an answer to the nuncio, declaring, that the misfortune of his fleet ought to be esteemed a loss common to them both, and that for the future he would leave him to fight the battles of the church himself.

He receives an
embassy
from Per-
sia:

DURING these transactions *Sixtus* had issued a bull for the abolition of *quarters*, or the privileges claimed by ambassadors, cardinals, nobles, or prelates, of protecting banditti and malefactors in their houses, declaring those who should any way obstruct the course of justice, *ipso facto*, excommunicated, and not to be absolved by any but the pope himself, except in the article of death. He likewise received an ambassador from the king of *Persia*, with great pomp and magnificence; and to give him a high idea of the grandeur of the *Roman* court, he ordered all the cardinals and prelates at *Rome* to be present at his first audience. The ambassador came to desire the assistance of the Christian princes against the *Turks*; but as *Philip* of *Spain* was then exhausting the strength and riches of his own kingdom in his war with *England* and the states of *Holland*, and in supporting the catholic league in *France*, and *Sixtus* was chiefly intent upon accumulating treasure for his design against *Naples*, the Christian powers discovered no inclination to embark in a crusade, and the ambassador was dismissed with many compliments and a few presents, after he had continued about a month at *Rome*.

He refuses
to assist the
duke of
Savoy
against
Geneva.

THE ambassador of the duke of *Savoy*, who came to demand the pope's assistance against the city of *Geneva*, was equally unsuccessful; for *Sixtus* considering that the undertaking would be attended with many difficulties, as the *Swiss* were interested in the preservation of that city, refused any

any assistance to the duke, and declared that the treasure of the church ought only to be employed in defending itself, or enlarging its own territories. At the earnest solicitation of the king of *Spain*, the pope, about this time, consented to canonize *Diego*, or *Didacus*, of *Alcala*, to obliterate, in some measure, by the splendor of that ceremony, the disgrace of his unsuccessful expedition against *England*. He likewise instituted the festivals of the presentation of the Virgin, and that of *St. Francis*, the founder of the *Franciscan* order, and canonized *St. Anthony* of *Padua*, and *St. Januarius* of *Naples*. Being attentive also to every opportunity of extending the influence and power of the holy see, he sent cardinal *Aldobrandino*, as his legate *a latere*, to *Poland*, upon hearing of the imprisonment of the archduke *Maximilian*, who had been defeated by his competitor *Sigismund*, prince of *Sweden*. *Aldobrandino* arrived in *Poland* about the end of *June*; and after a long and difficult negociation, at length, in the beginning of the following year, concluded a peace betwixt the *Poles* and the house of *Austria*, by which *Maximilian* renounced all right to that crown, and acknowledged *Sigismund* as king ^d.

DURING his absence *Sixtus* completed the famous *Vatican* library, and filled it with a great number of manuscripts in the *Hebrew*, *Arabie*, *Greek*, *Latin*, and most other languages, which he had collected, with immense labour and expence, from all parts of the world. He likewise wrote to the duke of *Guise*, commending his zeal for the catholic religion, and informing him, that he intended to send the bishop of *Brescia*, whom he had created a cardinal, as his legate *a latere* to *France*, to assist him with his authority and advice. Although the pope, from the beginning of his pontificate, had given great countenance to the catholic league in *France*, and had given the duke of *Guise* several marks of his favour and esteem, he expressed, however, very little concern upon the news of his murder, which was brought to *Rome* on the 5th of *January*, by an express from *Morosini*, his legate at the *French* court. He rather seemed to approve of it; and in a conversation with cardinal *Joyeuse*, a *Frenchman*, after some reflections upon the duke's unbounded ambition, and insolent behaviour towards the king, he said, "We should have done the same, if we had been in *Henry's* place."

A. D.
1589.

But a few days after, being informed that the cardinal *He ex* of *Guise*, the duke's brother, had likewise been put to death *presses*

© THUAN, l. 100.

^d Idem, ad fin. l. 88.

great re-
sentment
at the
murder of
cardi-
Guil

without a trial, and that the cardinal of *Bourbon*, and the archbishop of *Lyons* were imprisond, he sent for the *French* ambassador, and one *Giralamo Bon-di*, whom the king had sent to *Rome* to excuse his proceeding; and after bestowing many harsh names upon them, he upbraided the king of *France* in the severest terms. Next day he called a consistory, in which he exclaimed with great violence against the king, his rage or his grief obliging him to make several pauses in his speech *. He likewise reprimanded several cardinals who had ventured to excuse the murder, and appointed a congregation of several members of the sacred college to deliberate upon the state of *France*. Tho' he expressed great resentment against the king, he nevertheless gave but a very cold reception to the deputies of the *Parisians*, who a few weeks after arrived at *Rome*, requested an absolution from their oath of allegiance, and that he would grant a plenary indulgence to all those who should take arms against their prince, as seventy of the reverend members of the *Sorbonne* had declared that he had forfeited the throne. Each party, for several months, used their utmost endeavours to procure the friendship of the pope; but *Henry* absolutely refusing to set the cardinal of *Bourbon* and the archbishop of *Lyons* at liberty, *Sixtus* on the 24th of *May* published a monitory against him, threatening him with excommunication if he did not set the cardinal and archbishop at liberty before the 3d of *June*, and give information thereof within thirty days after to the apostolic see: besides, he cited the king, and all those concerned in the murder of the two *Guises*, to appear personally, or by proxy, within sixty days at *Rome*. Upon the publication of this decree or monitory, the cardinal *Joyeuse* retired to *Venice*, and the *French* ambassadors left *Rome*, and embarked at *Leghorn* for *Marseilles*. As intercessions had no effect upon the pope, the republic of *Venice*, and the dukes of *Tuscany* and *Mantua*, pressed the king of *France* to seize the county of *Avignon*, and to threaten to march an army to *Rome*; but he was prevented from following their advice by death, being assassinated on the 1st of *August*, by one *Clement*, a *Dominican* friar. ?

but praises
the mur-
derer of
the king.

Sixtus, upon being informed of the murder, made a premeditated speech in the consistory in praise of the assassin, whom he extolled above *Eleazar* and *Judith*; and as he affirmed that the king had died in mortal sin, by refusing obedience to his monitory, he ordered that no prayers should be made for his soul. However, he paid but little regard to

the deputation of the League; and, notwithstanding their solicitations, he refused to publish a crusade against the king of *Navarre*, who had been declared king of *France* by the other party. At first indeed, being deceived by their representations, he ordered cardinal *Cajetan*, whom he had appointed as his legate in *France*, to favour the election of cardinal *Bourbon*; but before his departure, having received a letter from the duke of *Luxemburgh*, acquainting him that the king of *Navarre* had been declared king of *France* by the greatest part of the nobility, and that he had appointed him as his ambassador at *Rome*, he wrote to those nobles who were in the king of *Navarre*'s camp, exhorting them to continue steadily in the catholic faith, and declaring that he was indifferent who was their king, provided he was but a catholic. He likewise wrote to the duke of *Luxemburgh*, desiring him to come to *Rome*; and gave new instructions to cardinal *Cajetan*, ordering him to favour the election of a catholic king, without specifying any person; which proceeding greatly facilitated the establishment of the king of *Navarre*, or *Henry IV.* upon the throne of *France*.

THO' the king of *Spain* was greatly disoblged by this behaviour of the pope, yet another affair happened about this time, at which he expressed much more dissatisfaction. *Sixtus*, during these transactions with *France*, had published an Italian version of the Bible from the vulgar *Latin*, which gave a general offence to all the *Roman* catholics. The most zealous of the cardinals wrote to *Philip*, intreating him to prevail with the pope to suppress the edition; and several of them, with the *Spanish* ambassador, ventured to expostulate with *Sixtus* against the book; but he treated them with contempt, and only said, "We do it for the benefit of you ^{gives of-} ^{fence to the} ^{Roman} ^{catholics.} who ^{He pub-} ^{lishes an} ^{edition} ^{of the bible} ^{in the vul-} ^{gar} ^{tongue,} ^{which} ^{gives of-} ^{fence to the} ^{Roman} ^{catholics.} who

(M) Some authors have affirmed, that *Sixtus* never published an edition of the bible in *Italian*; but *Gregorio Leti* assures us, that there were in his time several copies of such an edition to be seen in the library of the grand duke of *Tuscany*, in that of *St. Lawrence*, and the *Ambrosian* at *Milan*, besides two copies in the public library at *Geneva*, and several others; and that he himself had read in a manuscript history of those times, that the cardinal of *Toledo*, when he found that the pope absolutely refused to suppress the edition, said, "How has God abandoned his church! may he be pleased soon to deliver us from this wicked pope!" He cites likewise *Philip Britius*, who in the 347th page of his

who was a great bigot, not being able to prevail with the pope to suppress the edition, and besides being offended with him for neglecting to support the catholic interest in *England*, and countenancing the king of *Navarre* and his party, resolved to call a general council in his dominions, and to cite the pope to appear before it, if he should oppose his design. He accordingly ordered *Olivarez*, his ambassador at *Rome*, to notify his resolution to the pope in a public manner; but *Sixtus* being informed by his spies, that *Olivarez* intended to present a paper to him for that purpose, at a solemn cavalcade that he had appointed upon his going to reside at his new palace at *St. John de Lateran*, he ordered the governor of *Rome* immediately to precede his person at the procession with the hangman and 200 guards, and to seize any one that should offer to present a paper to him, and to put him to death upon the spot. *Olivarez* hearing of this general order, was afraid to appear at the procession; which difficulty, in the beginning of the opposition, influenced the king to drop his design of assembling a council, and to think of more moderate measures.

He confers honour and wealth on his relations. SIXTUS, in the mean time, was not forgetful to aggrandize his own family by riches, honours, and noble alliances. He gave his nephew, cardinal *Montalto*, the value of 250,000 crowns in houses, rich furniture, plate, and jewels, besides an income of 100,000 crowns a year in estate and ecclesiastical benefices. He gave the eldest of his nieces, *Donna Orsina*, then seventeen years of age, to *Mark Anthony Colonna*, prince of *Sonnino*, with a fortune of 126,000 crowns; and to enable him to pay his debts, he lent him 400,000 crowns out of the apostolic chamber for ten years, without interest. And the youngest of his nieces, *Donna Flavia*, he gave with the same fortune to *Virginus Ursino*, who had a yearly estate of 100,000 crowns, and whose family was superior to any in *Italy*, except that of *Colonna*. These marriages were celebrated with great pomp and magnificence, and the two young brides were both of a disposition that would have done honour to the most exalted birth. For his other nephew, *Michael Peretti*, he purchased the principality of *Venetrol*, the marquisate of *Lamentado*, and the county or earldom of *Celano*. He gave him besides an estate of 60,000 crowns a year, and two superb palaces, one in the country, and an-

his annals, printed at *Paris* in 1663, says, *Inter hæc mortuus est Romæ Sixtus V. editis Bibliis* (1).

(1) *Greg. Let. v. ut supra.*

other at *Rome*, and contracted an alliance betwixt him and a princefs of the *Colonna* family.

IN resentment for the behaviour of *Philip* of *Spain*, he gave a very favourable reception to the duke of *Luxemburgh*, the ambassador of *Henry IV.* of *France*, who arrived at *Rome* in the beginning of *January*. At the same time he sent his master of the ceremonies to count *Olivarez*, acquainting him that he did not intend to acknowledge him for the future as ambassador, and that he had sent an express to the king his master, to inform him of his intention. *Philip*, who was at this time greatly embarrassed with the affairs of *France* and the *Low Countries*, dissembled this affront, and recalling *Olivarez*, sent the duke of *Sessa* in his room; however, he ordered the *Spanish* clergy to preach up the great necessity of assisting the league against king *Henry*, and even encouraged them to censure the pope's lukewarmness in that cause. *Olivarez*, till the arrival of *Sessa*, was allowed to act as ambassador, and, in his master's name, was very urgent with the pope to dismiss the duke of *Luxemburgh*, and to denounce a sentence of excommunication against *Henry IV.* and all his followers. He likewise attended *Sessa* when he required the pope, in his master's name, to declare himself protector of the league, and to enter into an alliance with *Philip*, for placing a catholic king upon the crown of *France*. *Sixtus* was greatly offended with the king of *Spain*, for offering to direct him whom to absolve and whom to condemn; and that he might shun the proposed alliance, he declared, that he intended to write to the nobles and cities in *France* to elect a catholic king, otherwise he himself would chuse one^f. Hearing about the same time that his legate *Cajetan*, contrary to his instructions, openly declared for the league, had taken up his residence at *Paris*, which they had made their head quarters, had encouraged his chaplains to preach against the king, and refused to consult with those cardinals who adhered to the king's party, he revoked the letters of exchange, which he had given him for 300,000 crowns upon the bankers of *Lyons*, and recalled the most turbulent of his chaplains to *Rome*.

A. D.
1590.

*He refuses
to declare
for the
league in
France.*

ALTHOUGH his attention at this time was greatly engaged with the affairs of *France*, he was no less vigilant in the government of his own dominions; and as all *Italy*, and particularly the ecclesiastical state, was afflicted this year with a severe famine, he excused the people their taxes, and lent

^f Idem, l. xcvi. SPOND. ANNAL.

He threatens to invade Naples.

He dies at Rome.

money, which however he did very sparingly (N). By the advice of cardinal *Aldobrandino* he published a sumptuary law, for repressing the great luxury and extravagance that prevailed at *Rome*, which law was immediately conformed to, and was so strictly observed during the few remaining months of his pontificate, that no one incurred the penalty for disobedience. He limited the number of cardinals to seventy, and confirmed the decrees of *Julius II.* prohibiting to give the hat to two brothers, which prohibition he even extended to a more remote degree of consanguinity. As he had undertaken to drain the fens and marshes about *Terracina*, he went about this time to that city, under pretence of seeing the progress of the works, but with the intention, as it was suspected, of invading the kingdom of *Naples*, as he had ordered a considerable body of troops to march to that frontier, to prevent, as he said, the incursions of the banditti. The *Spaniards*, alarmed at the motions of the pope, sent 4000 troops towards their frontiers, under pretence of driving the banditti out of their dominions, but in reality to oppose the papal forces; by which disposition the pope was deterred from commencing hostilities, and returned suddenly to *Rome*, where he died on the 27th of *August*, in the 69th year of his age, and the 6th of his pontificate. As he was troubled some months before he died with an intense pain in the head, his death was attributed by many people to poison, which was supposed to have been given him by the *Spaniards*.

HE advanced the power and grandeur of the holy see, during the few years that he reigned, more than all his predecessors put together, for almost 100 years before: and notwithstanding the great works that he carried on and finish-

(N) The famine was so severe, that the flesh of asses, dogs, cats, and mice, was reckoned a delicacy, and a pound of coarse bread was sold for thirteen pence, or six shillings and six pence. However, the rigour of the pope had so great an effect, that there was not the least theft or robbery committed in the city, tho', to make a trial of their honesty, he had caused a waggon load of bread to be brought to *Rome* from some dis-

tance. So great a reformation had he wrought in the manners of the *Romans*, that the governor of the city told him one day, that the place of judge was now become a perfect finecure; to which he answered, "If he thought the people would relapse into their former licentiousness after he was dead, he would hang them all whilst he was alive." (1).

(1) *Greg. Let. ut supra*

ed, at his death he left 5,000,000 of crowns in his treasury, which by a bull he prohibited from being used, except upon the most pressing necessity. It is supposed, however, that he intended this treasure as a fund for his expedition against *Naples*, which he delayed only in expectation of the death of *Philip II.* vainly hoping that he himself would have lived ten years longer. The money that he had amassed, was chiefly raised upon his own subjects, who, during his pontificate, were heavily taxed; but as he had introduced a spirit of industry among them, they were not so oppressed with the taxes, as they had been by their former poverty and indigence. Besides, he increased his fund by retrenching yearly pensions, to the amount of 60,000 crowns, by selling the chief places and offices of his court, by the commutations for the punishment of crimes, and by the strictest personal frugality and œconomy. He was indefatigable in business, and took the management of the minutest affairs wholly into his own hands: he slept little, and had no stated time of going to bed. Tho' he was remarkably abstemious while he was cardinal, yet, after his promotion, he made hearty meals, his spirits being exhausted by his incessant labour, which he would not even intermit in his last illness, but followed strictly the maxim of *Vespasian*, which he often repeated, *That a prince ought to die standing*, that is, labouring to the very last moment of his life for the good of his country.

EIGHTEEN days after the death of *Sixtus*, cardinal *Cas-tagna* was unanimously elected pope, and assumed the name *VII. is e-* of *Urban VII.* He enjoyed the pontificate only thirteen days, *lected pope.* and died before his coronation, on the 27th of *September.* His death. He had then entered the 70th year of his age, and was born at *Rome*, his father being a noble *Genoese*, and his mother a *Roman*, of the family of the *Ricci*. His piety and learning had rendered him illustrious; and as he had great experience, and had gone through all the degrees of the court, the pontificate was assigned to him by the universal voice, even before the death of *Sixtus* ⁵.

UPON the death of *Urban VII.* the *Roman* see was vacant two months and nine days, occasioned by the great factions in the conclave, where there were no less than fifty-four cardinals, sixteen of whom were candidates for the pontificate. After several scrutinies, cardinal *Montalto* was prevailed upon to go over with his party to the *Spanish* faction, and by that means a legal majority was procured for *Nicolas Sfondrati*, cardinal of *Cremona*, who was elected on the 5th of

Gregory XIV. is chosen. *December*, and took the name of *Gregory XIV.* His father, after the death of his wife, had been created a cardinal, and he himself, after he had been some time senator at *Milan*, embraced an ecclesiastical life, and was created bishop of *Cremona* by *Pius IV.* under which title he remained three years at the council of *Trent.* *Gregory XIII.* created him a cardinal, in gratitude to whom he assumed the same name upon his promotion to the pontificate. He was crowned with the usual solemnities, and began his pontificate with restoring those *Romans* to their places and offices, whom *Sixtus V.* had deprived. He likewise made a present of 1000 crowns to each of the cardinals, provided against the scarcity and dearth of corn and other provisions, and in the first consistory, which he held on the 19th of *December*, created one of his nephews a cardinal.

He declares for the league. IN the beginning of the following year he published a jubilee, granting indulgences to all those who should offer up their prayers to God in his behalf; and, at the instigation of the *Spanish* ambassador, he declared for the catholic league in *France*, writing on the 20th of *January* to the bishop of *Placenza*, whom cardinal *Cajetan* had left at *Paris*, and promising to furnish the catholics with 15000 crowns a month out of the apostolic treasury, as long as he should see it necessary for their defence. The bishop of *Placenza* caused this letter to be printed and dispersed in *France*, with another from himself in praise of the pope's generosity. The *Spanish* faction, however, were not yet satisfied; but being seconded by the cardinal of *Lorrain* and the duke of *Maine's* secretary, they pressed the pope to send an army into *France*, and to grant a power to the duke of *Maine* to alienate the ecclesiastical benefices in that kingdom. *Gregory* by no means would consent to this last request; but being unexperienced in the management of great affairs, he agreed to their first demand, and sent an army over the *Alps*, under the command of his nephew *Hercules Sfondrati*, whom he had created duke of *Mont Marcian*.

and excommunicates Henry IV. IN the mean time he again wrote two letters to *France*, by which he declared *Henry IV.* excommunicated, and deprived of all his possessions, and threatened the nobles with ecclesiastical censures, if they did not desert his cause, and also all the clergy with excommunication and deposition, if they did not, within thirty days, declare against him. These letters were approved by the parliament of *Paris*; but the other parliaments of the kingdom, particularly that of *Chalons*, which was a part of that of *Paris*, appealed from them to a future council, declared them derogatory to the rights of the kingdom, and to the liberties

liberties of the *Gallican* church, and ordered them to be burnt in the market place by the common hangman. King *Henry* likewise published an edict, or declaration, against them; and the prelates of his party assembling at *Chartres*, published a letter, addressed to all the catholics, declaring them of no obligation, and that they intended soon to send an embassy to the pope, to inform him fully of the justice of their cause. They were prevented, however, from sending this embassy, by the death of the pope, who having been afflicted during his whole pontificate with the stone, died, on the 15th of *October*, in the 57th year of his age. During his transactions with the chiefs of the league, he had created seven cardinals, had indulged the cardinal friars with the privilege of wearing red hats, and had given the investiture of the duchy of *Ferrara* to duke *Alphonfus*, who, as he had no issue, came to *Rome* to solicit the renewal of his fief in favour of some of his relations, but without any effect ^h.

He dies at Rome.

On the 28th of *October*, thirteen days after the death of *Gregory*, *John Anthony Fachinetti*, cardinal of *Santi Quatro*, was elected pope, with the unanimous consent of the whole conclave, and assumed the name of *Innocent IX.* His parents were natives of *Gravegni*, a city of *Navarre*, but he was born at *Bologna*, where he was also educated. Coming afterwards to *Rome*, he passed thro' several degrees of preferment, and was at length created cardinal by *Gregory XIII.* at the same time with his two predecessors. Immediately after his election he renewed the antient custom, and wrote to all patriarchs, archbishops, and primates, informing them of his promotion. He then applied himself to relieve the necessities of his subjects, by publishing a regulation of the prices of provisions, and ordering the barons of *Rome* to bring their corn into the city. In the mean time he was seized with a distemper, of which he died on the 29th of *December*, in the 73d year of his age, having enjoyed the pontificate only two months.

Innocent IX. is elected.

His death.

THERE never were greater disputes at the election of a pope than at this present vacancy. On the 11th of *January* fifty-three cardinals entered the conclave, where the *Spanish* faction immediately proposed five candidates, none of whom could procure a legal majority. After long disputes and intrigues, which are particularly related by *Thuanus* ⁱ, *Montalto* at length proposed cardinal *Aldobrandino*, who he knew was not disagreeable to the king of *Spain*. A majority immediately declared for him; and, on the 28th of *January*, he

A. D. 1592.

^h SPOND. ANNAL. ⁱ THUAN. l. ciii.

Clement VIII. *electd pope.* was elected pope, and assumed the name of *Clement VIII.* (O). Upon the news of his promotion, he appeared filled with great fear and confusion, and let fall abundance of tears. He continued silent when the master of the ceremonies asked him if he would accept of the pontifical dignity; and before he would sit upon the throne, he fell down upon his knees and prayed at the altar. Immediately after his coronation he published a bull, declaring his intention of visiting all the churches, monasteries, convents, and religious houses, in *Rome*, exhorting all to an external and internal reformation before the visitation, which was to commence on the 14th of *June*. As the banditti were again beginning to commit outrages in the ecclesiastical state, he ordered some troops to march against them; and soon after he published a bull against duelling, denouncing an anathema against all those who should give, receive, or carry, a challenge, and a sentence of interdict against the places where duels should be fought ^k.

He espouses the interest of the league. In the mean time, at the instigation of the *Spanish* faction, he espoused the interests of the league in *France*, and on the 15th of *April* wrote to *Sega*, his legate at *Paris*, who had been created a cardinal by his predecessor, charging him to procure the election of a catholic king. His letter was published in the month of *October* at *Paris*, and registred by the parliament of that city: however, the parliament at *Chalons* published an edict against it, and exhorted all the prelates, princes, peers, and others, to persevere in their allegiance to the king. The bishops likewise of the king's party entered into several deliberations, derogatory to the authority of the pope, and sent the cardinal *de Gondy* and the marquis of *Pi-*

^k SPOND. ANNAL.

(O) *Hippolito Aldobrandino* was born at *Fano*, a city of the ecclesiastical state, on the coast of the *Adriatic*. He was descended of a very antient family, originally called *Aldebrando*, or *Hildebrando*, which had resided at *Florence* near 1000 years, and had enjoyed the office of *Gonfaloniere* of that city twenty-three different times. He received the first rudiments of his education at *Rome*, and studied afterwards at *Ferrara* and *Bologna*, where he received his doctor's decree: He was distinguished by his natural eloquence and the probity of his disposition; and his brother *John* having been created a cardinal by *Pius V.* he succeeded him as auditor of the *Rota*. *Sixtus V.* created him a cardinal, and sent him as his legate *a latere* to *Poland*, where, by his successful negotiation, he acquired a great reputation.

fani,

Pisani, as their deputies to *Clement*, to give him true information of the affairs of *France*. *Pisani* stopt at the lake de la *Garde*, in the *Venetian* territories, and the cardinal proceeded on his journey; but, in his passage through *Tuscany*, he received a charge from the pope, forbidding him to enter the ecclesiastical territories, as he had not acted like a good Christian, by openly favouring the king of *Navarre*, who was a relapsed heretic. *Gondy*, however, having excused his proceedings, was soon after permitted to continue his journey, on condition that he should not, openly or secretly, favour heretics¹.

DURING his residence at *Rome*, the catholics of the league, in consequence of a proclamation from the duke of *Mayenne*, assembled at *Paris* to elect a king. The cardinal legate likewise wrote to the catholics of the king's party, inviting them to be present at the assembly. They, however, paid no regard to his letter; but published a declaration at *Chartres*, proposing a conference with the chiefs of the league; which was accordingly agreed to, and held in the beginning of *May*, at a village within two leagues of *Paris*. *Henry IV.*, *Henry* to defeat the designs of his enemies, about this time was persuaded to embrace the *Roman* catholic religion; and having solemnly renounced *Calvinism*, and made a public profession of the faith of the holy see, received absolution and a benediction from the archbishop of *Berry*. By this conversion of the king, *Philip* of *Spain*, and the chiefs of the league, were greatly confounded; however, they still hoped to prevent the succession of *Henry*. A subject of *Spain* published a short treatise at *Rome*, wherein he endeavoured to prove, that the apostolic see had no authority to dispense with a relapsed heretic, with regard to the succession of a kingdom; which treatise was answered by *Arnold*, afterwards cardinal *Ossat*, who was then in *Italy*. The pope likewise sent *Anthony Possevin*, a *Jesuit*, who had formerly been legate in *Russia*, to the *Alps*, to meet the duke of *Nevers*, the king's ambassador, and to inform him that he would not receive him in that character, as he had not yet acknowledged the king. Notwithstanding this declaration, the duke still continued his journey; however, he received a second message from the pope, ordering him to enter *Rome* as a private person, with a small retinue, and limiting the time of his residence to ten days. *Clement* granted him two audiences in the end of *November*; but absolutely refused to absolve the king, or to grant him his benediction, declaring, that he would not believe his conversion real, unless he was assured of it by an angel¹.

A.D.

1593.

¹ THUAN. ut sup.

from heaven. But that he might still keep both parties in suspense, by the advice of his legate in *France*, and the duke of *Mayenne*, he did not urge the departure of *Nevers*, tho' he swore in the consistory, that he would never grant absolution to *Henry*^m. During these transactions he published a bull, banishing all the *Jews* from the ecclesiastical territories, excepting the cities of *Rome*, *Ancona*, and *Avignon*; and by another he prohibited any one from possessing or reading the *Talmud*, and several other *Jewish* booksⁿ.

A. D. 1594. and dismissed his ambassador. IN the beginning of the following year he admitted the duke of *Nevers* to another conference; but tho' he again demanded absolution for the king, and whether it was lawful for catholics to be present with him at the celebration of mass, or how they were to proceed in *France* with regard to the nomination to vacant bishoprics, he could receive no satisfactory answer from him; on which account he soon after left *Rome*, and returned to *France*, causing a journal of his embassy to be printed at *Venice*; to which he added a spirited remonstrance, complaining of the partiality of the pope, and the injustice of his legate; and proving, by many arguments and authorities, that the king had been legally absolved.

ALTHO' *Clement* behaved with great rigour towards the *French* ambassador, he about the same time received two monks, who came as ambassadors from the patriarch of *Alexandria*, with great kindness and civility. In the beginning of his pontificate he had sent a nuncio into *Egypt*, by whose persuasion the patriarch was prevailed upon to write to the pope, and to acknowledge him as the supreme head of all Christians. The two monks, who brought this letter, were treated with great magnificence, and, during their residence at *Rome*, were maintained at the pope's expence. In the beginning of the following year they made a public profession of the faith of the church of *Rome*, rejecting the *Nestorian*, *Eutychian*, and *Discoran* heresies, and sent a copy of their confession to *Egypt*; where it was confirmed and published by the patriarch.

1595. IN the mean time, notwithstanding the opposition of the cardinal legate, *Henry IV.* was acknowledged as king by some of the chiefs of the league; and, being admitted into *Paris*, received the submission of several cities, formerly attached to the *Guisian* faction; namely, *Lyons*, *Orleans*, *Berry*, *Rouen*, *Rheims*, and others. However, as there was an attempt made upon his life, towards the end of *December*, by a dis-

^m Idem, l. cvii & cviii.

ⁿ SPOND. Annal.

ciple of the *Jesuits*, who had been taught by them, that it was a meritorious action to kill the king; and as many other religious orders still looked upon him as a person excommunicated, and therefore refused to pray for him, the king, at the request of the clergy and divines, sent *Davy du Perron*, bishop of *Eureux*, as his ambassador to the pope, again to solicit apostolical absolution. The pope, now persuaded of the justice of the king's cause by the prosperity of his affairs, gave him assurances of a reconciliation; and *Perron* arriving at *Rome* about the middle of *July*, he immediately ordered supplications to be made through all the churches, and the prayer of forty hours to be recited for imploring divine assistance in such a weighty affair. He himself likewise, two successive mornings, went bare-footed from his palace to the church of *St. Mary Major*, where he celebrated mass; weeping, upon his return, at each station, without looking up, or giving any benediction as usual to the people. During these supplications and processions, every fifth day he consulted one of the cardinals about the conditions of the absolution. Those of the *Spanish* faction, in hopes of rendering the embassy unsuccessful, proposed extremely hard conditions, which were rejected by *Perron* and *Ossat*; who, after long disputes, at length agreed with the pope upon sixteen conditions; the chief of which were, that the king should promise obedience to the apostolic see; should restore the catholic religion in the principality of *Bearn*; should build a monastery or nunnery in each province of his kingdom, and should cause the decrees of the council of *Trent* to be published and observed throughout all his dominions. The ambassadors swearing to the performance of the articles agreed to, *Clement*, with great solemnity, granted absolution to the king on the 17th of *September* 4.

A FEW weeks after, he received an embassy from the metropolitan of *Kiovia* and all *Russia*, and from other bishops in *Lithuania* and *Poland*, who followed the rites of the *Greek* church, professing their desire of an union with the church of *Rome*. The archbishop of *Livonia* likewise, about the same time, arrived at the city with his nephew, and abjured the doctrines of *Luther*; but the joy on account of these new converts was soon greatly abated; for accounts arrived in *Europe*, that the *Alexandrian* embassy had been a forgery, and it was publicly reported, that the *Russians* had disclaimed the submission of their metropolitan, and refused to acknow-

* THUAN. l. cx, cxi. cxiii.
ibid.

P OSSAT, epist. iii.

* Ibid.

*Sends an
army to
Hungary
to the as-
sistance of
the empe-
ror ;*

A. D.
1596.

lege any subjection to the *Roman see* *. During these trans- actions, *Clement*, at the earnest sollicitation of the emperor, had sent his relation *Francis Allobrandino*, with 2000 horse and 8000 foot, into *Hungary* ; who, having joined the imperial army, commanded by the count of *Mansfield* and the archduke *Matthias*, defeated the *Turks* before *Gran* or *Strigonia*, and obliged the city to surrender on the 2d of *September*. He likewise sent a nuncio to the emperor, to negotiate an alliance betwixt him and the *Poles* against the *Turks*, and ordered him to promise, in his name, 40,000 crowns a month to *Bathori*, prince of *Transilvania*, who had come to *Prague*, to have a conference with *Rodolphus*, and to solicit succours against the infidels. *Clement* at the same time prohibited *Bathori* from attacking the *Poles*, who had seized upon *Moldavia*, and offered himself as a mediator betwixt them, requiring them both to submit to his arbitration. He could not, however, prevail with the king of *Poland* to accept of him as mediator in the dispute with *Bathori*, nor could cardinal *Cajetan*, who a few months after was sent as his legate to *Poland*, persuade the diet to agree to an alliance against the *Turks* †.

*and card-
inal de
Medicis
as his le-
gate to
France.*

A. D.
1597.

In the mean time the pope sent *Alexander de Medicis*, cardinal of *Florence*, as his legate to *France*, to receive the ratification of the articles agreed to by the *French* ambassadors at *Rome*, and to certify the apostolical absolution granted to the king. He was received with great respect, upon the confines of the kingdom, and conducted, by the governors of the provinces thro' which he passed, to *Chastres*, within eight leagues of *Paris* ; where, the king, attended by several nobles, paid him a congratulatory visit. A few days after he was received into *Paris* with great magnificence ; and, in consequence of the king's edict, his instructions, or his faculties, as they are usually called, were registred by the parliament, without any particular limitation. On the 12th of *August* he was admitted to a public audience, when the king confirmed the conditions of his absolution agreed to by his ambassadors at the court of *Rome*. A few months after *Henry* appointed *Francis Luxembourg*, duke of *Pirky*, as his ambassador to the pope ; who did not arrive at *Rome* till the following year in the middle of *April*. His reception was very different from what he received in his first embassy ; for the pope now strove, by his kindness, to obliterate the remembrance of his former morose behaviour. A triumphal arch was erected at the gate through which the ambassador

* THUAN. l. cxiv. SPOND. ANNAL.

† THUAN. l. cxv.
passed,

passed, and the next day after his entrance into the city he was admitted to an audience in the *Vatican*. After he had solemnly yielded obedience, in the king's name, to his holiness, he was invited by him to an entertainment; at which both the pope and he dined in the same room, but at different tables. Mean while, by means of his legate in *France*, and nuncio in *Spain*, he earnestly solicited both *Philip* and *Henry* to agree to a peace. As *Henry* was now firmly established on the throne of *France*, and *Philip* began to feel the infirmities of old age, and to be sensible of the dismal effects of his extravagant ambition, the mediation of his holiness thereby became acceptable to both; and by means of a *Franciscan*, employed by cardinal *de Medicis*, *Henry's* secretary, agreed to a conference with a deputy from the governor of *Flanders*, when they appointed the negotiations for a peace to be held at *Vervins*.

WHILE these preliminaries were settling in *France*, Italy The pope was threatened with new commotions by the death of *Alphonso* duke of *Ferrara*. As the duke had no issue, he left all his estates, by his will, to a bastard-relation named *Cesar d'Este*; who, upon his death, immediately took possession of his dominions, and wrote to the Christian princes, informing them of his succession. He likewise sent an ambassador to *Rome*, with a letter to the pope; who alleged, that as *Alphonso* had died without issue, his sief had devolved to the holy see. He therefore, upon reading the titles assumed by *Cesar*, threw away the letter, dismissed his ambassador, and immediately assembled a considerable body of forces, which he sent, under the command of his nephew cardinal *Aldobrandino*, into the territory of *Bologna*; published a monitory against *Cesar*, denouncing an anathema against him, if he did not immediately renounce his claim to *Ferrara*; and cited him to appear at *Rome* within fifteen days, under pain of being declared a rebel. *Cesar*, at first, paid no regard to the pope's menaces, but, raising an army, gained a small advantage over the papal troops; however, as the Christian princes refused to engage in this quarrel, and *Henry IV.* of *France* openly declared for the pope, he thought proper to agree to an accommodation; which was concluded on the 11th of *January* on these conditions: that *Cesar*, and all those who had espoused his cause, should be absolved from excommunication; that he should renounce all right to *Ferrara*, and all territories belonging to the church; that he should have leave to carry off one half of the attillery,

The pope claims the duchy of Ferrara, upon the death of duke Alphonso II. and

A. D. 1598. *Cesar d'Este renounces his pretensions to it.*

* Idem, l. cxix.

and to keep the allodial possessions of the family; that he should enjoy the same rank at *Rome* as the late duke *Alphonso*, and should retain the titles of duke of *Modena* and *Reggio*, which cities, with that of *Carpi*, being under the imperial jurisdiction, the emperors *Maximilian* and *Rodolphus* had permitted *Alphonso* to leave them, by his will, to *Cesar*. The news of this accommodation was received at *Rome* with great joy, especially by *Clement*, who confirmed the conditions agreed to, and, on the 11th of *February*, published a bull, uniting the city and duchy of *Ferrara* to the apostolic see, and dedicated them for ever to the virgin *Mary* and the apostles *Peter* and *Paul*. In order to settle the affairs of that new acquisition, he soon after left *Rome*; and, proceeding thro' the ecclesiastical state with great pomp and ceremony, arrived at *Ferrara* on the 8th of *May*, attended by twenty-seven cardinals; where he continued till the end of *November* ^u.

It is united to the ecclesiastical state.

A peace concluded by his mediation betwixt France and Spain.

A FEW days before he arrived at this city, a peace was concluded between *France* and *Spain* at *Vervins*, by the mediation of his legate in *France*, and his nuncio, *Francis Gonzaga*, bishop of *Modena*, after a negociation of four months; some disputes, however, between king *Henry* and the duke of *Savoy* being still left undecided, and referred to the arbitration of the pope. About the same time, a match having been concluded between *Isabella*, sister of the king of *Spain*, and her cousin, cardinal *Albert*, the emperor's brother, and governor of *Flanders*, he solemnly resigned his hat and sacerdotal habit in the church of *St. Mary of Halle*, near *Brussels*; and, proceeding to *Germany*, went from thence with *Margaret of Austria*, daughter of the archduke *Charles*, deceased, to *Ferrara*. An alliance had likewise been concluded between *Margaret of Austria* and her cousin *Philip III.* of *Spain*, who had succeeded to that crown by the death of his father, while she was on her journey to *Ferrara*. The pope received *Albert* and *Margaret* with great honour and respect; and, having granted both parties a dispensation, with regard to the degrees of consanguinity, he himself celebrated both marriages on the 15th of *November*, in the cathedral church, the archduke standing sponsor for the king of *Spain*, and the *Spanish* ambassador for the infant *Isabella* ^w. A few days after, the pope, having conferred a great many privileges on the city of *Ferrara*, left that place, and proceeded to *Rome*; where he arrived on the 20th of *December*. The joy expressed by the *Romans* for his

^u THUAN. l. cxix. SPOND. Annal.

^w THUAN. l. cxxi.

return was quickly allayed by a dreadful inundation of the *A great* Tyber, occasioned by the frequent rains, and a strong south *inundation* wind, which stopt the current of the river. The waters *of the Ty-* swelled three palms higher than they were ever remembered *ber at* to have done before, so that, on *Christmas-day*, the whole *Rome.* city was covered, excepting only the seven mountains, and a *A.D.* few other rising grounds. Upwards of 1000 people perished, *1599.* and the city received more damage than if it had been plundered by an enemy *. The charity of the pope, and of several cardinals, was very conspicuous during this public calamity, by alleviating the distresses of the poor, and furnishing them with provisions. After the inundation had ceased, he, to the utmost of his power, supplied the losses which particular persons had suffered; and, attributing the calamity more to the sins of the people than to natural causes, he published a bull, exhorting all to repentance, and to works of charity, appointing likewise supplications, and granting general indulgencies.

Soon after he was greatly afflicted with the news of the publication of the edict of *Nantz*, by which liberty of conscience was granted to the *Hugonots* of *France*; however, by the representations of cardinal *Ossat*, he was in some measure reconciled to the king's proceeding; and a few months after, at his request, he appointed delegates to examine into the validity of his marriage with *Margaret* of *Valois*. He likewise consented to act as arbitrator in the differences betwixt him and the duke of *Savoy*, concerning the marquise of *Sakres*; but the duke refusing to deposit the disputed territories in the pope's hands, and alleging, that he had engaged, by private agreement, to decide in favour of the king, *Clement* with indignation rejected the arbitration, as his integrity and justice had been called in question by such a suspicion. In the mean time, the corpse of *St. Cæcilia* being lately found, he, with great solemnity, transferred it to the church of that name; and, as the following year was the *A jubilee* commencement of a new century, according to the common *celebrated* computation, he published a bull for the celebration of a *at Rome.* jubilee at *Rome*; where he ordered great preparations to be *A.D.* made for the reception and entertainment of the pilgrims. *1600.* He wrote also to all Christian princes, exhorting them to give no interruption to those who should undertake a journey to *Rome*, to receive the benefit of the indulgences, which he suspended for one year in all other places; and on the last day of *December*, in the evening, he, with the usual ceremony,

* Idem ibid.

y SPOND. ANNAL.

opened the holy gate of *St. Peter's*, while three of the cardinals at the same time opened the gates of *St. Paul's*, in the road to *Ostia*, *St. John's* in the *Lateran*, and *St. Mary Major's*.

THE number of those, who, during the holy year, resorted to *Rome* on account of religion or curiosity, was immensely great. Besides, many nobles and princes came to *Rome*, among whom was the duke of *Bavaria*, and *Andrew* cardinal of *Austria*, both incognito, in the habit of pilgrims; likewise the dukes of *Bar* and *Parmà*, the *French* king's ambassador, and the viceroy of *Naples*; who yielded obedience to the pope, in the name of the new king of *Spain*. Among the strangers were also said to be many protestants and *Turks*, several of whom embraced the faith of the church of *Rome*². The duke of *Bar* came to *Rome* to endeavour to obtain a dispensation for his marriage with the king of *France's* sister, *Catharine*, whom he had married the year before, tho' she was his own cousin, and a *Huguenot*. The pope absolutely refused his request, unless *Catharine* would abjure the heresy of *Calvin*, and profess the *Roman* faith; which conditions she rejected with great constancy. As the duke, however, promised to dismiss her publicly, he was absolved from all his past sins, admitted to the sacred communion, and allowed the benefit of the indulgences of the jubilee (P).

CLEMENT shewed himself more complaisant to the king of *France*, with regard to his marriage; and, at the request of his ambassador, he readily confirmed the sentence of the delegates, who had declared his marriage null, because his queen *Margaret* was within the third degree of consanguinity, and altho' he had obtained a dispensation from *Gregory XIII.* yet that had no effect, as it had been granted without the desire and knowledge of *Margaret*, and the king had not then truly abjured his heresy. For these and some other frivolous reasons, the delegates had declared the marriage null

The pope
annuls the

² Idem ibid.

² OSSAT, epist. ccxviii. ccxli.

(P) The dispensation was granted three years afterwards, the duchess having pretended a desire of conversion; but she died before it took effect in Feb. 1604. *Thucæus*, in the 124th book of his history, gives a dif-

ferent account, and says, that the duke immediately obtained a dispensation from the pope, without any difficulty. We have preferred the authority of cardinal *Ossat* then at *Rome* (1).

(1) *Ossat Epist.*

from the beginning. The pope, remembering the fatal *marriage* consequences of the behaviour of his predecessor *Clement VII.* of the king to *Henry VIII.* of *England*, confirmed their sentence without of *France*. any difficulty; and, as the king had declared his intention of marrying *Mary de Medicis*,^a daughter of the late grand duke of *Tuscany*, he presented the bride with 100,000 crowns, besides many rich jewels, and sent his nephew, cardinal *Adobrandino*, as his legate to *Florence*; who, on the 5th of *October*, solemnized the nuptials with great pomp, *Henry IV.* having sent *Bellegarde*, his master of the horse, to be his proxy^b. From *Florence* the legate proceeded to *Savoy*; and, having had many difficulties, he at length prevailed upon both parties to agree to a peace; the marquissate of *Saluces* being exchanged for *La Bresse*, *Henry* quitting all claim to the former, and the latter being declared to belong to the kingdom of *France*.

CLEMENT in the mean time founded a monastery for those poor girls, who, without any home, wandered in the streets of *Rome*, having four years before founded one for the poor boys; who were afterwards called *Literati*, from one *Literatus*, who was the first promoter of that charity^c. Having *He founds* been patron and protector of the *Scotch* nation at the court of a *Scotch Rome* before his promotion to the pontificate, he now founded *college at* and endowed a college for the instruction of the young men *Rome*. from that kingdom; and, at the request of the *Portuguese*, he published a bull, allowing the generals of all the mendicant orders to send what number of monks they pleased from *Portugal* into the *East Indies*, prohibiting, at the same time, any monks to pass from the *Philippine* islands, or the *West Indies*, to any of the *Portuguese* settlements in *Asia*, as the nations of *Spain* and *Portugal*, tho' then under the same king, still pursued separate interests, and were mutually jealous of their national privileges. He was likewise very earnest with the king of *France* to publish the decrees of the council of *Trent* in his kingdom, according to one of the conditions of his absolution; but tho' *Henry* declared his willingness to comply with the pope's desire, and even signed and sealed the edict for the promulgation of the council, the opposition of the parliament of *Paris* prevented the edict from being published. *Clement* at the same time solicited, without any effect, the re-admission of the *Jesuits*, who had been banished from *France* several years before; and, having concluded the jubilee at *Rome*, he allowed a festival of the same kind to be

^a THUAN. l. cxxiv. SPOND. Annal.^c SPOND. ut sup.

celebrated for a certain time, in the following year, in some kingdoms and provinces (Q).

A. D.
1601.

*He receives an
embassy
from the
king of
Persia.*

A FEW months after, two ambassadors arrived at *Rome* from the king of *Persia*, to solicit the assistance of the Christian powers against the *Turks*, and to inform the pope, that he had lately recovered a large province from them, and had drawn the governors of *Georgia*, *Mingrelia*, and *Circassia*, into his interests. The two ambassadors, one of whom was an *Englishman*, had a fierce dispute about precedence, upon their public entry into *Rome*; after some blows, the *Englishman* obtained possession of the honourable place, and was admitted to a separate audience from his colleague; but their embassy was without any effect; and each of them, having received several thousand crowns from the pope, left *Rome*, the *Persian* sailing to *Spain*, and the *Englishman*, having deceived his creditors, pretending to return directly to *Persia*^d. Soon after their departure from *Rome*, *Clement* published a bull to quiet the great dissensions among the catholics in *England*. The *Jesuits* for several years had been endeavouring, by the most unjustifiable means, to subject all the popish priests in that kingdom to their authority, and by fraud and violence had prevented the deputies of the clergy from presenting their appeals to the pope. The poor priests, who complained that they were more oppressed by the *Jesuits* than by queen *Elizabeth*, at length got an opportunity of laying their grievances before his holiness; who, finding that the

*He com-
poses the
dissensions
among the
papists in
England.*

^d SPOND. Prol. ad Sæcul. XVII.

(Q) *Spondanus*, the abridger and continuator of the ecclesiastical annals of *Baronius*, informs us, that he was present at this ceremony, having accompanied the cardinal *de Sourdis* to *Rome*; where a few years after he was ordained priest. Five years before he had abjured *Calvinism*, in which he had been educated; and, having distinguished himself by his great abilities and zealous attachment to the popish cause, in the year 1626 he was nominated by *Lewis XIII.* of *France* to the bishopric of *Pamiers*; which dignity, however, he re-

fused to accept of, till he received a mandate from pope *Urban VIII.* His annals are wrote in a clear animated stile, and he seems to have been extremely well qualified for an historian, if he had been divested of his flagrant partiality for the church of *Rome*, and unjust prejudices against all those of a different communion, whom he rails at without any temper or decency. He concluded his annals at this period, but added a short continuation to the year 1640, under the title of *Prolusio ad Sæculum XVII.*

intrigues

intrigues of the *Jesuits* were prejudicial to the popish cause, retrenched their authority by his bull, and by that means put an end to the dissensions^e. About the same time he sent 12,000 men to the assistance of the emperor against the *Turks*. These troops were commanded by his nephew, *Francis Aldobrandino*; and, having embarked at *Ancona*, crossed the *Adriatic*, and arrived about the middle of *September* before *Ganisa*, which they invested, in conjunction with the other imperial troops; but the garrison, which was very numerous, having defended the place with great vigour, they were obliged to abandon the siege towards the end of *November*, and to leave behind them the greatest part of their artillery^f.

THE following year, *Clement* allowed the *Dominicans* and *Jesuits* to dispute in his presence concerning grace and free-will, and published a declaration, prohibiting sacramental confessions to be made by letters or proxies to absent confessors^g. The year after he solicited the king of *France* for the re-establishment of the *Jesuits* in that kingdom; altho', according to *Mezeray*, he discovered no great earnestness in that affair, having received great complaints against that order, not only from *England*, but also from *Venice*, and the *Swiss* cantons. He likewise ordered his nuncio to complain to the king against the *Hugonots*, who, in a synod which they held in the month of *October*, at *Gap* in *Dauphiny*, had, among their other canons, decreed, that the pope was the real antichrist. *Henry* himself was offended with the decree, as it accused him of worshipping the *Beast*; and, all the catholic clergy remonstrating against the new heretical article, he used his utmost endeavours with the chiefs of the *Hugonots* to have it abolished, but without any effect^h.

AT the same time the authority of the pope received an attack from the *Jesuits*; who, being offended that, in the late dispute with the *Dominicans*, he had not patronized their order, began to assert, that the pope was not infallible, and that it was not an article of the catholic faith to believe that *Clement VIII.* was the lawful successor of *St. Peter*. They likewise defended the lawfulness of confessing by proxy, and asserted the orthodoxy of the opinion of the *Jesuit Molina* concerning grace. These questions greatly alarmed the assertors of the papal supremacy. The *Jesuit*, who impugned the infallibility, was imprisoned, and the whole order would have suffered, if the *Spanish* ambassador had not interceded

^e THUAN. l. cxxvi.
sup.

^f Idem *ibid.*

^h MEZER. Abreg. Chron. t. xiv.

^g SPOND. ut

earnestly in their behalf. The question about confession was also suppressed ; but the pope allowed the dispute, concerning the influence of grace and the freedom of the will, to be canvassed more fully (R). As he was not a little offended with the behaviour of the *Jesuits*, he absolutely refused to canonize their founder *Loyola*, notwithstanding the great interest they at this time made in the papal court, and tho' they were now supported by *Henry IV.* who, in the beginning of this year, allowed their order to return to *France*, and chose his confessor from their society. Tho' *Clement* had repulsed the *Jesuits*, yet, at the request of the clergy of *Milan*, he canonized cardinal *Charles Borromeo*.

(R) The *Jesuits* in a general assembly, held in the year 1558, altered one of the original statutes of their founder, who had died about two years before ; and allowed the books of *Peter Lombard*, and other divines, to be taught in their schools ; whereas, before that time, they had only admitted the works of *St. Thomas Aquinas*. Many of their members had about that time abandoned the doctrine of *St. Thomas*, fifty of whose theological opinions they rejected in their fourth general congregation, held at *Rome* in the year 1584. As they began to teach their new opinions publicly, and to assert them by theses, they were censured by the universities of *Louvain* and *Douay*. But to free themselves from the suspicion of heresy, after several years controversy, they themselves delivered *Molina's* book to the judges of the inquisition in the year 1594. The affair, four years afterwards, was carried to *Rome* ; where *Molina's* book was suppressed by the congregation of *Auxilii Gratiæ*, which had been then ap-

pointed by the pope. The *Jesuits*, before the censure of the congregation was published, obtained leave to hold a conference with their impugnors, the *Dominicans* ; which continued, without any effect, for a whole year. *Clement* likewise ordered the congregation to re-examine *Molina* ; and, in the year 1601, added some new consultors to the others. *Molina* was again condemned by their second sentence, which declared, that he agreed with the *Pelagians* and *Semipelagians*, both in his doctrine, his proofs, and his objections. The dispute nevertheless, was not ended ; for the *Jesuits* still undertook to prove the orthodoxy of the censured propositions, and, by their importunities, prevailed on *Clement* to grant a new examination, which commenced on the 20th of *March* 1602, and was not concluded at his death. As the pope did not interpose his authority to procure a sentence in their behalf, probably on that account he drew upon himself the resentment of those fathers (2).

(2) *Abreg. de l'Hist. de la Congreg. de Auxil. Edit. 1686.*

MEAN time the peace of the city was, in some measure, *A commo-*
 disturbed, by a contest about the privilege of an asylum. *tion in*
 a prisoner having been pursued by the *Sbirri*, or constables, *Rome.*
 took refuge in the palace of cardinal *Odoard Farnese*, where
 he was protected by force against the prefect of *Rome*. The
 cardinal, with several *Roman* nobles, and the *Spanish* ambas-
 sador, after continuing in arms all night, with several of their
 dependents, next morning marched out of the town with the
 criminal, to a castle at thirty-six miles distance; which be-
 haviour irritating the pope, he sent to him, and ordered him
 to resign his government of *St. Peter's Patrimony*, which
 his ancestors had enjoyed ever since the pontificate of *Paul III.*
 Upon his refusal, *Clement* immediately ordered new levies to
 be made, and prepared to reduce him to his obedience by
 force; which the cardinal being informed of, he thought
 proper to submit, and effected his reconciliation by means of
 his brother the duke of *Parma*, who had married one of the
 pope's nieces¹. The pope survived this disturbance only a *The death*
 few months, and died on the 2d of *March*, in the 70th year *of Cle-*
 of his age, and the 14th year of his pontificate; during *ment*
 which he had created, at different promotions, upwards of *VIII.*
 fifty cardinals, among whom were *Baronius*, *Bellarmino*, *A. D.*
Du Perron, *De Sourdi*, *D'Offat*, and *Olivier*. This pope *1605.*
 was greatly extolled for his piety and moderation. He was
 a great patron of learned men, and is said to have promised
 liberty of conscience to the celebrated *Scipio Gentilis*, to in-
 duce him to accept of a professor's chair in the university of
*Bologna*². He is represented, however, in another light by
Heydegger; who says, that he formed a scheme of a holy
 league for oppressing the protestants, which was approved by
 the emperor, and by which it was proposed to begin with
 surprizing *Geneva* and *Straßburg*¹.

CARDINAL *Aldobrandino*, the nephew of the late pope,
 who, a few months before his death, had succeeded to the
 archbishopric of *Ravenna*, and had great authority in the
 sacred college, upon entering into the conclave endeavoured
 to procure the election of the famous cardinal *Baronius*.
 He was seconded by the cardinals of the *French* faction; but
 the *Spanish* party, which for a long time had been superior
 in the *Roman* court, opposed him with great violence and
 malice, in resentment of what he had written, in the eleventh
 volume of his *Ecclesiastical Annals*, against the right claimed
 by the king of *Spain* to the kingdom of *Sicily*, independant

¹ THUAN. l. cxxxii.
 Gent,

² PICCART, in Orat. Funeb. Scipion.
¹ HEYDEG. Hist. Papat. Ætat. vii.

of the holy see. They produced a letter of complaint against him, as if written from the viceroy of *Naples* to the late pope; which, to their great confusion, was proved to be a forgery. After two or three scrutinies, his interest was found to be pretty strong; but, as there were no less than sixty cardinals in the conclave, he could not procure a legal majority, the *Spaniards* being sufficiently strong to put a negative upon the election of any one whom they disapproved. Leo XI. *Bellarmino* and some others were also rejected. At length cardinal *De Joyeuse*, chief of the *French* faction, proposed cardinal *Alexander de Medicis*, who was not unacceptable to either party, and was accordingly elected, by a scrutiny with open billets, on the first of *April*, when he assumed the name of *Leo XI*. He was the son of *Ottaviano*, cousin of *Cosmo* great duke of *Tuscany*; and, having been created cardinal by *Gregory XIII*. he had long distinguished himself at the court of *Rome* by his magnificence, and kindness to learned men. His predecessor sent him as legate to *France*; where, by his wife and moderate conduct, he gained a great reputation. His promotion, which gave great joy to the *Romans*, made no alteration in his behaviour; but he gave audience with his usual affability, and continued those in office who had been appointed by his predecessors. He promised to ease his subjects of their taxes, and to adorn the city of *Rome*; but he was prevented from executing his designs by death, which happened to him on the 27th day of his pontificate, and the 70th year of his age^m.

UPON the death of *Leo XI*. the conclave was divided into four principal factions; namely, the *Spanish* and *French*, and that of *Aldobrandino* and *Montalto*. Cardinals *Sauli*, *Mariano*, and *Bellarmino*, were proposed, and rejected. *Tosco de Reggio* was also nominated by the *Spanish* and *Aldobrandine* factions; but by the clamours of *Baronius*, who exclaimed loudly against him, forty-four cardinals deserted him, and proposed to adore the other, whom they conducted to the *Pauline* chapel. The election of *Baronius*, however, met with an interruption, and *Tosco*, when he returned to his cell, found it pillaged, his palace in the city being also plundered, according to custom, as his election was looked upon as certain. *Aldobrandino* then proposed *Camillo Borghese*; who, being acceptable to *Montalto* and *De Joyeuse*, was conducted to the *Pauline* chapel, where he was elected by an open scrutiny, on the 16th of *May*, and took the name of *Paul V*.ⁿ He was then only in the 53d year of his age,

^m Hist. de Concl. THUAN. l. cxxxiv.ⁿ Idem ibid.

and was born at *Rome*; where his father, who had come from *Siena*, had been consistorial advocate. He had a great reputation for his knowledge in the civil law, and was created a cardinal by *Clement VIII.* who sent him as his nuncio to *Spain*. Soon after his promotion he gave his own cardinal's hat to *Scipio Caffarelli*, his sister's son, and elevated his two surviving brothers, *Francis* and *John Baptist*, to the chief dignities in *Rome*, the first being appointed governor of the *Vatican*, and the other governor of *St. Angelo*.

THE chief concern of the new pope was to advance the *He endeavoured* ecclesiastical authority and jurisdiction. He earnestly pressed *vours* to the king of *France* to publish the decrees of the council of *Trent*, and solicited the king of *Spain* to grant the *Jesuits* the ecclesiastical exemption from the payment of their tythe, and to send the regent of *Ponte* to *Rome*, because, in consequence of the king's edict, he had sent two booksellers of *Naples* to the galleys for selling the eleventh volume of the *Annals of Baronius*, contrary to the royal prohibition. He was offended with the republic of *Lucca*, because it had published an edict, prohibiting all commerce and correspondence with those *Lucchese*, who had left their country, and embraced the protestant religion. He insisted, that the edict should be repealed, that there might be an opportunity to act by the censures of the church. He likewise threatened the *Genoese* for having suppressed a seditious congregation, which assembled at a chapel of the *Jesuits* in their city; but his chief dispute about ecclesiastical immunity was with the republic of *Venice*. *jurisdiction.*

THE *Venetians*, a few years before, had published several laws for restraining the power and licentiousness of the clergy; particularly, they had prohibited the building of new churches, convents, and monasteries, in their dominions, without the express permission of the signiory, and had declared ecclesiastics incapable of making any new acquisition of immoveable goods, without the leave of the senate. They had likewise, by their own authority, imprisoned an abbot and a canon, who had been guilty of enormous crimes; on which account the pope sent two briefs to his nuncio at *Venice*, the one for annulling the new-made laws, and the other ordering the two prisoners to be remitted to the ecclesiastical courts. The republic defended their proceeding with great spirit, while some of the cardinals endeavoured to mediate an accommodation. Others, with more success, inflamed the difference, in hopes that the pope, by being engaged in such an intricate affair, would be seized with grief, which

On which account he quarrels with the Venetians
A. D.
1606.

which might shorten his days °. *Paul* accordingly, not being able to obtain his imperious demands from the *Venetians*, on the 17th of *April* thundered out a bull of excommunication and interdict against the republic, unless they would give him satisfaction within twenty-four days. A great number of treatises appeared on both sides of the controversy; but the *Venetians* resolved to defend their cause, not by writings but by arms. They prohibited the ecclesiastics within their dominions from paying any regard to the pope's bull (S). They began to equip a fleet, hired 8,000 *Grisons*, and assembled several other forces on the borders of the *Milaneſe*. The pope likewise, at first, with great ardour, assembled an army in the duchy of *Spoletto*, and solicited succours from the kings of *France* and *Spain*; who both promised to assist him with a formidable army. In the mean time he put an end to the controversy concerning grace betwixt the *Jesuits* and *Dominicans*, ordaining that each party might modestly defend their own opinion in the schools, without condemning that of the other, till a determination of the apostolic see should be published P. He likewise erected a congregation of war; which proceeding surprized all *Italy*, as the court of *Rome*, till that time, had always covered their temporal designs with spiritual names. However, as he found the *Venetians* not terrified by his threats, and that they had the promise of assistance not only from the king of *Great Britain* and the States of *Holland*, but even from the grand signior, he expressed his desire of an accommodation to the *French* ambassador at *Rome*; finding that the king of *Spain* only designed to amuse him, having demanded, as the

He puts an end to the dispute betwixt the *Jesuits* and *Dominicans*.

° Idem, l. cxxxvii.

P Spond. ut sup.

(S) Some few of the clergy thought proper to obey the pope; but the monks continued quiet in their monasteries, only the orders of *Capuchins* and *Jesuits* asked leave to depart. The *Capuchins* had liberty to return when they pleased; but the *Jesuits* were banished for ever by an edict, and all were prohibited from holding any correspondence with them, under pain of the galleys and the loss of goods. At their de-

parture from the city, the mob conducted them to the shore, shouting, and calling after them, that they might go to the devil if they pleased. They, in resentment for this treatment, endeavoured, by private intrigues, to raise factions among the nobility, and caused two gentlemen of the *Venetian* ambassador's retinue in *England* to be affronted at mass, and to be expelled the church (3).

(3) *Touan*, l. 137. *Pref. Hist. de-Hen. IV. Heydeg. Rycant.*

condition of engaging in the war, a release of the yearly tribute for the kingdom of *Naples*, and a surrender of *Ferrara* and *Ancona*. *Henry IV.* of *France* was more sincere in his endeavours to serve both parties, and, by his ambassador at *Venice*, had pressed the republic to make some offers of a submission. They, as well as the pope, accepting of his mediation, he sent the cardinal *de Joyeuse* into *Italy*, who conducted his negotiation with such prudence, that he at last concluded a peace on these conditions; that the republic should deliver the two prisoners into the hands of the *French* ambassador, to be delivered to the pope; and should revoke the protest against the apostolical censures, and restore all ecclesiastics to their estates; on which account the pope should give them absolution (T). Having thus settled the articles, he left *Rome*; and, arriving at *Venice*, with great solemnity revoked the sentence of excommunication on the 21st of *April* 9.

A. D.

1607.

The difference
with the
Venetians
accommodated.

ABOUT the commencement of this difference with the *Venetians*, the pope, being informed that the king of *Great Britain* had published the form of an oath, by which all his subjects in *England* were required to swear, that king *James* was supreme lord of all the dominions which he possessed, and that the pope had no authority of deposing a king, he immediately dispatched a brief into *England*, prohibiting all the papists from taking that oath, and exhorting them patiently to endure all manner of persecution rather than comply. As many of them, nevertheless, took the oath, pretending that the brief was a forgery, he again wrote to them this year, assuring them of the genuineness of his former brief, and that the oath could not be taken with a safe conscience.

THE following year *Paul* received an embassy from the *The pope* king of *Congo* in *Africa*, where the monks, after a long interval, had again insinuated themselves. He received the *receives an embassy*

¹ THUAN. ut sup. RYCAUT. MEZER. Abreg. Chron. t. vi. PÉREFFIX. Hist. d'Hen. IV. FRA-PAOLO Droit de Souverains. Etat. du Siege de Rome, t. i. ² SPOND. ut sup. Etat. du Siege de Rome, p. 34.

(T) The treaty was retarded several months on account of the *Jesuits*, whom the pope, at first, used his utmost endeavours to have restored. But the republic absolutely refusing to repeal their edict against them, he at last consented to wave that point (4).

(1) Thuan. ut sup. & alii.

from the
king of
Congo,

A. D.
1609.
and from
the king of
Persia.

The Nesto-
rians
are re-
united to
the church
of Rome.

ambassador with great respect, and promised to send several learned and pious preachers with him into his own country; but as he died soon after his arrival at *Rome*, the design of sending missionaries to *Congo* was at that time laid aside. About the same time the archbishop of *Goa* procured letters to the pope from the king of *Persia*, and next year the *Persian* ambassador arrived at *Rome*, to yield obedience, as it was pretended, to *Paul*, and to inform him, that he allowed Christians to build churches and schools in his dominions *. An embassy arrived likewise this same year from *Elias*, the *Nestorian* patriarch at *Babylon*; who, having received a confession of the *Roman* faith from *Paul*, in the beginning of his pontificate, now sent one *Adam*, an archdeacon, to *Rome*, with a new confession, drawn up in different terms from the *Roman*, but without any material alteration as to the sense; intending to shew the pope, that the faith of the orientals differed only in words from that of *Rome*. The pope's secretary, in his examination of this writing, explained every article in an unfavourable sense, and obliged the legate of the patriarch to submit, not only to the doctrines, but to the words of the *Roman* church. The legate signed every thing that the pope proposed to him, and not only abjured the errors of his nation, but also addressed some treatises to his countrymen, exhorting them to an intire conformity with the church of *Rome*. At his departure, which happened two years afterwards, he was accompanied by two *Jesuits*, and carried with him a brief from the pope to the patriarch, requiring him to renounce all expressions which might seem to countenance error †.

A. D.
1610.
*Paul ex-
presses*

DURING his residence at *Rome*, the pope was earnestly pressed by the king of *France* to enter into a defensive alliance with him and the princes of *Italy*; and, to prevail upon him to accede to the treaty, a match was proposed betwixt his nephew and the king's natural daughter. But *Paul* absolutely refused to engage in the alliance, as he was apprehensive, from the great preparations made by the king, that he intended a rupture with *Spain*, and to invade the *Milanese*; in which case he proposed to observe a strict neutrality, tho' he was desirous to prevent, if possible, any hostilities in *Italy*. This negotiation was interrupted by the assassination of *Henry IV.* at which the pope expressed great sorrow; and, as a testimony of his regard, he assisted personally at

* SPOND. ut sup. † STROZ. de Dogmat. Chald. R. SIMON. Hist. Crit. de Dogmat. des Orient. NIC. GODIC. l. i. de Reb. Abassyn. ap. AUB. MUSEUM de Stas. Rel. Christ.

his obsequies; which were celebrated at *Rome* with great solemnity. Hearing that some young *Frenchmen* in the city rejoiced at the king's death, and stiled the assassin the deliverer of their country, he ordered them to be seized; and, upon process made against them, condemned them to the gallies. About the same time the congregation *delle Indice* published their censure of the history of *Thuanus*, while *Paul*, in imitation of *Clement V.* and other popes, published a bull, ordering all the religious orders to maintain professors in the *Hebrew, Arabic, Greek, and Latin* languages. As the report still continued, that the marshal *de Lesdiguières* was on the point of entering *Italy* with an army to join the duke of *Savoy*, *Paul* declared to the *French* ambassador at *Rome*, that, if the marshal should offer to pass the *Alps*, he would endeavour to oppose him by force. The pope had no occasion to repeat his threats; for the death of *Henry IV.* and the minority of his son *Lewis XIII.* put a stop to the intended expedition of the *French* into *Italy*.

NOT long after, *Paul* received a message from the duke of *Bavaria*, to inform him of his dispute with the archbishop of *Saltzburg*, whom he detained a prisoner. The duke had formed pretensions to the salt-pits in the territory of *Halle the Rich*, then in the possession of the archbishop; and, upon his refusal to acknowledge his right, had entered his territories with an armed force, seized some of his towns, and imprisoned himself. However, as the prelate was prevented from sending a deputy to *Rome*, the elector found means to justify his conduct at that court; and the four cardinals, who were appointed by the pope to examine the affair, decreed, that the archbishop, having endeavoured to fly from his territories upon the invasion of the duke, had rendered himself unworthy of his dignity, which he should therefore resign, and content himself with an annual pension of 20,000 florins. The pope, that he might not seem to favour the duke to the prejudice of the episcopal dignity, omitted signing the decree.

MEANwhile, being disgusted with business, on account of *Paul* is the great trouble and vexation in which he had been involved by his rupture with the *Venetians*, he now indulged himself in sloth and indolence. He neglected almost intirely the administration of affairs, and was chiefly intent upon enriching his nephew cardinal *Borghese*, on whom he bestowed a revenue of upwards of 250,000 crowns, by conferring upon him very many rich

* NIC. RIGALT. de reb. Gal. RYCAET. * SPOND. ut sup. RIGALT. ut sup. * ADLZNEIT. part iii. p. 26, &c.

benefices, and drawing pensions from a great many others both in *Spain* and *Italy* ¹. He took great delight in adorning the city with magnificent buildings, and about this time finished the large palace of *Monte Cavallo*, which had been begun by *Sixtus V.* Besides, he greatly enlarged the church of *St. Peter*, and the *Vatican* palace and library; he built two magnificent palaces for his relations, one in the city, and the other, with spacious gardens, without the walls; and in both he collected the most valuable works in sculpture and painting, and the finest monuments of antiquity which he could purchase. He brought water to several parts of the city by aqueducts, and embellished the streets with a great number of fountains; on which account he was stiled, by *Pasquin*, *Pontifex Maximus* ².

The Spaniards threaten to invade the duke of Mantua.

A.D.
1613.

As the duke of *Mantua*, about the end of the following year, died without male issue, *Paul* allowed his brother, cardinal *Ferdinand*, to whom the succession fell, to resign his hat; however, notwithstanding the earnest intreaties of the *French* and *Venetian* ambassadors, he refused to concern himself in the least with the disputes betwixt the new duke and the *Spaniards*, who had formed pretensions to some part of his territories, and in the following spring threatened to disturb the peace of *Italy* with their warlike preparations. Tho' a war actually commenced, *Paul* still continued unconcerned, and could not be moved in behalf of the house of *Mantua* by the most pressing solicitations of the *French* ambassador, who wrote to the queen regent, that the pope was like a beast fattening in a stall, and thought only of enjoying the pleasures and conveniencies of the pontificate ³. *Paul* pretended to be afraid of the resentment of the court of *Madrid*, or perhaps was convinced, from the weakness of the *Spanish* monarchy, and the peaceable disposition of *Philip III.* that the hazard of a war with *France* would make the *Spaniards* readily accommodate their differences in *Italy*.

MEAN while he published a bull for founding a seminary of cardinals at *Rome*; and, at the request of the queen regent of *France*, he confirmed the congregation of pious priests, which had been instituted by her at *Paris*, under the title of the congregation of the fathers of the oratory, in honour of the prayers put up by *Christ* in the days of his flesh ⁴. He likewise, by a treaty with *Lewis XIII.* regulated the limits of the county of *Venaissin*, situated between *Dauphiny* and *Provence*, ⁵

¹ Nic. de Marb. Request. a l'Emper. Edit. de Leyd. 1613.

² Etat du Siege de Rome, l. i. p. 33.

³ NAR. Hist. Venet.

an. 1613. S181 Memoire Recond. t. iii.

⁴ Sæp. ut sup.

and belonging to the holy see^c. During this negotiation, *The pope* being informed that the queen regent was treating with the king of *Great Britain* about a marriage betwixt the prince of *Wales* and her second daughter *Christina*, he ordered his nuncio *Ubal dini* to remonstrate against the proposed alliance, as prejudicial to the church, that is, in the stile of the *Roman* court, contrary to the interests of the pope. The nuncio, finding that he made no impression upon the queen, endeavoured to alarm the devotees at *Paris*; but his intrigues were unnecessary; for the queen was not sincere in the negotiation with the *British* court, and only intended to quiet the discontents of the *French*, who murmured greatly at the double alliance which she had contracted the year before with *Spain*^d. This alliance with *Spain* chiefly gave offence to the prince of *Conde* and the *Hugonots*, who remembered the late fatal effects of the *Spanish* councils in their kingdom. Together with the prince, the duke of *Mayenne* and several other nobles entered into an association; and, after publishing several remonstrances against the queen's mal-administration, had recourse to arms. An accommodation, however, was soon effected, by means of the parliament of *Paris*, the queen having made great concessions to the prince of *Conde*, with which the pope's nuncio was greatly offended, as he imagined the prince intended to renounce the popish religion, and to claim the succession to the crown^e.

THE proceedings of the parliament of *Paris* gave great jealousy to the pope, who about that time accused them of encroaching upon the rights of the church, as they had condemned a book of *Suarez*, a *Spanish* Jesuit, to be burnt by the hands of the common hangman, as containing pernicious and damnable doctrines. He made great complaints against them to the *French* ambassador at *Rome*, and ordered him to desire the queen regent to annul the decree, promising, that, if any proposition of *Suarez* was derogatory to the sovereignty of the king, it should be censured at *Rome*. The ambassador representing the impracticability of annulling the decree, and observing that, if the doctrine of assassinating princes, who are accused of tyranny, should become general, the popes themselves were not safe, but might happen to be murdered by some fanatical heretic, *Paul*, after some reflection, agreed to write to his nuncio in *France*, and sent briefs to the cardinals *Joyeuse*, *Perron*, and *Rochechoucault*, enjoining them to confer with the nuncio about the means of procuring sa-

^c Hist. des Traitez de Paix.
Hist. de Lewis XIV.

^d SIRI ut sup. VASSOR
SIRI ut sup.

tisfaction to the holy see. He had at first been inflamed by the *Jesuits* at *Rome*, who, preferring the honour of their society to all other considerations, had used their utmost endeavours to occasion a rupture betwixt him and *France*, and to prevail with him to cause the parliament's decree to be burnt, as heretical, by the hangman. *Lewis XIII.* being declared major about the beginning of *October*, immediately after, to satisfy the pope, published a declaration, affirming, that the execution of the decree of parliament should not infringe the lawful authority of the pope, or the privileges acknowledged by his ancestors to belong to the holy see. *Paul* was far from being satisfied with this declaration, as by the word lawful, the authority of the Holy see seemed in some measure limited; he therefore still insisted, that the decree should be judicially annulled; but all the satisfaction he could obtain, was only the suspension of its execution ^f.

His endeavours to cause the council of Trent to be received in France.
A. D.
1615.

He was likewise disappointed in his endeavours to prevail with the states of *France*, who were then sitting at *Paris*, to order the publication of the decrees of the council of *Trent*. Tho' the clergy, who were zealous in the interest of the court of *France*, had gained the nobility, yet they were both opposed by the third estate, whose delegates made a motion for treating of the extent of the pope's authority over kings. But as that dispute would have only kept alive the factions in the kingdom, they were opposed by the two other estates; who, on that account, received congratulatory briefs from the pope ^g. *Paul* in the mean time received a letter from the bishop of *Paphlagonia*, acknowledging his supremacy; and a few months after two ambassadors arrived at *Rome* from *Japan*, one of whom was a noble *Japanese*, and the other a *Spanish* friar, of the order of *St. Francis*, who had converted one of the kings in that distant country. Those ambassadors requested of the pope, that he would send a greater number of missionaries into that kingdom to convert the infidels, and mentioned several other particulars, which are fully related by the continuator of *Thuanus* ^h. An ambassador extraordinary also about the same time arrived at *Rome* from *France*, who solemnly yielded obedience to the pope, in the king's name.

Great disputes about the

The following year the pope endeavoured to mediate a peace betwixt the king of *Spain* and the duke of *Savoy*, who, tho' a few months before they had agreed to an accommo-

^f LE VASSOR & SIRI, ut sup.
Hist. de *Lewis XIII.* Sup. ut sup.
p. viii.

^g Contin. de MEZER.
^h THUAN. Contin.

edation, now renewed hostilities with greater animosity. His *immaculate conception* of the Blessed Virgin. Ever since the beginning of the former century, there had been great disputes among the papists about this very important point; but they had never been carried to so great a height as at present. The *Dominicans* maintained the affirmative, and the *Franciscans* supported the negative; but both parties were transported with such animosity and furious zeal, that *Spain* was almost engaged in a religious civil war on their account. The catholic king, to prevent the fatal effects of this blind contest, pressed the pope, by repeated embassies, to give an authoritative decision of the question in dispute; but all that he could obtain of *Paul* was a renovation of the constitutions of *Sixtus IV.* and *Pius V.* on that subject, with more severe sanctions than formerly; to which the next year, in the month of *August*, he added a decree, prohibiting absolutely any one from teaching, or asserting publicly, that the Holy Virgin was conceived in original sin, altho', at the same time, he allowed every one to believe any side of the dispute they pleased ¹.

A.D.
1617.

By this means he, in some measure, put a stop to the animosities in *Spain*; but quickly after he was engaged in another dispute with the court of *France*, on account of the possessions of marshal *D'Ancre* at *Rome*. As that *Florentine*, by the abuse of his power, had acquired immense wealth, which he laid out in purchases at *Florence* and *Rome*, the parliament of *Paris*, after his murder, which happened in the end of *April*, declared him a traitor, and confiscated for the use of the king all the estates that he had acquired, whether with-in or without the kingdom. In consequence of this parliamentary decree, the archbishop of *Lyons* demanded, for the use of the *French* king, all the estates which the late marshal possessed at *Rome*. This arrogant demand was at first treated with contempt by the pope; but at length, after many propositions, he agreed to a partition of the estate with *Lewis XIII.* in such a manner, that of the whole, which amounted to 425,000 livres, the king should have 250,000, and the remaining 175,000 should be left to the pope, to be appropriated by him to the building of *St. Peter's* church ². This treaty of the partition of the succession of *D'Ancre* was

A partition of the marshal's estates at Rome between the pope and

¹ HEYDEG. Hist. Papat. SPOND. ut sup. ² LE GRAIN
Decade de Louis Le Just. Relat. Exact, de la Mort du Marechal
D'Ancre, a la Fin de l'Histoire des Favoris, Leyd. Edit. 1661.

the king of France concluded about a year after his death, which had occasioned great revolutions at the court of France.¹ The queen

A. D. 1618. regent was obliged to retire to Blois, and Richelieu, bishop of Luçon, one of the late marshal's creatures, was ordered to quit the kingdom. He retired to Avignon, where he was at first countenanced by the pope, who interceded for him as a persecuted bishop; but the French ambassador at Rome, by order of the king, representing that some of the bishop's intrigues had been discovered prejudicial to the state, Paul ceased to interest himself in his behalf, tho' he allowed him still to reside in his territories.

A universal jubilee published, at Rome.

1619.

"IN the mean time he employed himself in confirming several monkish orders; and, in the beginning of the following year, he published a universal jubilee, for imploring the assistance of God for the defence of the church, which was endangered by a general insurrection of the protestants in Bohemia and the other countries under the Austrian dominion. They had been provoked to take arms, on account of the oppression which they suffered from the emperor Matthias, by the instigation of his cousin Ferdinand, archduke of Gratz, who a few years before had been declared heir of the crown of Bohemia by the States. Ferdinand, a few weeks after the publication of the jubilee, succeeding to all his cousin's hereditary dominions, and not long after being elected emperor, endeavoured to prevail with the rebels in Bohemia to hearken to an accommodation, by offering them a full confirmation of all their privileges; but they, distrusting his sincerity, rejected his offers, chose the elector palatine for their king, and entered into an alliance with the protestants in Hungary, Austria, Moravia, Silesia, and Lusace, who were also in arms. The pope, alarmed at this powerful confederacy, gave assistance in money to the emperor; who, the following year, gained a decisive victory over his competitor in the neighbourhood of Prague, which secured to him the possession of Bohemia, and obliged the other rebels to submit¹.

The death of Paul.
1621.

PAUL survived the news of this victory only a few months, and died at Rome on the 28th of January, in the 69th year of his age, and the 16th of his pontificate. He is greatly commended by father Hyacinthe de Graveson, who was a dependant of his nephew Mark Anthony Borghese². But he is represented in a very different light by Nicholas de Marbais,

¹ SPOND. ut sup. See the History of the German Empire.

² AMAT. DE GRAVESON Hist. Eccles. t. viii.

doctor in divinity, who complains he had bought lands for his nephew to the value of 2,000,000 of crowns, which sum he had raised by distressing the clergy, as he conferred no benefices without reserving a part of it as a pension to some person whom he had not the confidence to name; that he did not regulate his conduct according to the laws and canons of the *Roman church*, the rights and jurisdiction of which he entirely neglected; that the ecclesiastical immunities were not only trampled upon in *France* and *Spain*, but also at *Florence* and *Naples*, and in the *Milanese*; that in *Spain* and *Naples*, if any criminal took sanctuary in the churches and monasteries, he was dragged from thence to the magistrates by force and violence, who contemned the pope's bull prohibiting such proceedings under pain of excommunication. The false pope *Paul*, he says, left the administration of affairs entirely to his nephew *Borghese*, who opened the letters of the legates and nuncios, and answered them in the pope's name. He countenanced licentiousness and debauchery among the cardinals, bishops, and other prelates, that they might not reproach him with his own crimes; and all of them lived, not like Christians, but like the corrupt heathens of antient *Rome*. To procure the pontificate to his nephew *Borghese*, he created a great many young and worthless cardinals, of mean birth and no education, whom he kept needy and dependent, hoping to survive all the antient cardinals, and to renew the whole sacred college before his death.

AFTER the celebration of the funeral obsequies of *Paul V.* which, according to custom, continued nine days, on the 8th of *February* fifty-two cardinals entered the conclave in procession, where the different factions immediately began to cabal. The most antient party was that of *Montalto*, the second of *Aldobrandino*, the third was the *Spanish*, and the fourth the *French* faction. Some cardinals, such as *Bonti*, *Sforza*, *Farnese*, *Medici*, and *Este*, formed small parties of their own: but the most powerful of all was that of *Borghese*, who was confident of carrying the election in favour of cardinal *Campora*. That candidate, however, being disagreeable to the other parties, they united together; so that *Borghese* could not obtain a legal majority of votes, and *Campora*, who before the shutting of the conclave began to assume the state and dignity of a pope, suffered a most mortifying disappointment. *Borghese* finding his intrigues in fa-

Gregory
XV. is
elected
pope.

NIC DE MARBAIS requeste a l'Empereur, Leyden, 1613.

E e 4

who,

who, being approved of immediately by almost the whole conclave, was conducted to the *Pauline* chapel, where he was unanimously elected and adorned that same evening, and assumed the name of *Gregory XV.* * (U). A few days after he was crowned with the usual pomp in *St. Peter's* church, and made a grand procession to that of *St. John di Lateran*, to take possession of the sovereign power of the church; after which ceremonies he published a universal jubilee, to implore the divine blessing upon his government †, and perhaps to bring in some money into his coffers, which was also probably his motive for creating several new saints, having in his short pontificate canonized *Ignatius Loyola*, *Francis Xavier*, *Lewis Gonzaga*, *Stanislaus Kolka*, *Isidore Agricola a Spaniard*, *Ambrose Sordani* of *Siena*, *James de Salamiome a Venetian*, *Philip de Neri*, founder of the fathers of the oratory, and *Theresa*, the reformer of the order of the *Carmelites* ‡.

He excites As the *Hugonots* in *France*, on account of the violation of the king of the edict of *Nantz*, about this time again had recourse to arms, *Gregory* wrote to the young king, exhorting him to root them out and destroy them; which letter was accompanied with a bull, animating the papists to rise up against them. For that purpose he likewise sent into *France* a *Spanish Carmelite* friar, one *Dominicus de Jesu Maria*, a most cunning hypocrite, who had acquired a great reputation for sanctity among the ignorant people † (W). While this impostor

* Hist. de Conclaves, art. xxviii.

† GRAVESON, ut supra.

‡ HEYDRO. Hist. papat. Letters of JANSENIUS. RYCAUT. SPOND. ut supra.

† GRANV. Hist. Gall.

(U) *Gregory XV.* whose former name was *Alexander Ludovico*, was born at *Bologna*, of an illustrious family, which had been associated among the *Neapolitan* nobility by *Jane*, queen of *Naples*. He was in his youth educated in the *Jesuits* college at *Rome*; and returning afterwards to *Bologna*, he there studied the civil law, in which he arrived at the degree of doctor. Settling afterwards at *Rome*, he acquired the friendship of the three popes, *Gregory XIV.* *Cle-*

ment VIII. and *Paul V.* the last of whom conferred upon him the bishopric of *Bologna*, created him cardinal, and appointed him his nuncio to adjust the differences betwixt the *Spaniards* and the duke of *Savoy* (1).

(W) He had attended the emperor's army in *Bohemia*, and the victory of *Prague* was, in a great measure, owing to him, as he run up and down among the imperial troops, during the engagement, with a crucifix in his hand, animating them to

(1) Graveson, Hist. Eccles. Spond. ut supra.

postor was fomenting the civil dissensions in *France*, *Gregory* published a bull, prescribing a new form of election of a pope, altering the manner of giving the votes publicly, and allowing the cardinals to give their suffrages secretly by way of scrutiny, which would prevent the chiefs of parties from having so great an influence.

IN the second year of his pontificate he published a bull, amplifying that of his predecessor, concerning the dispute about the immaculate conception of the Virgin *Mary*, and prohibiting expressly any public or private writings or discourses on that subject, except among the *Dominicans* themselves. About the same time likewise he established the congregation *de propaganda fide*; and, at the desire of *Lewis XIII.* he erected the see of *Paris* into an archbishopric, subjecting to its jurisdiction the bishoprics of *Chartres*, *Orleans*, and *Meaux*. As the war still continued in *Germany* betwixt the emperor and several princes, who espoused the cause of the elector palatine, the pope sent a reinforcement of troops to the former, who conquering the *Palatinate* that campaign, sent the famous library of manuscripts at *Heydelberg* to *Rome*, where the greatest part of the books never arrived, the best of them being privately picked out, and many of the rest lost at sea*. *Gregory* not only assisted the emperor, and excited the king of *France* against the protestants, but designed likewise to extirpate heresy from *Geneva*, and solicited *Lewis XIII.* to allow the duke of *Savoy* to seize that city. He quarrelled also with the *Venetians*, for granting a church, and the free exercise of the *Greek* religion, to some *Greek* soldiers whom they had taken into their service†.

He endeavours to suppress the protestants.

* SPOND. ut supra. SPANHEIM. *Mempires de l'Electrice Palatine*.
† HEYDEGGER, ut supra.

the combat. He was sent to *Rome* by the emperor with some booty and standards taken from the enemy, and the pope now thought him a fit agent to inflame the *French* papists against the *Hugonots*. As he impudently pretended to the gift of miracles, and undertook to cure all manner of diseases in *France*, he was continually attended with great numbers of people, who cut off pieces of his cloak, and published every-where that it was not diminished. At last his impostures were detected and exposed by *Richer*, a syndic and doctor of the faculty of divinity at *Paris*, who a few years before had acquired a great reputation, and had incurred the resentment of the ecclesiastics by a book that he had published, *De ecclesiastica & politica potestate* (2).

A. D.
1623.

He grants
a dispensa-
tion to the
infanta of
Spain to
marry the
prince of
Wales;

As *James I.* of *England* discovered great earnestness to conclude an alliance betwixt his son the prince of *Wales*, and an infanta of *Spain*, *Gregory* laid hold of that opportunity to advance the interest of the catholic religion in *England*. He refused to grant a dispensation for the marriage, unless it should be celebrated in *Spain*, according to the rites of the *Romish* church; and that the ecclesiastics of the infanta should all be *Spaniards*, and subject to a bishop; and that, besides the queen's chapel, the papists should be allowed to build a church in *London*. King *James* agreeing to these conditions, the abhorrence of the *Spaniards* to the match was greatly lessened. *Gregory*, after consulting the cardinals, granted the dispensation, and wrote to the prince of *Wales*, exhorting him to enter into the bosom of the church. As he was informed of his arrival in *Spain* before the dispensation was expedited, he added new articles to the brief, and insisted that the children of the marriage should be educated by the queen till they were ten years of age, and that the king of *Great Britain* should immediately give security to the papists in his dominions, for the quiet possession of their estates, and for liberty of conscience. These new articles occasioned some difficulties, which the king with great zeal was endeavouring to remove; but, in the midst of the negotiation, the affair was again suspended by the death of the pope.

restores
the deposit
of the *Val-*
teline, and

dies at
Rome.

DURING this negotiation the pope was solicited by the *Spaniards* to accept of the deposit of the *Valteline*. About two years before they had assisted the papists in that valley to massacre the protestants; but as it was a convenient pass from *Germany* and *France*, they thought proper to raise forces, and to keep possession of the country. This usurpation alarming the *French*, *Venetians*, and duke of *Savoy*, they concluded a league, to compel the *Spaniards* to leave the inhabitants of that valley free, which induced the usurpers, who were apprehensive of the power of the league, to resign their conquest into the hands of the pope, till their pretensions to that territory should be fully discussed. As the *French* and the *Venetians*, after some opposition, agreed to that proposal, *Gregory* sent his nephew, the duke of *Fano*, with a small body of troops, who took possession of the forts in the valley. The pope survived this transaction only a few weeks, and died on the 8th of *July*, in the 70th year of his age. He is commended for his charity to the sick and to

AMELOT DE HOUSSAYE Mem. Hist. & Polit. t. i. SPAN-
HEIM, ut supra. Hist. des Traitez des Paix, t. ii.

the poor, and, according to the *Spanish* writers, was eminent for his piety and learning. During his short pontificate he created eleven cardinals, among whom was *Richelieu*, bishop of *Lucon* in *France*.

ON the 19th of *July* fifty-four cardinals entered the conclave for the election of the new pope. As there were a great many cardinals, who for their age, virtues, and abilities, might expect the pontificate, and as the new bull of *Gregory* was to be observed, it was generally supposed that the election would be very tedious, and that the contests among the competitors would be very warm. The chiefs of the most powerful factions were *Borghese*, and *Ludoviso*, nephew of the late pope, and they both, after some canvassing and intrigues, which it would be needless to particularize, agreed to join their interest in favour of cardinal *Barberini*. His great merit was universally allowed; but as he had always acted with a free independent spirit, and spoke his sentiments with great freedom, he had, unwarily, offended some of the old cardinals, who besides objected to him on account of his youth, as he was then only in the 55th year of his age. However, no other cardinal could raise an interest of any consequence; and though he himself discovered no marks of precipitancy and eagerness, but on the contrary acted with great modesty and reserve, he was elected on 6th of *August*, by the suffrages of fifty cardinals, when he assumed the name of *Urban VIII* * (*X*). As he was attacked with a violent fever a few
Urban VIII. elected.

* Hist. des Conclaves, t. ii.

(*X*) *Maffeo Barberini*, or *Urban VIII*. was born of an ancient noble family at *Florence*, which had flourished in that city and its neighbourhood for several centuries. He was educated in his youth with great care, and early discovered a strong inclination to learning and virtue. When he was only twenty-one years of age he was admitted and esteemed by *Sixtus V.* who made him referendary. He went afterwards through many degrees of preferment with great reputation and applause. He was twice nuncio in *France*: *Paul V.* created him

a cardinal, conferred upon him the archbishopric of *Spoletto*, and appointed him his legate at *Bologna*, where he resided three years. Before his promotion to the pontificate, he had acquired a great reputation for learning and taste, and was reckoned one of the best *Latin* and *Italian* poets of his time. His most considerable pieces are paraphrases upon some psalms, and other places of the Old and New Testament, hymns and odes upon the feats of our Saviour, the Virgin *Mary*, and other saints, and epigrams on several illustrious men. His odes
are

a few days after his election, his coronation was deferred till the 29th of *September*, the feast of *St. Michael*, whom the popes generally take for their guardian, and to whom *Urban* particularly erected an image in bronze, upon the altar of *Sancta Petronella* in *St. Peter's* church, with his own image kneeling before it, and the inscription, *Te mane, te vespere*. He began his pontificate with ordering the prayers of forty hours to be put up to God, for imploring his blessing upon his government, and endeavoured to restore and settle the peace of the city, which had been disturbed by a violent sedition during the conclave¹. He likewise published the bull for the canonization of the saints nominated by his predecessor (Y) and increased their number with eight new ones of his own nomination².

*He confers
honours*

HE did not neglect to dignify and enrich his relations. He conferred his own cardinal's hat upon one of his brothers,

¹ HEYDEGGER, Hist. papat.
ut supra, t. viii.

AMAT. DE GRAVESON,

are particularly commended for their purity, and were so agreeable to the *Jesuits*, that they taught them in their schools, even during the life of the pope, as if they had been the work of a classic author. He corrected the barbarous hymns of the *Romish* church; and in an elegy prefixed to his works, he advised his cotemporaries to compose poems on pious subjects. Tho' he did not, as sovereign pontif, prohibit publishing poems on profane subjects, yet he is said so severely to have reprehended an author who presented him with an indecent poem, that he died of confusion (1). During his whole pontificate he was a great protector of men of learning and genius, though he treated false pretenders with contempt and ridicule. To one *Rusticus*, archbishop of

Rouen, who dedicated a huge insignificant volume to him, he replied by a line from *Dispanter's* grammar,—*Suprimit Urbanus que Rusticus edit inepte* (2).

(Y) He appointed the feast of *Ignatius Loyola* on the 31st of *July*, which day had been previously occupied by *St. Germain*, whose name the *Jesuits* blotted out of the calendar, to make room for that of their founder. The *French*, offended at the injury done to their saint, complained to the pope, who ordained, that the feast of both saints should be celebrated on the same day, and that, if the two saints could not agree cordially together, *Ignatius*, as the younger, should wait for the year of bissextile, or leap year, when he should have the intercalary year (3).

(1) *Le Père Menetrier de représentations en Musique, &c.*

(2) *Boyle*

let. xliii. edit. 1731. *Contin. de Menetrai, Baillet, Jugement des Savans, t. iv.*

Jonas Niclus Crythaus in Pinacothec, p. ii. Amat. de Graveson, ut supra.

(3) *Hist. des Papes, a la Haye, an. 1731.*

Anthony, a capuchin, who, after his promotion, still observed the strict rules of his order, and spent the greatest part of his time with his brother monks in a convent, which he built in the city. *Urban* also conferred the dignity of cardinal upon two of the sons of his other surviving brother *Charles*, whom he loaded with benefices and pensions: for a third nephew he revived the office of prefect of *Rome*, which he conferred upon him, with great power and authority; and near the quirinal he built a vast and magnificent palace, with fine gardens, for the family of *Barberini*, purchasing also for them large estates *, among which is that of *Palestrina*, which they enjoy at this day, under the title of a principality.

As the prince of *Wales* was still in *Spain*, *Urban*, before he would grant the dispensation for his marriage, wrote to him, and to his father king *James*, exhorting them to embrace the faith of their ancestors. As they had both advanced so far inconsiderately, he was in hopes of their compliance; but he was disappointed by the sudden departure of the prince from *Spain*, who having conceived a dislike to the match, broke off the negotiation. King *James* immediately after published an order, commanding all the popish clergy to quit *Britain* and *Ireland*, and all the papists in his dominions to deliver up their arms. However, with great inconstancy, he again thought of a popish alliance for his son; and for that purpose sent an embassy to *France*, to negotiate a treaty of marriage betwixt the prince of *Wales* and the princess *Henrietta Maria*. *Urban*, afraid of the consequences of a union betwixt *Great Britain* and *France*, opposed this match with great earnestness, and declared that he would never grant the dispensation. The articles of marriage were, nevertheless, agreed upon; and *Lewis XIII.* assuring the pope that he would not, on that account, grant any protection to the heretics, *Urban* at length consented to send the dispensation ^b.

In the mean time he endeavoured to put an end to the dispute betwixt the *French* and *Spaniards*, with regard to the possession of the *Valteline*; and for that purpose proposed some articles of accommodation to both parties, which were rejected by *Lewis XIII.* as being too favourable to the *Spaniards*. During this troublesome negotiation, *Urban* renewed the bull of *Pius V.* against the alienation of churchlands, and appointed a select number of grave and religious men to visit the monasteries, colleges, hospitals, and other

* *Etat du Siege de Rome*. t. i. ^b *Hist. du Minist. de Richelieu*. Contin. de M. *FERRAI*.

public places, to inspect their abuses and irregularities, and to give a weekly account to him of their proceedings^c. He likewise published a bull for the celebration of a universal jubilee the following year at *Romé*; but before the commencement of this festival, he was alarmed with the news that the *Valtelline*, marquis *de Cœuvres*, the *French* ambassador in *Switzerland*, A.D. had invaded the *Valtelline*. Without any regard to the pope's 1625.

flag, the marquis entered the valley in the end of *November*, and in less than two months reduced all the forts. The pope made loud complaints against this proceeding by his nuncio at the court of *France*, and sent another nuncio to *Paris* to demand satisfaction. A suspension of arms, with regard to the *Valtelline*, was granted for two months; but as the duke of *Savoy* had begun a war against the *Genoese*, in which he was assisted by the *French*, the pope was still very uneasy; and being desirous to put a stop to the disturbances in *Italy*, he recalled the nuncio who had lately gone to *France*, and in his room he sent his nephew, cardinal *Francis*

Barberini, in the character of legate *a latere*, to accommodate the differences which had occasioned a war in *Italy*. The Cardinal sent legate was received at *Paris* with great honour; but after several conferences, finding that he could expect no success from his negociation, he returned in the month of *September* A.D. 1626. to *Rome*^d.

He proceeds A FEW months after *Urban*, sent his nephew legate *a latere* to *Spain*. to *Spain*, to endeavour to negociate a peace in that kingdom, and to stand as godfather to the king's daughter. In the mean time he raised 6000 troops, which he sent towards the *Valtelline*, to assist the *Spaniards*, and *Germans* against the *French*. However, these proceedings were unnecessary; for cardinal *Richelieu* being afraid of the conspiracy, which soon after broke out, willingly agreed to a peace with *Spain*, lest that court should support the malecontents in *France*. The peace was accordingly concluded betwixt the two nations at *Monçon*, a town in *Arragon*, without consulting the legate, whom they deceived by dating the conclusion of the treaty two months before his arrival^e. *Urban* expressed no resentment for this neglect of his legate and nephew, but, on the contrary, declared to the *French* ambassador at *Rome*, that he rejoiced greatly at the peace between the two crowns of *France* and *Spain*, especially as the profession of no other

^c RYCAUT Hist. Urb. VIII.

de Minist. de Richelieu. Hist. des Traitez de Paix.

^d Contin. de MEZ. Hist.

^e Ibidem

religion but that of the church of *Rome* was to be allowed in the *Valtelline*.

MEAN while *Urban* made a promotion of twelve cardinals, *The pope* and sent cardinal *Ciprius* to take possession of the duchy of *acquires Urbino*, at the desire of the duke *Francis Maria Rovere*, *the possession of the duchy of Urbino*, who having no male heirs, and being near eighty years of age, agreed to deliver up his fief to the apostolic see before his death, in consideration of 100,000 crowns for military stores and artillery^f. The pope was also very solicitous, by means of his nuncio at *London*, to convert king *Charles*, who was generally believed to have an inclination to the popish religion, which he dissimulated from political views. Though his nuncio was obliged to quit the kingdom, he still found means to prevail with the king to shew some favour to the papists: and being very zealous for subjecting *England* to the apostolic see, he desired all those who were qualified to inform him, to give him their advice in writing, how such a re-union could be most conveniently accomplished (Z). He was greatly deceived in his expectations from *Charles*, king of *England*; for that same year he sent back the *French* domestics that had accompanied his queen; and at the intreaty of the *Hugonots* in *France*, he provided a fleet and army for their assistance, which the following year made a descent upon the isle of *Rhee*, from whence they were obliged to retire with considerable loss. *Urban* hearing of the defeat of the *English* army, wrote a congratulatory brief to *Lewis XIII.* He likewise congratulated him the year after upon the reduction of *Rochelle*; for which event he expressed his joy by composing an epigram upon the king, and going in procession with the cardinals to the church of *St. Lewis*, where he celebrated mass, and returned solemn thanks to God &c. While the *French* king was engaged in this siege, *Urban* in the month of *April* published a universal jubilee, for imploring success to his arms, and prosperity to the church. About the same time he offered his mediation to terminate *A war* the differences betwixt the duke of *Nevers*, who had succeed- raised in

A. D.
1628.

^f SPOND. ut supra.

^g Idem ibid.

(Z) On this occasion one *father Pearson*, an *English* Jesuit, to allow no other regulars to enter the island; which would be then at *Rome*, advised the pope, by means of preventing the great among other things, to confer a scandal raised by the emulation all the benefices and cures in among the different orders (1). *England* upon the *Jesuits*, and

(1) *Etat du Clergé de Rome*, t. i.

Italy; on account of *Guaftalla*, who formed pretensions to that fucceffion. As he could not prevail with the duke of *Savoy* and the *Spaniards* to lay down their arms, and refer the difpute to his arbitration, he follicited *Lewis XIII.* to march into *Italy*, promifing to act in concert with him in defence of the duke of *Mantua*.

Lewis willingly hearkened to the pope's propofal; and while he was engaged in the fieve, his ambaffador at *Rome* offered the plan of a league to be concluded betwixt himfelf, the pope, and the *Venetians*. Though *Urban* was very defirous to fee the duke of *Mantua* in peaceable poffeffion of his territories, yet his apprehenfions of the refentment of the *Spaniards* made him decline entering into the league; and he continued in the fame fentiments the following year, notwithstanding the fuccefs of the king of *France*, who in the month of *February* forced the paffes of the *Alps* with a powerful army, and took poffeffion of *Sufa*. The prefence of the *French* king quickly obliged the duke of *Savoy* to come to an accommodation with the duke of *Mantua*, and forced the *Spaniards* to retire from before *Cafal*: the pope, nevertheless, could not be prevailed upon to fign a defensive alliance againft the houfe of *Austria*, which *Lewis* again propofed to him: and though the war continued for fome time in *Italy*, occafioned by the emperor's rejecting the accommodation planned by the *French* king, and claiming the ultimate decifion of the difpute as fupreme lord of the fief, *Urban* ftill perfifted in his refolution of obferving a neutrality. *Lewis XIII.* being obliged to march back into *France* againft the *Hugonots*, the *Spaniards* renewed the fieve of *Cafal*; and an imperial army entering *Italy*, invaded the duchy of *Mantua*, and laid fieve to the city of that name. *Urban*, with great follicitations, endeavoured by his legates and nuncios to effect an accommodation; but, at the fame time, he imprudently contributed to the continuation of the war, by allowing the imperialifts before *Mantua*, who were reduced to great diftreff, to purchafe provisions in the ecclefiaftical ftate. By this means they were enabled to lie all winter before the city, which they took by treachery and furprize the following year, in the month of *July* ^b.

Richer DURING the continuance of this fieve, the pope received fubmits his the agreeable news of the fubmiffion of doct^r *Richer* in writing to *France*, who, by his book *de ecclefiaftica & politica potestate*, had raifed a party, by the name of the *Richerifts*, who were the judgment of the fo powerful and daring, that a general fchifm of the *Gallican*

^a *SIRI* Memor. fecondo, t. vi.

Church was apprehended at *Rome*. As the pope, on condition of his recantation, promised a red hat to the archbishop of *Lyons*, the elder brother of *Richelieu*, the powerful cardinal, by threatening *Richer* with the bastile, or (as some say) ^{Roman} by presenting drawn swords to his throat, compelled him to sign and seal a declaration, by which he acknowledged the *Roman* see the infallible judge of truth, and submitted his book to the judgment of his holiness ^{see}. The pope, a few days after, receiving this declaration, sent a hat to the archbishop *Richelieu*, who was distinguished from his brother by the title of cardinal of *Lyons*. *Urban* a few weeks after published a bull, on the 15th of *January*, for suppressing a new order which began to appear in *Italy*, and was composed of some female disciples of the *Jesuits*, who assumed the name of *Jesuitesses*.

AT the same time he continued his endeavours to conclude a peace in *Italy*, and for that purpose sent his nephew *Anthony Barberini* and cardinal *Mazarine*, the one as legate, and the other as nuncio, to *Pignerol*, to negotiate with cardinal *Richelieu*. The conferences were then ineffectual, and in the end of *April* the legate returned to *Bologna*; but the loss of *Mantua*, and the death of the duke of *Savoy*, and *Spinola* the *Spanish* general, which happened a few months after, made a great alteration in affairs. The *Spaniards* beginning to be apprehensive of the power of the imperialists in *Italy*, and the duke seeing his territories entirely in possession of the *French*, began willingly to hearken to a peace, ^{A peace} which was at length concluded on the 26th of *October*, by ^{concluded} the unwearied endeavours of the nuncio *Mazarine* ^{in Italy}; and by which, among other articles, it was agreed, that the dukes of *Savoy* and *Mantua* should be put in possession of their respective territories. Mean while the pope, by a consistorial decree, conferred the title of *Most eminent and most reverend* upon the cardinals, because that of *most illustrious* was then become too common. He prohibited all other ecclesiastics from assuming this new title, excepting the three ecclesiastical electors of *Germany*, and the master of the knights hospitalers of *Jerusalem*.

As *Gustavus Adolphus*, king of *Sweden*, had about this time entered *Germany* with a powerful army, to defend the protestants, who were oppressed by the emperor, *Lewis XIII.* ^{The pope endeavours to}

¹ MORISOT ad Curetum Canonicum Lingonensem, epist. ix.

^k PATIMANA. SPOND. ut supra. ¹ Contin. de MEZER. Hist. du Minist. de Richelieu, t. iii. Hist. du Card. Mazarin, l. i.

^m SPOND. ut supra.

divert the king from an alliance with the king of Sweden.
 entered into an alliance with him, in hopes of humbling the French overgrown power of the *Austrian* family. This alliance with the heretical prince gave great offence to the pope; and the following year he made many remonstrances against it to the French king, who wrote to the pope with his own hand, offering to renounce his alliance with the *Swedes*, if the king of *Spain* would withdraw his protection from his brother the duke of *Orleans*, who in discontent had retired to *Brussels*, and would join his forces to those of *France*, in order to extirpate the *French Hugonots*, and the *German* protestants. *Urban* communicated this letter to the *Spanish* ambassador, who immediately wrote concerning it to *Madrid*, from whence, however, he received no answerⁿ. In the mean time the king of *Sweden* defeated the imperial army at *Leipsic*; and by that time the elector of *Saxony* had entered *Bohemia* and taken *Prague*, he had over-run all *Germany* from the *Elbe* to the *Rhine*. This rapid progress confounded the emperor, and greatly alarmed the pope, who did his utmost by his legates, exhortations, and letters, in support of the catholic cause. According to *Spondanus*, he likewise gave supplies in money^o; though other authors affirm, that he interested himself but very little in the *German* war, which seems to have been the opinion of the court of *Spain*; for in the month of *March*, cardinal *Borgia* presented a formal protest to the pope, in the name of the catholic king, declaring, that whatever damage the catholic religion had suffered, or should suffer, could not be ascribed to *Philip*, but to his holiness.

The house of Austria complain against the pope;
 1632.

quo refuses to publish a crusade against Gustavus Adolphus

URBAN is likewise said to have given but a cold reception to a cardinal and ambassador extraordinary sent to him by the emperor, to demand assistance in troops and money. He declared, that the treasures of the church had been exhausted by the late war in *Italy*; and that if the imperial troops, which had unjustly ravaged the *Mantuan* territories, had been employed against the *Swedes*, the emperor would not have needed any foreign assistance. He absolutely refused to publish a crusade against *Gustavus*; but he granted the emperor 100,000 crowns, promised to endeavour to detach the *French* king from his alliance with the *Swedes*, and published an universal jubilee for the prosperity of the catholic religion in *Germany*^p. As he declared in a full consistory, that the *Spaniards*, by their unbounded ambition, obliged even good catholics to rejoice at the victories of an heretic, the imperial

ⁿ Journal des Savans, jan. 1688.

^p Hist. de Richelieu, t. iv.

^o SPOND. ut supra.

And *Spanish* ministers at *Rome* endeavoured to persuade the cardinals to call a general council to depose him¹. Their endeavours, however, were ineffectual; the temporal power and grandeur of the pope rendering such an attempt ridiculous, especially as *Urban* about the same time, by his disinterestedness, had greatly raised his character among the *Romans*. Though, by the death of the duke of *Urbino*, he had then entered into the peaceable possession of that duchy, he nevertheless refused to give the investiture of it to any of his nephews, and, contrary to the persuasions of the *Italian* princes, united the whole territories of the late duke to the dominion of the church; in memory of which union he ordered an inscription to be engraven, and hung up in the *Vatican*². The resentment for the pope's conduct was indeed very high in *Spain*, where even some of the *Jesuits* declared against him. The king's council also deliberated about depriving his holiness of all collation to benefices in that kingdom, and proposed to erect a datary in *Spain*, to prevent any money from being carried to *Rome*: however, their resentment cooled upon the death of *Gustavus*, who was slain at the battle of *Lutzen* on the 16th of *November*³.

He unites
the duchy
of Urbino
to the ter-
ritories of
the church.

Not long after the pope had a rupture with the *Venetian* republic, occasioned first by a public affront given by one of his nephews to the *Venetian* ambassador at *Rome*; on which account the republic ordered their ambassador to return without taking leave. They, in their turn, had offended the pope, by refusing to give the title of eminence to the cardinals; but what chiefly irritated both parties, was a contest about the navigation of the *Po*, which had been obstructed by the legate at *Ferrara*. Some skirmishes had happened in the neighbourhood of this city betwixt the *Romans* and *Venetians*; but the pope being apprehensive of a war, willingly accepted the mediation of the duke of *Crequi*, the *French* ambassador, who, about the middle of *June*, arrived at *Rome* with a splendid retinue, to yield obedience to the pope in the king's name. *Crequi* made great professions of the attachment of *Louis XIII.* to his holiness; but not being able to prevail with *Urban* to engage in a defensive alliance with *France*, he left *Rome*, and proceeded to *Venice*, where, in conjunction with the sieur de *La Thuillerie*, the *French* ambassador to the republic, he entered into a negotiation with the *Venetian* deputies⁴. The pope, in the mean time, made an encroach-

A rupture
betwixt
him and
the Vene-
tians.
A. D.
1633.

The
French
offer their
mediation:

¹ HEYDEGGER, Hist. Papat. t. vii. Traitez de Paix.
² RYCAUT Hist. Urban. HE G. ut supra. Hist.
de Richelieu. RYCAUT, ut supra.
F f 2 ment

ment upon the liberties of the *Gallican* church, by naming commissaries to judge six bishops, who were accused of favouring a rebellion, which the year before had been raised by the dukes of *Orleans* and *Montmorency*. This proceeding, however, was not in the least opposed by the court or clergy of *France*; but, on the contrary, *Belieu* was supposed to have desired the commission from *him*, that his power and authority might seem to be countenanced by the pope, whose friendship he was at great pains to secure, that the imperialists and *Spaniards* might be deprived of the papal interest.

A. D.

1634.

• THE following year *Urban* sent *Mazarine*, his vice-legate at *Avignon*, as nuncio extraordinary to *France*, in order to be fully satisfied with regard to the origin of the war in *Germany*, and the complaints of the house of *Austria* against the *French*, for granting protection to the elector of *Triers*. During his residence in that kingdom, *Urban* published a bull, renewing the decrees of the council of *Trent*, and of the following popes, for the residence of bishops, ordering all bishops, archbishops, patriarchs, and cardinals, to reside in their own dioceses, and not to depart from thence without an apostolic licence. By this new constitution *Urban* intended civilly to remove from *Rome* and *Italy* some cardinals and prelates, who endeavoured to oblige him to declare himself a party in the present war.

The elector of *Triers* is imprisoned by the *Spaniards*.

1635.

Far from engaging warmly in the disputes in *Germany*, he seemed not even greatly to resent the imprisonment of the elector of *Triers*, who, in the month of *March*, was surprized in his capital by the *Spaniards*, and carried prisoner to *Brussels*. The elector had inflamed the resentment of the house of *Austria* against him, by embracing a neutrality upon the invasion of the *Swedes*, and putting his territories under the protection of the *French*, who had a garrison in *Triers*, when it was surprized by the *Spaniards*. The *French* insisted upon the liberty of the archbishop, who had never been declared an enemy, or put to the ban of the empire; and upon the refusal of the *Spaniards*, immediately declared war against them.

The pope offers his mediation betwixt the kings of *France* and *Spain*.

MAZARINE, who was still in *France*, wrote to the pope that, by his mediation, the differences betwixt the crowns might be easily accommodated. In consequence of this letter, *Urban* immediately sent an order to *Mazarine*, and to his nuncio *Bolognetti*, to act as mediators; but he quickly found, that the two kingdoms were too much ani-

Contin. de MEZERAI, l. vi. de Lewis XIII.
ut supra.

SPOND.

mated

married against each other, to hearken at that time to an accommodation: he therefore continued in his former resolution, of strictly adhering to a neutrality, though he was again solicited by the king to enter into a defensive alliance with them *.

At the same time, he ordered his two nuncios at Paris to comply to the king against the proceeding of Richelieu, who had procured several bishops to annul the marriage of the duke of Orleans with the sister of the duke of Lorraine, as contracted without the knowledge of his brother the king. The pope interested himself in that affair, at the desire of the queen mother and the duchess of Orleans, who were then refugees at Antwerp; but all that he could obtain from the court of France was a long memorial, presented by the bishop of Montpellier, urging the absolute necessity of annulling the marriage, which had been contracted contrary to the fundamental laws of the kingdom †.

THE great power and arbitrary behaviour of Richelieu began to give some uneasiness and jealousy to the pope, who was apprehensive lest he should assume the title and dignity of patriarch, as he had taken possession of all the regular abbeys, which in France are chiefs of orders. The following year, therefore, he refused him the bulls which he demanded for the abbeys of Cîteaux and Premontré; and recalled Mazarine, who, he was informed, was devoted to the service of the cardinal duke. Though Richelieu desired that he might be sent to Madrid, on pretence of negotiating a peace, but in reality to be his spy at that court, Urban would not consent, but ordered him to return to his legation at Avignon ‡. In resentment for these mortifications, Richelieu recalled the count de Noailles from Rome, and sent the marshal d'Etrées in his place, who he knew was not agreeable to the pope, and much less to the Spanish faction at Rome.

D'ETRÉES was ordered to complain to the pope of his great severity to his vassal the duke of Parma, whom he had threatened with excommunication, for espousing the French party in Italy. Urban at first refused to acknowledge the marshal as an ambassador; but even after he had granted him audience, he would give him no satisfaction with regard to his difference with the duke of Parma (A). The pope's nephews,

He is jealous of the power of Richelieu.
A.D.
1636.

Hist. des Traitez de Paix
* Idem ibid.

† Contin. de MEZERAI.

(A) D'Etrées, during this embassy, received two great

affronts at the pope's court, the one in the person of his daughter.
F f 3

*Difference
betwixt
the pope
and the
duke of
Parma;*

*which pro-
ceeds to an
open rup-
ture.*

nephews, particularly cardinal *Francis*, at that time had a secret pique against the duke of *Parma*, who it seems had not paid his court to them so assiduously as they expected. They had also desired that the duke should contract an alliance in their family, on which account they had prevailed with him to visit the pope at *Rome*, and he desired him an abatement of the interest of a large sum of money, which his father had borrowed from a public bank in the city. As the pope attributed to himself the power of lowering the interest borrowed from the public banks, the duke easily obtained the abatement which he desired; nevertheless some difference happening betwixt him and the cardinal nephews, about ceremony, he rejected the proposed alliance, and left *Rome*, without taking leave. He soon after married a princess of the house of *Medicis*; on which account he incurred the resentment of the pope and his nephews, who resolved to make him sensible of their power. As he had mortgaged the duchy of *Castro*, a fief of the apostolic see, for the money which he had borrowed, and paid the annual interest in corn from that duchy, which the ministers of the apostolic chamber, who had the care of supplying the public granaries of the city, received instead of money, the nephews prohibited any corn from *Castro* from entering the ecclesiastical state: they likewise allowed the interest to run in arrear for two or three years; at the end of which time they made a demand of the whole, which the duke was not able to satisfy; on which account the whole duchy of *Castro* was confiscated, and *Taddeo*, prefect of *Rome*, seized upon it with an armed force. The viceroy of *Naples* and the grand duke of *Tuscany* interceded for the duke, who found himself unable to oppose the army, and was apprehensive of being attacked in his dominions of *Parma* and *Placentia*. The senate of *Venice* likewise offered their mediation; but *Urban* scorned to admit of any intercession on behalf of his vassal; declared the duke to be deprived of his dominions and fiefs, in consequence of having incurred the sentence of greater excommunication; and condemned him also to pay all the expences of the war. In pursuance of this sentence, the duke's palace and goods in *Rome* were exposed to sale, and the dutey c

ter-in-law, who was debauched, the other in person of his upon a promise of marriage by a room, whom the cardinal paid the pope's nephew, cardinal *Iron* ordered to be killed at *Anthony*, and poisoned by *Isabella* *rescatti*, upon account of his upon her proving with child. sentence (1).

(1) *Amelot de la Houffaye, mem. Hist. polit. t. iii.*

was taken into the possession of the *Camera*, though annexed to the popedom. Towards the end of the year 1641. A. D.

Urban demanded a passage for his army, consisting of men, through the dominions of the duke of *Modena*, with the intention of carrying the war into the duchy of *Parma*.

DURING these confusions in *Italy*, the pope had sent cardinal *Ginepro* to the congress, which was established at *Cologn* for negotiating a peace betwixt the emperor, *French*, *Spaniards*, and *Svedes*. He had also received the filial obedience from the emperor *Ferdinand III.* though the legality of his election was not a little contested in *Germany*; and had some disputes with the cardinal *Richelieu*, who being disoblged with him for refusing the cardinals hat to *Mazarine*, and denying to grant the bulls for the abbies of *Cisteaux* and *Premontre*, would not receive his nuncio in *France*. At length the difference betwixt the pope and the *French* court was accommodated; and about the time that he demanded a passage for his army through the *Modenese*, he made a promotion of cardinals, when he conferred a hat upon *Mazarine* ^a. About the same time he published a bull, condemning all the books of *Janfenius* (B) upon the assistance and efficacy of grace, as renewing the doctrine of *Michael Baius*, condemned by former popes; and prohibited, under severe censures and civil penalties, any one from treating of the assistance of grace, without the exprefs permission of the holy see ^b. Urban condemns the books of Janfenius on grace and free-will.

BUT

^a Hist. du Card. Mazarine, l. i. adversus August. Janfenii.

Bulla Urban VIII.

(B) We have already mentioned, that, in the end of the former century and the beginning of this, the controversy about the agreement of grace with the freedom of the will had made a great noise, occasioned by the book of *Molina*, the *Spanish Jesuit*, on that subject. The two parties, after the trial they had at *rome*, were silent for several years, till one *rassé*, a *Jesuit*, revived the dispute, by publishing a book the year 1626, intitled, *the fundamental truths*

the Christian religion. This treatise was answered by the abbé *de St. Pierre* in a masterly manner, so that the *Jesuit's* book was generally condemned, and was publicly censured, as containing a great many erroneous, scandalous, and heretical propositions, and being full of false quotations of scripture, and of the fathers of the church. The revival of this dispute induced *Janfenius*, who was then at *Louvain*, to examine thoroughly the sentiments of *St. Augustine* upon grace, predestination, and free-

A.D.
1642.

The war
of Parma
involves
him in
great dif-
ficulties.

BUT the chief concern of the pope at this time was the war with the duke of *Parma*, which began to engage him in difficulties, that, in the beginning of the rupture, he had not expected. Though he had obtained leave of a free passage for his army from the duke of *Modena*, yet the *Venetians* and duke of *Tuscany* having assisted the duke with money and troops, he found it impossible to advance, as his raw men, from their dread of a new enemy, deserted in great numbers. In these circumstances the pope inconsiderately made an offer of a suspension of arms for fifteen days, during which time the *Venetians*, the grand duke, and the duke of *Mantua*, entered into a formal alliance to assist the duke of *Parma*, who immediately, with great boldness, invaded the *Bolognese* territory with 3000 horse, without either foot or cannon. This unexpected irruption struck a panic into the pope's army, which fled with great precipitation; while the duke, without opposition, made himself master of *Imola*, *Faenza*, and *Forlì*. Upon these successes, *Rome* was thrown into great consternation; new levies were ordered, the coach horses were seized, and sent from the city to mount the foldiers; the prefect, who had behaved with great cowardice, was recalled, and the command of the army given to cardinal *Antonio*, who proceeding to *Viterbo* with 9000 men, endeavoured to oppose the march of the duke into the duchy of *Castro*. Winter approaching, and the pope's arms having been so unsuccessful, the cardinal nephews made proposals for an accommodation, which were rejected by the allies, as being disadvantageous to the duke of *Parma*, who they insisted should be put in possession of all his former territories.

1643.

Early in the following spring the war was again renewed, with

free-will; and after reading the works of that father on these subjects thirty times, and reconciling his infinite variations, he at length composed a huge volume in folio, intitled, *Augustinus*, which was published in the year 1640, two years after his death. The *Jesuits* denounced his book to the inquisitor at *Rome*, and published theses against it; so that the popish clergy were immediately divided into two parties, distinguished by the names of *Janse- nists* and *Molinists*. These last were opposed by the *Sorbonne* and the most eminent divines of *Eu- rope*; however, they found means of securing their interest at the court of *Rome*: but though the pope published a bull in their favour, the contest between both parties hath still subsisted, and hath lately been the occasion of great animosities and disturbances in *France* (1).

(1) *Hist. de Jansenisme*, t. i. *Utrecht: Hist. Jansenius edit. Utrecht 1695, Lett. Imaginées, let. iii. Lettres de Jansen*

rious success on both sides, though carried on with little hour, each party declining the approach of their enemy, and making conquests where they were sure to meet with no resistance. After the summer had been spent in such military operations, without much blood-shed, proposals for peace were again offered by the pope, who being affected with the distresses of his subjects, which his nephews had long disguised, began to be very desirous of seeing an end of the war. Accordingly *Urban*, consenting to restore the duchy of *Castro* to the duke, and the court of *France* interposing as a mediator, a peace was concluded in the beginning of the following year, to the great joy of the subjects of the ecclesiastical state, who cursed the ambition of the *Barberini*, for having engaged their uncle in a disgraceful and ruinous war, which had cost the apostolic see upwards of 20,000,000 of crowns^c. During the continuance of this war an ambassador arrived at *Rome*, to yield obedience to the pope in the name of *John* duke of *Braganza*, as king of *Portugal*; but as the *Spaniards* were very powerful in *Italy*, and looked upon the *Portuguese* as rebels, the pope, from an apprehension of the *Spanish* resentment, refused to acknowledge the new king, and would not admit his ambassador to an audience^d. He survived the peace with the duke of *Parma* but a few *Urban* months, and died on the 29th of *July*, in the 77th year of his age, and the 21st of his pontificate. He is accused of having been in some measure concerned in the massacre of the protestants in *Ireland*, which kingdom, it is said, he endeavoured to reduce under his own dominion, by means of his nuncio *Rinuncini*^e. Nevertheless, he was esteemed by the protestants, who frequently drank his health, and stiled him their good friend^f. He was reckoned one of the most learned men of his time, and was greatly commended for prudence and generosity. His chief fault was nepotism, or too great a desire of aggrandizing his nephews, who in the end of his life, gained a great ascendancy over him, and engaged him in the war of *Parma*, which made the *Romans* long remember his pontificate with detestation. He was likewise greatly blamed for stripping the brass from the roof of the pantheon, or *rotondo*, to adorn an altar in *St. Peter's*

A peace
concluded
with the
duke of
Parma.
A. D.
1644.

^c RYCAUT, et supra. Etat du Siege de Rome, t. i. LARREG, Hist. de Louis XIV. t. i. VACQUEFORT l'Ambassadeur & ses Fonctions, l. i.

^d VERTOT Hist. of the Revolution in Portugal. Hist. de Traitez de Paix, t. ii.

^e RAPIN, LUDLOW's Mem.

^f L'Homme du Pap, & du Roi, p. 127.

church,

church, which gave occasion to the pasquinade, *Quod non fecere Barbari, fecere Barberini* &c.

THO' at the death of *Urban* his nephews were in possession of great power, yet as they had governed in a very arbitrary manner during his pontificate, they had drawn upon themselves a general hatred; so that, according to the author of the history of *Mazarine*, *Thaddeo* was obliged to deliver up his commission of prefect of *Rome* to the general congregation of cardinals. But, according to *Rycart*, two cardinals were only joined in commission with him, and a lieutenant-general was created with absolute power over the forces^b. The cardinals then, to the number of fifty-five, entered the conclave, where at first the *Barberini*s used all their interest to procure the election of cardinal *Sachetti*; but he being excluded by the *Spanish* faction, several other candidates were afterwards named, who were also rejected. At length, after a contest of six weeks, which is minutely narrated in the history of the conclaves, cardinal *Pamphilio* was elected pope on the 15th of *September*, by the general concurrence of all the cardinals, excepting five, and assumed the name of *Innocent X.* According to *Heydegger*, his election met with great opposition, on account of the aversion he was known to have for the study of divinity and the belles lettres, being acquainted only with the bar and the rota; and because he was universally said to be entirely under the direction of his sister-in-law *Donna Olympia* (C).

Innocent
X. is
elected.

The war
renewed
against the
duke of
Parma;

IMMEDIATELY after his promotion he discovered his great vanity, by accepting an impious and blasphemous panegyric that was presented to him by a certain *Latinised Greek*, named *John Baptist Calumfrito*, who insisted, that, as he was named *Pamphilio*, his honour and authority was greater than that of our Saviour, who was only *filius Dei*^k. He

^a Etat du Siege de Rome pendant l'ut.

du Cardinal Mazarine, l. ii.

^k Idem ibid.

^b AUBERY Hist.

ⁱ HEYDEGGER Hist. Papat.

(C) *Innocent X.* or *John Baptist Pamphilio*, was born at *Rome*, of an antient and noble family. He studied in the *Roman* college, and at the age of twenty years took the degree of bachelor of laws. He was afterwards consistorial advocate, and auditor of the

rota, nuncio at *Naples*, and datary in the legation of cardinal *Barberini* in *France* and *Spain*; in which last kingdom, after the departure of the legate, he was left as resident nuncio, and a few years after was promoted to the dignity of a cardinal (1).

(1) *Graveyson Hist. Eccl. t. viii.*

Soon took an opportunity likewise of breaking the peace, lately concluded with the duke of *Parma*. Notwithstanding the remonstrances of the duke, he conferred the bishopric of *Castro* on a certain monk, whom he forced, even against his inclination, to accept of the benefice. The new bishop, upon going to take possession of his church, was assassinated, which murder provoked the pope to remove the bishopric of *Castro* to *Aquapendente*. He also excommunicated and declared war against the duke; and marching against *Castro*, took and demolished the city. The duke's allies, however, quickly obliged the pope to agree to a peace, by which the duchy of *Castro* was again restored, on condition that the duke should pay a considerable sum of money, which article the duke, being either unable or not willing to comply with, the duchy was at last re-united to the apostolic chamber¹.

who loses
the duchy
of *Castro*.

ALTHOUGH *Innocent* had been greatly obliged to the *Barberini* for his elevation to the papal dignity, yet he ungratefully resolved to ruin that house, which had then likewise unfortunately incurred the displeasure of the court of *France*, for having espoused his cause in the conclave. The *French* ambassador at *Rome*, by order of *Mazarine*, desired cardinal *Antonio Barberino* to deliver up the brevet of protector of the *French* affairs, granted him by the king, and ordered him to take down the *French* arms, which were placed above the gate of his palace^m. Though the *Barberini* endeavoured to persuade the pope that they were persecuted by the *French* for having favoured his election, he behaved to them, nevertheless, with great indifference and coldness; and before his coronation he ordered the prefect *Thaddeo* to yield the preference in all ceremonies to foreign ambassadors. They endeavoured to secure his protection by proposing a marriage betwixt *Donna Olympia's* son *Camillo*, and the daughter of the prefect, with whom they offered in dowry a yearly revenue of 30,000 crowns, to be taken out of the benefices which they held from the church, together with the estate of *Montelibreto*, which they had bought from the *Ursini* for a million of livres. He however rejected these great offers, created his nephew *Don Camillo* a cardinal, and appointed him legate of *Avignon*, in the room of *Anthony Barberino*, who in the month of *December* left *Rome* and went to *France*, to endeavour, if possible, to recover the favour of that court.

His journey was very successful; for *Mazarine*, considering that the court of *Rome* was then chiefly composed of a supported

¹ Etat du Siege de Rome.

^m Hist. du Cardinal Mazarine.

by the
court of
France.

A. D.

1645.

faction entirely devoted to the house of *Austria* and the grand duke, thought the *Barberini*, when supported by *France*, would serve as a counterpoise to that party; he therefore received *Anthony* into his protection, allowed the *French* arms to be replaced upon his palace, and wrote a letter to the pope in favour of the *Barberini*, which in the mean time received daily affronts and mortifications in the papal court. The pope paid no regard to the letter of *Mazarine*; but a few days after erected a congregation of five cardinals, all enemies to the *Barberini*, with a commission to examine their past conduct. He ordered cardinal *Anthony* to return to *Rome* within two months, under pain of excommunication, and forfeiture of all his revenues and benefices which he held from the church, in the mean time sequestering his revenue, and prohibiting cardinal *Francis* and the prefect from removing any of their effects. The new congregation cited cardinal *Francis* to give an account of all the sums which he had taken from the castle of *St. Angelo*, during the five last years of the pontificate of his uncle: and as he endeavoured to defend himself, by alleging that his office of vice-chancellor exempted him from giving an account of his administration, they produced a decree, annulling the dispensation granted by his uncle for his indemnification. This severe persecution of the *Barberini* raised the public compassion, and drew a general odium upon the pope, who was universally accused of ingratitude and imprudence, especially as he discovered as great a passion of nepotism as his predecessor, and was wholly guided by the counsels of *Donna Olympia Mالداحيني*, who had impudently assumed the administration of affairs, domineered over the whole court, and amassed money with such greediness and rapacity, that the extortion of the former pontificate appeared moderate and merciful.

The pope's
nephew is
banished
from
Rome.

THE behaviour of the pope to his nephew *Camillo*, or cardinal *Pamphilio*, likewise exposed him to the public censure. The cardinal having fallen in love with the princess *Rossana*, a young widow, hid aside his hat without the knowledge of the pope, and privately married her; which proceeding so exasperated his uncle and his mother, that after a private conference of two hours, they resolved to banish him and his lady from *Rome*. This severe determination was accordingly executed, to the astonishment of the *Romans*, who thought the crime very pardonable, as the princess *Rossana* was not only distinguished by her birth and fortune, but by her

^a Etat du Siege de Rome, &c. Hist. du Card. Mazarine.
DE LARREY Hist. de Louis XIV. Fontin. de MEZERAI. RY-
CAUT, Hist. Innocent X.

beauty and personal accomplishments. Their banishment was chiefly attributed to Donna *Olympia*, who being jealous lest the prince should lessen her sovereign authority, thought proper to keep her at a distance from the court.

IN the meantime the *Barberini* prepared their accounts, which they delivered to the congregation in the beginning of *January*, offering themselves to the books in the apostolic chamber for their discharge, and desiring that these books might be examined. Their demand, however, was refused, and the court in an extraordinary manner, and without form of law, sequestered their money in the public bank, and all their revenues within the ecclesiastical dominions. This severe and unexpected sentence made them think of their personal security. They accordingly left *Rome* privately and retired to *France*, where they were received with great respect. *Mazarine*, in the mean time, earnestly soliciting the pope in their behalf, and even threatening to send an army into *Italy* if *Innocent* would not consent to a reconciliation. The *Venetians* being desirous of preventing any disturbances on their side the *Alps*, used their utmost endeavours to reconcile the pope and *Mazarine*, but without any effect. Both parties were too much actuated by private resentment to hearken to an accommodation. The pope having refused a red hat to the archbishop of *Aix*, the brother of *Mazarine*, that cardinal in resentment protected the *Barberini*, and fitted out a powerful fleet, with a design of making a descent on the coast of *Italy*, and humbling his holiness.

A.D.
1945.

The Barberini escape into France.

THE news of the *French* preparations alarmed the pope; but what confounded him much more was a report that the French chapel at *Loretto* had again taken flight and quitted *Italy*. Soon after the *French* fleet appeared on the coast, and took possession of *Piombino*, *Portolongone*, *St. Stephano*, and *Talamone*, places belonging to the *Spaniards* in *Tuscany*. These successes obliged *Innocent* to sink in earnest of a reconciliation with the *Barberini*; he therefore suspended the execution of his bull, which he had published against them for three months, during which time he re-established them in their former employment, took off the sequestration from their effects, and declared, that he would accept of their submission if they would repair to the county of *Avignon*, and write to him from thence. The duke of *Guise* soon

which influences the pope to pardon the Barberini.

* RYCAUT, ut supra. P. LARREY, ut supra. Hist. du Card. Mazarine, l. ii. *Sur le rétablissement touchant l'Administration du Card. Mazarine.* MARI Hist. Venice. RYCAUT, ut supra.

A. D. 1647. after arriving at *Rome*, insinuated himself into the favour of Donna *Olympia* and of the pope; and having had several conferences with his holiness, he persuaded him the following year to a reconciliation with *Mazarin*, and prevailed with him to confer a hat on the archbishop of *Six*, as a means of securing for the future the interposition of the prime minister of *France*, who governed that kingdom in a most absolute manner. *Mazarine*, however, being offended that the promotion of his brother had been so long delayed, thanked the pope in a very cold manner, and, contrary to his expectation, still kept possession of *Piombino*.

He refuses to acknowledge the king of Portugal.

MEAN while several bishoprics becoming vacant in *Portugal*, the king nominated successors to them; and the clergy of that kingdom, with his consent, dispatched *Nicholas de Monteyro* to *Rome*, to procure the bulls. The *Spanish* ambassador made several attempts to assassinate this envoy in *Rome*, on which account he was ordered by the pope to quit the city. He refused, however, to confer the bishoprics at the nomination of the king of *Portugal*, but offered to bestow them, *proprio motu*, on the same persons whom the king mentioned. This expedient was rejected by the king, who nevertheless refused to order his clergy to elect a patriarch, or to allow the chapters to chuse the bishops, and the other prelates to consecrate them, as he was advised by several doctors in his dominions.

ABOUT the same time the authority of the pope received a check from the clergy of *France*, who, knowing the disposition of the present prime minister, in a numerous assembly drew up a formal protest against the encroachments upon their liberties during the late pontificate. The parliament of *Paris* likewise endeavoured to oppose the innovations introduced by the nuncio of *Innocent*, who, from his own authority, had ordered a decree of the *Roman* inquisition against a book of Mr. *Annand*, doctor of the *Sorbonne*, to be published and dispersed in *France*. The parliament, in defence of the privileges of the nation, drew up an arret, prohibiting all persons from printing, publishing, and selling, any briefs, decrees, or bulls, from *Rome*, without letters patent from the king, registered in their court. They received a letter from the king, who was then at *Compeigne*, or rather from *Mazarine*, who was biased in favour of the see of *Rome*, desiring them not to proceed on that subject. They nevertheless continued their deliberations, and, by a decree, prohibited

1 Memoires du Duc de *Guise* l. i. LARREX, ut supra.
2 Hist. des Traitez de Paix.

the archbishops and bishops, their vicars and officials, the rector and members of the university, from receiving, publishing, or executing, the decrees of the inquisition, or other bulls and briefs, excepting those allowed of by the laws of the kingdom.

MEANWHILE the celebrated dispute about grace, betwixt the *Jansenists* and *Jesuits*, revived with great warmth. Innocent observing that the bull of his predecessor on that subject was eluded, sent briefs to the governor of *Flanders*, to the archbishops of *Mechlin* and *Cambray*, to seven other bishops, to the *Sorbonne*, to Mr. *William des Azees*, doctor of *Louvain*, to *William Leopold*, archduke of *Austria*, and to the bishop of *Straßburg*: by which he confirmed the bull of *Urban*, and strictly ordered it to be published and put in execution. It was accordingly published in some places, and a persecution began to be raised against the *Jansenists*, all being rigorously prohibited from being admitted to the direction of souls, unless, after having solemnly made profession of the faith of the council of *Trent*, they should sign the formula of the condemnation of *Jansenius*. The *Jansenists*, provoked by this rigorous treatment, drew up an appeal to the pope, under the title of *The complaint of the Augustinian truth suffering in the Low Countries*, supplicating him to order the doctrine to be examined before it should be condemned. In three other writings, which they then published, they maintained, that an opinion, which was not contrary to the Scripture nor the councils, could not be condemned as heretical; and that the censure had been published not against *Jansenius*, but against *St. Augustine*, whose doctrines he had only put in a proper light. The primate of *Flanders*, the bishop of *Ghent*, and the grand vicars of the episcopal see of *Ypres*, likewise declared their reasons why they could not publish the pope's bulls; on which account the *Jesuits*, who were favoured at *Rome*, formally condemned five propositions taken from the works of *Jansenius*, which the *Jansenists* maintained were not to be found in his writings.

DURING these proceedings a rebellion happened in *Naples* and *Sicily*, occasioned by the grievous taxes laid upon the people to support the war against *France*. The duke of *Guise*, who was then at *Rome*, was encouraged by the pope to head the rebels, in hopes of securing the possession of those kingdoms, to which he had some distant pretensions. The

* Hist. du Cardinal Mazarin, l. v. Contin. de MEZERAU.

* Hist. General de Jansenisme, Contin. de MEZERAU. HENDEGGER Hist. Papat. Æt. vii.

A.D.
1648.
*Offers the
investiture
of Naples
to the duke
of Guise;
and*

duke accordingly proceeded to *Naples*, and by his courage and conduct, without being assisted by *France*, quickly made a surprising progress. The *French* however, the following year, making a shew of sending a powerful army to that kingdom, the pope was very apprehensive lest they intended to seize it for themselves: he therefore urged the duke to assume the title of king of both *Sicilies*, offered to give him the investiture of the kingdom, promised to lend him 300,000 crowns, and assured him that all *Italy* would form a league in his behalf. The duke replied, that it was not then a proper time to declare his pretensions, but begged that *Innocent* would send him the money, of which he was in great need. The pope, however, did not think proper to send him the subsidy he had promised him, but only advised him to be diffident of the *French* and *Spaniards*, who were equally his enemies.

*condemns
the treat-
ies of Os-
naburgh
and Mun-
ster.*

Soon after *Innocent*, having received copies of the treaties of *Onnaburgh* and *Munster*, by which a general peace was established in *Germany*, *France*, and *Sweden*, he published a bull, by which he protested against them with great formality. His nuncio *Fabio Chigi*, who had presided at the negotiations for three years as mediator, had done his utmost, by declarations and protests, to prevent the conclusion of the peace; but his remonstrances being ineffectual, the pope, in his bull which he published in the end of *November*, exclaimed against the injustice and iniquity of the treaties, as the heretics were allowed thereby to secularize ecclesiastical possessions, and were admitted equally with catholics to public offices and employments. As the number of electors was augmented without the consent of the apostolic see, and many other things agreed to, prejudicial to the orthodox religion, he therefore condemned, annulled, and declared invalid, all those articles in the treaties prejudicial to the catholic religion, divine worship, and the apostolical *Roman* see, the inferior churches, and the ecclesiastical order, as also to their jurisdictions, authorities, immunities, franchises, liberties, exemptions, revenues, privileges, and rights. This protestation, however, had no effect upon the different parties concerned in the treaties; and *Conringius*, *Blondel*, *Hoornbeeck*, and other protestants, wrote an answer to it, shewing the necessity and reasonableness of the treaty.

1650.

IN the mean time, finding himself loaded with the multiplicity of affairs, he resolved to adopt a nephew, with the design of creating him cardinal, patron, to give audience

to ambassadors and ministers, and in his absence to preside at the council. Accordingly, by the advice of his favourite cardinal *Panzirolo*, and afterwards upon his public recommendation, he fixed upon *Astalli*, brother of the marquis *Astalli*, that had married a niece of Donna *Olympia*, who being consulted lightly on the affair, seemed not averse to his promotion. However, to her great surprize, a few days after, *Astalli*, who was then about twenty-seven years of age and clerk of the chamber, was promoted in a full consistory, and declared cardinal of the house of *Pamphilio*. The same day the pope sent him to lodge at one of his palaces, and assigned him a revenue of 10,000 crowns; and by way of public rejoicing, though unusual on such occasions, ordered the cannon of *St. Angelo* to be fired. The pope, with great irresolution, immediately began to repent of his proceeding, and when the new cardinal took his leave of him to go and visit the members of the sacred college, he said to him, "Go, we do not know what we have been doing." Donna *Olympia* likewise, coming to the palace with her daughters, and complaining with great bitterness against him, he was immediately disgraced, and not allowed a single servant; so that *Panzirolo*, who found the necessity, for his own sake, of supporting him, was obliged to furnish him with attendants, and to maintain him at his own expence for fifteen days.

• PANZIROLLO, soon after, prevailed upon the pope to countenance and honour *Astalli*; and, what was more, had influence sufficient to persuade him to disgrace *Olympia*, and to banish her the court. She had abused her authority in a most scandalous manner, and had gained such an absolute ascendancy over the pope, that in every thing his will had been subservient to her dictates. Her avarice and ambition were unbounded: she disposed of all benefices, which were kept vacant till she fully informed herself of their value: she rated an office of 1000 crowns for three years, at one year's revenue, and if for life at twelve years purchase, one-half of which sum she required to be paid by advance: she gave audience upon public affairs, enacted new laws, abrogated those of former popes, and sat in council with *Innocent* with bundles of memorials in her hands. It was generally said, that they lived together in a criminal correspondence, and that she had charmed him by some secret incantation. In the protestant countries the loves and intrigues of *Innocent* and Donna *Olympia* were represented upon the stage, and libellous jests were daily put into the hands of *Pasquin* at *Rome*. As she had usurped such an absolute authority, the new cardinal nephew saw the necessity of ruining her credit;

he therefore seconded the endeavours of Panzirollo, and insinuated to the pope, that his reputation had suffered greatly among the catholics by her scandalous proceedings, and that his uncles were treated with disrespect and contempt at the courts of the emperor, France, and Spain. Upon these representations, Innocent at length, but with great reluctance, banished Olympia, and was reconciled to prince Camillo and the princefs Rossano; though some authors affirm, that her banishment was no more than a political retreat, and that she still in private directed the affairs of the pope. After the banishment of Olympia, the cardinal patron and Panzirollo were for some time in great credit and esteem; but Panzirollo having weakened his health by his continual application to business, and dying the year following, cardinal Astalli, or Pamphilio, quickly found his influence lessened.

A. D. 1651. DURING these transactions the Barberini suffered continual mortifications at the pope's court, notwithstanding several remonstrances of the French ambassador in their behalf. At length the aversion of Innocent for Mazarine and the French increasing, he began to think of a reconciliation with the Barberini, in order to lessen the French interest in the conclave. For this purpose he consulted with the heads of the Spanish faction, who, in order to bring over Francis Barberino to their party, offered an advantageous match for his niece the princefs of Palestrina, who was then in France, and promised to restore to him 10,000 crowns a year, which he held in abbies within the dominions of his catholic majesty. The French ambassador at Rome, being informed of this secret negotiation, wrote to France, urging the absolute necessity of giving the princefs of Palestrina in marriage to one of the peers of the kingdom, and of writing without delay to cardinal Francis, to prevent him from closing with the Spaniards. Mazarine having considered the ambassador's letter, created cardinal Antonio bishop of Poitiers, and cardinal Francis grand almoner of France. However, they could not resist the offers made to them by Donna Olympia, who had now recovered great credit with the pope, and promised to restore them to his intimate favour, on condition that they would assent to the marriage of Don Theodorus son with her grand-daughter, without any dowry. They em-

The Barberini are restored to favour and confidence.

1652.

* GALEAZO GUALDO, PRIORATO Hist. de Jules Mazarins, t. ii. — L'Abbe GUALDO Hist. de Donna Olympia Maldachina, Brat du Siege de Rome. RYCHT, ut supra. HEYDEGGER Hist. Papat. Mem. du Card. de Retz, t. iv. DESMARETZ Tableau des Papes. Hist. du Card. Mazarine.

braced these offers with great ardour; and cardinal *Antonio* having privately conducted his niece, the princess of *Palestrina*, to *Padua*, returned to *Rome*, where the eldest son of *Tbaddeo* was created a cardinal, and the marriage celebrated betwixt his second son and the grand-daughter of *Olympia*. Soon after the princess of *Palestrina* was married to the duke of *Modena*, and cardinal *Francis* was admitted into the cabinet council, which was composed of the pope, *Donna Olympia*, the cardinal patron, and monsignor *Azzolini* *.

INNOCENT in the mean time interested himself, in some measure, in the civil commotions in *France*; and being informed that *Mazarine* had imprisoned cardinal *de Retz*, he sent an extraordinary nuncio to obtain his liberty. The nuncio, however, was prohibited from passing *Lyons*, which so provoked the pope, that he declared to the abbe *Chartre*, whom the cardinal had sent to *Rome*, "That if the malecontents would furnish an army, he would supply them with a legate." About the same time he was solicited by the *Jansenists* and *Molinists* to publish a bull in their favour. The *Jansenist* clergy of *France* complimented the pope on this occasion, and referred to his decision in the first instance, which, by the privileges they enjoyed, they were not obliged to do. They hoped by this complaisance to flatter the pope to declare in their favour; however they were greatly deceived; for the intrigues of the *Jesuits* prevailing, the pope published a bull, condemning the five propositions of *Jansenius*, tho' he had acknowledged to Mr. *St. Amour*, that, as he had never studied divinity, he would not consider them. Notwithstanding this bull, as the pope declared that he did not intend to condemn the two doctors of grace, *St. Augustine* and *St. Thomas*, and desired the *Augustines* and *Dominicans* at *Rome* to preach grace as formerly, according to the opinion of those two doctors, both parties claimed the victory, and the dispute still continued *.

DONNA *Olympia* and the *Barberini* had at this time the management of the pope. *Olympia* again assumed the supreme direction of affairs, as before her disgrace; and the *Barberini*, having had long experience in the administration of the government during the pontificate of their uncle, so successfully insinuated themselves into the pope's esteem, that he refused them no favour they asked; so that, before his death, they repaid all the losses that their estates had suffered during their

* RYCAUT, ut supra.

* Mem. du Card. de Retz.

* LARREY, Hist. de Louis XI. t. II. p. 441. WICQUEFORT Let. de Juillet, 1653. Etat du Siege de Rome, t. I. Journal de St. AMOUR, par. III. c. XIII. HENNINGHA Hist. Papas.

A. D.
1654.

disgrace. As the *Barberini* increased in favour, the reputation of the cardinal patron declined; and he being likewise undermined by *Donna Olympia*, the pope was provoked, in the beginning of the following year, to order him to lay aside the arms and name of *Pamphilio*, and to retire from *Rome*. He likewise deprived him of all his offices and benefices, obliged him to deliver up 60,000 crowns of ready money, and left him only a yearly revenue of 6000 crowns*. A few weeks after the disgrace of *Astalli*, *Innocent*, as a means of procuring new friends to protect his family, made a promotion of nine cardinals; among whom was *Azzolini*, who a few months before, by the interest of *Donna Olympia*, had obtained the office of secretary of the briefs. As the commotions in *Naples* were again renewed, *Azzolini*, together with the *Barberini*, endeavoured to persuade the pope to attempt the conquest of that kingdom, the *Barberini* offering to maintain an army of 10,000 men at their own charge, on condition that, after the conquest should be made, the principality of *Salerno* should be granted to them in full sovereignty.

INNOCENT declined this enterprize on account of his great age, and in the mean time resigned himself wholly into the hands of *Donna Olympia*; who, observing his infirmities daily increasing, redoubled her ardour in her rapacious schemes, disposing of benefices and livings to the highest bidders, in all parts of *Italy*, especially in the small province of *La Marca*, where she is said to have conferred no less than 336 benefices. She was again in hazard of being displaced by a new favourite, namely, the cardinal *De Retz*; who, having escaped from his imprisonment in *France*, arrived at *Rome* in the end of autumn, and was received by the pope with uncommon marks of distinction. At his first arrival he sent the treasurer of the chamber to him with a purse of 4000 crowns of gold. He conferred upon him the red hat in a full consistory, and began to talk of adopting him for his nephew; but three days after he was seized with a distemper, under which he languished for several weeks, and died on the 7th of *January*, in the 81st year of his age, and the 11th year of his pontificate^b. During his last illness, he received nothing but from the hands of *Donna Olympia*, who was at great pains to prolong his life, watched continually at his bed-side, and prevented the ambassadors or others from disturbing him with discourses upon business. She is said, during the last ten days of his life, when he continued

Innocent
dies at
Rome.

A. D.
1655.

* *PRIORAT.* ut sup. ^b *Idem* ibid. *RYCAUT.* *Erat de Siege de Rome. Mem. du Card. de Retz, t. v.*

without the use of reason, to have amassed about half a million of crown^e. According to *Priorato*, his aspect was noble and majestic; and his spirit firm and active^d; but other authors affirm, that he was excessively ugly and deformed; and that he was ignorant, irresolute, cunning, and revengeful^e. He is commended for his temperance and strict regard to justice, which he executed with great impartiality; and, during his pontificate, he adorned the city with several magnificent buildings and public works^f.

UPON the death of *Innocent X.* the cardinals immediately began to cabal, and to form parties for the future conclave. The most powerful factions were those of *Spain* and *France*; but ten cardinals, who had been promoted by *Innocent*, formed a party independent of any crown, and privately resolved to elect *Fabio Chigi*, tho' they agreed apparently to advance the interest of cardinal *Sachetti*, as a means of distracting the other factions. On the 18th of *January*, the cardinals entered with the usual ceremony into the conclave, where the independent party, which was distinguished by the name of the flying Squadron, quickly discovered its power, being sufficiently strong to prevent the election of any whom it did not approve of. There were no less than 22 pretenders, most of whom had considerable interest, and all of them high expectations. Many of the candidates quickly suffered the mortification of an exclusion; but *Sachetti* continued for several days to have thirty-two and thirty-three voices upon every scrutiny, which was made every forenoon and afternoon. The various intrigues at this election are minutely related in the history of the conclaves, and by *Priorato* and the cardinal *De Retz*; but we shall only observe, that the cardinals, after they had been shut up eighty days, unanimously chose cardinal *Chigi*, who owed his election chiefly to the interest of cardinal *De Retz* and the *Barberini*, and during the conclave behaved like *Sixtus V.* with great reserve and affected modesty^g. He was elected on the 8th of *April*, and assumed the name of *Alexander VII.* (D). His is elected.

* RYCAUT. * PRIOR. ubi sup. * Tabl. des Papes.
DE LAER. Hist. Louis XIV. NANI Hist. de Venise. * RY-
CAUT. * GUALD. PRIORAT. Hist. de Mazar. l. v. Hist.
des Conclav. t. ii. Mem. de Card. de Retz.

(D) *Fabio Chigi*, or *Ghigi*, made a considerable figure at Rome during the pontificate of *Julius II.* but, meeting afterwards with misfortunes, they were obliged to return to *Sienna*.
Year 1599. His ancestors had

Great expectations from his pontificate.

His elevation to the pontificate gave universal satisfaction, and the greatest expectations were raised of his future government. The people expressed the most extravagant joy, and as nothing was talked of at *Rome* but the sanctity and piety of the pope, it was generally believed, that the virtue of miracles would be again restored to the church. Great rejoicings were also made in all the catholic countries, in hopes that they would now be no longer subject to the blind passions which had prevailed for so many centuries at the *Roman* court. Several protestants are even said to have come expressly to *Rome*, to examine if matters were really so as represented. In reality, he began his pontificate in such a manner as increased the hopes that had generally been conceived of him. He continued to fast twice a week, as he had practised when he was cardinal. He prohibited his relations to come to *Rome* without his permission; rejected the congratulations of Donna *Olympia*, and forbid her to enter the palace; and, instead of indulging himself in the luxury of a court, he lived in the strictest abstinence and mortification of body. To remind him of his mortality, he ordered his coffin to be brought into his chamber; he eat common victuals seasoned with ashes, and slept on a straw mattress, or on boards, with a stone pillow under his head ^h. Whether

^h Synd. of Alex. Mem. du Card. de Retz. Cont. de MEZER.

Fabio was educated carefully, and just administration. He and went early to *Rome*; where, being recommended by the marquis *Pallavicini* to *Urban* VIII. he, by his taste for poetry and professed admiration of *Horace*, secured the esteem of that pope, who sent him as inquisitor to *Malta*; from whence he returned with the greatest commendations from the grand master and the knights, who declared that *Malta* had never before been blessed with such a legate. *Urban* then appointed him vice-legate at *Ferrara*; where he resided three years, and acquired the esteem of all ranks of people by his moderate

and just administration. He was afterwards sent as nuncio to *Cologne* to be present at the negotiations for a general peace, where, it is said, he discovered some inclination to embrace the protestant religion (1). At *Munster* he presided at the negotiations, as pope's legate, and used his utmost endeavours to prevent the conclusion of the treaty, which was prejudicial to the interests of the *Roman* see. Upon his return to *Rome*, *Innocent* created him a cardinal; and, at the death of *Panzirolla*, appointed him first secretary of state (2).

(1) Bayle Nouv. de la Rep. des Let. Feb. 1686. Idem, Dict. Hist. Art. Ecclési. (2) Angel. Corrar. Relat. della Corte Romana. Il Syndicato di Alessandro VII. Guail. Priorat. ut sup. Wi. quif. l' Ambos. t. ii.

by these external observances he deceived himself, or wanted to deceive the world, is uncertain; but cardinal *De Retz* mentions, that he urged upon him the necessity of some outward shew, to secure the regard of the public; and remarks likewise, that the pope appeared to him to have a little genius, which placed a great importance upon minute and trifling matters; as instances of which remark he relates, that, when a fine statue was shewed to the pope, he took notice only of a fringe that went round the bottom of the robe, and in a conversation with himself in the conclave, when talking of his youthful studies, he observed that he had wrote two years with the same penⁱ.

AFTER his coronation, in his first consistory, he granted the pallium to the cardinal *De Retz*, by which he confirmed him in his archbishopric of *Paris*, contrary to the inclination of the king. Having, by this proceeding, greatly exasperated the *French* court, he, for the future, acted with greater reserve towards the cardinal, and refused to interest himself in protecting him from the resentment of *Mazarine*^k. Mean while, having received a great number of memorials against Donna *Olympia*, he ordered her to retire to *Orvieto* within eight days, and not to remove from that city without new orders from him. The same day that she quitted *Rome*, he began to take the examination of witnesses for drawing up the process against her; but, the charges against her being so numerous, he ordered ten of the most material points to be selected, to which she should be obliged to give an answer.

WHILE he was thus prosecuting *Olympia*, with all the severity that the law would allow, he began to abate of his rigour to his relations, and at the persuasion of some of the cardinals he sent for his brother Don *Mario*, with his son *Flavio*, and two other nephews *Augustine* and *Sigismund*, with several other relations, whom, in a short time, he loaded with wealth and dignities (E). Don *Mario* was made go-

He orders Donna Olympia to be prosecuted.

A. D. 1656. He heaps honours and wealth upon his relations.

ⁱ Mem. du Card. de Retz. t. v.

^k Idem ibid.

(E) It is said, that, at the beginning of his pontificate, he swore never to receive his relations at *Rome*; and that afterwards, being greatly embarrassed with his oath, the Jesuit *Pallavicini* freed him from his scruple,

by advising him to go and meet them out of the city; which ingenious expedient was embraced by the pope, who accordingly went to meet them at the distance of a mile from *Rome* (3).

(3) *Hydeg. Hist. Papar. ut sup.*

A severe
plague at
Rome.

vernor of the ecclesiastical state; his son was created cardinal patron; *Sigismond*, being too young for any dignity, was gratified with rich pensions; *Augustino*, designed to be the pillar of the house, was married to a rich niece of cardinal *Borghese*; another nephew, by his sister, was created a cardinal; and the brother of this nephew, who was a knight of *Malta*, was made general of the gallees¹. *Alexander* likewise, by degrees, began to lay aside his austere manner of living, and, at length, by the persuasions of his relations, he ran into the other extreme, and exceeded all his predecessors in the pomp and magnificence of his robes, furniture, and equipages^m. Cardinal *De Retz* mentions, that, upon his return from the medicinal wells in *Tuscany*, he found the pope quite changed; that he was continually employed in trifles; that he was envious and jealous of all the world; that he was ridiculously vain; and that he never spoke a word of truthⁿ. Mean-while a grievous plague afflicted the city of *Rome* and its neighbourhood, which raged to such a degree, that not only trade and commerce were interrupted, but the common courts of justice were shut up. *Donna Olympia* was cut off by this pestilence; and *Alexander*, instead of confiscating her estate to the apostolic chamber, as was generally expected, allowed the prince *Pamphilio* to succeed as her heir, after drawing from him about a million of crowns, which he bestowed on his own kindred^o. At the same time, being informed, that *Christina* queen of *Sweden* had abdicated her crown, embraced the popish religion, and was arrived in *Germany* in her way to *Rome*, he sent an extraordinary nuncio to congratulate her upon her conversion. As the plague soon after abated, she proceeded to *Rome*, where she was received with the greatest magnificence, and on *Christmas-day* was confirmed in *St. Peter's* church by his holiness; who, to her former name *Christina*, superadded that of *Alexandra*, and assigned her a pension of 12,000 crowns.

The Venetians
ask assistance from
the pope
against
the Turks.

As the *Venetians* at this time were engaged in a war with the *Turks*, who had invaded the island of *Candia*, they earnestly solicited the assistance of the Christian powers against the infidels. The pope excused himself from granting them any subsidy, as his treasury had been exhausted by the rapaciousness of the nephews of his predecessors, and by the large sums which had been lately issued to support the poor; who had been distressed by a famine, which had attended

¹ Syndic. d'Alexand. HEPDAG. ut sup. NANI Hist. de Venise.

^m Contin. de MEZER. Syndic. d'Alex.

ⁿ Mem. du Card.

de Retz, ut sup.

^o RYCAUT. Life of Alexand.

the pestilence. However, at the solicitation of *Pallavicini*, the *Jesuit*, who presented him with a large sum of money, he hearkened to some expedients proposed to him by the *Venetians* for supporting the holy war; and, on condition that they would repeal the law against the *Jesuits*, and allow them to return to their dominions, he granted a bull, authorizing the senate to sell some lands and rents belonging to the two orders of the *Crociferi* and *Santo Spirito*, and likewise appointed a nuncio, who, with three senators, should pass the title to the purchasers. The repeal of the law against the *Jesuits* at first met with great opposition in the senate; but the necessity of their affairs obliging them to court the favour of the pope, they at last consented to allow the *Jesuits* to return; and, having obtained the bull, raised above a million of ducats by the sale of the church lands, tho' not without the censures and curses of the clergy against them, the pope, and the *Jesuits*. This condescension of the republic was very agreeable to the court of *Rome*, and several cardinals, as a testimony of their zeal against the infidels, granted very considerable subsidies to the maintenance of the war.

They repeal the law against the *Jesuits*.

THE *Jesuits* being thus re-established at *Venice*, the pope *Alexander* employed his authority to confirm their doctrine in *France*; and as the *Jansenists*, by subtle distinctions, had eluded the bull of his predecessor, he renewed the censure of *Innocent X.* against the five propositions said to be contained in the books of *Janse-
nius*, and condemned them by a new bull, both in their obvious sense, and in the sense intended by the author. This bull, however, had not the effect he desired; for, instead of putting an end to disputes, the controversy was continued with greater animosity; and the *French* court, and some bishops, espousing the cause of the *Jesuits*, a confession of faith was drawn up, which the king, by a particular edict, ordered all the clergy to swear to, then the seculars, and even the nuns. By this formulary, all persons, tho' they had never seen or read the book of *Janse-
nius*, were obliged to swear that the five condemned propositions were contained in his book. The *Jansenists*, on this occasion, suffered a great persecution. The fathers of *Port Royal*, in hopes of satisfying the court, offered an entire silence and submission to the fact, and promised to condemn the five propositions wherever they should find them; but

A. D.
1658.
His bull
occasions
great dis-

¶ Idem ibid. DE REINCOURT, les Fastes de Louis le Grand. NANJ, cited by DE LARR. Etat du Siege de Rome. Idem ibid. t. iv.

turbances this proposal being rejected by *Mazarine*, the divines and in France, nuns of that place absolutely refused to consent to any other expedient. The bishops of *Alet*, *Angers*, *Beauvais*, and *Pamiers*, refused purely and simply to submit to the pope's bull, which condemned the doctrine of *Janſenius*; on which account *Alexander* the following year appointed commissaries to try them for their disobedience and heresy. But nineteen of their brethren writing to him, and affirming, that the *French* prelates, when accused of heresy, could only be tried by the council of their province, the affair at that time proceeded no farther, *Tellier* and *Colbert* persuading *Lewis XIV.* to stop the dispute, which had already proceeded too far, and which, in the end, might occasion a rupture betwixt him and the court of *Rome* ¹.

*The peace
of the
Pyrenees
concluded
without
his parti-
cipation.*

A. D.
1659.

ALEXANDER in the mean time earnestly pressed the courts of *Spain* and *France* to agree to a peace, offering himself as mediator, and desiring that the conferences might be held at *Rome*. As he had acted as mediator at *Munster*, and had thoroughly canvassed the differences betwixt the two nations, he expected that they would have both willingly desired his arbitration; however, to his great disappointment and surprise, the treaty was concluded the following year, without his knowledge, at the *Pyrenees*, by *Mazarine* and *Don Lewis de Haro* ¹. *Alexander* blamed the *French* more than the *Spaniards* for his being excluded from the treaty, as he observed that *Mazarine* industriously seized all opportunities of throwing contempt upon his person and authority. He dissembled, however, his resentment; and, as the *Turks* had begun hostilities in *Upper Hungary*, he wrote to the kings of *France* and *Spain* to turn their arms against the infidels, at the same time laying a tythe upon all the ecclesiastical revenues in *Italy*, to raise a subsidy for the emperor ². This appears to have been a pretended zeal; for *Mazarine*, soon after sending some troops to the assistance of the *Venetians* against the *Turks*, and desiring his holiness to propose a general league against the infidels, to declare himself the head of the alliance, and to animate the other Christian princes by his example, *Alexander* paid no regard to these exhortations; but even by his backwardness cooled the zeal of others, who seemed desirous of a general league ³. The pope at that time was chiefly engaged in filling the city with inscriptions, and adorning it with magnificent buildings. He, however,

*He rejects
the propo-
sal of a
league a-
gainst the
Turks.*

A. D.
1660.

¹ Contin. de MEZER.

² PRIORAT. Hist. de la Paix des Pyrenees, p. 119. 125. DE LARREY Hist. de Louis XIV.

³ RYCAUT, ubi sup.

⁴ ANGELO CORRARO, ut sup.

did not neglect to testify his hatred for *Mazarine*, by assembling a consistory, and re-uniting the duchy of *Castro* to the apostolic chamber, because that minister had presumed to intercede in behalf of the duke of *Parma* *.

THE difference and animosity between the pope and the cardinal occasioned a bad correspondence betwixt his holiness and the duke of *Crequi*, the *French* ambassador at *Rome*. This ambassador, at his first arrival, was received with the utmost ceremony and respect; and, being distinguished by his nobility and personal accomplishments, was greatly caressed by the pope. As he was naturally of a haughty disposition, and had secret orders from the king to mortify the pope and his relations, he soon began to pay more respect to other cardinals than to the pope's nephews. *Alexander* immediately resented this affront, and behaved to *Crequi* with great coldness and indifference at his audiences. This bad correspondence soon broke out into an open enmity, occasioned at first by two *Frenchmen*, who, to shew their bravery, disarmed the night patrol, consisting of three *Corfi*. These *Corfi* were punished for having made no resistance, and their officer broke. Soon after some bailiffs and officers, to shew themselves diligent in their duty, entered the ambassador's house in search of some criminals, while he was at mass in his chapel. That same evening a *Frenchman*, who, in passing through the quarters of the *Corfi*, had thrown out against them some ignominious reproach, was pursued by them to the ambassador's house, where they assembled, to the number of 400, with drums beating and colours flying, and fired upon the ambassador, who came to the window to endeavour to appease them. They likewise fired upon his lady, who was returning home in her coach, and killed one of her lacquies. As Don *Mario* and cardinal *Imperiali* covered the escape of the *Corfi* who were reckoned most guilty, and but slightly punished the others, the duke of *Crequi* looked upon the pope's relations as the authors of the insult; and tho' the whole family of the *Chigi* paid their visits of condolance to him and his lady, excusing the riot and tumult, which, they said, was owing solely to the insolence of the guards, he insisted upon more full satisfaction for the outrage, and sent an account of the whole transaction to his court.

THE pope and the queen of *Sweden* likewise wrote to *Lewis XIV.* excusing the tumult; but he paid more regard to the letters of his ambassador, and immediately ordered the nuncio to leave *Paris*, and soon after conducted him with a

The
French
ambassa-
dor insult-
ed at
Rome.
A. D.
1662.

* DE LARREY, ut sup.

He quits
Italy, and
returns to
France.

A.D.
1663.

guard to the confines of *Savoy*. About the same time the duke of *Crequi* left *Rome*, and retired into *Tuscany*, where he continued for some time, receiving proposals of an accommodation from the pope, who likewise wrote several other letters to *Lewis XIV.* full of sorrow and repentment for the late outrage. The duke, not receiving the satisfaction he expected, at length left *Italy*, having, before his departure from *Leghorn*, notified to the pope the demands of the king; who required, that *Don Mario* should be banished to *Siena* for five years; that cardinal *Imperiali* should be deprived of his hat; that the *Corfican* nation should be banished for ever from *Rome*; and that a pyramid should be erected, with an inscription, in the place where the outrage was committed; and besides, that *Castro* should be restored to the duke of *Parma*, and the *Dale* of *Commachio* to the duke of *Modena*. These high terms quite confounded the pope, especially as he observed, that the dukes of *Savoy*, *Modena*, and *Parma*, declared for the French, and the *Spaniards* had granted leave for a French army to march through the *Milanese* into the ecclesiastical state. However, having private assurances of assistance from the emperor, and being encouraged by some cardinals, he made great professions of hazarding every thing in defence of the dignity of the apostolic see.

As he soon found that the emperor had no great intention of fulfilling his promises, and was informed that the parliament of *Aix* had taken the opportunity of an insurrection at *Avignon*, to reunite that city and its dependences to the crown of *France*, he willingly embraced the offer of the *Venetians* to act as mediators. Accordingly *Lewis Grimani*, the *Venetian* ambassador at *Paris*, prevailed upon the king to agree to a congress at *Lyons* for an accommodation; but as the pope sent the title of extraordinary nuncio to his deputy *Rasponi*, the conferences were quickly broke off, without any effect. Soon after the negotiations were again renewed at *Buonvicino* on the frontiers of *Savoy*, *Rasponi* residing in the duchy, and the agents from *Modena* and *Parma*, with *Crequi*, *Grimani*, and the twelve consuls of *Avignon*, residing in *France*. But the pope absolutely refusing to consent to the restitution of *Castro* and *Commachio*, the treaty was again broke off. During this congress at *Buonvicino*, a French fleet appeared on the coast of the ecclesiastical state, and great warlike preparations were made at *Rome*; the fleet, however, retired, without any act of hostility, to *Sardinia*; and to the surprize of *Italy*, when the treaty broke off, the pope ordered his new-levied troops to be disbanded. Both parties thus discovering a desire of an accommodation, a few months

A treaty
concluded

months afterwards *Pisa* was appointed for a third congress; *betwixt* where a treaty was at length concluded, on the 22d of *Fe-* the pope
bruary, between *Rasponi* and *Bourlemont*, the plenipoten- and the
taries of the pope and the French king. French.

THE conditions of this treaty were very dishonourable for the pope; for it was agreed, that *Castro* should be again dismembered from the patrimony of the church, and restored to the duke of *Parma*, on condition of his paying to the apostolic chamber, within eight years, 1,629,750 crowns, at two payments; so that, upon making the first payment, he should receive the investiture of one half of the duchy. In lieu of *Commachio*, the pope was also obliged to give the duke of *Modena* 40,000 crowns, or a palace at *Rome*, to deliver to him *Mont d'Este*, valued at 30,000 crowns, to remit to him a debt of 50,000 crowns, which he owed to the *Montists*, and besides to grant him the right of perpetual patronage to the abbeys of *Pompasa* and *Bendeno*. It was also stipulated, that the cardinal nephew should be sent as legate to *France*; where, at his first public audience, he should declare to the king, according to a form of words inserted in the treaty, that his holiness was sorry for the outrage committed against the duke of *Crequi*, of which neither he nor any of his family was culpable. That cardinal *Imperiali* should go to *France* to make his submission in person to the king; that cardinal *Maldachini* should be allowed to return to *Rome*, there to live in freedom and security; that Don *Mario* should declare in writing, upon the faith of a gentleman, that he had no part in the outrage committed against the king's ambassador; and till such certification, confirmed by the pope's brief, should be delivered into the king's hands, he should not have liberty to enter *Rome*; that Don *Augustino* should, upon the approach of the duke of *Crequi* to *Rome*, go out to meet him as far as *St. Quirico*, or *Civita Vecchia*, or *Narni*, according as the duke should chuse his route; that Donna *Berenice*, or the princess *Farnese*, should go out to meet the ambassador as far as *Ponte Molle*; that the pope should annul all proceedings against the duke *Cesarini*, and all others, on account of the above-mentioned outrage; that the *Corfican* nation should be declared for ever incapable of serving either in *Rome* or in the ecclesiastical state; and that the captain of the guard at *Rome* should be broke; that, opposite to the place where the *Corfi* held their chief guard, a pyramid should be erected, with an inscription, declaring the crime for which they were banished; that upon the arrival of the cardinal legate at *Paris*, and the execution of the foregoing articles, the king should restore *Avignon*, with

A D.

1664.

The conditions of the treaty.

- with its dependences, to the pope; who should grant a free pardon to all the inhabitants who had been concerned in the revolt, and should prosecute none of them for ~~any~~ thing that had happened since that time; and lastly should grant assessors to the judges of *Avignon*, and the county of *Venassin*. However mortifying and disgraceful these conditions were, to *Alexander*, he was obliged punctually to fulfil them, tho' he laboured much to excuse the banishment of *Don Mario*, and the sending cardinal *Chigi* as legate to *France*†.

A. D.
1665.

Alexander
offends
the king
of Spain
by favour-
ing the
king of
Portugal.

AFTER the execution of the articles of the treaty, *Don Mario* returned from *Sora* to *Rome*, and the pope had leisure to attend to the disputes in *Spain* betwixt the *Dominicans* and *Jesuits*, concerning the immaculate conception of the Blessed Virgin. This controversy was carried on with such animosity, that, instead of being determined in the schools by a moderator, it was in danger of being decided in the field by the sword. To prevent any commotion, the king sent the bishop of *Placenza* to *Rome*, desiring his holiness to determine the controversy by a bull: but *Alexander*, instead of deciding which of the opinions was orthodox, followed the example of his predecessors, and left the article of faith still unsettled. The *Jesuits*, however, having prevailed upon him to embrace the opinion of the immaculate conception, he published a bull, prohibiting any one, under severe penalties, from asserting the contrary doctrine, either in public or private. This determination did not satisfy the king of *Spain*, who was besides greatly offended with the pope for seeming to favour the king of *Portugal*, and ordered his ambassador to threaten him with the loss of 130 bishoprics and 60 abbeys in *Spain*, if he should concern himself with the bishoprics in *Portugal*‡.

ABOUT the same time the divines of the *Sorbonne* having censured two books, which had been published by the *Jesuits*, under the false names of *James de Vernant* and *Amadeus Guimenius*, and which defended the pope's supremacy and infallibility, *Alexander* wrote to the king, complaining of their proceeding. *Lewis*, in compliance with his holiness's request, assembled a congregation of bishops at *Pontase*, who passed a slight censure on the *Sorbonnists*, blaming their presumption, without condemning their opinion. The parliament of *Paris*,

† WICQUEF. l' Ambassad. &c. t. iv. Des Fastes de Louis le Grand. NANI. DE RIENCOURT. DE LARREUX. Contin. de MEZER. Etat du Siege de Rome, t. i. RYCAUT, ubi supra. Traitez de Paix, t. i. p. 635. ‡ RYCAUT, ut sup. WICQ. BAYLE Dict. Hist. & Crit. Art. Chigi (Fabio).

however,

however, published a declaration against the pope's brief, and in defence of the proceeding of the divines of the *Sorbonne*, whose sentiments they affirmed were the same with those of the fathers, councils, holy see, and all the parliaments and universities of the kingdom. The pope, greatly irritated at the freedom of the parliament, in the month of June published a terrible bull against the censures of the *Sorbonnists*, annulling them as *presumptuous, rash, and scandalous*, and prohibiting all ecclesiastics from receiving or approving them, under pain of excommunication *lata sententie*. His bull, however, in *France*, was treated with great contempt, and looked upon with detestation, as plainly countenancing the most immoral doctrines, since it condemned those who had censured them. The parliament of *Paris*, in the end of July, published an arret, prohibiting all the king's subjects from reading, selling, or possessing, the said bull, and ordered the censures of the *Sorbonnists* against the books of *Vernant* and *Guimenius* to be registered in the rolls of the court, prohibiting all persons of whatever rank from maintaining or teaching the censured propositions, declared their intention of supporting the faculty of divinity in their right of censuring all books, which should contain propositions contrary to the authority and discipline of the church, to the purity of Christian morality, to the rights of the crown, and the liberties of the *Gallican* church; and ordered two of their members to read their arret in the presence of the members of the faculty, and to exhort them to continue their censures, as occasion should answer, with the same zeal*. Tho' no author mentions how the pope received this terrible stroke, it may be presumed, that it greatly affected him: however, that he might not seem expressly to approve of the detestable maxims which had been censured, he soon after published a bull, condemning several propositions taken from the writings of the *Jesuits*^b. At the request of the court and clergy of *France*, he likewise canonized *Francis de Sales*, titular prince and bishop of *Geneva*, having also a few years before made another saint in favour of the *Spaniards*, namely, *Thomas de Villa Nova*, a hermit, of the order of *Augustines*, and archbishop of *Valencia*, who had been dead upwards of 100 years^c.

He publishes a bull against the proceedings of the doctors of the Sorbonne; who are supported by the parliament of Paris.

* Recueil de diverses Pieces concernant les Censures de la Faculté de Théolog. de Par. &c. a Munster. an. 1669. BAYLE Crit. Gener. du Calvin. let. xxv. RYCAUT, ut sup. ^b Catech. Hist. & Dogmat. t. ii. p. 41. & 43. ^c HEYDEO. Hist. Papat. Etat vii. DE LARR. Hist. de Louis XIV.

The pope
fits out a
fleet a-
gainst the
Turks.

A. D.
1667.

THE following year the pope fitted out his galleys against the Turks, and sent them, under the command of *Michi*, into the *Archipelago*; where, in conjunction with the galleys of *Malta*, they attacked several maritime places belonging to the infidels; but, having passed the summer without any memorable action, they returned in the beginning of winter to *Italy*^d. A few months after he again offended a great many catholics, by a bull, which he affixed to the gates of *St. Peter's* church, ordering all cardinals, bishops, and others, in treating of the point of attrition, either in discourses or in books, not to censure those who held the opinion contrary to what they themselves maintained, whether that which affirms the necessity of the love of God, proceeding from the fear of the pains of hell, or that which denies any such necessity in attrition. On this occasion he was accused of intending to extirpate true piety from the heart, and to impose, as problematical or dubious, an opinion which was asserted in the most clear terms through the whole scripture^e. About the same time he sent three chests of relics to *France*, together with a bull, which affirmed that they might, with all confidence, be exposed to the veneration of the people. Notwithstanding this bull, when the relics were examined by a physician, one of the skulls, intituled *Caput Sancti Fortunati*, or the head of *St. Fortunatus*, was found to be artificially made of pasteboard, and fell to pieces upon being put into warm water. The physician, however, received a letter *de cachet*, prohibiting him from publishing the discovery, upon pain of being sent to the *Bastille*^f.

He dies at
Rome.

THESE were some of the last acts of *Alexander*; for very soon after he died at *Rome*, on the 22d of *May*, in the 69th year of his age, and the 13th of his pontificate, very little regretted by the people; who, being disappointed in their expectations of great things from him, looked with prejudice and dissatisfaction upon all his conduct, which, during his whole reign, was very inconsistent. He was of a middle stature, and good habit of body, had an agreeable air in his countenance, and was pleasant and facetious in his conversation. He is accused of being ungrateful, irresolute, hypocritical, vain, proud, envious, of having made a game of religion for worldly purposes, and of having chiefly attended to the enriching of his own family, without any regard to justice. He was, however, tolerably learned, loved the sciences, and delighted in the conversation of learned men.

^d RYCAUT. ^e HEYDEC. ut sup. ^f Politique du
Clergé de France, p. 69. Edit. 1682.

He had a great taste for magnificent buildings, and enlarged and adorned many streets in *Rome*, much to the ornament of the city and the convenience of the inhabitants, tho' he thereby enlarged the apostolic chamber, and ruined several private persons, by ordering their houses, which interrupted the regularity of the streets, to be demolished, without granting them any satisfaction [§] (F).

THE conclave, which followed upon the death of *Alexander*, was not without parties and factions, according to the usual manner. The faction of *Chigi* consisted of thirty-seven voices; that of the *Barberini* of about sixteen; the *Spanish* of nine; the *French* of about seven; besides some others who adhered to no party. A few candidates made some ineffectual endcavours in their own behalf; but the weather being extremely hot, the air unhealthy, and one of the cardinals dying, *Barberino* and *Chigi* joined their interest in favour of cardinal *Rospigliosi*; who, without having made any interest for the pontificate, was elected on the 20th of June, and assumed the name of *Clement IX.* ^h (C). After his coronation,

Clement IX. is elected.

§ NANK, ut sup. ANGELO CORRÁRO, ut sup. ^h Hist. des Conclaves. RYCAUT. Etat du Siege de Rome, t. i. p. 124.

(F) He is said to have condemned the horrid cruelties, which the poor *Vandois* in the vallies of *Piedmont* suffered during his pontificate (4); and to have refused the adoration offered to him by some *English* protestants, who had mixed themselves with others at an audience, and were reproved by the pope for offering to commit, what they believed, an act of idolatry (5). As a singularity, it is affirmed that he was related to the grand signior *Mohammed IV.* A *Turkish* corsair, in the year 1525, had made a descent in *Italy*, and pillaged a castle belonging to *Siena*, from whence they carried off *Marga-*

garet Marfili, who was married to *Soliman*, and by him had *Selim II.* from whom *Mohammed IV.* was descended in a direct line. *Leonard Marfili*, the brother of the captive *Margaret*, was grand-father to *Laura Marfili*, the mother of *Alexander VII* (6).

(G) *Julio Rospigliosi* was born at *Pistoia* in 1600, being descended from an ancient and noble family. Having received a good education, and being distinguished by his active and lively genius, *Urban VIII.* appointed him auditor to his nephew *Barberino*, when he went as legate to *France*; and being satisfied with his conduct, he

(4) *Courcelles inter Protestant. & Erudit. Virr. Epist. Ecclesiast. p. 876. Edit. 1684.*

(5) *Sorbier. apud Bayle Dict. Hist. & Crit. Art. Chri (Fabio) rem. 1.*

(6) *Pastorius in Henninge redvivo, p. 157. apud Heydeg Hist. Papat. Job. Ulricus Wallichius in Traſtatu de Relig. Turſica, Mohammedis ſita, & Orient. cum Occident. Antichriſt. compar. p. 320, 321.*

He orders
the secular-
ization
of some
monaster-
ies.

He offers
his medi-
ation for a
peace be-
twixt
France
and Spain.
A. D.
1668.

nation, which was performed on the 26th of the same month, he thanked the cardinals in a full consistory for their suffrages; and, to reconcile his subjects to his government, he abolished some taxes with which they were burthened, and took care that provisions might be cheap and plentiful at *Rome*. He was likewise very desirous to assist the *Venetians* against the *Turks*; but, his predecessor having left an empty treasury, he was obliged to suppress some of those orders of regulars, which appeared of little service to the *Romish* church, and had degenerated from the rules of their institution. He accordingly issued out a bull, authorising the *Venetians* to secularize the lands of those orders within their dominions, and to apply the money to the sacred war. The sale of these lands, however, in the *Milanese* and the kingdom of *Naples*, met with great opposition from the *Spaniards*; who affirmed, that they could not be sold without the consent of the catholic king, and that the pope had no right to dispose of the money arising from their sale. The execution of the pope's decree was opposed at *Naples* by force; on which account he thundered out an anathema, but without success; for the king's ministers defended their proceeding with great firmness, so that the controversy continued for several years in suspense, and was not terminated till the time of the succeeding pope¹.

THO' *Clement* is said to have blamed himself afterwards for this secularization, on account of a scruple of conscience; yet at this time he appeared fully satisfied of the necessity and justice of such a proceeding, and endeavoured besides to engage the Christian princes in a league against the infidels; for which purpose he ordered his nephew, whom he recalled from *Brussels*, where he had resided as inter-nuncio three years, to return by *Paris*, and to persuade *Lewis XIV.* to a

¹ RYCAUT. NODOT. Relat. de la Cour de Rome.

sent him afterwards as nuncio to *Spain*, in which character he behaved to the satisfaction both of the court of *Rome* and of the catholic king, and his commission was therefore continued for eleven years, tho' usually it did not exceed three. Upon his return to *Rome* he was appointed governor of the city, during

the vacancy of the see, at the death of *Innocent X.* *Alexander VII.* created him a cardinal at his first promotion, and afterwards made him secretary of state; in which office he so distinguished himself, that he had the approbation of the pope, of the sacred college, and of all *Rome* (7).

(7) Hist. de Familles de Rome. De Larr. Hist. Louis XIV. t. iii. p. 537.

peace with Spain, and to an alliance against the *Turks*. The cardinal *Rospigliosi* accordingly proceeded to *Paris*; but his conferences with the king produced but very little effect. A few *French* gentlemen went as volunteers to *Candia*; and the *French* king agreed to treat of a peace at *Aix-la-Chapelle*, though in the mean time he sent an army, the following *February*, into *French Compté*, and in a few weeks made himself master of that whole province. About the same time, the cardinal nephew having returned to *Rome*, *Clement* sent an extraordinary legate to *France*, and another to *Spain*, to forward the peace; and having appointed *Bargellini* as his plenipotentiary at *Aix-la-Chapelle*, the treaty was at last concluded, by his mediation, in the month of *May* ^k.

MEAN while he acted with great moderation with regard to his relations, conferring upon them only small and inconsiderable favours. As he had never engaged much in the commerce of the world, his heart was so tempered by virtue, that the assaults and persuasions of flatterers were vain and fruitless. They endeavoured to persuade him of the expediency of following the usual maxims, and of aggrandizing his house; but he with constancy resisted their advices, his relations themselves not being very solicitous for wealth or honours, but contenting themselves with the respect they received at court, not seeming to reflect upon the change which would happen to them upon the death of the pope, or acting as though such a change would be of no importance ^l. A certain author indeed alleges, that the pope had allowed cardinal *Chigi* to engross his confidence, and that resigning himself too much to his counsels, he was persuaded by him to overlook his own kindred ^m.

As the differences betwixt the *Molinists* and the *Jansenists* in *France* began to threaten the public peace in that kingdom, the court found the necessity of abating the rigour exercised against these last; and the pope consenting to alter the form of proceeding against the four bishops who had refused to subscribe to the formula ordained by the king, they gave an account of their conduct in a letter to his holiness, who declaring that he was satisfied with their reasons, the king immediately published a decree, affirming, that he was likewise satisfied, and prohibited all his subjects from writing in that controversy, or provoking each other by party

^k DE LARREY Hist. de Louis XIV. t. iii. RYCAUT.

^l Etat du Siege de Rome, t. i. ^m NODOT, ut supra.

names *. About the same time *Clement* granted a bull, allowing *Lewis XIV.* to nominate successors to all bishoprics, abbeys, and benefices, in his kingdom, and likewise permitted him to remove the cross which had been erected at *Rome*, over-against the church of *St. Anthony*, in memory of the conversion of *Henry IV.* of *France* to the catholic religion. In return for these favours, *Lewis XIV.* allowed the pyramid, erected on account of the banishment of the *Corfi*, to be demolished, and omitted interesting himself in behalf of the duke of *Parma*, who offered the money stipulated at the treaty of *Pisa* for the restitution of *Castro*; but could not prevail with the pope to grant him the investiture of the duchy °. In the meantime, *Clement* solicited the Christian princes, with great earnestness, to send succours to *Candia*; and having prevailed upon *Lewis XIV.* to send a fleet thither, under the command of the duke of *Beaufort*, he fitted out his own gallies, and ordered his nephew *Vincenzo Rospigliosi*, who commanded them, to join the *French* fleet and the gallies of *Malta*. By his solicitation other succours were likewise sent from *Germany*, by the elector of *Bavaria*, the bishop of *Straßburg*, and other princes of the *Rhine*.

Sends a
fleet to the
assistance
of Can-
dia.

He ac-
knowleges
the king
of Portu-
gal.

WHILE he was thus endeavouring his utmost to prevent *Crete* from falling into the hands of the *Turks*, he was informed that the king of *Portugal* had been deposed by his brother *Don Pedro*. This prince had succeeded him in the throne, and married his queen, who had obtained a divorce from her first husband. The cardinal *de Vendôme*, uncle of the queen, whom the pope had sent as legate into *France*, ratified the dissolution of the first marriage, without waiting for any instructions from *Rome*, although his legation did not extend to *Portugal*. The legate excused this extraordinary step, by alleging, that his commission was conceived in the most ample terms, and that he had written to *Rome* without receiving any answer, though it is said that his letter was purposely never sent. To satisfy the pope the queen sent her confessor to *Rome*; and *Lewis XIV.* likewise wrote to his holiness, to persuade him of the justice of the divorce, as the impotence of the queen's first husband was attested by no less than thirty physicians. *Clement*, however, would not consent to confirm the marriage, but gave a commission

* Catechisme Hist. & Dogm. Etat du Siege de Rome, t. i. VARET Relat. de ce qui s'est passé dans l'Affair de la Paix de l'Eglise, edit. 1706. QUÉSNEL P. de Clement IX. edit. 1700. Instruction pastorale de l'Eveque de Montpelcier, 1724. ° RYCAUT, ut supra.

to the dean of the inquisitors in *Portugal* to examine the cause. As the dean, after going through a new process, declared the first marriage invalid, and the second lawful, the pope at length, at the solicitations of the *French* king and the marquis of *Las Minas*, who came to *Rome* as ambassador of obedience, granted the bull for a dispensation in the beginning of the following year: and as the kingdom of *Portugal*, by the peace with *Spain*, had been declared independent, he made no difficulty of receiving the obedience of *Don Pedro*, and of conferring the *Portuguese* bishoprics according to his nomination P.

A. D.
1669.

ABOUT the same time he applied himself earnestly to re-establish his finances, which were under such a bad regulation, that the apostolic chamber was in great hazard of becoming bankrupt. For this purpose he instituted a congregation *Dello aggravio*, consisting of some cardinals and prelates, which was then much approved of, though it appeared afterwards that it was insufficient to remedy the disorders in the finances. *Clement* likewise complained greatly of the ignorance of the prelates about his court, and was revolving some means of reforming that evil, when being informed, by the *Venetian* ambassador, of the loss of *Candia*, which is said to have been delivered to the *Turks* by the intrigues of the *Jesuits* †, he was so seized with grief, that he suddenly fell into a kind of apoplexy. This perhaps, in some measure, might be owing to his intemperance in eating, which vice he seemed to glory in, thinking that he thereby demonstrated the strength of his constitution. Though he revived from this fit, yet melancholy so oppressed his spirits, that he died about a month after, on the 9th of *December*, He dies a generally lamented by all ranks of people. He was possessed Rome. of many eminent virtues, and, among others, of modesty, mildness, and charity. Immediately after his promotion, he discovered great generosity and public spirit; and it was evident to all that his heart was engaged in promoting a general reformation. He is accused of wanting firmness and resolution, of being too indulgent to the great, and to those from whom he had received any obligations; but these faults may have proceeded from the weakness of old age, and the excess of his gratitude. As he was not ambitious of worldly honour, he forbade his relations to raise any magnificent monument to his memory: his successor, however, erected a stately monument for him, with his statue, in the church

Complains
of the ig-
norance of
the pre-
lates.

P VERTOT Hist. des Revol. de Port. Etat du Siege de Rome.
† Jo. BURCHARDI MAII de Rom. Pontif. elect. p. 93, not. c.

of *St. Peter*, and the people of *Rome* voluntarily caused several eulogies to be engraved to his honour, particularly one in the area of the capitol, on the triumphal arch of *Septimius Severus*.

A. D.
1670

AFTER the usual ceremonies at the death of the pope, the cardinals entered the conclave on the 20th of *December*, where, upon account of the obstinacy of the factions, they continued more than four months, before they could agree in their choice of a successor to the papal chair. Besides the *Spanish* and *French* factions, and the flying squadrons, there were other three parties, headed by *Rossigliosi*, *Barberino* the dean of the college, and by cardinal *Chigi*, which last, to intimidate his adversaries, declared, that he proposed to eat cherries in the conclave; to which *Barberino* replied, that he intended to eat figs. The great number of candidates likewise retarded the election; but, after several exclusions, and a remonstrance from the *Spanish* ambassador, who was admitted to an audience in the conclave, the intrigues quickly ceased. The old cardinals declared, that they would agree to the choice of any one to obtain their liberty; and *Rossigliosi*, *Barberino*, and *Chigi*, finding that their obstinacy had no other effect than to retard the election, at last united their interest in favour of cardinal *Emilio Altieri*, a decrepid old man, of eighty years of age, who, on the 29th of *April*, was elected pope by fifty-nine voices, and assumed the name of *Clement X*.

Clement
X. is elected.

His election gave great joy to the *Romans*, as he was descended of a *Patrician Roman* family, which had been illustrious for more than 600 years. His brother had been created a cardinal by *Urban VIII.* but did not long survive his promotion. The same pope sent *Emilio* into *Poland*, as auditor to the nuncio, and, upon his return, gave him the government of *Ravenna*, created him bishop of *Camerino*, and sent him as nuncio to *Naples*, where he resided during the insurrection of *Massaniello*. During the pontificate of *Innocent X.* he was recalled to *Rome*, and likewise deprived of his revenues; but upon the election of *Alexander VII.* his reputation was restored, and he obtained the nunciature of *Poland*. *Clement IX.* declared him chief of his bed-chamber, and when he was lying on his death-bed, upon his own solicitation, created him a cardinal.

^r NODOT. relat. de la Cour de Rome, let. ii. Contin. de MEZERAU, RYCAUT. ^s HEYDEGGER Hist. Papat. Etat du Siege de Rome. Hist. des Conclaves, t. ii. ^t Ibid.

IMMEDIATELY after his election, as he had no near relations of his own name, he adopted cardinal *Paluzzi* as his nephew, for no other apparent reason, but because his niece *Donna Laura Altieri* was married to the cardinal's nephew *Don Gasparo Paluzzi*. He ceded to the family of the *Paluzzi* all the revenues of the house of *Altieri*, erected their castle *Ruffina* into a principality, and appointed *Don Angelo*, the cardinal's brother, general of the gallies, and *Don Gasparo*, his nephew, general of the forces of the church. This sudden promotion of the family of *Paluzzi*, which was known to be poor and loaded with debts, greatly surprized the *Romans*, who dreaded that the new cardinal nephew and his relations would usurp the whole administration, and govern with great avarice and extortion. It quickly appeared that their fears were just; for cardinal *Paluzzi*, or *Altieri*, refused to affix the seal to several grants and favours which the pope, according to the usual custom, had bestowed at his coronation, under pretence that his holiness had been surprized, or that the benefices had been disposed of before. He likewise gave orders to the master of the pope's chamber, and to all the attendants near his person, not to permit any addressees, petitions, or memorials, to be presented to the pope, without his knowledge and permission. Thus the cardinal nephew assumed an absolute power, and disposed of all offices, benefices, and places of trust, according to his pleasure, which was always regulated by the greatest profit; which proceeding occasioned a universal murmuring among the *Romans*, many of whom, since the promotion of the pope, deduced their lineage from some branch or other of the family of *Altieri*, and pretended to be his relations either by blood or alliance. The opposition to the exorbitant and despotic power of the nephew was not so great, however, as might have been expected; for as it was confined to ecclesiastical affairs and domestic concerns, it was overlooked at first by the courts of *France* and *Spain*; and the cardinals hoped, that, from the great age of the pope, it would be of very short duration. But this very reason prompted the cardinal nephew to make the greatest advantage of his present prosperity; he therefore sought, by all means, to establish the grandeur of his family, and soon after contracted an alliance with the house of *Colonna*.

MEAN while the pope received a splendid embassy from the king of *Spain*, who sent the viceroy of *Naples*, with the title of ambassador extraordinary, to *Rome*, to make the present

A. D.
1671.

of the white gennet, and to perform the ceremony of obedience for the kingdom of *Naples*. After his departure, father *Nitardo*, inquisitor general of *Spain*, was left as resident ambassador at *Rome*, and was dignified with the title of archbishop of *Eleffu* by the pope, who the following year promoted him, and several others, to the dignity of cardinal.

Pius V. is *Clement*, about the same time, likewise canonized Pope Pius canonized.

V. at the solicitation of the *Dominicans*, tho', by the persuasion of *Altieri*, he refused to concern himself with the affairs of *Poland*, which was almost wholly overrun with the arms of the *Turks*. That he might not seem, however, intirely to neglect the Christian cause, he raised the sum of 300,000 crowns, by a tax on ecclesiastical benefices in *Italy*, as a subsidy to the *Poles*, of which only 50,000 crowns were sent into *Poland*, the rest being detained by *Altieri* for his own use. The king of *Poland* dying about the same time, *Altieri*, to gratify the *Spaniards*, presumed to recommend prince *Charles of Lorrain* as a proper successor; but the *Polsish* nobility, who had never received kings at the nomination and recommendation of *Rome*, chose the great general of the crown, *John Sobieski*, who, according to the usual privilege, immediately after his election nominated the bishop of *Marjeilles*, as the person for whom he desired the cardinal's hat. *Altieri*, at the desire of the *Spaniards*, made an objection to his nomination; and though the king persisted in the choice that he had made, he still prevented the pope from bestowing the hat; on which account, during the whole reign of *Clement*, there was a bad correspondence betwixt *Poland* and the court of *Rome*.

A.D.
1673.

A dispute
with the
French
king con-
cerning the
regalia.

THE cardinal nephew, however, was more favourable to the family of the late pope; for, about the beginning of the following year, he persuaded *Clement* to bestow the hat he had received from his predecessor upon *Felice Rospigliosi*. About the same time he engaged him in a dispute with the French king, who intending to reform the order of *St. Lazarus*, for that purpose appointed a new chief or general, in consequence of the right of regalia, or, *ius patronatus*, which he affirmed was inherent in his crown. *Altieri*, to vindicate the papal authority from the king's usurpations, persuaded a certain *Gafcon*, who had come to *Rome* for preferment, to accept of the honour of the abbot of the order of *St. Lazarus*, and conferred upon him the abbacy of *St. Colombiere*. This proceeding of *Altieri* was resented with great warmth by the French ambassador, who imprisoned the

scrivener that had drawn up the new abbot's memorial to the pope. The *Gascen*, however, had the confidence to return to *France*; but he had no sooner entered the kingdom, than he was seized and committed to prison. *Lewis XIV.* published an edict the following year in defence of his right of regalia, which he affirmed extended over all his kingdom, though the bishops of *Pamiers*, *Alets*, and some others, alleged, that their dioceses were exempted *.

A.D.
1674.

ALTIERI, in the mean time still governed at *Rome*, in his usual arbitrary manner; and as the farmers and collectors of the customs, and impositions, which are laid on all sorts of provisions brought into *Rome*, complained greatly of the frauds and abuses committed by foreign ministers, who allowed great quantities of provisions to be brought into the city by private persons under their name, he published an edict, depriving the ambassadors and cardinals of their immunities, and ordering them to pay the same taxes as others for all provisions which they used. By this edict, he in some measure appeased the farmers, whom he had obliged to give a greater sum than usual for the customs, on account of the approach of the jubilee year. But the ambassadors complained loudly of his arbitrary and irregular government, and agreed to go in a body, and to demand an immediate audience of the pope, and resolved for the future not to acknowledge him as cardinal nephew. He, however, prevented their access to the palace, by drawing chains across the streets, and placing guards at the avenues; and being sure of the protection of the pope, he behaved with such resolution, that they were obliged in the end to comply with the edict, which, however, was not rigorously put in execution, they being still allowed, in some measure, to enjoy their immunities by way of indulgence *. All the ambassadors then, by orders from their courts, were reconciled to him, except the duke *d'Etrees*, the ambassador of *France*, who alleged, as the cause of his remaining discontent, that *Altieri* had made secret offers to assist the *Spaniards* in regaining *Messina* from the *French*.

THE following year the jubilee was celebrated according to the usual manner; and as *Italy* was at this time free from the disturbances of war, great numbers of pilgrims and strangers crowded to *Rome*, to receive the benefits of indulgences and pardons. During this festival *Clement* created six cardinals, among whom was *Philip Howard*, a *Domini-*

1675.

* Idem ibid. De *LARREY* Hist. de *Louis XIV.* t. iv. p. 199.
† *Etat du Siege de Rome*, t. i. p. 157 & 158.

An ambas-
sador ar-
rives at
Rome
from Mus-
covy.

A. D.
1676.

Clement
dies at
Rome.

can, of the illustrious family of *Norfolk*, who had been great almoner to the queen of *England*. About the same time he received a letter from the king of *Persia*, concerning an alliance against the *Turks*, in answer to one that his predecessor had written to that prince ². Another alliance against the grand signor was also proposed to him, by an ambassador that arrived at *Rome* from *Muscovy*. *Clement* received this ambassador with great respect: no treaty, however, was concluded, in consequence of his embassy; and he returned to *Muscovy* dissatisfied, because the pope refused the title of emperor to his master ³. Soon after *Clement* had a dispute with the viceroy of *Naples*, who having formed a resolution of extirpating the banditti from that kingdom, had for some time proceeded against them with great rigour, and had even ordered some of them to be seized within the jurisdiction of the ecclesiastical state. The pope did not live to receive satisfaction for this insult, but died a few months after, on the 22d of *July*, loaded with old age, which had enfeebled his understanding, and reduced him to dotage. A few hours before his death, *Altieri* pressed him to fill up four vacant places of cardinals with creatures of his own, but he would not consent; and to stop his importunity, he said to him, somewhat moved, “ You ought to be content “ as you have been pope for six years: suffer me now “ to follow my own inclinations, and to be pope for six “ hours only ^b.” He is commended for his goodness and moderation ^c; but he was treated by the *Romans* with great contempt, for suffering the *Altieri* to govern in a most scandalous manner, and to oppress his subjects in order to enrich themselves, and to build one of the finest palaces in *Rome* ^d.

Innocent
XI. is e-
lected.

As cardinal *Altieri*, on account of his arbitrary proceedings, had incurred the public hate, it was generally believed, that, upon the death of the pope, he would be removed from all his offices, and deprived of his suffrage in the ensuing conclave; but the immense wealth that he had acquired during the short reign of his reputed uncle, procured him a great number of friends; so that after the pope's death was published, and the *sigillum piscatorium* broken in pieces, he quitted *Monte Cavallo*, and repaired, with a numerous train, to his new palace, where he received visits of condolence from the cardinals, princes, ambassadors, prelates, and nobles. After the funeral obsequies of the late pope were per-

² Hist. des Familles de Rome.

^a Ibid.

^b RYCAUT.

^c AMAT. de GRAVESON Hist. Eccles. t. viii.

^d RYCAUT.

formed,

formed, the cardinals entered the conclave in procession on the 2d of *August*, and next day, after some others had come in, which made their number amount to fifty-two, the doors were shut, and the guard committed to prince *Savelli*. Several candidates were proposed and rejected at various scrutinies, the time being consumed in a trifling manner till the 1st of *September*, when four other cardinals from *France* entered the conclave. Though at several scrutinies many votes had appeared in favour of *Odescalchi*, yet the election was still deferred, till a courier should return from *France* with the approbation of *Lewis XIV.* His recommendation being obtained, the *French* ambassador entered the conclave, and presented his letters to the cardinals, who accordingly, on the 21st of *September*, after the ambassador had retired, chose *Odescalchi*, who took the name of *Innocent XI.*

He had been a candidate at the former election; but the austerity of his manners, and the innocence of his life, prevented him from succeeding ^f. At this conclave he shewed some reluctance to accept of the pontifical dignity; and before he would consent, he proposed some articles for the reformation of the ecclesiastical government which he required the cardinals to subscribe to the performance of ^g. His former name was *Benedict*, and he was born at *Como*, of a very antient family, which is even said to have flourished in the times of the *Lombards* and *Charlemagne* ^h. In his youth he was educated in his own country by the *Jesuits*, and afterwards he studied the civil and canon law, partly at *Rome* and partly at *Naples*. He proposed at first to follow the profession of arms in the *Neapolitan* service; but stopping at *Rome* in his way to *Naples*, he was prevailed upon to embrace an ecclesiastical life; and having a considerable revenue of his own, he was immediately made a prelate ⁱ. *Urban VIII.* made him one of the prothonotaries of the apostolic chamber, and afterwards president of the same; then commissary of the province of *La Marca*, and governor of *Macerata*. Upon his return to *Rome* he made a present of a valuable service of plate to *Donna Olympia*, which he observed she had coveted, and by that means obtained the office of clerk of the chamber. Soon after, by voluntarily losing considerable sums of money in her house at play, he was rewarded with a cardinal's hat, and was afterwards appointed legate at *Ferrara*, and bishop of *Novara*, which bishopric, some years

^e Hist. des Conclaves, t. ii. RYCAUT. ^f AMELOT DE
LA HOUSSEY. ^g RYCAUT. ^h Campana Traite
des Familles illustres d'Italie. ⁱ Etat du Siege de Rome.

after, he resigned to his brother, as the air of that place did not agree with his health ^k. In the mean time he lived at *Rome* in a retired and modest manner, and was looked upon as a good and charitable man, disengaged from the world, without pride, vanity, and pomp, moderately zealous, out bigotry, and chiefly severe upon himself ^l.

*He proposes
a general
reforma-
tion.*

AFTER his elevation he no sooner took the government of affairs into his own hands, than he began a reformation in several particulars. He determined to abolish nepotism, and prohibited his nephew *Don Livio* from receiving or returning visits, as nephew of the pope. The senate of *Venice* honoured him with the title of nobility, and he was created duke of *Ceri*, which were all the honours he acquired; for the pope by no intreaties could be prevailed upon to make him general of the church, or cardinal patron. *Innocent* even proposed by a bull, for ever to abolish that name and office; but he could not obtain the consent of the cardinals, of those especially who aspired at the pontificate. In the mean time he was indefatigable in re-establishing his finances, which were in the utmost disorder; in reforming the divine service, in correcting several abuses in the city, and in endeavouring to revive modesty and virtue among the ecclesiastics and religious orders. He immediately sent nuncios to *France*, *Spain*, *Poland*, and *Portugal*, exhorting them to peace; and abolished a great many indulgences, confraternities, and new offices, invented by superstition and monkery. He prohibited the *Jews* from dealing in usury, though he himself became afterwards the most insufferable usurer, by threatening to reduce the interest of the money in the public bank one-half *per cent.* unless the proprietors would accept of 70 crowns for a hundred ^m.

To assist him in the administration of the government, *Innocent* made choice of cardinal *Cibo*, whom he appointed superintendant and secretary of the ecclesiastical state. At the same time he reduced his army and increased the number of archers at *Rome*, with the intention of proceeding severely against all kinds of criminals. He publicly reproved the cardinals for their pomp and luxury, sent the bishops who remained at *Rome* to their dioceses, appointed four divines to reform the abuses of the church, and four cardinals, with as many clergymen, to examine the lives and manners of

^k Hist. des Familles de Rome. Voyage Hist. d'Italie, t. i. let. xxxii. ^l NODOT relat. de la Cour de Rome. ^m HEDDEGGER Hist. du Papat. par. ii. p. 297. Hist. des Familles de Rome. BURNET'S Travels.

those who aspired to the priesthood, and ordered that none should be admitted to that dignity, who were in the least blemished with an ill fame, or had not applied themselves to study". To prevent the *Altieri*, as he said, from plundering elsewhere, he allowed them to remain in *Rome*, and continued them in their military and other employments.

THE following year the conferences for a general peace *He sends a* being appointed at *Nimeguen*, he sent his nuncio thither, to *nuncio to* act as mediator, who, though he was not acknowledged in *assist at the* that character by the protestant powers, yet received particular honours from the magistrates of the city, who offered *negotiations at* him all security for the free exercise of his religion during the congress. Mean while great disturbances happening at *Nimeguen.* *Rome*, on account of the franchises and immunities claimed by ambassadors, *Innocent* resolved intirely to abolish them, the bulls published against those privileges by his predecessors *Julius III. Pius IV. Gregory XIII. and Sixtus V.* having been hitherto ineffectual. As the ambassadors extended their privileges to a considerable extent round their houses, so as to comprehend several streets, through which the officers of justice were not even allowed to walk, a sanctuary was thereby afforded to an infinite number of criminals, and the *Spanish* ambassador at this time was accused of abusing this privilege, by confining in his quarter a great number of pressed men, who were to be shipped off to recruit the army at *Messina.* This report occasioned several tumults in *Rome*, which *He abol-* the pope endeavoured to suppress, by punishing the rioters *ishes the* severely: but to put a stop to the original cause of the dis- *franchises* order, he published an edict, intirely abolishing the privi- *of ambaj-* leges of quarters, against which the ambassadors protested, *sadors.* but without any effect; the pope continuing firm and resolute, and prevailing upon the queen of *Sweden* to renounce the privileges of her quarter, as an example to the rest.

BEFORE this contest about the franchises was entirely settled, the pope was engaged in another with the king of *France* about the regalia, or the right of investiture of bishoprics. Since the publication of the king's edict, declaring that right inherent in the crown, there had been some dispute in *France* betwixt the king and the bishop of *Pamiers*, who refused to accept of one nominated by the king as his

* HEYDEGGER, RYCAUT, ut supra. ° Lettr. & Negot. des Ambas. François, t. ii. p. 216. De LARREY Hist. de Louis XIV. P Lettr. sur les Matieres du temps. RIENCOURT. Jo. BURCHARD de elect. Roman. Pontif. p. 93, not. E. Etat du Siege de Rome. RYCAUT.

A. D. 1678. archdeacon, and appealed to the pope. *Clement X.* did not concern himself much in the controversy; but *Innocent* espoused the cause of the bishop, and wrote two briefs to the king, exhorting him not to violate the liberties of the church, by subjecting those dioceses to the regalia who were exempted from it; concluding, "That he had not forgot those popes his predecessors, who, upon the like occasions, had endured long and great afflictions." These two briefs producing no effect, the following year he wrote a third, threatening the king with ecclesiastical censures, if he did not revoke the edict which he had published. As *Lewis* had sequestered all the revenues of the bishop of *Pamiers*, 1679: the pope likewise wrote to the cardinal *d'Estrees*, desiring him to use all his influence in support of the authority of the holy see; but, by the cardinal's answer, he found that he was more attached to the king than to the see of *Rome*. The cardinal, indeed, soon after was sent to *Rome* to treat with the pope; but his negotiation was ineffectual, both parties insisting obstinately upon their different pretensions. *Lewis XIV.* in the mean time assembled all the bishops then at *Paris*, who asserted the authority of national churches in judging of all matters, both of faith and manners; and prayed his majesty to give leave for assembling a national council or general assembly.

The clergy of France declare against the pretensions of the pope. THE king consented to call a general assembly, which was accordingly summoned to meet the 1st of *October* following. Its first deliberations were concerning the regalia, which question was debated for some time. At length, on the 3d of *February*, an act was signed, whereby they declared, that the right to the regalia was inherent in the crown, and ought to prevail through the whole kingdom, without regarding the pretended exemption of some bishoprics. The prelates likewise wrote concerning the dispute to his holiness; and, a few days after, the archbishop of *Paris* presented the act to the king, together with the letter to the pope, which they begged his majesty to order the duke *d'Etrees* to deliver to his holiness. They in the mean time continued their assembly, and made several regulations concerning morals and church discipline. To put a stop to the usurpations of the see of *Rome*, they drew up four propositions; by the first of which they affirmed, that a general council was above the pope, according to the doctrine established in the 4th and 5th sessions of the council of *Constance*, rejecting the opinion of those who allege that the doctrine

above-mentioned is only true during a schism. In the 2d they asserted,^a that neither the pope nor the universal church, has any power over the temporal jurisdiction of kings, who cannot be deposed, and whose subjects can never be absolved from their oath of allegiance. By the 3d they declared, ~~that~~ the power of the pope ought to be limited by the canons, and that he had no authority to decree any thing contrary to the liberties of the *Gallican* church, and to the maxims established by the councils. In the last they maintained, that the decisions of the pope in matters of faith are not authentic, without the consent of the universal church; therefore that he was not infallible, unless at the head of a council, and then only when he decreed according to the decisions of the said council. The king, by an edict, ordered the professors in divinity and the canon law to teach these four propositions, and all his subjects to receive them, prohibiting the publishing of any doctrines that were contrary to them^r.

DURING these transactions in *France*, in opposition to the papal power, *Innocent* furnished the emperor with several subsidies against the *Turks* who assisted the rebels in *Hungary*, and threatened to invade that kingdom. He likewise condemned sixty-five propositions about cases of morality, which were partly drawn from the writings of the *Jesuits*, and tended to the depravation of manners. And as there were no less than twenty-six vacancies in the sacred college, he made a promotion of sixteen cardinals, reserving the other ten hats to gratify kings or princes, who should desire that dignity for any of their favourites^s. Being informed of the proceedings of the *French* bishops, he immediately called a *who con-* consistory, in which they were formally condemned, and *denns* their four propositions ordered to be burnt: and in answer *their pro-* to their letter, he wrote to them in very severe terms, *ceedings-* accusing them of betraying the cause of God, and assuring them, that he was resolved, at the hazard of his life, to defend the honour and authority of the holy see^t. The cardinal *d'Esne*s still residing at *Rome*, and finding the pope inflexible, the controversy was allowed to remain in suspense, rather than occasion a breach of amity with the holy see;

^a Idem ibid. HEYDEGGER. Contin. de MEZERAI. DE LAROCHE nouv. Traité de la Regale. RIENCOURT. DE LARREY ut supra. ^r DU PIN nouv. Bibliot. des Aut. Eccles. t. xix. BURNET's Treatise on the Regalia. ^s RYCAUT. ^t HEYDEGGER Hist. Papat.

the pope, nevertheless, during the rest of his pontificate, retained a warm resentment against the *French*.

He assists the emperor against the Turks. THE following year, *Innocent* being informed of the immense preparations made by the *Turks*, which were designed against the emperor, he urged the king of *Poland* to conclude an alliance with *Leopold*, which was accordingly negotiated.

A. D.

1683.

by his nuncio at *Warsavia*; by which *Sobieski* engaged to march in person to the relief of *Vienna* if it should be besieged^u. Tho' the infidels, in the end of *September*, were ignominiously defeated, and obliged to raise the siege of that city with great loss, yet as the year after they still continued their incursions in *Hungary*, the pope was very solicitous to form a general league against them, and offered to contribute to the utmost of his power by subsidies in money, which he continued from time to time to send to *Vienna*, prevailing at last with the *Venetians* to join in the alliance with the emperor and the king of *Poland*^v.

and publicly approves of the revocation of the edict of Nantz. 1686.

DURING the progress of the war in *Hungary* against the infidels, the pope received the news of the revocation of the edict of *Nantz*, and of the prosecution of the protestants in *France*, on which account great rejoicings were made at *Rome*. The pope wrote to the king, commending his zeal and singular piety, and ordered *Te Deum* to be sung, and the cannon of *St. Angelo* to be fired. He likewise testified his joy on that account in a *Latin* discourse which he made to the consistory; though several authors affirm, on the testimony of a letter which then appeared under the name of the queen of *Sweden*^x, that the pope disapproved of the cruelties exercised against the protestants; while others say, that he was ignorant of their sufferings, his health not allowing him to read the treatises which were then published on that subject^y.

INNOCENT in the mean time endeavoured, with great zeal, to repress the immodesty and luxury of the dres of the women at *Rome*. In the first years of his pontificate he had ordered the capuchins, both confessors and preachers, to labour for the reformation of manners; and as the party which had seized *Italy*, upon the irruption of the *Turks* into *Germany*, produced no effect, about that time he published an edict, ordering the women, both married and unmarried, to

^u Recueil des Traitez de Paix, &c. t. iv. p. 500. ^v RYCAUT;

^x BAYLE nouv. de la Rep. des Lettres, Mai 1686. ^y Mémoires du Marquis de LA FERRE. BAYLE, ut supra. JUL ET. 1686. Les Actes de l'Assemblée Générale du Clergé de France 1685, concernant la Religion, avec des Reflexions sur ses Actes, edit. 1686.

cover their shoulders and bosom to the neck, and their arms ^{Sumptuary} to the wrist, threatening those who did not obey within six ^{laws a-} days with excommunication, *ipso facto*; and declaring that ^{against} confessors, who should presume to absolve any one, should ^{luxury of} themselves incur the excommunication, and besides be ^{dress.} liable to all the spiritual and temporal punishments his holiness should think proper; which temporal punishments fathers, husbands, masters, and heads of families, should likewise incur, if they connived at the breach of the edict in any of those under their authority. These terrible menaces, however, produced but little reformation; so that this year the pope published another prohibition, expressly forbidding the women to employ any master of music to teach them to sing, or to play on any instrument, even though the master should be an ecclesiastic, or their own near relation; at the same time ordering the nuns, who were used to sing at divine service, to learn only from other nuns their companions ^z

SOON after the pope was offended with the treaty of *Augsburgh*, concluded betwixt the emperor, the king of *Spain*, and the estates of the empire, for their mutual defence against the enterprizes of the *French* king; not that he favoured the ambitious schemes of *Lewis XIV.* but because the contracting powers had declared, in express words, that they intended to provide against all infractions of the truce by *France*, both in spirituals and temporals. He insisted upon an alteration of that article; and his desire not being complied with, he withdrew his subsidy from the emperor, though at the same time he granted a considerable sum to the king of *Poland* ^a. This bad correspondence betwixt him and the emperor continued but for a short time; for, in the beginning of the following year, he renewed the subsidy, and granted a red hat to one of his nomination.

A. D.
1687.

ABOUT this time the sect of the *Quietists* began to appear at *Rome*, and in several other cities of *Italy*. The author of the sect was one *Molinos*, a *Spanish* priest, who some time before had published a book, intituled, *Il guida spirituale*; in which he advanced several uncommon doctrines; and making small account of corporal austerities, reduced all the exercises of religion to a simplicity of mind, and abstract devotion by a silent contemplation of God, and withdrawing the soul from all gross images. Several of his tenets, however, were alleged to have an immoral tendency; so that the

The sect of
the Quie-
tists is sup-
pressed.

^z BAYLE, ut supra, & Dict. Hist. & Crit. art. Innocent XI. rem. K. ^a Hist. des Papes, a la Haye, an. 1734.

pope, at the instigation of the *Jesuits*, ordered him, and several of his followers, to be imprisoned in the inquisition, where he was put to the torture, to prevail with him to abjure his opinions. He, nevertheless, defended his doctrines with great subtilty, to the surprize of the cardinals and divines that examined him. The pope himself is said to have looked upon him as a good man, and to have had a great opinion of his sanctity; and several of the cardinals were thought to have secretly embraced his opinions: however, he was condemned to perpetual imprisonment, and obliged to abjure sixty-eight propositions taken from his works ^b.

*Rupture
betwixt
the pope
and the
king of
France.*

THE pope was not only disturbed with the affair of *Molinus*, but likewise with the pretension of the *French* king to the privilege of franchises at *Rome*. The duke *d'Etrees* dying the foregoing year, *Innocent* ordered his nuncio at *Paris* to inform the king of his reasons for abolishing franchises, and to desire him to drop all pretensions to that privilege: but *Lewis XIV.* replied in a haughty manner, that he intended to send another ambassador to *Rome*, and was resolved to maintain the antient rights of his crown in that city. *Innocent*, irritated by this reply, on the 2d day of *May* published a bull, denouncing the penalty of the greater excommunication against all those, whether ecclesiastics or seculars, who should claim or defend the privileges commonly called franchises, or should, directly or indirectly, disturb the officers of justice in the execution of their orders. He likewise sent a master of the ceremonies to meet the new *French* ambassador at *Bologna*, to declare to him, that he would not be received in that character, unless he renounced his pretensions to the franchises. The marquis *de Lavardin* the ambassador, without satisfying the master of the ceremonies, proceeded to *Rome*, attended by 200 officers, and 500 marine guards; and having intimidated the pope's officers, who offered to search his baggage, he took possession of the whole quarter belonging to his predecessor, where he kept a continual guard. The pope, however, refused him an audience, treated him as a person excommunicated, and interdicted the church and the clergy of the parish of *St. Lewis*, where he was informed the ambassador on *Christmas-day* had performed his devotions^c. *Lavardin* protested against this sentence of interdiction; and according to orders from his court, appeared frequently in the streets and the churches.

A. D.
1688.

^b Idem ibid. BURNET'S Travels.. ^c DE LARREY, ut supra. Contin. de MEZERAI. JAGERUS Hist. Eccles. & Polit. sect. xvii. RIENCOURT.

and took all opportunities of asserting the privileges belonging to his character. *Innocent* at the same time renewed the dispute concerning the regalia; and by refusing bulls in favour of those bishops appointed by the king, kept thirty-eight cathedral churches without pastors.

It is probable *Innocent* followed the example of his predecessor *Sixtus V.* and saw the necessity of thwarting the ambition of *Lewis XIV.* who at this time disturbed the repose of *Europe*, as much as his catholic majesty *Philip II.* had ever done. Though the *French* king, in resentment, seized the city and county of *Avignon*, in hopes that *Innocent*, like *Alexander VII.* would condescend to a submission, yet he found himself greatly mistaken; for the pope still continued to oppose his designs, and soon after refused to confirm the election of cardinal *Furstenberg* to the see of *Cologne*, under pretence that he was a person of a bad character, but in reality because he was a creature of *France*, and his interest had been espoused by *Lewis XIV.* who expected by his promotion to have the electorate of *Cologne* at his devotion. Though the cardinal's competitor, prince *Clement* of *Bavaria*, lay under several incapacities, the pope removed these by a bull, and confirmed him in the archbishopric, which served *Lewis XIV.* with a pretence to renew the war ^d. On this occasion the pope was accused by *La Fontaine*, *Racine*, and a great number of other *French* writers, of abandoning the catholic cause, which they alleged was promoted by the conquests of their monarch ^e. The *Jesuits* even in some monasteries, ordered public prayers to be made for his conversion ^f.

The pope refuses to confirm the election of cardinal Furstenberg to the see of Cologne.

A. D.
1689.

It is certain that *Innocent* did not warmly countenance the designs of *James II.* of *England*, for restoring the catholic religion in that kingdom. He had indeed appointed a nuncio at *London*, but he received the *English* ambassador at *Rome* with great indifference; and on Mr. *Porter* coming at this time to *Rome*, to ask his assistance in the expedition which king *James* was then undertaking for his restoration, he granted him only some chaplets and indulgences, while at the same time he lent money to the emperor to be employed against the *Turks*, which was in reality made use of to oppose the king's return ^g. Mean while the distempers, which he

^d La Comtesse de LA FAYETTE mem. de la Cour de France, p. 10.

^e LA FONTAINE Oeuvres Post. p. 182. RACINE Prologue d'Esther.

^f Considerations sur les Affaires de l'Eglise.

^g LA FAYETTE mem. de la Cour de France, p. 220 & 221.

H. dies at had for a considerable time laboured under, increasing, he died on the 12th of *August*, in the 78th year of his age, to the great joy of the *French*, who had waited for his death with much impatience. He was reckoned one of the best popes, that for a long time had filled the papal chair: his subjects, nevertheless, still felt the miseries of a despotic government, to a great degree, as he did not abolish any of the taxes of his predecessors, while at the same time he kept a very frugal court, did not employ any money in public buildings, and neglected to fill up the vacancies in the sacred college; so that the circulation of money being languid, and the taxes excessive high, great numbers of people were compelled to leave his territories. On this account it was believed that *Rome* lost one-fourth part of its inhabitants during his pontificate ^h.

Alexander VIII. is elected.

THE successor of *Innocent XI.* was *Peter Ottoboni*, who was chosen pope on the 6th of *October*, and took the name of *Alexander VIII.* He was descended of an antient family at *Venice*, which is said to have come originally from the island *Negropont* in the *Archipelago*. Some of his ancestors had distinguished themselves in the wars of the republic against the *Turks*: his father had enjoyed the office of grand chancellor of the republic, and had purchased a patent of nobility, which had cost him 100,000 ducats. After he had finished his studies at *Venice* and *Padua*, at which last place he took the degree of doctor of laws, he went to *Rome*, in the 20th year of his age, where *Urban VIII.* made him referendary of both signatures, appointed him governor of *Terni*, *Rieti*, and *Citta Castellana*, and afterwards, at the nomination of the republic, made him one of the auditors of the rota or rolls. *Innocent X.* created him a cardinal priest, and two years after conferred upon him the bishopric of *Brescia*. *Alexander VII.* recalled him to *Rome*, and appointed him datary. He had a great share in the public affairs during *Clement IX.* *Clement X.* and *Innocent XI.* was a member of all the congregations at *Rome*, and, when promoted to the pontificate, was bishop of *Frescati*, and a subdean of the sacred college. He was of an active, vigilant disposition, had a smiling aspect, and agreeable manners; so that having acquired a general esteem, his election gave great joy to the *Romans* ^h.

^h BURNET'S Travels. ⁱ Mem. des Intrigues du Conclave de l'Année 1689. BAYLE Dict. art. Ottoboni, Le Mercure Gallant du Mois d'Octobre 1689. Hist. de Familles de Rome.

C. 5. *The History of Italy.*

485

ALTHOUGH he was older than the deceased pope when he arrived at the pontificate, yet he acted in the beginning of his reign with great vigour, and desired to examine and to transact every affair himself. He immediately wrote to James II. late king of England, exhorting him to suffer his adverse fortune patiently, and promising to spare neither his prayers, authority, nor purse, for his restoration. As Lewis XIV. had renewed the war with the emperor, he desired to secure the favour of the pope, and therefore immediately restored Avignon, and dropp'd his pretensions to the franchises at Rome: Alexander in return, seeming not to give great attention to the dispute concerning the regalia, which had continued in suspense during the reign of his predecessor. The chief advantage, however, that the king of France gained by his good correspondence with the new pope, was a delay of the peace which the emperor desired to conclude with the Turks, with the intention of turning the whole of his force against France. Alexander, by his exhortations, and by the subsidies which he granted to Leopold and the Venetians, prevailed with them to continue the war against the infidels.

BUT the chief concern of the pope was the aggrandizing of his family; for he promoted all his nephews within three weeks after his elevation. He created his grand nephew cardinal patron, legate of Avignon, and grand chancellor of the Roman church, which last office Innocent XI. had abolished. He afterwards conferred upon him such a number of benefices, that his annual revenue amounted to 80,000 crown. He appointed his nephew, Don Antonio, general of the forces of the church, and another nephew, Don Marco, general of the galleys, and afterwards duke of Fiano, which duchy he purchased for him, and likewise procured for him an advantageous marriage with the house of Colonna (D).

Memoire de la Comtesse, ut supra.
Rome, l. ii. p. 83.

Etat du Siege de

(D) Alexander, soon after his promotion, asked one of his intimates, What the Romans said of him? He answered, that they said he did not lose time in advancing his family; to which the pope replied, Ob,

ob, sono vinti tre bore e mezza, Three and twenty hours and a half of the day are already expired; the Italians not dividing their day by two divisions of twelve hours, but by one division of twenty-four (1)

(1) Menagiana, p. 208.

*He renews
the dispute
with
France
about the
regalia.
A. D.
1690.*

*His death.
1691.*

NOTWITHSTANDING the seeming attachment the pope at first discovered to the interests of *France*, he soon renewed the dispute concerning the regalia; and the following year he refused the bulls to those prelates who had assisted at the general assembly of the clergy at *Paris*, unless they would agree to a recantation. The prelates rejected this condition, while both courts seemed averse to a rupture, and consented to a negociation, to put an end to the dispute. The *French* found it inconsistent with their pretensions to grant the terms of satisfaction which the pope demanded; and in the month of *September* a deputy was dispatched to *Rome*, to support the cause of the bishops. The pope, however, though he agreed to a negociation, had resolved not to relinquish his claim; and a few weeks before the arrival of this deputy, had drawn up a bull, condemning the propositions composed by the general assembly. He kept this bull a secret, and still endeavoured to prevail with the king of *France* to comply with his desire; but finding his health declining, and *Louis XIV.* threatening to re-establish the pragmatic sanction, if the bulls were not granted before *Easter*, he published his bull on the 30th of *January*, and died two days after, in the 81st year of his age, having enjoyed the pontificate only fifteen months and twenty-two days^m. He greatly disappointed the expectations that were raised upon his promotion, and had rendered himself unacceptable to the empire, *France*, and *Spain*. The *French* writers at first made him the subject of panegyric, but they quickly changed their stile, and published severe satires against him. The *Romans* likewise revenged themselves for the extortions of the *Ottoboni* by daily pasquinades, but the reproaches of the public did not influence his conduct. His predecessor, by oppressing his subjects with grievous taxes, had left about a million and a half of crowns in the treasury, which *Alexander* immediately disposed of. Besides, he gave his nephew 100,000 crowns, which *Innocent* had raised by sequestering the revenues of some vacant churches, as a fund for the subsidies against the *Turks*. He likewise made a promotion of cardinals, by which means several vacancies were made among the clerks of the chamber, each of which offices he sold for 60,000 crowns. He was greatly addicted to pleasantries, and was familiar to every one without distinction. He is accused of a great many vices, but more particularly of drunkenness and atheismⁿ.

^m Idem ibid. DE LARREY Hist. de Louis XIV. T. 1. p. 255—260.
ⁿ Idem ibid. T. 1. p. 255—260.

THE intrigues of the following conclave delayed the election for several months; at length, on the 12th of July, *An. XII. is thony Pignatelli* was elected, and took the name of *Innocent XIII. chosen pope.* He was born at *Naples*, of an ancient and noble family, which had originally come from *Tropea*, a city in *Further Calabria*. Having made choice of an ecclesiastical life, he came early to *Rome*, where he finished his studies, and afterwards by his merit recommended himself to several popes. *Urban VIII.* made him vice-legate of the duchy of *Urbino*. *Innocent X.* appointed him inquisitor of *Malta*, governor of *Viterbo*, and nuncio at *Florence*; and his successor *Alexander VII.* sent him as nuncio to *Poland* and *Vienna*. *Clement X.* made him master of the household, and *Innocent XI.* honoured him with the hat, created him bishop of *Faenza*, legate of *Bologna*, and at last archbishop of *Naples*; in memory of which favours he took the same name, and declared that he would do his utmost to follow his steps, and to abolish nepotism. He had hitherto lived in an exemplary manner, was remarkable for his simplicity, and seemed intirely free from artifice and dissimulation.

THE rejoicings at *Rome* on account of the election of the new pope were extraordinary. Immediately after his coronation (E) he applied himself to redress the disorders occasioned by the long vacation of the see. He refused to grant any benefices, or any share in the government, to his relations, and even prohibited them from coming to *Rome*. At the same time he declared, that he desired to be the universal father of the church, and of good men; and that he would give employments only to men of merit, without regarding acquaintance or kindred. He forbade the officers of justice to take bribes, or to have regard to persons in the administration of their office. He had frequent conferences with cardinal *Casanata* about the means of extirpating the abuses and disorders that had crept into the government, and into the city of *Rome*. He recommended good œconomy to the masters of the household, and the commissaries of

• Hist. des Conclaves, p. 328, 329. Mem. des Intrig. du Gonclav. 1689, p. 171. Etat du Siege de Rome.

(E) At this ceremony he ordered a great number of medals to be thrown among the people, upon which were struck his arms, consisting of three pots, which appeared full of money, and reversed with these words; *Nihil pro me*, Nothing for myself (1).

(1) Hist. du Pape a la fin de la Hist. des Conclaves.

the chamber, ordering, that the expence of his dinner should not exceed a foston, or eighteen pence; and that nothing should be provided for his supper. He suppressed all useleſs offices, and by these means made a ſaving of 80,000 crowns a year to the apoſtolic chamber, which was indebted 5000000 of crowns, by nepotiſm, during the ſhort reign of his predeceſſor. He ordered the *Sbirri* to go into all the quarters of the ambaffadors, and commanded the garrison at *Rome* to aſſiſt them in caſe of need. He ſoon after ordered a young man to be hanged for having offered to oppoſe them; which example of ſeverity, tho' very diſagreeable to the people, was nevertheless at this time very neceſſary; for aſſaſſins were become ſo daring and numerous at *Rome* that, during the late vacation of the ſee, no leſs than 182 perſons were murdered. The ſame day he happened, by a fall, to hurt his thigh, which accident obliged him for ſome time to keep his bed, and interrupted a laudable cuſtom, which he had introduced about a month after his election, of giving public audience every *Monday* to the poor, and to all thoſe who had any thing to propoſe to him.

Gives
public au-
dience to
the poor,
and

AL THO' he acquired great reputation by his conduct; yet his ſubjects did not receive ſo much advantage from it as might be expected, as he had not the reſolution to grant any favours without conſulting his miniſters. It was, however, a means of the reformation of ſeveral abuſes. Upon receiving a complaint againſt a *Roman* prince, he compelled him to pay his creditors, and to behave to his vaſſals with moderation. He imprifoned a duke in the caſtle of *St. Angelo*, for having threatened his uncle, who was a prelate; and baniſhed a cavalier, who had been guilty of ſome irregularities, notwithſtanding the interceſſion of a cardinal his uncle. Some ladies were ſent to the caſtle of *St. Angelo* for having played at baſſet and hazard contrary to his edict and ſentence of the *Sbirri* were whipped for having taken money from ſeveral great players at cards, whom they had diſcovered. He prohibited the eccleſiaſtics from wearing perukes, and ordered all the curates at *Rome* to aſſemble every *Wednesday* to confer about caſes of conſcience. He was chiefly ſollicit upon doing good to the poor, whom he called his nephews. He ordered 5000 of them to be lodged in the *Lateran* palace, and aſſigned a fund of 300,000 crowns for their ſupport; at the ſame time, to prevent the increaſe of the number of poor, imprifoning, or baniſhing all idle perſons who reſuſed to work.

IN the second year of his pontificate, by steadiness and resolution, he obliged the cardinals to comply with his design of abolishing nepotism. Several members of the sacred college were equally zealous with himself in that affair; and cardinal *Albani*, who was ordered to compose the bull, drew it up in the strictest terms, taking all possible precaution to prevent any evasions of future popes, and limiting the bounties that the most indulgent could grant to their nephews, in dignities and benefices, to the sum of 12,000 crowns. *Innocent* published the bull, and caused it to be subscribed by all the cardinals who were at *Rome*. He likewise suppressed the theatre where the operas were represented, and applied himself to reform the licentious manners of the regular monks, whose scandalous lives were a disgrace to Christianity. As these monks were very rich, and very numerous in *Italy*, and were besides related to several considerable families, it was a bold attempt to venture to disturb them. Upon the news of the intended reformation, *Italy* and *Rome* were filled with manuscripts and printed pamphlets, describing, in an exaggerated manner, the abuses of the court of *Rome*, and exhorting his holiness to begin at the root, and to reform the scandalous disorders of those who ought to give an example to the lower orders of the church. *Innocent* was not diverted from his intention by these writings; but, at length, he dropt the design, by the advice of those who foresaw the impossibility of succeeding.

*publishes a
bull for
abolishing
nepotism.
A. D.
1692.*

MEAN while he carried on a negotiation with the court of *France*, to regulate the difference about the regalia. *Lewis XIV.* endeavoured, in the beginning of his pontificate, to intimidate him with threats; but finding him fixed and resolute, he made several propositions for an accommodation, which were not accepted by the pope, who insisted peremptorily upon the submission of the bishops. *Innocent*, by his firmness, at length forced the king to a submission; and the following year the *French* bishops, who had assisted at the general assembly, were compelled to write a *Latin* letter to the pope wherein they declared, that they prostrated themselves at the feet of his holiness, and that their grief, for the things that had passed in the assembly which had so greatly displeased him and his predecessors, was very great, proceeded from the heart, and was more than they could express. They therefore protested, that they held, and ought to hold, as null and invalid, all that had been decreed in that assembly with regard to the authority of the church and the pope. By

*The
French
bishops
make their
submission
to the
pope;
A. D.
1693.*

this base and mean compliance, the court and bishops of *France* were reconciled to the holy see, the despotic government in that kingdom forcing the prelates, in this public manner, to sign what it is more than probable they believed a falsehood ^t.

who re-
fuses to
allow the
emperor
any judi-
cial dictio-
n within the
ecclesiasti-
cal state.

A. D.

1694.

INNOCENT, having gained this victory over the *French* monarch, resolved likewise to make the emperor submit to his pretensions. As there were many small fiefs in the ecclesiastical state that acknowledged the emperor as sovereign, the count of *Martinitz*, the imperial ambassador at *Rome*, published a placard, ordering the possessors of, and pretenders to, these fiefs, to make an acknowledgement to *Leopold*. *Innocent* was highly offended with this proceeding of the ambassador, and ordered cardinal *Altieri* to affix another placard, wherein, by his sovereign authority, he declared all the fiefs within his territories reunited to the chamber of the church. On this account a great number of satirical writings were published by both parties; but the emperor, to prevent a final rupture, recalled his ambassador, and in his stead sent the count of *Lamberg*, who seemed less resolute than his predecessor, and purposely dropt the dispute, lest the pope, in resentment, should declare openly for the king of *France*, who at this time had a powerful army in *Italy*, under the command of *Catinat* ^u. *Lewis XIV.* by his submission to *Innocent*, had so far gained his favour, that he privately devoted himself to the interest of *France*, withdrew his subsidy from the emperor, and wrote to the king of *Spain* to prevail with him to abandon the general alliance. His catholic majesty, however, in his answer to the pope, justified the necessity of the war, which, he said, was undertaken to procure the general repose of *Europe*, and the advancement of the catholic religion ^v.

He per-
suades the
duke of
Savoy to
desert the
allies.

A. D.

1696.

THE pope, not being able to prevail with the king of *Spain* to agree to a peace with *France*, applied himself to the duke of *Savoy*, with whom he was successful; for, the offers made by *France* being very considerable, the following year the duke concluded a treaty with *Lewis XIV.* by which a neutrality was stipulated for *Italy*. *Innocent*, being desirous to see the imperial troops out of *Italy*, sent a present of 60,000 crowns to be distributed among the *Germans* ^x. At the same time he sent a subsidy to the *Venetians* against the *Turks*, and another to king *James*; while at *Rome* he was endeavouring, to the utmost of his power, to put a stop to the

^t Mem. Communes du Temps.

^u Etat du Siege de Rome.

^v Ibid.

^x Europ. Histor. t. ii. Lettres Histor. en Nov. & Decem. 1696.

progress of *Quietism*; which sect was daily gaining ground, notwithstanding the severities of the inquisition. The following year he received the agreeable news of the conclusion of a general peace, and of the conversion of the elector of Saxony to the Roman catholic religion, and sent a nuncio to Poland, to congratulate him upon his election to that crown.

SOON after he received an accusation against the celebrated *Arch-bishop of Cambray* Fenelon, archbishop of *Cambray*, who was said to have embraced the doctrines and opinions of the *Quietists*. The archbishop, about the conclusion of the peace of *Ryswick*, is accused of *Quietism*. had published a book concerning the *maxims of the saints*; in which he asserted, that the true foundation of piety was a pure and disinterested love of God. From thence *M. Bossuet*, bishop of *Meaux*, who is said to have had a private pique against him, took an occasion of accusing him of *Quietism*. The archbishop defended the opinions he had published; but, his enemies carrying the affair to *Rome*, his book was this year condemned by a bull, to which he immediately paid an intire submission. Instead of appealing from the censures of the apostolic chair, by vague protestations of catholicism, upon receiving the pope's bull he kissed it; and, ascending the pulpit, exhorted his hearers to conform to it, declaring, that he himself abjured his former sentiments from the heart. By this conduct he disappointed his enemies, and gave great satisfaction to the pope, who soon after wrote a brief to him, as a testimony of his regard for him, and approbation of his conduct. Mean while *Lewis XIV.* who probably acted by the persuasion of his confessor, and had condescended to solicit the bull from *Rome*, ordered the parliament of *Paris* to register it, and by his letters patent required the bishops to receive it in the assemblies of the different provinces. Both the bishops and the parliament, however, upon receiving the bull, added a protestation of saving the authority of the ancient canons. As the following year *A jubilee* was supposed to begin a new century, the pope published a bull for the celebration of a jubilee at *Rome*; on which account great numbers, both of protestants and papists, crowded thither, which occasioned a considerable augmentation to the revenues of his holiness. *Innocent* did not live to see the conclusion of this festival; but, after a long illness, died on the 7th of September, in the 86th year of his age, and the 10th of

His book is condemned.
A. D. 1699.

A jubilee at Rome.
1700.

The pope's death.

L. DE LARREY Hist. de Louis XIV. t. vii. p. 136. Contin: de MEZER. p. 540. Etat du Siege de Rome, t. ii. p. 149.
L. DE LARREY, ubi sup.

his

his pontificate, greatly revered and esteemed for his uprightness and integrity^a.

Clement
XI. is
elec^d.

THE long indisposition of *Innocent* had given leisure to the cardinals to form parties for the following conclave, which was composed of no less than fifty-nine members. Accordingly the factions and intrigues were very violent; but the disorders in *Rome* obliged the cardinals to lay aside their private cabals, and to hasten the election. All the factions at length united in the choice of cardinal *John Francis Albani*, who, by a rare example of modesty, for three days refused, with the most ardent protestations, to consent to their choice. He prayed, wept, and conjured the cardinals to turn their thoughts upon a more worthy person; and, as a reason of his dissent, he mentioned his great love for his relations, which would influence him to break the law against nepotism, to the scandal of Christianity, the dishonour of the sacred college, and the damnation of his own soul. At last he yielded, on the 3d of *November*, and took the name of *Clement XI.* being then only in the 51st year of his age^b. He was descended from a family of note in the duchy of *Urbino*, his grandfather having been created a *Roman* senator by *Urban VIII.* After he had completed his studies, he was at first a canon in *St. Laurence in Damaso*, then vicar of *St. Peters*, and afterwards governor of *Rieti* and *Orvieto*. *Innocent XI.* recalled him from *Orvieto*, and made him secretary of the briefs. As he was gay and chearful, he insinuated himself into the favour of cardinal *Ottoboni*; who, after his promotion to the pontificate, under the name of *Alexander VII.* conferred upon him the dignity of cardinal, without allowing his nephews to accept of any money from him. *Innocent XII.* kept him near his person, and employed him in the administration of affairs, as an expert man, who possessed the rare talent of pleasing every one^c.

He re-
solves to
execute
justice
with ex-
actness.

IMMEDIATELY after his coronation, he declared to the governor of *Rome*, and to the principal officers, that he intended to cause justice to be executed with the utmost exactness, without respect of persons, ordering the *birri* to have no regard to the quarters of the ambassadors, but to pursue criminals in every place without distinction. He appointed one of his nephews secretary of briefs; but, that he might not seem partial to his relations, he ordered that, according to the general rule, they should be examined with regard to their fitness and merit. He appeared to act with

^a Journales du Temps. ^b Etat du Siege de Rome.

^c Ibid.

vigour, and every day was giving new orders to suppress different abuses, which had prevailed during the former reigns. He was always with the pen in his hand, to make remarks on different occurrences; and, not trusting intirely to his ministers, desired to see and examine into every chief matter himself.

SOON after his election, he wrote with his own hand to *Rufes* to king *James*, and sent him his picture. He likewise, in a private consistory, granted the investiture of *Naples* to *Philip V.* of *Spain*, grandson of *Lewis XIV.* who contested the succession of that kingdom with the archduke *Charles*, second son of the emperor. This dispute occasioned great dissensions to the pope, who was solicited strongly by each party to declare himself in *Philip's* favour. As he was afraid lest the party he should espouse might be worsted, he would not declare for either; but embraced a neutrality, and offered himself as mediator of the difference. Each party, however, being resolved to assert his right by arms, his mediation was rejected, and *Lewis XIV.* in behalf of his grandson, took possession of the *Milanese*; which obliged the pope to raise 10,000 men, and to put his frontier places into a state of defence, to prevent himself from being insulted, and forced to abandon the neutrality. He leaned, however, to the side of *France*; and, hearing that the emperor intended to send an army into *Italy*, wrote to him, exhorting him to desist from that intention, and assuring him that God would reward him an hundred fold.

THE imperialists, nevertheless, entered *Italy*, where they quickly made a considerable progress, which obliged the pope to act with great reserve. He therefore refused the *Haci-quency*, which was offered him in the name of *Philip V.* and, that he might seem to act with great impartiality, he sent extraordinary nuncios to the emperor, and to the kings of *France* and *Spain*, to exhort them to peace. *Clement* had before this time acknowledged *Philip* a king of *Spain*, but refused to declare himself with regard to his succession to *Naples*. The following year, the *French* being reinforced in *Italy*, and *Philip V.* arriving at the camp, *Clement* sent cardinal *Barberini* to wait upon him as legat a latere, with a late present of a golden cross, of the value of 10,000 crowns; which proceeding gave great offence to the imperialists.

THO' the pope favoured the cause of *Philip* against his competitor, he was nevertheless offended with the just re-

^d Journales du Temps.
XIV.

^e DE LARREY Hist. de Lewis

*A false
prophets
imprisoned
in the in-
quisition.*

spects shewn to him by one of his subjects. *Philip* had assisted at a divine service, where cardinal *Cantelmi*, archbishop of *Naples*, had officiated. Afterwards he invited him to dine with him; when the cardinal, according to the respect paid by a subject to his sovereign, continued standing during the entertainment. This submission offended the court of *Rome*, and the pope wrote a brief to the cardinal, blaming his conduct, ordering him not to behave in such a manner for the future, and declaring that what he had done ought not to serve as an example to others^f. In the mean time, that the delay of accepting the *Hacqueney* might not prejudice the rights of the king of *Spain* to the kingdom of *Naples*, *Clement* consented to declare, by an authentic act, that the delay should have no consequence to invalidate the right^g. He likewise ordered *Clementia Marchioni*, an abbess of a monastery in *Naples*, to be apprehended, for endeavouring, by pretended prophecies, to cause the people to revolt in favour of the archduke *Charles*. The common people had a great opinion of her sanctity, and believed her a real prophetess; but she afterwards made a solemn abjuration, in the great hall of the inquisition, before an extraordinary assembly of cardinals and officers of the holy office; and confessing that, from vanity, she had designed to impose upon the world, she was condemned to an imprisonment for ten years^h.

*Desolation
at Rome
occasioned
by earth-
quakes.*

A. D.
1703.

Soon after, towards the end of the year, he published an edict against luxury and extravagant entertainments, prohibiting the acting of plays, and the diversions of the carnival, and desiring that season to be employed in prayers for peace among the catholic princes. The *Romans* were deterred, by more powerful and affecting motives, from indulging in the licentious pleasures of that festival; for, in the beginning of the following year, the city of *Rome*, and the whole ecclesiastical state, were filled with desolation, by a dreadful inundation of the *Tyber*, and several terrible shocks of earthquakes. On the 3d of *February* the shocks were extremely violent, and continued for fifteen minutes, so that the greatest number of the cardinals and courtiers ran out of the palace, and abandoned his holiness. As *Clement* was looked upon by the common people as a prophet, this belief was the occasion of a general consternation next morning, about three hours after midnight, when the city was universally

Idem ibid. ^g BELLEC. Hist. Gener. d'Espagn. t. ix. p. 27. 28. ^h Idem. ibid. ⁱ Journal. du Temps.

alarmed by pretended orders from the pope, desiring all people immediately to quit their houses, as there would be instantly a more terrible shock than any that had been felt. The whole inhabitants, except the sick and disabled, quitted their beds, and run into the streets; and the alarm even reached his holiness, who, upon being informed of the cause of the general terror, immediately sent the *Sbirri* and guards to assure the people, that the pretended revelation was only a diabolical invention, and to exhort them to return to their houses. This public calamity occasioned a general penitence for some time. All courts of justice were suspended, and a jubilee was published. *Clement* caused boxes to be placed in the churches, to receive the alms which should be bestowed to support those families that had been ruined. He appointed officers to visit the shops of engravers, sculptors, and painters, and to seize all indecent pictures and statues. He prohibited men from teaching the women to sing, or play on musical instruments, and ordered that none of those women, who received their dowry from hospitals, should wear any habits of silk. As an encouragement to rebuild the houses that had been destroyed, he declared them free from all charges and taxes for a considerable time; and that the prelates and other ecclesiastics might, by their lives, serve as an example to others, he published several regulations relating to them, and, among other things, prohibited them from playing at cards, or any other games, in the sacred palace^k.

MEAN while *Clement* continued to solicit the catholic princes, who were at war, to agree to a congress for negotiating a peace. His solicitations, however, were ineffectual; for, in the month of *September*, the archduke *Charles* was proclaimed at *Vienna* king of *Spain*. The imperial ministers at *Rome*, on this occasion, were preparing to make great rejoicings, in the national church of the *Germans*, where they proposed to expose the picture of the pope, with that of the archduke, dressed with the royal ornaments, after the *Spanish* fashion. Upon complaints of the *French* and *Spanish* ambassadors against these preparations, *Clement* held several congregations, and at length declared to the *Germans*, that, if they presumed to expose the pictures in any church, he would lay it under a sentence of interdiction^l. The pope, by endeavouring to give offence to no party, displeased both; and, tho' he continued to adhere to a neutrality, he could not secure his dominions from sharing in the calamities of the war;

^k Ibid.^l Ibid.

The imperial and French armies, without leave, enter the pope's territories.

A.D.

1704.

The idolatrous worship of the Chinese converts condemned.

The disputes about Janfenism are again renewed.

for, in the following campaign, both armies entered the territories of *Ferrara*, where they committed a great many disorders. As a means of removing such troublesome guests, *Clement* thundered out an anathema against those generals who should refuse to withdraw their troops. The *French* immediately obeyed, and the *Germans* soon after marched towards the *Trentin*^m.

THE attention of the pope in the mean time was engaged by a spiritual contest, which for some years had divided the *Roman* church. Before the death of his predecessor, news had arrived in *Europe*, that the *Jesuit* missionaries in *China*, to facilitate the conversion of that people, had allowed their converts, after they had embraced Christianity, to continue their idolatrous rites paid to the great philosopher *Confucius*. The *Jesuits* on this account were accused of impiety, and many books immediately appeared, shewing the profaneness of such an indulgenceⁿ. The society, however, wrote in defence of the practice of their missionaries, and had interest at *Rome*, during the few months of the life of *Innocent XII.* to elude the prosecutions of their enemies. They were likewise so successful as to procure the friendship of *Clement*, who gave a general scandal by the protection which he afforded them, and delayed giving sentence in the affair as long as possible. But the clamour against the fathers of the society became so universal, that he was obliged to give a decision; and, having appointed a congregation to examine the affair, on the 20th of *November*, by a bull, he authorized their sentence, which condemned the worship and ceremonies of the *Chinese* converts. The pope likewise, to examine fully into the affair, sent the cardinal of *Tournon* to *China*; who, not favouring the society, was, by their intrigues, exposed to a great many hardships in that country^o.

As the reputation of the *Jesuits* had, in some measure, suffered by this apostolic decision against them, *Clement* embraced the first opportunity of shewing himself favourable to the society. About two years before, the dispute about *Janfenism* had begun to revive in *France*, occasioned by a case of conscience, which had been presented to the doctors of the *Sorbonne*. It was demanded of them, what ought to be thought of a person who did not believe the fact concerning *Janfenius*; namely, that the five propositions were contained in his writings, and was firmly persuaded, that the

^m BELLEG. ut sup.

ⁿ ARNAUD *Morale Pratique des Jesuites*, t. vi. DU PIN *Hist. Eccles. du 17 Siecle*, t. iv. ^o Contin. de MEZER. p. 542. Etat du Siege de Rome, t. ii. p. 213.

urch had no right to exact such a belief, and who, nevertheless, in such a disposition of mind, had signed the formula purely and simply. The doctors replied, that any person might act so with a safe conscience; and forty of them subscribed to this decision. As many writings immediately appeared, censuring the determination of the doctors, some of them replied in their own defence, addressing the explication of their opinion to cardinal *Noailles*, archbishop of *Paris*, as judge supreme in his own diocese. The cardinal, however, the year following, published an ordonnance, condemning the decision of the doctors, as contrary to the constitutions and briefs of *Innocent X.* *Alexander VII.* and *Innocent XII.* at the same time condemning the invidious and scandalous libels that had been published against the doctors, and exhorting the clergy to peace. The same day a severe edict of the king appeared against renewing the dispute; while at *Rome* the pope, by a brief, condemned the decision of the case of conscience, and by another brief acquainted the king of his sentence of condemnation. *Clement* this year wrote a third brief, addressed to the cardinal *Noailles*, to excite him to act zealously against the determination of the doctors, the greatest part of whom, however, some time before, had, by a formal act, promised to conform their sentiments and conduct to the archbishop's ordonnance. By the influence of the pope's nuncio, *Lewis du Pica*, and some others of the chief subscribers, were banished; which drew another brief of thanks from *Rome*.

MEAN while the *French* prelates, particularly *Codet des Marets*, bishop of *Chartres*, who had declared against the decision of the case of conscience, persuaded *Lewis XIV.* to demand a bull from *Rome*, which should declare, that it was not sufficient to keep a respectful silence with regard to the truth of the fact, but that it was necessary to believe it absolutely and in the heart. As this was the chief point of the whole dispute, the pope purposely shunned determining it; for if, according to truth, he had declared that an implicit faith ought not to be required to facts which might be known by sensible evidence, the *Janseuists* would have been victorious; and if he should give a contrary decision, he would establish a principle opposed by all divines. He therefore, the following year, published a bull, distinguished by its three first words, *Vineam Domini Sabaoth*; by which he declared, that due submission was not given to apostolic bulls by a respectful silence only; which, with regard to points of faith, was acknowledged by both parties. He gave no further decision of the point in dispute; but, taking it for granted that the pro-

A. D.
1705.

positions were in the works of *Janfenius*, he launched out into invectives against those whom he accused of concealing error under the veil of a respectful silence. The king, having received the bull with a brief from the nuncio, wrote to the clergy who were then assembled at *Paris*, desiring them to deliberate immediately upon the acceptation of the bull. Accordingly the archbishop of *Rouen*, with seven bishops and seven abbots, were appointed as commissaries, who first established three preliminary maxims; 1st, That bishops have a divine right to judge of matters of doctrine; 2dly, That the pope's bulls, after they are received by the body of pastors, have an obligation upon the whole church; 3dly, That the receiving or acceptation of the bishops is always by way of judgment. After these precautions, they determined, that the bull ought to be accepted with respect and submission; and that, by circular letters, all the bishops in the kingdom should be exhorted to publish it in their dioceses. It was likewise accepted by the *Sorbonne*, and by the parliament: however, the dispute was not thereby terminated; for a new distinction was found out betwixt human faith and divine faith; and the general obscurity of the bull served still to seduce the simple, and to give a handle to continue the persecution of the *Janfenists*, among whom were reckoned the members of the *Port Royal*, whose monastery was soon after destroyed.

*A rupture
between
the pope
and the
emperor;*

DURING this spiritual contest, the pope had a difference with the emperor, occasioned by the opposition made to the *Sbirri* by one *Cavaletti*, a *Roman* gentleman, and his son, who were thereupon imprisoned. The count *de Lamberg*, the imperial ambassador at *Rome*, insisted upon the liberty of *Cavaletti*, who he affirmed was one of his domestics; but, his remonstrances not being regarded by the pope, he wrote to *Vienna*. *Cavaletti* was soon after set at liberty; but the ambassador, receiving orders from his court, quitted *Rome* and the ecclesiastical state, without taking an audience of leave of the pope, while the nuncio at *Vienna* was ordered to retire from the court. The emperor at the same time, as a satisfaction for the insult, demanded that *Pallavicini*, governor of *Rome*, should be banished; that cardinal *Paluzzi*, secretary of state, should be forbid the palace; that another cardinal should be sent to *Vienna*, to excuse the proceeding;

* Hist. du Jaf. de Conscience, in 2 vol. the first of which appeared in 1705, and the second in 1711. DE L'ARR. Hist. de Lewis XIV. t. viii. p. 433. Hist. Abreg. de Port Royal. Mem. sur la Destruct. de Port Royal, edit. 1711. Catechisme Hist. & Dogm. t. ii. art. v. p. 139.

and that in the mean time the imperial troops should be put in possession of *Ferrara*. The pope would not consent to these conditions; but wrote to *Vienna*, complaining of the irregular conduct of *Lamberg*, and desiring that his nuncio might be allowed to return to court; but, not obtaining this last request, he recalled him to *Rome*.

This bad correspondence with the imperial court continued for some time. The pope, mean while, finding that his exhortations to peace were not effectual, the following year published an universal jubilee for that purpose, the calamities of the war occasioning a general murmuring thro' *Italy*, especially after the celebrated victory obtained by the imperialists before *Turin*, when, not having any longer an enemy to keep them in awe, they lived at discretion, and committed a great many disorders. But what chiefly irritated the *Italians* was the public worship of the protestants in the imperial army, which likewise greatly scandalized the pope; who, therefore, a few months after, in conjunction with the catholic *Swiss* cantons, renewed his instances for a general peace, but without any effect. He was the more earnest for peace, as he observed that the cause, which he was known to wish well to, became the inferior; for since the victory obtained on the 7th of *September*, by prince *Eugene* before *Turin*, the *French* had been obliged intirely to evacuate *Italy*, and the imperialists had taken possession of the *Milanese*; the investiture of which duchy, in *March* following, the archduke *Charles* received from his brother the emperor. Besides, the imperialists had seized the duchy of *Mantua*, and sent upwards of 8,000 men thro' the ecclesiastical state to *Naples*, which kingdom, by the intrigues of cardinal *Pignatelli*, the archbishop of the capital, and his brother the duke of *Monteleon*, had been prevailed upon to declare for the archduke *Charles*. The count de *Traun*, who commanded the imperialists in *Naples*, quickly reduced the whole kingdom with little or no opposition, and took the *Spanish* viceroy prisoner.

As the *Austrian* troops, in their passage thro' the ecclesiastical state, had levied contributions upon several bishops, the pope complained of the outrage to the emperor; but, receiving little satisfaction, he excommunicated those troops which had committed the disorders. Notwithstanding this censure, prince *Eugene* took possession of several places in the duchy of *Ferrara*, particularly the city of *Comacchio*, where his troops lived at discretion. The emperor *Joseph* likewise published a manifesto, declaring the censures of the pope in-

A. D.
1706.

who gives
the investiture of
the *Milanese* to his
brother
the arch-
duke
Charles.

A. D.
1707.

The im-
perialists
take posses-
sion of the
duchy of
Ferrara.

* BELLEC. Hist. Gener. d'Espagne, t. ix. p. 117.

A. D.
1708.

valid, and alleging, that, as the cities of *Italy* were fiefs of the empire, his army had a right to require lodging and subsistence; adding also, that he intended to maintain all the rights of the Imperial crown in *Italy*, and to except no cities which could not prove their immunities by authentic titles. About the same time the cardinal *Grimani*, who, for his services to the imperial party, had been appointed viceroy of *Naples*, published an edict in that kingdom, suppressing the tribunal of the nunciature, and prohibiting the clergy from paying annates to the *Roman* chancellor. He likewise affirmed in his edict, that the king of the *Two Sicilies* ought not to take the investiture from the pope, because these provinces were not ecclesiastical fiefs, and that the states of *Avignon* and *Benevento* ought to be reunited to the kingdom of *Naples*.

*The pope
raises an
army to
protect his
dominions.*

CLEMENT in the mean time, to secure his territories as much as possible, with the consent of the cardinals, drew 500,000 crowns from the treasure lodged in *St. Angelo*; ordered considerable levies of troops to be made thro' the whole ecclesiastical state; gave the command of his army to the count *de Marsigli*, who had lately been disgraced by the emperor; and reinforced the garrison of *Ferrara* with 3000 men. However, he was not powerful enough to restrain the disorders committed by the imperialists, who obliged many of his subjects to lay down their arms, under pain of military execution. The emperor pretended to seize the territory of *Ferrara* for his ally the duke of *Medena*; and as the duke of *Mantua* and *Montferrat* had espoused the cause of *Philip V.* he put him to the ban of the empire, confiscated his estates, and, having stripped the *Mantuan* territory of all the artillery and military stores, which were carried to *Milan*, he gave the investiture of *Montferrat* to his ally the duke of *Savoy*, on condition that he should not desert the grand alliance till the conclusion of a general peace. These and other violent proceedings of the emperor obliged the pope and cardinals to act with greater spirit in their own defence. The levies were accordingly continued, and several cardinals, and the greatest part of the *Roman* barons, voluntarily assessed themselves in considerable sums, according to their ability. The count *de Marsigli* marched into the territory of *Ferrara*, where the papal troops had ventured to act offensively against

^r Idem ibid. STRUVIUS Hist. Germ. sect. xii. §. ii. p. 4060. 4081. Lettr. Hist. Mar. 1707. La Clef du Cabinet des Princes, Decem. 1708. LUNIGIUS Liceris Proc. p. 111. BARR. Hist. d'Allemagne.

the *Germans*. Upon the news of these hostilities, the count *de Thaurin*, who had returned to *Lombardy*, marched thither with some new regiments; and, having taken possession of several posts in the territory of *Bologna*, invested *Ferrara*, prohibiting any provisions to be carried into the city under pain of death. At the same time an imperial army advanced from *Naples* towards the frontiers of the ecclesiastical state, threatening an invasion, on purpose to divide the pope's forces. The emperor, however, proposed an accommodation to his holiness, and in the mean time ordered a cessation of all hostilities.

As the states and princes of *Italy* were over-awed by the *Germans*, and the coasts of the ecclesiastical state were threatened by the *English* and *Dutch* fleets, while the *French* were in no condition to give him any assistance either by sea or land, *Clement* found himself obliged to submit to the terms prescribed by the emperor. Accordingly, on the 15th of *January*, a treaty was concluded betwixt him and *Joseph*, by which he agreed to disband all his troops, excepting 5000 men; to give winter-quarters to 6000, or, according to some authors, to 5000 *Germans*; to dismiss all the *French* and *Spaniards* in his service; and to pay a contribution of 100,000 *Roman* crowns. Among other articles it was also agreed, that commissaries should be appointed to examine the emperor's pretensions to *Comacchio*, *Parma*, *Placentia*, and *Modena*; and a congregation of cardinals was ordered to inquire into the claim of the archduke *Charles* to the crown of *Spain*. This last article was merely a form; for, before the ratification of the treaty was delivered, *Clement* was obliged to acknowledge *Charles* as king of *Spain*; to write to him as such, and to send a nuncio to his court at *Barcelona*, while the ambassadors of *France* and *Philip V.* entered their protest against every thing done to the prejudice of the rights of the two crowns.

CLEMENT, however, notwithstanding this declaration, soon after sent an extraordinary nuncio to *Philip V.* at *Madrid*, with the blessed lien for his infant son the prince of *Asturias*; and in the midst of the disturbances occasioned by the war in *Italy*, he had been very attentive to the religious disputes in *France*, having granted a bull, at the request of *Lewis XIV.* for suppressing of the monastery at *Port Royal*, in the suburbs of *Paris*, which he stiled a nest of heresy. He like-

* BARRE ut sup. Hist. des Papes, a la Haye, edit. 1734.

† Catechisme Hist. & Dogmat. t. ii. p. 141.

He condemns the New Testament, published by Quesnel, with moral reflections.

wife published a brief, condemning the New Testament which had been printed a few years before by father *Quesnel*, with moral reflections upon each verse. He did not censure any particular proposition, but condemned the book in general in the most severe terms: his brief, however, was not received and published in *France*, the clergy then insisting upon the privileges and rights of the *Gallican* church; and this year a refutation of the brief was published, as was supposed, by *Quesnel*, under the title of *A Dialogue upon the Decree of Rome against the New Testament of Chalons, with moral Reflections*. The pope endeavoured to interest the *French* king in the affair, by means of the *Jesuit* *Tellier*, confessor to his majesty; but, whatever inclination *Lewis XIV.* had to second the pope's desires, the time and circumstances would not then allow him to declare himself, as he had already too many enemies to contend with, who had rejected with disdain the proposals made by him for peace (F). *Clement* likewise omitted nothing to draw the *French* bishops to his party; neverthe-

(F) *Pasquier Quesnel* was born at *Paris* in 1634. After finishing his course of divinity in the *Sorbonne*, he entered into the congregation of the oratory, and addicted himself wholly to ecclesiastical studies. For the use of his brethren, he wrote some moral reflections upon the four gospels, which were approved by the bishop of *Chalons-sur-Marne*; who, in the year 1671, recommended them to the use of his diocese. *Quesnel*, about ten years afterwards, having offended *Harlay*, archbishop of *Paris*, by his attachment to the general of his order, was commanded to leave the diocese of *Paris*. He retired to *Orleans*; but, being soon after obliged to leave *France*, he went to *Brussels*, where he lived nine years, and finished his moral reflections upon the New Testament; which work was published in the year 1694. After it

had gone through several editions, it was approved by cardinal *Noailles*, who being hated by the *Jesuits*, they, in the year 1698, published a libel, under the title of the *Problem*, against a work of his, in which they likewise censured many propositions of *Quesnel's* book. The *Problem* was ordered to be burnt by the parliament of *Paris*, and several pieces appeared in justification of the moral reflections. *Quesnel*, being persecuted at *Brussels*, retired in 1704 into *Holland*; however, after his departure from the *Spanish* territories, a sentence was published against him by the archbishop of *Mechlin*, and his enemies printed several treatises against him, under the titles of *Father Quesnel a heretic*, *Father Quesnel a mover of schisms*. At last, in 1708, they obtained a decree of the pope, condemning his book (2).

less, the following year he gave offence to the *Gallican* clergy, by two briefs which he published against their privileges. These decrees condemned a treatise *of the origin of the regalia*, and a *mandate of the bishop of St. Pons*; but they were not written in the usual form. The parliament of *Paris*, nevertheless, ordered them to be suppressed, and prohibited the printing and selling any bulls or briefs of the court of *Rome*, under the penalty of 3000 livres, unless they were allowed to be published by the king's letters patent registered in parliament ^u.

As the emperor *Joseph* died the year after, and his brother *The arch- duke Charles* succeeded him, this revolution occasioned a great alteration in the system of affairs, and gave Charles hopes that a general peace would soon be concluded; especially as the queen of *England* had withdrawn her troops *from Spain*, and had agreed to a congress at *Utrecht*; and the *Dutch* began to be apprehensive of the great power of the new emperor, if he should unite the *Spanish* dominions to the imperial dignity and the *Austrian* hereditary countries.

^u DE LARREY, ut sup.

